



MMORPG: REBIRTH OF THE LEGENDARY GUARDIAN

BOOK 02

Flying Alone

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

MMORPG: Rebirth of the Legendary Guardian

(Wǎngyóu zhī zhàn yù tiānxià)

(网游之战御天下)

by

Flying Alone

(孤单地飞)

Synopsis

The phoenix is a creature of legends, a wonder of the world, an imagery of life and destruction. This fabled creature signifies the rise of a hero in a virtual world where battles occur for the sake of honor and glory!

Zhang Yang was a professional gamer in the first and most fantastic game that revolutionized the world: God's Miracle. A game where traditional knowledge in RPGs did not matter anymore, players would have to manually target and evade attacks, giving rise to a significant gap in skill between a professional and an amateur gamer.

Zhang Yang's downfall came a little too soon. His girlfriend was snatched, his guild was harassed and disbanded, and he was even driven to commit suicide! Jumping off the top floor of a hotel, Zhang Yang seemed as though he was soaring like a phoenix. Little did he know that the end of his life also signified his rise from the ashes!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 101: Sister's Revenge

“Here I go!”

Zhang Yang swung his sword and used <Charge> to dash to the boss. After one normal attack, he gained enough Rage to immediately cast <Horizontal Sweep>. Both maids received nearly 1,000 damage each and had their aggro was fully fixed on Zhang Yang. He then quickly tagged a “Sun” symbol and cried out. “Kill the Sun-marked monster!”

Everyone started to attack and monster and completely drained her HP.

“What an Ill-behaved guest! You have dirtied Master Waller’s flower garden!”

When her HP dropped below 50%, the maid let out a loud scream. She held the broomstick with both her hands and horizontally cleaved everyone.

‘Ding! You have received the <Expulsion by the Maid> effect! Dazed for 3 second!’

<Dazed> and <Stun> were two different type of status effect. Under <Dazed> the character could not perform any action, but once attacked, the character will regain its senses and will be able to continue to fight. <Stun> was different, rendering a character completely immobile and there was no way to recover from the effect until the duration expired.

Once everyone was dazed, the two maids continued their attack on Zhang Yang since he was still holding onto the aggro. With one hit and Zhang Yang immediately recovered. He quickly activated <Block> and easily endured the next 3 seconds alone, attacking both of them.

Everyone recovered after and continued their attack until the enemies were defeated.

Wei Yan Er opened the corpse and obtained a Black-Steel equipment.

[Stolen Boots] (Black-Steel, Leather Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +9

Dexterity: +6

Level requirement: 30

“F*ck, these maids are cheaters!”

“Don’t mind that first. Keep the boots in the guild storage!”

Zhang Yang said. Even though neither of them wanted the equipment, one man's trash was still another man's treasure. Other normal players would want to have it.

The party then moved forward and deeper into the garden. Along the way, they met several more maids and they would only drop the same Black-Steel equipment and many [Cotton Cloth].

[Cotton Cloth] was important for raising a Tailoring mastery. It was also an important material to make [Cotton Bandage]. Only Level 30 humanoid monsters would drop this item. The party continued pushing and obtained a number of [Cotton Cloth].

Finally, the party had come to the end of the pathway. Further up was a curved road which led to the other parts of the garden. On the left side of the party, was a beautiful woman in a red maid outfit, sitting on a stone bench enjoying some desserts and afternoon tea. She seemed to be having the time of her life relaxing and enjoying the day.

[Winny the Maid, Master Waller's Lover]

Level: 34

HP: 800k

“Holy f*cking moly! The master of this castle even has a lover!” said Fatty Han as he widened his eyes and stared at every inch of the boss’ body. “Hmm...Target confirmed. Three size: 34C-23-34. WTF! Master Waller sure has good taste in women!”

“Calm your d*ck Fatty! Let the noob tank explain the strategy!” Han Yin Xue rolled her eyes.

Zhang Yang laughed at the new insult she used. “This boss would require very good teamwork. Her attacks are not as strong but when we start the fight, she would gain a buff called “Master Waller’s Roar”. It will increase her attack by 500%! Whoever she attacks will be definitely be dead!”

“Crap! Then why are we still here?! Let’s bail!”

“Chill... there’s always a way to win!” Zhang Yang explained further. “The buff would only last for 10 seconds after activation. Which is why in 10 seconds we...”

“We must kill the boss in 10 seconds?!” cried Wei Yan Er.

“Kill your sister!”

“But I don’t have a sister!”

“Kill your cousin then!”

“Damn you Zhang Yang! You want a piece of me?” Han Yin Xue rolled up her sleeves.

“Okay! Alright! Okay! I give! I give!” Zhang Yang went back to the main topic. “In this 10 seconds, there will be another NPC appearing into the fight. She would be Master Waller’s real wife. Her...”

“WTF! What’s wrong with this Master Waller! First, a lover and now he has a wife too?! Argh! What a lucky man!” Fatty Han suddenly interject!

“Master Waller is the owner and master of the Shadowmoon Castle! He will be the Castle Interior dungeon’s last boss! F*ck you all really! Would you please let me explain everything in one go?!” Zhang Yang finally complained.

“Sorry. Please go on...”

“Go, your mama! Where was I?!”

“The wife part.”

Zhang Yang scratched his head in frustration and sighed. “When the wife comes into the fight, she will purge the boss’s buff! However, when the wife appears, she will fall under the boss’s trap. She will be encased inside an ice block with 10,000 HP. We must break her free out of the ice and only then can she purge the

buff off of the boss! After purging, the buff will reappear after 30 seconds. Again, she would be trapped in the ice and we would have to repeat the saving process over and over again.”

“Wow! Sounds like fun! Will the boss and the lover fight each other?”

“On the other hand...” Zhang Yang continued to speak. “The boss will randomly control any players aside from the player with the most aggro. The controlled player will automatically attack the wife and since her pitiful HP is only about 3 to 4 thousand or so, she will be killed off quickly and we will fail this dungeon! During the controlled period, I will be the first to pull away the controlled player. All you of just focus on the boss and ignore the player and me. The effect lasts for about 10 seconds, I think. After that, the player will regain back their control.”

“Now, even though the wife is fighting the boss, she’s not on our side, which is why we can’t heal the wife’s HP! So, when there’s nothing happening, please keep yourself away from the wife. It’s better since I can have more time to react when none of you are controlled!”

Zhang Yang paused a while. “Everyone keeping up?”

“The boss has two other skills. The first, she will randomly cast <Rain of Fire> on a random player that will cause a fixed total damage of 10,000. This damage can be shared among us, so when the skill pops, we should stand together to split the damage. The second skill is <Bomb>. It’s a simple bomb that will explode after 5 seconds and will cause only 1 damage to the targeted player but

causes 5,000 damage to the surrounding players! So, we must be alert to run away from the targeted player and regroup only after the bomb has been triggered.”

“Everyone take a minute to digest the information I just gave. If there’s anything you want to ask, now is the time. Don’t f*ck up our plan!”

No one was showing signs of confusion; they looked confident. However, Zhang Yang immediately received a private message from Fatty Han.

“I’m already confused. Just remind me what to do, okay?”

“Damn you, really fat f*ck!”

After a while, Zhang Yang gave the signal to attack.

“Let’s go!”

Zhang Yang was the first to attack. He quickly noticed the moment he approached the boss.

Winny was startled and jumped off the stone bench and screamed from the top of her lungs.

“Master Waller! My beloved! Someone is here to kill me!”

Immediately a response was heard bellowing from the depths of the castle.

“Fear not my love! I will grant you powers to slay these killers!”

‘Ding! Winny has gained <Master Waller’s Roar>. Attack will be increased by 500%. Effect takes place after 10 seconds!’

Just in the nick of time, a green colored shadow suddenly jumped out of the bushes nearby and roared. “Waller you stupid dog! How dare you betray my love! Winny you sick woman! Why would you even want to take my husband away!?”

[Jenny, Master Waller’s Wife, Winny’s Elder Sister] (Normal)

Level: 44

HP: 4,000

However, just as she stepped into the battlefield, she stepped on a trap and was instantly encased in an ice block. She could not move, yet her face was expressing her anger.

Fatty Han was happy all of the sudden. “Oh ho... the lover is the wife’s little sister huh...! This is just so exciting. To think that he could actually pull it off! Mr. Waller is now my idol! You have my full respect! Such a pity that both of them couldn’t get along with

the idea. What a shame indeed!”

“Fatty, work more on your arrows instead of your mouth! Save the NPC!” Zhang Yang used <Charge> and slammed at the boss. Once he was at melee attack range, he unleashed his skills and swung the sword around.

Jenny was saved fairly quickly when everyone other than Zhang Yang was attacking the ice.

Jenny took out a bow and fired an arrow to her sister. “Go to hell!”

‘Ding! Winny’s <Master Waller’s Roar> was dispelled!’

Even though Winny’s attack was at around 2,000, and Zhang Yang would only receive about 1,300 damage after his passive skills. Zhang Yang had been depending on <Block> to block out 80% of all Winny’s attacks! The amount of damage he received was so rare that Han Yin Xue had nothing to do! She only casted <Regeneration> on him to completely heal him!

Without the help of the attack buff, this boss’ attacks were nothing worth mentioning at all!

On the other hand, Jenny had been attacking repeatedly with her arrow. Although her attacks were full of wrath, her damage was so low that they could not even measure it. Still, she was useful enough to dispel the <Master Waller’s Roar>.

“Hundred Shots, Fatty, Little Snow! Come to my side and attack from behind me! Don’t stray too far!” Zhang Yang made an arrangement to their position.

“Enough, Jenny! You’re annoying!” The boss suddenly took out a bow and shot a love shaped arrow head to Sun Xin Yu.

Poof!

Sun Xin Yu’s instantaneous reaction was astounding. She vanished instantly as soon as the arrow was about to hit her.

‘Ding! Winny used <Cupid’s Arrow> on Frost Night!’

‘Ding! Frost Night used <Vanish>!’

Two system notifications appeared almost instantly. Sun Xin Yu reappeared and started to attack the boss like nothing happened.

Zhang Yang saw everything, but no words could get out of his mouth. He could only stare at her in awe. Strong!

There was a moment, in only a split second... no, 1/10 of a second, when the character would enter stealth mode, and if there was no enemy around, the user would gain an “Invincible” effect, nullifying all damage and status effect!

However, the timing of activation had to be perfect! Too early, and you would have missed the I-frame¹, too late...than what was meaning to it? Only those with extraordinary reaction speed could fully utilize this skill to even evade a boss' skill!

This cold lady... no wonder she could be the strongest Thief in the game!

Winny continued her attack on Zhang Yang when she suddenly raised her hand up in the air and said, "Ah... the romance under the rain of fire! Burn to hell, O' invaders!"

Simultaneously, a cloud appeared on top of Wei Yan Er and rained droplets of fire.

‘-1666!’

‘-1666!’

‘-1667!’

Chains of damage text floated across the heads all of 6 members. Luckily, they were all wearing almost a full set of Level 20 Gray-Silver equipment and had more than 3,500 HP!

Chapter 102: Cheating Boss

Han Yin Xue quickly casted <Holy Prayer> to recover a portion of the HP and casted <Regeneration> to slowly heal them. Her current magic attack had reached 600, which allowed <Regeneration> to heal 240 HP per tick. Such an impressive healing power!

96%! 94%! 92%! The boss' HP started to drop.

Winny suddenly around and shot an arrow towards Hundred Shots, crying out, "Explosive Arrow!"

A ring of twirling fire appeared around Hundred Shots and a debuff icon appeared on his head.

[Explosive Arrow]: Explodes after 5 seconds. Dealing 1 Fire damage to the target. 5,000 Fire damage will be dealt to targets around 3x3 meters of the vicinity of the target.

Hundred Shots immediately ran away from the crowd. It was not hard to run 3 meters away in 5 seconds.

BOOM!

A loud blast was heard and Hundred Shots blasted off like a rocket, with flames at his butt! He rose up about 10 meters into the sky. Fire waves spread out everywhere but stopped when it reached the 3-meter border.

“AAAAaaaaagh!”

Hundred Shots fell from the sky and slammed onto the floor. Even though he only received 1 damage from the arrow, but he also received 1,000 physical damage from falling down 10 meters from the sky!

After successfully surviving the blast, Hundred Shots immediately returned to his position and resumed his attacks.

90%.

“Master Waller! Help me!” Winny screeched.

An instant replied could be heard from the castle. Followed closely with a loud roar.

“My love! I’ll make sure you’ll be out of harm’s way!”

‘Ding! Winny has gained <Master Waller’s Roar>. Attack will be increased by 500%. Effect takes place after 10 seconds!’

After the boss gained the buff, Jenny the wife cried out angrily. “Waller! I’ll come home and strangle you myself!”

She walked a few steps and was trapped in ice again.

Without Zhang Yang needing to order, everyone turned their target and started to crush the ice.

With haste, Jenny was freed from the ice and shot an arrow to dispel the attack buff on Winny again.

“Damn you! DAMN YOU! I WILL KILL YOU! I WILL KILL YOU, BITCH!” Winny screamed from the top her lungs angrily. She quickly drew her bow and shot an arrow towards Wei Yan Er. The red heart-shaped arrowhead pierced into Wei Yan Er’s body.

‘Ding! Player Drizzler received the effect <Mad Love>!’

Unable to control her character, Wei Yan Er turned to Jenny and ran towards her.

<Provoke>!

Zhang Yang casted <Provoke> and <Cripple Defense> on her. He quickly turned his sword back toward the boss. He would only need to temporary pull Wei Yan Er’s aggro. Once the effect wore off, she would regain control.

<Mad Love> effect duration was 12 seconds. Every passing second would increase its aggro towards Jenny. To counter this skill, a tank was needed to control the character’s aggro. Zhang Yang purposely chose the low damage and high aggro skill to cast on Drizzler, to prevent killing her before she could regain her

character's control.

Still, Wei Yan Er could see that Zhang Yang was dealing damage to her and screamed. “Noob tank! A little lighter, would you?! I’m being killed here, you villainous bastard!” 12 seconds went past, and she recovered with her HP reduced by only 1,000 points or so.

The boss then repeatedly used <Rain of Fire>, <Explosion Arrow> and repeated the cycle over and over again.

80%, 70%, 60%!

The battle went on smoothly without any hiccup, and Zhang Yang deepened his understanding to the phrase “One must not fear the godly strength of the enemy, but the imbecile and incompetent partner in battle”. He would never invite any player that he doubted into his party! He could not sacrifice quality over quantity to fill in the slots!

40%, 30%, 20%...

With every 10% HP lost, Jenny the wife provoked the boss, creating a lover's conflict scene, like those typical soap operas!

14%, 13%, 12%, 11%, 10%!

‘Ding! Winny has gained <Transformation> effect. Attack interval has been reduced by 20%. Attack have been increased by 20%!’

Winny suddenly roared to the sky. Her body started to grow larger, tearing apart the maid uniform, revealing the furry body of a huge werewolf. She stood slightly higher than of a regular man. Her fangs were sharp and pale, carrying a terrifying and intense killing intent.

“Haha! I wonder what would Master Waller think when he sees you in this ugly form!” said Jenny coldly.

Winny could not speak or say anything at all. After transforming into a werewolf, she lost control of her verbal ability, being able to only huff and puff.

“F*ck! What the hell! How could a pretty sexy woman like her turn into an ugly beast?! Ahh... this is bad! I think I’m going to have a nightmare tonight!” Initially, Fatty Han wanted to think about Winny’s voluptuous breasts when he wanted to whack the stick, but that idea was completely blown off when he saw her turning into a beast.

Even though the boss had turn to a frightening beast, it did not stop her from her fate. After only a minute, she wailed and was defeated.

As soon as the boss fell, Winny returned to her human form. She was practically naked with her private parts hidden underneath thin broken pieces of cloth, though her snow white legs and the shape of her breasts could be clearly seen.

Jenny laughed coldly and turned towards the castle.

“What the f-f-f*ck!” Fatty Han could not help but cry out with saliva drooling down his lips when he saw her “naked” form. “I take back what I said about her. This boss died with a bang!”

“Hehehe! I don’t think we could bring the little brat into this dungeon anymore. This dungeon should be tagged 18-SX!” Zhang Yang laughed.

Wei Yan Er bit her lips and said, “Hey! Every day is an 18-SX moment when I wake my cousin up in the morning!”

In a split second, Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots, and Fatty Han all turned to look at Han Yin Xue, imagining her on her bed sleeping, with her blanket knocked off to the floor, wearing nothing but her panties...What a breath-taking scene indeed.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

Han Yin Xue crack her fingers and screamed at the guys. “All three of you must really love for me to pluck your balls off, don’t you?”

“Hahahahahaha! Good one! Open the corpse!” Wei Yan Er seemed to be enjoying her time.

[Sword belonged to Winny’s Lover] (Gray-Silver, One handed sword)

Weapon attack: 310-362

Attack interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 120

<Level 1 slot>

<Level 1 slot>

Equipment Skill: Grants <Lifesteal> effect on the next 3 attacks, restoring the same amount of HP. Last for 10 seconds or 3 strikes.

Cooldown time: 3 minutes.

Level requirement: 30

Note: This sword was a gift by the Defense Army Captain Lothar! Dear, this sword represents our everlasting love!

“F*ck! What kind of mess is this? This is much worse than the 8:00pm TV drama show!” Fatty Han sighed.

“Not bad for a cheating boss!”

There was no other Defender, Guardian, nor Bandit in the party, so the item automatically went to Zhang Yang. In fact, he could get the item if he wanted to; he would just voice it out and no one will object him.

After equipping the new sword, Zhang Yang used a [Level 2 Whetstone] and increased its attack power, raising to (597 – 649) x 110%. The 110% extra damage due to the 5 set equipment he was wearing.

[Small Sack of Gold]

Use: Open to obtain Winny's personal savings.

“Mine! Gimme!” Wei Yan Er cried.

A tiny fight broke out between the two cousins but was eventually won over by Han Yin Xue with 78 points while Wei Yan Er only got 44 points. Han Yin Xue smiled from ear to ear when she obtained the 17 gold coins. On the other hand, Wei Yan Er was wielding her weapon and tip toed towards the boss, trying to imitate Jenny to do something to her sister.

“Was that all?”

They picked up another 88 silver coins and 4 pieces of [Cotton Cloth]. The corpse disappear after.

“Let's move on!” Zhang Yang said. “With the current Level 20 set

equipment, no one was willing to swap their equipment for any helmet, chestplate, boots, or anything else that this Level 30 dropped! Why? Because it will break the set equipment and its effect would not activate. Still, the developer was smart enough to raise the equipment stats! If they want to have players raiding this dungeon, they would have to let the boss to drop some random equipment. The quantity is just few enough for the players to enjoy! However, this way was much better. Originally, rings and necklaces could only be farmed at hidden bosses or field bosses. However, these items can now be found in this dungeon as well! Think of it as a reimbursement!”

Rings and necklaces drop rates were extremely low. Majority of players would still wear the accessories obtained from the Level 10 dungeon. There were players who did not even wear them; leaving their accessories slot empty!

“What’s next, boss?” Han Yin Xue asked since she was born to be a directional idiot.

“It’s a circle! It does not matter if we go upwards or downwards. We could just circle around the garden and we will encounter the other 3 bosses.” Even though Zhang Yang may have said that, he still followed his habit of turning left, following counter clockwise.

There were many minions along the way. After clearing waves of them, the minions changed from a cute maids to large, well-built men. All of them looked like the gardeners of the dungeon, trimming trees and cutting grass before they jumped at Zhang Yang when the party approached them.

[Tough Gardener] (Elite)

Level: 32

HP: 50,000

Still, no matter how strong the minions were, they were unable to survive the attacks by the monster-like party! As Zhang Yang proceed further into the garden, they found the second boss right in front of them.

Standing right beside a huge Red Pine Tree, was a man in his 30's, trimming the branches of the tree by a stool. The scenery was beautiful, as if it was taken directly out of a painting.

[Lexus the Gardener] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 34

HP: 800k

“Ahem!” Zhang Yang cleared his throat, signaling another long explanation.

“This boss doesn't have a super strong skill that requires attention. He would randomly cast fire pits on the field during the battle, and you will receive DoT damage when you step on it! You would need to occasionally check the ground and avoid it.

However, the boss does have a chaotic skill that would cause us to run around. At that moment, there would be a large chance for anyone us to run into the fire pit. This boss' main challenge lies on the healer, but we won't have to worry since we have Little Snow the Super Healer! With her, any boss would be as simple as tofu.

There was one point that Zhang Yang had skipped, which was the powerful physical attack. However, since he had the 2 second cool down <Block> which he could activate any time he want, and if needed, he could activate <Shield Wall> any time as well. There was no reason to be afraid of his attacks anymore! The best bosses to fight with were the ones that had ultra-high attacks but super-slow attack intervals! He would only need to master the timing to activate <Block> and he could basically be free from any damage throughout the entire battle!

That was why the nerfing of <Block> was a huge deal. If it wasn't, all dungeons would be as easy as pressing a button!

Since Zhang Yang had gained so many extra skill points to invest in the skill, he needed to take this chance before the patch to make use of this skill!

Chapter 103: Laxus the Gardener

“Little Snow, I’m counting on you!” Zhang Yang rushed towards the boss to start the battle.

“Argh! What a bunch of rude bastards! Look at what you’ve done to my garden! Oh... my Crescent Moon Flower...” He suddenly stopped talking. The face that the party saw was filled with malice and anger, they could feel the burning rage emanating from him. Laxus lowered the giant scissors in his hand and jumped off the stool. As he approached the party with the anger of a thousand angry men, his face, bulging with blood vessels that looked like they would burst at any time, looked frightening as hell.

“You will pay for your impudent behavior!”

Shush! The boss used <Charge> to dash towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang used <Charge> as well, taking him head on. He screamed, “Don’t start anything yet, I haven’t gotten a hold on his aggro!”

As the both of them slammed against each other, the boss remained unscathed while Zhang Yang was stunned for 2 seconds.

‘-2,137!’

Laxus struck Zhang Yang furiously, dealing extreme damage to him. As circumstances would have it, the boss did not circle

around to hit him from behind, lest the attack would have not been absorbed by the shield, and he would have taken an additional 200 damage!

Once Zhang Yang recovered he had lost more than half of his HP. The Rage he gained filled up, enabling him to chain his skills.

“Attack now!”

<Cripple Defense>!

‘-278!’ <Cripple Defense>.

‘-664!’ Normal attack.

‘-2,546!’ <Horizontal Sweep> critical strike.

‘-1,388!’ <Destructive Smash>.

The skills casted was almost continuous without any pause in between them. If a warrior had enough Rage, the burst damage would not be any weaker than Thief; even more so if the warrior was a Berserker, since the weapons they wielded were two-handed weapons with slower attack intervals. Their attack power was devastating high and their skills damage were much higher than a dual-wield Thief. In any PK fight, if a Berserker was able to chain their skills, they could easily kill off any class!

“Damn boy! That damage is just too much!” Fatty Han cried.

Zhang Yang shook his head. “That was the reason I wanted you to complete the S-level difficulty class quest! This is WAI1!”

“WAI you mother! Don’t go all western with me! I hate in-ge-ri-su!”

Wei Yan Er could only stare at Zhang Yang with envy. Her weapon was a two handed weapon, her normal attack alone was far stronger than Zhang Yang. If she could get her hands on a 200% melee damage skill, her total attack power would increase drastically!

However, the little kid was quickly discouraged. The S-level difficulty quest was just too difficult for her. She had been an impatient and drastic little kid, not having the persistence to slowly kill off the monster in her quest!

“Hey! Noob tank! Why don’t you help me complete my class quest?” Wei Yan Er nudged Zhang Yang.

“I can’t. The quest can only be done by the character alone. Even if you bring me in, the system will automatically deny you entry to the quest zone since this has to be done alone!” If this wasn’t the case, he would have naturally helped everyone in the party to complete their S-level difficulty quest for them to obtain the best possible outcome!

“You can use my account!” said Wei Yan Er with a smug look on her face, staring at him with a patronizing look.

“...Young lady, pray tell, how do I log into your account?”

“I’ll lend you my gaming helmet! You could use my helmet to log into my account!” Wei Yan Er frowned. “How could you be our team captain when you’re this dumb?!”

“BUAHAHAHAHA!”

Everyone laughed.

This little brat was oblivious to the existence of brain waves and the fact that developers had used this scientific phenomenon to bind each account to their respective owners. It did not help that she could blatantly criticize Zhang Yang with a smug on her face.

“Insolent pest! I will burn you alive!” The boss roared. Fiery pits started to roar to life on the ground. The skill was similar to that of Bangar Crypt’s third boss.

Everyone started moving around to evade the fire.

Han Yin Xue immediately casted <Regeneration> on everyone. She kept <Holy Shield> for later use.

“Tremble in the presence of my powers!” Laxus the Gardener let

of a thunderous roar that rivaled the sound of actual thunder! A skull appeared above everyone's head.

‘Ding! Laxus the Gardener had used <Mad Fear>. Lasts for 6 seconds!’

Everyone started to run around randomly in all directions, unable to control their own character. Some were screaming, some were cowering while others ran into the fire in the midst of their haphazard running.

[On Fire]: Receive 800 Fire damage every 3 seconds, for 15 seconds.

‘-2,337!’

Laxus dealt another powerful attack, immediately forcing some to recover from the <Mad Fear>. This skill could be dispelled early before the stipulated duration if a player took damage. The higher the damage, the faster you could recover.

The boss pupils glowed red and the huge scissors in his hands skewered through the air towards Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! Laxus the Gardener has used <Piercing Blade>!’

<Block>!

Zhang Yang could not afford to receive any damage since the healer Han Yin Xue was still on the floor cowering.

With no healer, Zhang Yang had to resort to the skills he had at hand.

Zoom!

Zhang Yang activated the sword skill effect. The sword gave off a blood red glow and Zhang Yang quickly attacked the boss with all his highest attack skill.

‘-1428!’ <Destructive Smash>.

‘+1429!’

‘-1399!’ <Horizontal Sweep>.

‘+1399!’

‘-657!’ Normal attack.

‘+657!’

Zhang Yang activated <Lifesteal> and completely recovered all his HP in an instance.

6 seconds passed and the effect of <Mad Fear> had worn off. Everyone returned to their positions and attacked. Little Snow begun to heal the party.

As expected of Han Yin Xue the Super Healer. With only a few healing spells, she had healed everyone till full health.

“It’s time for an IQ test!” Fatty Han cried.

“Hahaha! With your level of intelligence! What kind of questions can you ask? For 3 year old? 5 year old?”

Everyone was calm. Even after the commotion, none of them had lost their composure.

Fatty Han scoffed. “Haha! It shall be for 7 years old and above!”

“Come! Give it to us!”

“Here’s the situation. There were two men and two women stranded on an inhabited island. They waited for a rescue but there were no boats passing by! Now, it was hopeless to just wait there so they wanted to do something to pass the time; to have an orgy in the middle of the night!”

“...Fatty, are you giving us an IQ question, or are you just trying to show off your perverted-ness?”

“Hey! At least listen to what I have to say!”

“Finish it then...”

“Hmm. Hmm. Here is the problem. But they cannot just do it since they might spread STD! So, everyone started to find some rubber! But here’s the real problem! Both of them wanted to have a two-way so, here’s the question for you guys! What could they do to make sure everyone stays safe?”

“Fatty Han!” Han Yin Xue and Wei Yan Er screamed at Fatty Han through their teeth. Sun Xin Yu on the other side was only focused on attacking the boss with no visible changes to her expression.

Zhang Yang and Hundred Shots on the other hand were not at all offended by such indecent topics. In fact, they were actually taking the problem seriously, racking their brains.

After some time, Zhang Yang laughed. He said, “I know the answer!”

“Hey idiot! If you ever think of saying anything to corrupt my Yan Er, I’ll personally smash your face in!” warned Han Yin Xue.

Zhang Yang laughed even louder. He then said, “Alright, how do I put this delicately...Ah hah! Gloves! Man A puts on glove number 1 and then puts number 2 gloves over glove number 1! He will then erhm...hold hands with Girl A. After that, he will take off glove number 1 and hold Girl B’s hands. Man B will then put on glove

number 2 and hold Girl B's hand. After putting on glove number 1 and holds Girl A's hand."

"Woah there stud! Looks like my Little Yang here has the potential to be a cheating bastard!" Fatty Han laughed.

"Alright! Enough with gloves, focus on the boss!"

Lexus tried to hit Zhang Yang with his powerful attack but Zhang Yang utilized his <Block> that only needed 2 seconds to cooldown to completely turn himself invulnerable to the boss. Even after changing into his wolf form, Lexus was unable to endure the party's immense firepower and fell defeated after a short while.

"Phew...In my own humble opinion, I think that so far, of all the bosses we've encountered in Hardcore Mode, this was the easiest!" said Hundred Shots.

Zhang Yang smiled without commenting. The only reason he could say that was because of Zhang Yang's unparalleled skills as a tank and a Guardian. If anyone else could replace him, and have more a than 5 second cooldown time for his <Block>, Hundred Shots would quickly change his mind..

"Time for the spoils!" Wei Yan Er walked up and opened the corpse.

[Gardener's Proposal Ring] (Gray-Silver, Ring)

Vitality: +15

Intelligence: +15

Use: Increase Magic critical by 2%

Level requirement: 30

Everyone exchanged looks.

“How much of a slut could this Winny be?!” Fatty Han sighed.

“She could have everyone in this garden falling for her!”

“I’m telling you. Not even the TV series in Taiwan about family drama could be as complicated as this! Winny could even be eligible for the mainland’s ahem romantic action movie!”

“Attention to all bosses in the Garden! Please put on safety GLOVES when SHAKING hands with Jenny. . and put a few more on over it just in case! You don’t want to contract any HANDS disease!”

The three guys joked around and laughed heartily. Even guys could gossip sometimes. However, their jokes were wasted on Han Yin Xue as she rolled her eyes, while Sun Xin Yu remained stoic and unfazed.

The ring automatically fell into Han Yin Xue's hands. She put it on and gained a slight increase in stats.

[Smithing Recipe: Garden Scissors]

Use: Teaches you how to make a [Garden Scissors]

Requirement: Amateur Smithing.

“Is this...bad? Or good?”

“Don't mind that first. Just roll the dice and use it!”

The only players in the party who had learned Smithing were Wei Yan Er and Zhang Yang. Both of them rolled and Wei Yan Er obtained the item. She quickly patted it lovingly.

[Garden Scissors] (Special Item)

Item description: Allows an extra 1% success rate to harvest an additional herb during harvesting.

Requirement: Herbalism.

“Hmm...this is good. Sort of. Additional herbs are like additional minerals, they are considered to be rare items. Farmers would love them. Little brat, you should start making a bunch of this item and

sell it. You might not earn a fortune but at least you can raise your mastery level with this recipe. Talk about killing 2 birds with 1 stone!” said Zhang Yang.

Wei Yan Er did not look like she heard him. She did love the concept of getting rich, but she had no patience for it. She would have died of boredom if she was somehow forced to sit down, making items for days like Zhang Yang did.

“Let’s get a move on!”

“Hehehe...I have another IQ test for you lots!”

“Shut up!”

1WAI-In the conversation, Zhang Yang used English language in his speech. WAI = Why.

Chapter 104: Defense Army Captain Lothar

The party continued circling the garden in counter-clockwise. As they moved on, the minions they encountered were slowly transitioning from simple gardeners to full-on werewolves.

[Werewolf Guard] (Elite)

Level: 34

HP: 50,000

These type of monsters were technically stronger, as they had healing abilities which could heal them by 20,000 HP in one spell. However, Zhang Yang countered their healing with his <Destructive Smash>, reducing their healing amount down to 5,000 HP.

As they cleared all the monsters along the way, they obtained 4 Black-Steel equipment, and a bunch of [Cotton Cloth].

They arrived at the third boss after 10 minutes.

[Defense Army Captain Lothar]

Level: 34

HP: 800k

“Little Yang, are we doing this fast enough? Or are we falling behind?” Fatty Han was worried that they could not obtain the First Clear Achievement as they had been fighting for at least an hour.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “Don’t worry about us. I’m sure by now the other parties are still getting themselves killed over and over again at the entrance where the butler is. They do not know that they are supposed to kill the other bosses first.

This was one of Zhang Yang’s best perks in being reborn. In his previous life, Mark the Butler had killed every single exploration team that had entered, continuously, for two days! So, in protest, those “victims” complained on the official forums, claiming that the developers had placed an undefeatable boss to stop players from advancing! However, the officials only responded by saying that everything has gone as planned and asked them to carefully think outside the box. After that, players returned to the dungeon to fight and when they could not endure it anymore, they tried skipping the first boss to fight the other bosses first. In the end, they had found out that every boss taken out reduced the butler’s HP and attack. They had unintentionally found the secret to defeating the boss, swiftly claiming the First Clear Achievement.

You could say that the hardest part of the dungeon was to find out which boss to fight first!

When everyone heard Zhang Yang's explanation, everyone grinned evilly. Even Sun Xin Yu the Ice Queen curled the edges of her lips. It was a pity that no one could see her completely covered face.

"Alright! Now, it is time for me to explain the attack plan!" Zhang Yang clapped his hands together for everyone's attention.

"This boss has a hidden ability, to transform into a 'Grandmother Wolf'!"

"Grandmother... wolf? As in, the story of the little red riding hood?"

"Exactly! During the period of that form, he will ignore whoever that's holding aggro, and start chasing after a random player! This goes on until the skill's effects end, or when the unfortunate player gets killed. The selected player will turn into 'little red riding hood'. You will not be able to use any skills at all! The only option is to run for your life!"

Han Yin Xue raised an eye brow and asked. "I'm guessing that the player's movement speed will be slower than the boss."

"Correct!" Zhang Yang nodded. "That is why everyone needs to attack the boss, and stand in his path at the same time. We must try our best to slow the boss down by blocking his way! In that form, the boss will have a fixed 3,000 attack damage which will not be effected by defense value. That attack comes once every 2

seconds. There's no chance for us to heal or to tank the damage head on. Not even two healers could heal that amount in time!"

"Other than that 'red riding hood' transfiguration, the other skills in his arsenal are mostly meant for the tank. You guys need not worry when it comes to that!"

"Now that everyone knows how easy this is..." Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and prepared to charge, but before he could finish his hanging sentence, Wei Yan Er screamed "Haha! Go! Go! Let's go!"

Zhang Yang sighed. He ignored Wei Yan Er and dashed forward.

"Guards! Guards! Intruder alert!" Lothar looked around. When he could not find any other backup coming to him, he got angry and shouted as he dashed to greet Zhang Yang. "A bunch of lazy bastards! I'll come back later to flay your skin!"

The battle started.

Lothar was a dual wielding, physical attack monster. He wielded shiny white axes in each of his hands. His attack rate was rather fast, causing Zhang Yang's <Block> effectiveness to drop tremendously, as he could only block half of the attacks. However with that speed, the attack power was also lowered. His attacks could inflict about 1,000 damage to Zhang Yang, which was nothing more than 1 healing spell for Han Yin Xue.

97%, 96%, 95%...

“Frost Night! I’ll sink my teeth into your lovely neck!” Lothar roared to the sky and immediately turned into a gray colored werewolf.

Poof!

Sun Xin Yu turned into a little girl with a red cape, a red hood, and a little bamboo basket in her hands.

‘Ding! Defense Army Captain Lothar had used <Run! Little Red Riding Hood>!’

‘Ding! Player Frost Night had received <Little Red Riding Hood Transformation>. Last for 30 seconds!’

“Run! Run now!”

Sun Xin Yu turned around and ran away as fast as she could.

Lothar’s werewolf transformation only took about 1 second. He jumped off his hind paws and started to chase after Sun Xin Yu. However, the moment the boss took his first step, Zhang Yang quickly shifted and blocked off his route. When the skill <Run! Little Red Riding Hood> was in effect, the boss would only be fixed on chasing after the targeted “Little Red Riding Hood”. If anyone were to stand in front of him, blocking his path, the boss would have to move around the player to proceed, delaying his time in

reaching the target.

“Could we just stand around the boss to block him completely?” Han Yin Xue thought that it would be a better idea.

“No, we can’t do that. If the boss could not track any paths to move on, he will jump and close the distance to his target instantly!”

Zhang Yang tried his best to block the boss path while trying to maintain his DPS on the boss.

This round, it all depended on the capability of the targeted player. Fatty Han would most definitely fail this. He could not keep up with Sun Xin Yu’s pattern of running. Her path was mostly based on the boss’s own movement she managed to stay behind the boss, keeping him circling endlessly. Hundred Shots and Han Yin Xue performed quite well while Wei Yan Er was even better than the both of them. She was almost on the same level as Zhang Yang!

“Not bad little brat!” Zhang Yang complimented.

“Hehe! When I was a kid, I was always good at playing the game ‘Eagle catching the chicken’!” said Wei Yan Er happily.

“When you were a kid? That must have only been a few days back!” Zhang Yang laughed wildly.

“Stupid! Idiot! GYAA!” Wei Yan Er cried out in anger. “Ask my

cousin if you don't believe me!"

"Oh. That's right, she had not been playing this game for a while now!" Han Yin Xue suddenly giggled. "For at least 10 days I think!"

At first Wei Yan Er nodded her head in agreement with her cousin's statement before her could hear the other half of it. But when the other half followed, she cried out and scolded, "Han Yin Xue! What are you blabbering about! I'll poke your tits later!"

"..."

30 seconds later, Lothar regained his human form and resumed the initial state of aggro prior to his transformation, attacking Zhang Yang first.

After a short fight; the boss only lost 4% HP before he used <Run! Little Red Riding Hood> for another 30 seconds. This time, the selected player was Han Yin Xue. She froze, like a deer caught between headlights, before stiffly turning around to run, her quarrel with Wei Yan Er completely forgotten.

Wei Yan Er was ecstatic! She did not even bother to block the boss. She only ran after the boss excitedly, hacking at its rear end like a slavedriver. "Haha! HIAH! Go! Wolf! Faster! Bite her! Hahaha! Bite her head off!"

Han Yin Xue ran like a madwoman, shrilly screaming at Wei Yan Er. "Stupid little brat! The next time you get turned into the red

riding hood, don't expect me to heal you!"

"BLEH~~" Wei Yan Er stuck her tongue out, pulling down one of her lower eye lids to Han Yin Xue.

The boss would use this skill every 30 seconds or so. This battle had turned from a trading of blows into a game of tag.

80%, 70%, 60%... the boss HP dropped gradually and when the skill was activated for the fifth time, the unlucky player was Fatty Han!

Transforming into a little girl, Fatty Han ran haphazardly like a wild chicken, without looking out for the boss. It wasn't long before his random running sent him smacking into the boss!

Bang! Bang! Boom!

Since Hunters did not have any attack reduction skill, and even if they did, Fatty Han was locked out from activating it! Han Yin Xue could not heal him in time and Fatty Han was killed off instantly.

'Ding! Player Slim and Handsome had died!'

"Stupid Fatty! It's time for you to lose some weight!"

"Haha! It's useless for him to lose weight! He actually bumped into the boss! GAHAHAHAHA! It's so funny!"

Everyone laughed.

However, Zhang Yang was the only one who sighed quietly. Fatty Han's skills and capabilities were not as good as the real professionals. As the difficulty of dungeons went higher, his performance would suffer even further. He had been performing well in the past dungeon since it was only a race of attacking. But now that dungeons involved moving strategically or other dungeon gimmicks, he would not be able to keep up with the difficulty!

Furthermore, his incompetence was becoming more prevalent. So far, the party consisted of people like Hundred Shots and Sun Xin Yu. These were future superstars. Han Yin Xue had already easily beaten the S-level difficulty quest while Wei Yan Er's performance was not as consistent. However, she could easily be among the professionals with a little bit of training. While everyone else was improving, Fatty Han was the only one who was lagging behind. If this continued, Fatty Han alone could single-handedly drag the entire team down with him!

Zhang Yang recalled his earlier epiphany today: "One must not fear the godly strength of the enemy, but the useless imbeciles and incompetent partners in battle!" Even if everyone was happily laughing and playing along with each other now, the moment Fatty Han showed signs of being the weak link of the party, people would inevitably start to have negative thoughts of him! Once it would drag on longer, the team would literally be split apart! Since Fatty Han was a prideful man, he could make a mess out of it!

What can I do about it?

Zhang Yang cracked his head to think of a solution and had finally found one. He would find a perfect opportunity to have Fatty Han lead another team!

40%, 30%, 20%!

With Fatty Han dead, the boss HP reduced slower but it was still steady. Technically, there was no time limit to kill a boss. The party could merely consist of a tank and a healer to clear this boss.

After 3 minutes, the boss fell lifeless.

After being revived by Han Yin Xue, Fatty Han walked over to the boss and kicked it furiously.

The boss had been picking out players randomly but why he was the only person who died when he was picked!? This infuriated him so.

“Pervy Fatty! You are such a noob!” Wei Yan Er spoke out directly.

Zhang Yang noted her statement, and attempted to divert the topic, “Little brat, if you’re not opening the corpse, I’m moving on now!”

“Ah! Wait! I’ll open it now!” Distracted, Wei Yan Er ignored Fatty Han and quickly headed to the boss.

[Waverly Heart] (Gray-Silver, Necklace)

Vitality: +15

Dexterity: +15

Equip effect: Increase <Take Aim> damage by 50%

Level requirement: 30

Note: “Lothar, my love to you is as deep as the ocean!” by Chief Butler Mark!

“WHAT THE F*CK! WHAT THE HELL DID I JUST READ?!” Fatty Han screamed at the top of his lungs.

Chapter 105: Young Master Wrath

“What on earth is happening?!”

“There’s even a Brokeback Mountain dude here too!”

"A cheating woman, and the star of Brokeback Mountain! This is even better than that TV drama at 8pm!"

With a serious look on his face, Zhang Yang said: “I’ll say. It’s harder to sort out their relationship than to actually fight them in battle!”

Judging from the attributes of the ring, Hunters and Thieves could both benefit from it. However, <Take Aim> was a Hunter’s Skill, so the special effect within would not be triggered if given to a Thief. Therefore, it would make perfect sense that the ring go to either Hundred Shots or Fatty Han.

[Recipe: Dwarf Potion]

Use: Teaches you to make the Dwarf Potion.

Requirement: Amateur Alchemist.

As Zhang Yang was the only Alchemist among the group of six,

naturally, no one would want to have the item. Zhang Yang pocketed the item and posted the properties of the Dwarf potion for all to view.

[Dwarf Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Incredible! You have turned into a dwarf! Effect last for 3 minutes.

Cooldown time: 10 minutes.

Level requirement: 10.

“It does not seem to have great effects, but it’s definitely great for entertainment purposes!” Zhang Yang laughed.

“It seems fun! Noob tank, please make a few hundred for me!” said Wei Yan Er, greedily assuming that Zhang Yang would actually do that.

Zhang Yang laughed dramatically before replying, “I think that you need a Growth Potion instead of a Dwarf Potion!”

“What! Why would you say that! Gyaaah! I’ll kill you myself!” snarled Wei Yan Er furiously.

The party then continued forward unto their journey to locate the last boss.

Along the way, the number of minions increased. Zhang Yang found it annoying to kill them off one by one. Thus, he decided to just kite them all at once. Instantly, he dragged around 20 monsters and killed them. Under the attack of so many monsters, Zhang Yang's set equipment effect triggered so quickly that it rivaled even a healer!

Zhang Yang had been "One Straight Flushing" the monsters for 3 times and before they finally arrived at the fourth boss area.

This time, it was not just one boss in the arena, but five of them! One big boss, surrounded by 4 mini-bosses. Yes, this time, the Boss was a 20-year-old youth, surrounded by four beautiful, enchanting maidens. The lad appeared to be most contented.

[Young Master Wrath] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 34

HP: 400,000

The four maidens were Victoria, Emma, Merainy and Melanie, all Level 32, with 100, 000 HP respectively!

“The number of the enemies, seem a little bit more than we expected!” Han Yin Xue stared intently at Zhang Yang with narrowed eyes, “Can you handle them?”

“Little Yang, pretty Little Snow is suspecting your capabilities! Hahaha!” Fatty Han laughed.

Without any comeback for Fatty Han, Zhang Yang simply shook his head and said, “They may seem to have upper hand on numbers, however, we do not have to face them head on! The Boss does not have any skills of his own. Our main focus should be on the four maidens, each of them possess a unique skill. If any one of them dies first, the Boss will acquire the skill of the fallen maiden, healing 25% of his health points at the same time! Furthermore, the Boss will have 200% of the skill effects he acquired! But, the Boss will only be able to acquire 3 skills. When the forth maiden dies, the Boss will abandon the first skill he acquired.”

“So... we should take care of the boss first?” Hundred Shots asked immediately.

“No!” Zhang Yang shot down the suggestion, and explained further. “The Boss would instantly gain invincibility when he has 1% HP left if we attack him without taking out the four maidens first. The Boss would be undefeatable! ”

“Then we can only take care of the little ones first?”

“Yes!” Zhang Yang nodded, “But, we have to bear in mind that the sequence of the skills the boss acquired will determine the

difficulty of the Boss battle, because each of the maidens possess different type of skills. Victoria is a healer, giving the Boss a boost of 10,000 HP for every three seconds. Emma is a Spellcaster with the <Chain Lightning> Skill. She can cast her skill every two seconds, hitting up to four targets at a time. The first hit would do 500 damage, before jumping to the next target, which is reduced to 400 damage, and so on. Merainy deals physical attacks with <Bleeding> effects that makes her target bleed, inflicting 1,000 damage every two seconds. Melanie also deals physical attacks, but with a different effect known to be the <Traumatize>. This skill basically does not pose any threat to the enemy. Only one negative effect is forced onto the target. When the target has the <Bleeding> effect, the target would receive 50% more damage!”

On second thought, Zhang Yang did not want his party members to be too dependable on him, so unlike his usual procedure of laying out a strategy after his briefings he remained silent this time. After all, Zhang Yang only got to Level 179 in his previous life, not to mention that there were more dungeons with higher difficulties to be challenged in the future. If the party members never start thinking up battle strategies, Zhang Yang was certain that it would be a disaster by then.

“So what do you guys think? Who do we start on first then?”

“We take down the healer first! Healing once gives it 10,000 HP, and it would become 20,000 HP when the Boss acquires it. So we should force the Boss to abandon this skill in the end by the time the maidens are dead!” Fatty Han seemed confident in his decision.

“Hmm.” Hundred Shots nodded to agree with Fatty Han.

Well, it is a common strategy to take out the healer first.

“Take out Merainy first, then Melanie!” Sun Xin Yu cut in. She fell silent soon after as they turned to her.

Wei Yan Er clasped her hands together in agreement, “True, either Merainy or Melanie should be taken out first, and leave one of them to be killed last. The <Bleeding> effect increases 100% damage every time it is cast. If one skill is stacked one with another, it would be 4,000 HP lost in a single tick. Any more stacks than that would kill off our noob tank!”

Zhang Yang silently agreed. To take down this Boss, the most important thing was to prevent the Boss from having both <Bleeding> and <Traumatize> skills. Otherwise, any tank below Level 40 would never make it!

Han Yin Xue joined in and said, “Melainie’s <Traumatize> alone could not do much damage to as compared to the <Bleeding> effect that Merainy has. So letting the Boss acquire the skill for a bit longer will not become a problem for us!”

“Fatty and Hundred Shots, both of you are not seeing the big picture! Hahaha!” Zhang Yang laughed hard. “Indeed, we should kill both Merainy and Melanie, either first or last. Killing Merainy first would be a bit easier then killing Melanie first!”

Wei Yan Er was pleased with her idea being recognized by Zhang Yang. She made a funny looking face at Fatty Han and Hundred

Shots, and she giggled.

“Take out Merainy first, and then we take out Emma, then the healer Victoria. We should leave Melanie as the last to kill!” Zhang Yang made a final statement before letting the party rush into battle.

“The healing spell can be interrupted, so, those who have their interruption skills ready to cast, just do it! Better than none!”

Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword. “Little Snow, cast a shield on me. I’m going in!”

Han Yin Xue waved her hand, casting <Holy Shield> on Zhang Yang. A translucent magical shield appeared on his character.

Zhang Yang charged forward, in just an instant, he was already within the aggro range of those monsters!

”Assassins! Assassins are here! Protect the Young Master!” The four maidens cried out loud, charging towards Zhang Yang.

As the distance got closer, Zhang Yang activated <Charge> and dashed toward Merainy. With a full swing of his sword, he dealt a damage of 578. As his Rage gauge increased to 41, he swept his <Horizontal Sweep> outwardly, inflicting a series damage that exceeded a thousand damage.

Even though they have seen it many times, everyone would still

be lost in awe of his devastating melee combo.

“That skill is just too strong! 200% melee damage with area effect! That’s insane!”

“Wuwuwu. Noob tank, I want to use <Horizontal Sweep> too!” Wei Yen Er cried out.

Zhang Yang used <Block>, quickly following up with <Thunder Strike>, locking on the aggro. After that, he turned his focus to Melanie. He stacked five layers of <Cripple Defense> and a series of <Destructive Strike> to reduce the healing rate.

Victoria had no physical attacks. When the battle commenced, she first healed Young Master Wrath and then she turned towards Merainy, healing her like no tomorrow.

Pow pow pow!

Every other monster landed their attacks on Zhang Yang. <Chain Lightning>, <Bleeding>, with a number of additional melee attacks lit up the battle. However, the damages from the minions were weaker, and since the Boss was known as a spoiled young master who did not possess any skills of his own, his attacks were as weak as the other monsters. There was nothing to worry about.

Everyone else locked their target at Merainy and attacked with everything they had!

Zhang Yang intentionally did not remind the party about interrupting the healer. The three party members with the skills to interrupt did not disappoint Zhang Yang, as they had already discussed on the chain of order on whose turn was it when it came to interrupting. The interruption started with Fatty Han as the first, secondly by Hundred Shots, followed by Sun Xin Yu.

All skills involved had the effect to interrupt, however, it was clear to see the difference of skill levels and the experience among the party members through the manner and the timing of their skills.

Fatty Han used his skills to interrupt the moment he saw the healer starting to cast the healing spell; on the other hand, Hundred Shots waited for the maiden's progress bar to be half-filled before he interrupted, while Sun Xin Yu would interrupt at the exact moment when Victoria finish reading the spell.

The three of them had different senses.

It did not matter if it was <Silencing Shot> or <Low Kick>, the effects were similar. The targets would be interrupted from casting their spells, making them unable to cast their spells again for the next three seconds!

As it took 3 seconds for Victoria to chant the spell before casting it, Fatty Han only managed to delay the monster from healing for 3 seconds since he interrupted almost instantly. Hundred Shots would score at least 4 seconds as he waited for Victoria to read the spell for approximately 1 second. Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu would not only manage to counter Victoria for 3 seconds, but also causing

her to waste almost 3 seconds as she interrupted after the maiden almost finished reading the spell, delaying her for up to almost 6 seconds!

Zhang Yang could not be any prouder. As expected of the Queen of Shadow Dance!

With a 75% decrease in healing effect after receiving <Destructive Smash>, Victoria could only heal her target by 2,500 HP. It was obvious that the healing effect was thoroughly surpassed by the damage done by Zhang Yang and his party members! With or without healing, Merainy's HP dropped as fast as an open hydrant!

After approximately 100 seconds, Merainy had finally been taken down to zero! She let out a scream, saying, "Young master, allow me to give you my last drop of blood to fulfill my loyalty to you!"

Boom!

She transformed into a pillar of light and merged into the forehead of the Young Master Wrath.

"Ding! Merainy has used <Dying Loyalty>!"

"Ding! The Young Master Wrath has acquired a new skill: <Bleeding>, and under his grief, the effect of <Bleeding> has increased by 100%!"

With one maiden down, the party felt the sense of urgency! With

the <Bleeding> effect increasing by 100%, Zhang Yang would receive double the damage from <Bleeding>! That was 1,600 damage every tick!

Everyone stuck to the plan. They immediately turned their assaults toward Emma.

In no time, Emma suffered the same fate as Merainy.

“Young Master, allow me to offer you my last drop of blood to prove my loyalty to you!”

“...”

The similar scenario as the previous maiden unfolded, continuing with Victoria, lastly followed by Melanie.

As mentioned earlier, when the four maidens are dead, the Boss would regain 25% of his full health. So it was expected that the Young Master Wrath would be at full health again when they went up against him after all the maidens had fallen!

The Boss had 3 skills at the moment: <Healing>, <Lightning Chain>, and <Traumatize>.

Proceeding into stage 2, let the battle begin!

Chapter 106: Irresistible

“Unforgivable Bandits! You killed all my beloved maidens! I shall rip you all into tiny pieces that even God cannot count!” Young Master Wrath let out a roar that would awaken the gods in the heavens, as his body began to increase in mass, “Plak Pak Plak”, the tearing of his clothes as his body bulged out revealed that there were dark long hairs covering his entire body. The handsome, pretty boy’s face instantly transformed into an enormous Werewolf!

“Ding! Engulfed by rage, Young Master Wrath transformed into his werewolf form, his attack interval decreased by 50%!”

“Rawgh -----!” The Young Master Werewolf mindlessly charged towards Zhang Yang with his deadly, powerful claws. Leaving Zhang Yang with no other options, Zhang Yang back-pedaled rapidly, evading the deadly attack by a paper-thin margin. At the same instant, he swung his sword in retaliation, managing to make a scratch on the Boss.

Fatty Han decided to step up on the assault! He started to unleash his heavy skills onto the Boss!

“Rawh! Rawh! Raaawwh!” The Young Master Werewolf kept on roaring in rage, as if he was speaking in the language of the werewolves. He ceased on his melee attacks and switched to the <Chain Lightning> skill.

2 breaths later, he shot out a bolt of white thunder from his

hands. The blazing thunder struck Zhang Yang, inflicting a damage of 800. The thunder chained next onto Sun Xin Yu, inflicting a damage of 900. The bolt leaped at Wei Yan Er, with the damage decreasing to 800. Lastly, the attack landed on Han Yin Xue, the final strike diminished to only 700.

After the chain attack, Wei Yan Er hastily cast <Holy Prayer> on Zhang Yang, healing him by 600 HP. She quickly did the same to the other victims of the <Chain Lightning>. She tossed <Regeneration> on the remaining players off-handedly, keeping their HP bars filled. Showing great foresight, she had reserved her <Holy Shield> as a last resort.

Although Young Master Wrath had indeed become mighty, spurred on by the demise of his harem, his hit points were his Achilles Heel. 400,000 hit points was simply not enough to go against Zhang Yang and his party. Phase two had only begun for about 30 seconds, and the hit points of the Boss had already been reduced to 88%!

“Rawh! Rawh! Rawh! Raawwhh!” As the Boss let out another series of intimidating roars, a progress bar appeared right below his neck! He was trying to cast <Healing>!

With immediate reaction, Fatty Han shot a <Silencing Shot> over to the Boss, interrupting the boss from chanting.

Young Master Wrath was even further enraged. He bounded towards Zhang Yang slashing wildly with his claws. He immediately switched back to chanting his <Chain Lightning>.

So this were the disadvantages for having multiple skills! If the Boss focused only on chanting <Healing>, although he cannot avoid being pushed around, he could buy himself more time! However, due to having 3 different skills in the game, the game setting has set up the Boss to use all three skills circularly!

Even if the enemies in this game had been equipped with a sophisticated AI, and Bosses acting almost humanly, the sequence was set as so! So, if the Boss was interrupted while chanting <Heal>, he would switch to a few melee combo attacks, and then he would use <Chain Lightning>, before enhancing his attacks with <Traumatize>. The Boss would repeat the process all over, starting from <Healing> again!

The whole process only takes 5 to 6 seconds long, of course.

The second cycle of <Healing> by the Young Master Wrath was interrupted by Hundred Shots, and the third round of <Healing> was interrupted by Sun Xin Yu. However, when it came to the forth cycle, Fatty Han was unable to follow up. His <Silencing Shot> was still under cooling down period of 9 seconds. That was it! The Boss finally got his opportunity! It was as if the Boss had been suffering from constipation for the last 6 months, and that moment of relief was torrential!

“+5,000!”

It was quite a high recovery amount for the Boss. Still, the special effect of <Destructive Strike> had removed 75% of the healing

effect, therefore, what that would have granted the boss 20,000HP only gave him 5,000HP now.

However, the healing rate of 5,000HP was already enough to take away the breaths of all the Priests and the Sacred Knights! Still, considering the fact that the <Healing> spell could only be triggered successfully every 30 seconds, the healing rate per second was barely over 200! The damage output from the party was over 400! His attempt to heal himself was just like pouring a cup of water into a burning cart of firewood!

The HP bar continued dropping! 70%, 60%, 50%!

“Kill! Kill! Kill! Don’t hold back now! Give it all you got!” Fatty Han spammed his <Beast Link> at a rate that it was perpetually kept on cooldown! Relying on his Level 30 class’ passive skill, the damage he gave was pretty high indeed!

“Hey Fatty, why are you so pumped up all of a sudden? Did the boss poke your ass?”

“F**k this pretty face! I only have one pretty lady on my side, and this pretty boy has, wait... had four! I won’t forgive him!”

Everyone could only roll their eyes, to think that Fatty Han would be jealous of such a matter!

“Wow, Fatty is doing great... He is now the third on the damage statistics board!” Zhang Yang was surprised.

Wei Yan Er hurriedly checked on the list upon hearing that. Her jaw dropped.

[Damage Statistics]

Zhan Yu, 25%

Frost Night, 19%

Slim and Handsome, 19%

Drizzler, 19%

Hundred Shots, 18%

It made sense for Zhang Yang to be in the first place of the list, for Zhang Yang cleared a large number of weaker monsters with <Horizontal Sweep> and <Thunder Strike> during the Stage 1 battle, picking up lots of extra high damage points.

What about Sun Xin Yu? She did not use <Blade Dance> even once, how could she be one rank ahead? Wei Yan Er could not comprehend how.

Furthermore, Wei Yan Er managed to use <Tornado Cleave> for a

few times during the Stage 1 battle, similarly picking up some extra damage points. However, her ranking was beaten by Sun Xin Yu, one rank above her.

At that very moment, Wei Yan Er felt the heat of adrenaline and anger, swinging her heavy mace with more gusto than ever! Her fury could not be any clearer! “You stupid Boss! I am going to crush you into pieces! Then I’ll crush those pieces into pancake!”

Good camaraderie did not count anymore when it came to a competitive situation! Every party member was fighting for their pride, with no one willing to be one step back. Every point counted, as some tried to surpass the players above their ranking. Likewise, those who were ahead were equally unwilling in letting those behind them catch up!

The unfortunate werewolf boss was a collateral, caught in the midst of this internal conflict. He was beaten to the point where he could only scream miserably, hardly able to retaliate! Instead of unleashing his wrath, he became the very punching bag for everyone to unleash their ire onto.

The HP bar dropped, going down to 30%!

20%!

10%!

0%!

Finally, the last trace of HP vanished! Letting out a roar, loud and long, Young Master Wrath collapsed in an earth-shaking heap. He was finally relieved of his misery!

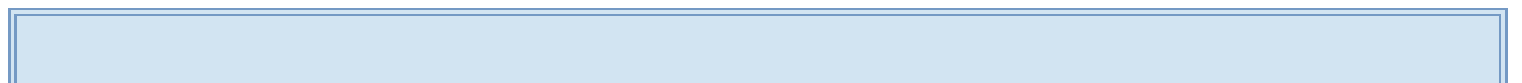
Looking at Damage Ranking Report again, the results were to be expected. Zhang Yang is still in the first place of the list, but his percentage of damage dealt has dropped to 22%.

Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu was the close runner-up, with 21% of total damage dealt. Fatty Han was overtaken by Wei Yan Er, falling to rank number 4. He only managed to score 19% of the total damage dealt. Wei Yan Er managed to climb up to the third place, scoring 20% of the total damage dealt. As usual, Hundred Shots was last in the ranking report, scoring only 18% of the total damage dealt.

Everyone knew Sun Xin Yu had a well-earned reputation. The moment she changed into top-tier gears, she would become the ultimate Queen of Shadowdance that Zhang Yang vividly remembered from his past!

“Sister Sun, how could you always be so awesome?” Wei Yan Er had to ask.

Sun Xin Yu, surprisingly did not ignore her, and posted a skill description for the others to see. “When I was Level 5, I did a secret mission and I was rewarded with this skill!”



<Rear Attacks>: Instantly attack the target with two weapons on both hands, dealing 150% damage of both primary and secondary weapons in melee attacks. User must be behind the target. Gain two consecutive combo strikes. Requirement: Dagger. Cost: 20 Stamina. Cooldown time: 10 seconds.

With tears rolling in her eyes, Wei Yan Er complained “How come all of you guys have these skills from secret missions? Sister Sun has hers, noob tank has one, even this wretched fatty” - she pointed a shaking finger- “has one!”

“Little Yan Er, why did you have to put it that way? What do you mean that even I have one! I am almighty! Completing a few secret missions was a piece of cake!” Fatty Han boldly proclaimed.

“Hmph! I don’t give a sh*t!”

“Come on, little one. It’s time to look at our loot!” Zhang Yang waves his hands at Wei Yan Er.

Wei Yan Er pulled a funny face at Fatty Han, as she would always. Then, she trotted to the dead body of the Boss for the loot.

[Lovely Mantle] (Gray-Silver, Cape)

Vitality: +20

Strength: +10

Equip: Each normal attack has 10% chance to add 20 strength points for 5 seconds.

Level requirement: 30

Note: “Sewn by the four maidens thoroughly, full of their love!”

“I already have a [White Bone Cloak], you guys can go for it!” said Wei Yan Er while curling her lips.

An equipment that purely increased strength was not what a hunter or a thief would want. Therefore, Zhang Yang took the mantle without any hassle.

[The Maiden’s Long Dress] (White-Wood, Cloth Armor)

Equip: Makes you into a cute maiden.

Level requirement: 1

Requirement: Female

“Holy cow! The uniform of seduction!” Fatty Han’s eyes bulged at the sight of it!

Zhang Yang turned to the girls. “Would any one of you like to have it?”

Both Han Yin Xue and Wei Yan Er shook their heads instantly. So Zhang Yang turned to Sun Xin Yu. As expected, the woman stared at him with a cold glare, pulling her daggers halfway from their respective sheaths. “Xing!”

“You guys have no appreciation for treasure! Abandoning such a great piece of fabric!” Fatty Han shook his head dejectedly.

“Cheh! You fat shit! If you like it so much, why not wear it on your own!”

“You guys can forget it then. I can use as a gift for someone!” Since all three of the girls did not want it, Fatty Han benefited greatly from it. It was a wonder whom he would give it to. His new girlfriend, or the few so-called “Soul mates” back in the Feet Wash City? They could only wait and see.

“Finally, we have cleared the small minions, shall we move on to the final Boss then?”

“The Head Butlers of Brokeback Mountain!”

“Very witty...”

If the party went straight ahead, the distance to the final Boss would be shorter, but they would have to take on a few waves of smaller monsters. On the other hand, if they doubled back on the path they've already taken, they would need to walk further, but there won't be any pesky monsters.

After having some thoughts about it, Zhang Yang has finally decided, "It is better to take the shorter route, kill everything in our path! We would gain experience points, additional items and equipment as well!"

"And also coins!" Wei Yan Er added on.

"Yes, coins!" Zhang Yang nodded his head to express his agreement with Yan Er.

The party continued to push forward. After seven or eight waves of monsters, they arrived at the center of the garden, a plaza!

The Head of Butlers Mark remained where he was, languishing on the edge of the fountain pool, with his face filled with tranquillity, like the old aristocrat he was.

[The Head of Butlers Mack] (Gray-Silver Rank Boss)

Level: 34

The boss's HP had decreased considerably, comparing to the first time when they freshly stepped in. It was just about as much as the HP of Marzerway in Hardcore Mode.

Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief, "This Boss does massive damage at melee range, inflicting a debuff that decreases healing effects on tankers by 50%. So, I say we keep an eye on the level of healing while Little Snow reserves her shield! That shield absorbs damage, and has nothing to do with healing at all. It should not suffer as much as healing effects!"

"The boss also tends to knock back the player who holds the most aggro, dealing a certain amount of damage. More importantly, it also decreases the aggro held by his target by 50%!" Zhang Yang let out a deep breath before he continued, "Well, hunters have <Fake Death> and Thieves, their <Vanish> to withdraw themselves from battle to clear their own aggro. So that leaves you, Drizzler, in a dangerous situation!"

"Hahaha! Well, if you fail to keep his aggro onto you, I am going to break your skull myself!" Wei Yan Er cracked her knuckles while saying it.

To be able to keep the Boss at bay, two tanks were required at the scene. But Zhang Yang just could not find any tank who could keep up with the aggro of Sun Xin Yu and the remaining party members. Adding one additional member without the capability to do that would be a completely moot!

”Dear Drizzler, if you do not wish to die, focus on the aggro bar. Do not let it exceed 50% of my aggro!”

Chapter 107: The Head Of Butlers Mack

“Those who are in the same Dungeon as we are now, we are going to take on The Head of Butlers Mack!” It was a sudden announcement posted by Fatty Han in the region channel.

“F*ck off! What are you, a newscaster? Take out the Boss first, duh! ”

“To think that the amazing Lone Desert Smoke is also stuck at the First Boss like we are!”

“Kill! Carry on!”

“Well, shit. What is wrong with the game company? Are they out of their minds? A boss with this much HP, and sky-high damage! It’s impossible for anyone to take it!”

That one comment made by Fatty Han was akin to throwing a fat boulder into a calm lake, stirring up murky waves that broke the surface. The channel became lively all of a sudden! Other parties did not know that they had to go through four mini bosses to be able to stand up to this Boss. Everyone had already been wiped out by this particular Boss dozens of times over!

Repeatedly being defeated, making no progress whatsoever, would certainly infuriate anyone. A comment like that from Fatty Han would certainly provoke a large number of critics!

“You are so mean, wretched fatty!” Wei Yan Er smiled grimly.

Fatty Han had no intention to give in, “So what?”

“Now, everyone will know the methods and techniques to countering this Boss when we are done!” Zhang Yang said it all. If they were remotely intelligent, the other guilds would hopefully catch on Fatty’s comment, and possibly figure out that there were other ways around that butler boss. That meant they could challenge the other Bosses first without going through Head of Butlers Mack.

Wei Yan Er was upset, “You are one hell of a fool, you wretched fat f*ck!”

Fatty Han only remained dumbstruck, “...”

“It is not that a big deal as long as we are the first to clear it!” Zhang Yang pulled out his long sword, “To hell with this! Let’s begin!”

He charged straight into the final battle.

The range of the aggro vision of The Head of Butlers Mack seemed to be vast. From afar, he already detected Zhang Yang’s intrusion! He laughed, “Welcome to the Shadowmoon Castle! Or should I say, you are NOT welcome! How rude, intruding such a beautiful place like that! As a butler must fulfill his duty, I hereby will tear you all into pieces, and make use of the pieces into the

main dishes for dinner!”

Zhang Yang bulldozed through with a <Charge>, smashing into the Boss, following up with a backhanded swing of his blade as he pirouetted on his heels, striking the Boss with ‘-558’ damage. He finished up with <Cripple Defense>.

“What in the world man! This old man is disgusting! Eating human flesh? Eww!” Wei Yan Er followed closely behind Zhang Yang, burning with rage! Her red eyes devilishly narrow, she focused so hard on putting everything she had to the point that she had totally forgotten Zhang Yang’s advice! She did not even spare a glance on the Aggro Bar!

The assault was chaotic, lighting up the boss like a Christmas tree!

Before this battle, everyone had been reserving their energy. When this battle commenced, everyone let loose. They gave it their full power, increasing their damage in any way they could, not letting any opportunity go wasted. They were competing for the damage ranking boards!

Sun Xin Yu was performing on par with Zhang Yang, putting her new equipment to use. She had also acquired a secret mission’s skill that provided a high damage output! More importantly, Zhang Yang was a Guardian, a class built to hold shields as their secondary weapon. Unlike any thief build capable of dual wielding, or a Berserker class with two-handed weapons, Zhang Yang was meant for a very different role.

To have a powerful amount of resistance and defense, one must sacrifice a certain amount of damage output. You would only be left with one hand to strike the enemy with. His skills and equipment used were to make up for his handicap in terms of offense. Now he was being surpassed!

Looking at the damage statistics, Sun Xin Yu had surpassed him by about 1%. Zhang Yang knew, deep down in his heart, that was natural for him to lose to her. When equally well-equipped, Guardians should end up with the lowest damage output among all classes. But still, he could feel it, the unwillingness to lose to others!

Level 100! Zhang Yang was looking forward to it so much! When the first players in their respective classes and jobs reached level 100, they would acquire an “Inheritance”. The inheritance exclusively only for Warrior classes was called the “God of War”. Benefiting exceptionally well from it, Guardians could now equip a two-handed melee weapon in one hand, while still equipping a shield as a secondary!

Having this inheritance would wipe away the intrinsic weakness of Guardian, they would be able to produce a damage output that will not lose to other classes!

In Zhang Yang’s previous game, the inheritance of “God of War” was acquired by God of Flame Roger from the North-America server. That had led him to secure his place as the world’s number 1 Warrior in the game! Even the skills and the will of One Sword Stroke had no place when placed in the front of the almighty

inheritance, the “God of War”!

Several forms of Inheritance happened very often, however, each of the classes had only one true inheritance. In the vast servers of the game that hosted eight continents with billions of players, only 6 lucky players would acquire the one and only Unique inheritance. Other than the one and only Unique inheritance, there were others. Star-tiered inheritance and Moon-tiered inheritance were below the Unique inheritance, with Star being the higher tier. Still, whichever inheritance it was, they were all sacred and rare, not to mention extremely difficult to get. It was definitely as hard as completing a main quest!

In the previous game, Zhang Yang had managed to acquire a Moon-tier inheritance, “King Kong”. In the last part of the mission, he had to summon 5,000 high-tiered members of the Clear Water Guild to slay the mission boss, “The King Kong”! The guild members had unleashed all of their might on the boss for one full day, taking many casualties before they finally put the mighty boss down. They were lucky that the game had a Gaming Capsule. In addition to that, the in-game time and the real time had a difference by the ratio of 3 to 1. If not for these factors, they would not have taken out the boss at all.

Pulling his focus back on what was right in front of him, Zhang Yang swung his blade purposefully, dealing blow after lethal blow.

“Curse you, intruders!” without any warning, the butler pointed his finger right at Zhang Yang, and a dark bolt shot out, striking him almost instantly.

‘Ding! You are affected by the <Black Curse>! Your healing rate has been decreased by 50%!’

Following the prompt voice by the system, the debuff symbol popped up, at the top of Zhang Yang’s head.

With a wave of her hands, Han Yin Xue put <Holy Shield> onto Zhang Yang, ready to cast <Heal>.

Zhang Yang did a quick survey of the battle and noticed something most unfavorable. “Little brat, stop using skills if you don’t want to die! Use normal attack!” Zhang Yang looked at the aggro bar, his aggro value may currently be twice as much as Sun Xin Yu’s, but it would be halved when the boss used <Backward Shock> on him. At this rate, the boss would only use <Backward Shock> on him for another two times at most. After that, the boss would most probably switch his target to the one person who could not clear her aggro bar, Wei Yan Er.

How would she notice when she was single-mindedly giving the boss her all? She did not earlier on, but her hands were saying otherwise, as she swung blow after blow relentlessly!

“I am going to smash you in little pieces that even your mom won’t be able to tell!” The butler yelled, exploding with a fist that flew at Zhang Yang’s face! Bam! It was a concussive blast that sent Zhang Yang 5 meters backward!

‘Ding! You are affected by the <Backward Shock> effect!’

Without loosening up, Zhang Yang immediately used <Charge> to rush back to his former position. He took the opportunity to glance at the aggro bar. Currently, his aggro value exceeded the number 2 in rank, Sun Xin Yu by just a little!

“<Backward Shock> will happen once every 2 minutes. For the coming 110 seconds, Thieves can use <Vanish> while hunters can use <Fake Death> to clear your aggro up.”

Wei Yan Er was never mentioned, so she spoke up, “How about me?”

“Wait for death to come!”

“Oh, so that’s how it is now huh, you shitty noob tank! Picking on me for revenge now!” she continued to cry out loud.

“My little Drizzler, didn’t I tell you to hold back a little? You did not listen!”

80%, 70%, 60%, the HP bar was dropping rapidly! Even though the boss had unusually thick skin, with everyone hitting so hard, the HP loss suffered by the boss was outrageous!

“Begone! You maggots!” Head of Butlers Mack used his <Backward Shock> once again!

At that instant, the aggro value on everyone has changed. Sun Xin Yu, Fatty Han, and Hundred Shots used their respective skills

to clear their respective aggro, leaving them out of the boss' consideration. On the other hand, Wei Yan Er was in a tight pinch! Her aggro was even higher than Zhang Yang's, making her the primary target of the boss!

‘-3129’

With one very heavy and powerful punch, the butler pummelled Wei Yan Er, dealing serious damage.

“Cousin, heal me!” Wei Yan Er maintained her composure, knowing that whenever she received a large amount of damage, her rage gauge would fill up quickly, giving her the opportunity to spam her skills consecutively.

‘+812’

It was Han Yin Xue's attempt of healing Wei Yan Er. However, it was no good. Her HP could not be restored! What she could do was to hold on for a few seconds before she went down to the ground.

“Argh... Noob tank! You suck big time! You couldn't even hold the aggro for me! I hate you!” Wei Yan Er could only lie on the ground like a ragged doll, but it did not stop her from talking.

“Hey, girl! If I hear another f*cking word from your mouth, you don't get to touch the corpse for loots!” Those words had a profound effect on her.

She instantly kept her mouth shut.

Now short of one powerful attacker, the damage done by the party decreased dramatically. They were fortunate though, as their healer was powerful enough to hold on.

Truth to be told, taking out the four mini bosses first did make it easier for them to fight the butler. Even though the decrease in healing rate and the aggro management was a little annoying deal with, it was nothing that a strong party like them, familiar to carefully planned tactics and strategies, couldn't handle. This battle was actually easier than the battles they had previously fought with some bosses.

30%, 20%, 10%.....

The HP bar of the final boss continued plummeting! Just as the HP bar touched 10%, the boss transformed into a werewolf! It may have seemed terrifying, but it was more of a death threat. As he unleashed his final assault, Zhang Yang activated <Shield Wall> to avoid being crushed to death by him.

‘Ding! You and your party members have obtained the First Clear Achievement of Shadowmoon Castle: The Garden Area (Hardcore Mode). As the Captain, please provide the name of your party to be registered on to the Hardcore Mode First Clear list.’

Zhang Yang entered “Lone Desert Smoke”, and the screen was filled with red announcements.

Just as before, they all acquired another new skill point, 10 gold coins and 500 alliance reputation each as rewards.

The guild channel burst into life.

“That’s my beloved guild leader! Acquiring the title for first clear of the dungeon in such short notice!”

“Who was it talking about glory and dominance? Kiss my ass! Well, those guilds are nothing before us, the Lone Desert Smoke!”

“Zhan Yu, please accept me, please have me!”

Han Yin Xue tried hard to stop herself from smiling and glanced sideways at Zhang Yang, “Never expected you to be so favored by others.”

“Pretty Snow, you have no idea at all! Our Yang boy has no interest in girls who are in their 20s, rather, he is into well-developed ladies in shining armor! With all his heart!” Ogling at the hot body of Han Yin Xue without conservation, Fatty Han continued to speak, “He loves mature ladies with incredible hot bodies, just like you. It’s simply irresistible, it keeps him up all night!”

Zhang Yang knew Fatty Han better. That was Fatty Han’s attempt at creating a chance for Zhang Yang to hook up with Little Snow! ----- Well, a plain face like hers would not really matter. Once you’re in bed with the lights out, the shape of the body would

be all that mattered!

“Fatty, you misused the pronoun!” Zhang Yang sighed heavily, thinking to himself. Come on, you fat f*ck, don’t try to be such a lousy matchmaker, I already have someone in my heart!

“Hmph hmph hmph, if you want to hit on my cousin, you will have to go through me!” Wei Yan Er quickly rescued her cousin, as she stepped in between them, with her nose wrinkled up and arms crossed.

Chapter 108: So I See

Lone Desert Smoke has done it again! They got the First Clear Achievement again!

The stream of announcements had sent many parties who were exploring new Dungeons into shock!

What in the world was happening?

During the series of challenges in the previous Hardcore Mode Dungeons, they could see a realistic gap between them and Lone Desert Smoke, even if they ultimately lost. They had managed to push forward until the boss transformed into the fifth stage. If it wasn't for the bloody [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], Lone Desert Smoke would never have stood a chance in finishing the battle. By doing so, the Lone Desert Smoke claimed the First Clear Achievement.

But this time around...there were no excuses! They had not even gone past the first boss yet! How could their party take out 5 bosses? Was there really such a big gap between their capabilities?

Furthermore, they only used 6 players to clear the whole dungeon! The elites from the larger guilds who took pride in their abilities begun to question themselves. Were they really elites in the end? Compared to those formidable members in the Lone Desert Smoke, they were not even half of what they were!

It was such a blow on their pride!

.....

Many of them were infuriated beyond words.

“How can this be? Is our strength so far behind Zhan Yu and his party members?” Perfumed Water was so surprised.

Thorny Rose murmured, “Is that cheap liar really that powerful?”

“No way -----” Snow Seeker’s pretty eyes widened in realization. “Did any of you notice? It was about 10 minutes ago when that Fatty Hunter made an announcement in the region. 10 minutes!”

“Oh, that wretched Fatty?” Thorny Rose could not help herself, shivering from head to toe, “That disgusting Fatty that does have a pair of disgusting eyes. I remember the last time he checked me out, from top to bottom, it gave me such a fright! So I blacklisted him ever since!”

In God’s Miracle, once a player blacklisted another player, that player would not be able to see any news or messages sent by the marked player.

“Me too!”

“So did I!”

A series of voices rose up, 7 out of 10 girls there had blacklisted Fatty Han! If he ever found out about this, would Fatty Han take pride in his great “influence”, or would he burst into tears knowing that he was quickly becoming a renowned pervert!

Snow Seeker smiled bitterly, “The Fatty did mention that they were just about to challenge that Head of Butlers Mack! It sounded like they just got into the dungeon, simply declaring that they were joining the race for the First Clear title! Now that I think of it, there’s more to it than that! This could only mean... what do you guys think about it?”

White Orchid reacted instantly, “Oh! I get it! If the Fatty did not lie, they must have already taken down the other 4 bosses before that!”

Thorny Rose was stumped. “If the boss is over that area, how did they get pass without luring the boss?”

“You will find out once you’ve tried!” Snow Seeker made a prompt decision to walk along the road located at their right hand side. Moments later, she made it into another small alley.

Not even a glance in her direction!

Thorny Rose and the others followed through. They realized that none of them had startled the boss!

“So, it is real! We can make it without a fight!”

And so, they pushed forward, clearing a path straight to the second boss Venneya the Maid, the unfaithful girl.

“Winny the Maid, Master Waller's Lover, Level 34, 800,000 HP!” Moonlight Dancer read out the attributes of the boss.

“So I see!” all of the girls exclaimed!

So this is how it really is! The first boss had 3,000,000 HP, but the second boss only has 800,000 HP, isn't this obvious?

“Sister Snow, you're really brilliant. It didn't take you long to see through their deceit!” Thorny Rose made no attempt at hiding her emotions, admiring and worshiping Snow Seeker. She continued, “Unlike me, having only big boobies without -----“

“Stop it right there! Stop! Thorny Rose, you have no brain, that part is true. But having big boobs? Oh please... do you want to talk about your D-cups in front of Sister Snow's F-cup? B*tch, please. It's totally obvious that yours are no match to hers!” Perfumed Water snapped.

Thorny Rose was furious, “You little c*nt, you better watch out, or I will put a stopper to that hole beneath your underwear with a gigantic cork and turn you into an old virgin for the rest of your life!”

Women seemed to turn into entirely different creatures when no men were around.

“...”

“So I see!”

As for the Sky High guild, they have also discovered that there was a hidden path that led them straight for the Head of the Butlers Mack, defeating the other 4 bosses on their way.

“Guild master, from the looks of it, Zhan Yu and his gang are not that amazing after all. All they did was discovering the shortcut!” one of the guild members spoke out dejectedly.

Sky Shaman shook his head slowly, “If not for the fat Hunter saying it out loud in the channel, we would have never even found out about the shortcut. So, tell me. How long would we have been stuck with the first boss before we even know that there’s a shortcut?”

“Well...”

“We must not be envious of others out of nothing. We must first be clear of our strength when compared to theirs. Then, only can we improve ourselves and overcome our own weaknesses, to catch up or even surpass them! Arrogance that ignore the strength of our rivals would only make us weaker!” Sky Shaman spoke with great insight.

The words were spoken with absolute sincerity. Sky High guild has been known to be one of the top guilds in the world. As many in-game players had been role-playing as powerful leaders for a long run, they might have become a little arrogant in their subconscious.

And from the looks of it, these people needed a slap to wake up and thanks to the Lone Desert Smoke, it happened!

Deep in thought, Sky Shaman could not help himself and wondered, “But, how did Zhan Yu and his party discover the shortcut to go around the first boss? All the Official forum did was to state that there are 5 bosses in this dungeon, and no further explanation was given! 3,000,000 HP is definitely too much for any party to handle. Normally, players would explore for alternatives in taking down the boss, thinking that their reason of failing was because they have not discover the correct ways to defeat the boss! It is just common sense for any of us! But why... why can they think so dynamically, so soon?”

“Guild Master, could there be a Beta player among them?” one of the guild member took a wild guess.

“A Beta player?” Sky Shaman widened his eyes for an instant, remembering that he had heard about it before, from special channels. He knew that a small number of players took part in the beta test before! But, logically speaking, these beta players should not be even allowed to participate in the official release of the game. If they did, they would understand the game so much more due to their prior knowledge of the game. They could simply

conquer all secret missions, main missions, becoming the kings and queens at the front line of the game! It would be so unfair!

The balance of the game would be broken! The Dreamtech company was not so foolish as to ruin their epic game in such manner!

“So what is it then?”

A big question mark etched itself deep within Sky Shaman’s heart.

“ ... ”

“So...that’s how it is!”

The moment they saw the boss again after circling around the map and killing everything else, the members of The Dominator saw the simplicity of the dungeon!

“How could we not see it? We are such morons!” Humbly Gentleman spat on the ground, “He is damn lucky! I can’t believe he found the correct method for this so fast! F*ck! Why must it always him being the first at getting the good stuff! [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]... “

Thinking about the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] scam again, Humbly Gentleman was overwhelmed with feelings of hatred, rage, jealous and even envy of Zhang Yang!

It was a huge market! A truly huge one!

4 gold coins for a bottle, what a rip-off!

Humbly Gentleman had no idea how much Zhang Yang could earn exactly, but there was one thing to be sure of, Zhang Yang was going to make a fortune out of it!

Zhang Yang must not be left to feel full of himself!

Humbly Gentleman narrowed his eyes, before turning his head around, “Sky Key, after we clear the dungeon, I want you to contact with that ruthless bunch, Sword and Fire Mercenary. Put a bounty on Zhan Yu, the reward for every level taken off him will be a 10,000 gold!”

“But boss, isn’t that too much?”

“Too much? You cannot trap a wolf without sacrificing a few children!” Humbly Gentleman put up a cold smile on his face, “It is best to sow discord between Sword and Fire Mercenary and Lone Desert Smoke! Never underestimate those “Scumbags”, they are all masters in what they do, even if they are small in numbers. Once provoked, they will make your life miserable, waiting to ambush you right outside the city wall for every single day. Even if you have 10 thousand members, there would always be a day where you will be alone. That will be when they strike!”

“...”

After the Lone Desert Smoke acquired the first clear title for that dungeon, many parties had commented on the chat channels, “Oh I see! We simply had to circle around! This dungeon is not too difficult, you just had to find the correct sequence on which boss to take out first!”

“Little Drizzler, come and get the share of the loot!” as Zhang Yang shouted at her from afar, he had just finished adding the newly acquired skill point into his <Block>. With the godly skill <Block> at Level 10, he could use it every second! This was going to make things even more interesting!

But it was a pity that this excitement will only last for another 5 months.

Wei Yan Er hopped over, “Let’s see, what comes out of my draw now?”

“Draw a hot chick like Little Drizzler!” Fatty Han was slobbering already.

Listening to Fatty Han call her a hot chick, Wei Yan Er decided overlook his perversion. As she giggled to herself, she fired back, “It’s a pity though, a pretty maiden like myself is special, there’s no one like me, but me!”

Zhang Yang laughed, “Take away your godlike narcissism, and

you’ll be a petite little girl instead!”

The glee Wei Yan Er had quickly dissipated, and she started kicking and punching at Zhang Yang, releasing her tantrum.

While they were at it, Sun Xin Yu had walked up to the boss and touched the corpse.

[Pillar of Courage] (Gray-silver Weapon, One-handed Hammer)

Attack: 149 – 211

Cooldown: 1.5 seconds

Damage per second: 120

< Level 1 Socket 1>

< Level 1 Socket 2>

Equip: For every hit on the target, there is a chance to trigger the effect of <Bleeding from Behind>, 50 points bleeding per second.

Level required: 30

Note: Forged by Head Butlers Mack for the captain of the platoon.

“What!!” Hundred Shots could not stop himself from laughing.

Fatty Han was in hysterics, “If you poke anybody with this thing, they are in for a load of trouble! HAHAHA!”

“An impressive weapon for Thief classes! It’s a pity though, having that name and that effect, along with that amazing description!” Zhang Yang shook his head around.

“So what is so wrong about it?” Wei Yan Er blinked her eyes a few times while asking, with her puzzled face.

“This...”

Everyone was united on one mission only, to protect the pure and untainted seedling. They instantly changed the topic to avoid that.

“Let’s just put this in the guild’s warehouse then. At least 200 guilds out there would aid in increasing the value of a Gray-Silver grade weapon if we put it up for auction!”

Zhang Yang nodded in unison with the others. It was Fatty Han’s suggestion. So, the weapon would be taken by Fatty Han to the

guild to be auctioned. Fatty loved running errands such as this, because when the equipment would be put up on auction, people would call him “Fatty Brother” in a tone of somewhat reverence, and it pleased him greatly so.

“Little Yang, why not use cash for auction?” Fatty Han could not understand it.

Zhang Yang shook his head, “Within the guild, we shouldn’t involve money, it ruins the mood! While handling a guild, we should make everyone feel totally at home! Just think about it. Do you pay your father for the rice you eat at home?”

Fatty Han fell silent. “ ...”

Chapter 109: The End Of The Hot Sale

“Sister Sun! Sister Sun! Please, let me touch it!” Wei Yan Er skipped towards the corpse delightedly. Sun Xin Yu simply wanted to move things on, but it didn’t matter to her on whoever touched the corpse first. So she stepped aside.

Wei Yan Er grinned, before putting her hands upon the cadaver.

[Skill Book: Berserker's Heal]

Use: Teaches the skill <Berserker's Heal>.

Required: Warrior.

“Eh, noob tank, what does the effect of this <Berserker's Heal> do?” Wei Yan Er looked up at Zhang Yang before throwing the question to him.

“This is actually a pretty practical skill, I must say. It depletes your rage to fully heal yourself!” Zhang Yang said. The skill was really extremely practical, but, the skill book had a decent drop rate as well. Almost every Warrior would have one in their hands as they progressed in the game, but to have it at Level 30 was pretty uncommon.

“Oh! Then I shall give it to you since you’re always dying!” Wei

Yan Er did not hesitate at passing on the skill book. For a party, it was most vital for tanks to survive a battle. Although she could be a little mischievous sometimes, but she realized the importance of this.

Naturally, others also passed on the roll. Zhang Yang used it as soon as he obtained the book. Another new skill appeared in his skill set column.

[Berserker's Heal]: Ignite the rage, immediately recovering 100% of health.

Consume: All rage point.

Cooldown: 2 minutes

After picking up another few rags and some coins, the dead body of the Head of Butlers Mack faded gradually.

“Alright, that’s it for today! You’re all free to your own devices!” Zhang Yang took out a [Teleportation Scroll] and tore it up, activating it.

Back in the White Jade City, Hundred Shots, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er went on to continue attempting their class specific quests. Han Yin Xue logged out immediately as healers couldn’t do much without other players to support them in combat.

Zhang Yang carried on crafting some [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] as it had reached its peak market value, every second now counted!

The day passed. Hundred Shots and the others who went on their own missions made no progress. They vowed to go again on the next day.

Sun Xin Yu managed to complete her mission on the third day by afternoon. By doing so, she has become the third party member who completed the mission in S-rank for her profession!

Zhang Yang was overwhelmed with joy ----- This was like a joke! In the China region, there were only a dozen players who managed to complete their S-rank missions of their own profession, and 3 such players were in his own party!

Five days later, Hundred Shots and Wei Yan Er were still unable to overcome the difficulties in their S-rank mission of their own profession. Wei Yan Er had almost gone mad. The frustrating battles with the blue giant had taken such a toll on her that she was nauseous! She could not take it anymore, so she attempted the A-rank mission instead. Of course, she accomplished her mission smoothly after that.

Hundred Shots persisted for another two days before seeing the fact that he cannot complete his missions, no hope at all! So he too had no choice but to attempt the A-rank mission instead. He completed it without a hitch.

At this point, all 6 of the party members had completed their respective Level 30 missions.

When they were gathered, Zhang Yang made a proclamation, “From now on, we will train on our own, unless necessary. This would mean that unless we are raiding dungeons, unless we are taking any missions that require more than a single participant, unless we are hunting field bosses, we shall be working on our own.”

Sun Xin Yu was especially pleased with this, being the eccentric, indifferent person that she was. She was most comfortable working as a lone wolf. Although others did not see the point of doing this, they did not object. It wasn't as if Zhang Yang was disbanding them permanently, they were just going to train separately. That would also give them the freedom to plan their own schedule individually, without the limitation of compromising with others.

Zhang Yang had given much thought over this before he made such an announcement, of course.

Firstly, it would be a waste if they go in a team of six when it came to field leveling! It would be riddled with redundant combatants, and they would only get in each other's paths.

Secondly, it concerned the potential futures of his prospective superstars!

He did not want to interfere in the development of Hundred Shots and Sun Xin Yu's future! One would acquire the Red Dragon pet, while the other would acquire the <Shadow Dance> inheritance. When both of them did so, their accomplishments in the future would be limitless! So, if he intervened too much with their in-game progression, he might even deny them the destinies he had witnessed first-hand.

Zhang Yang had firmly decided to give them more freedom and space! Even though he inevitably affected them both, it was nothing profound. It could still be fixed, everything should fall back into place as they were meant to be.

Zhang Yang only focused on crafting potions over the next few days. He did not lead Fatty Han or Wei Yan Er to training, but urged them to find something they could grind their level with. He had no intentions of letting their levels fall behind! He would not want to see the first clear title for the "Shadowmoon Castle: The Castle Region Hardcore Mode" being taken away by other guilds!

As for himself, he will soon be able to resume his training after the sales of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], currently at its peak, has dwindled down! Furthermore, he already has planned ahead on a few special places for him to grind. He is confident that he would definitely catch up with the others!

After entering Level 30, the amount of experience required to proceed to the next level takes a huge leap! Even if a player stays online everyday to grind, it would still take 3 full days to proceed by 1 level. Dungeons in the castle region were labeled as Level 40 dungeons. Larger guilds would only be able to gather enough

members to take those dungeons on, by the beginning of September.

Furthermore, the bosses in the castle region.... Zhang Yang smiled again, knowing that the first 2 bosses were basically free kills, with the remaining 3 bosses being actual challenges. The forth boss would be so much harder to handle than the third with the fifth boss being an absolute nightmare! As Zhang Yang recalled in his previous life, the 3 bosses had held off every large guild for an entire month!

Knowing all this, he would be able to take his own sweet time.

On the 12th of August, the sales for the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] finally begun to die off. On the 9th, he had sold 5,000 sets, 3,500 on the 10th, 1,800 on the 11th, and finally only 700 sets on the 12th. The sales had finally ended! However, it did not mean that the sales for the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] is completely dead, they had merely stabilized as supply and demand found a singularity.

In the future, he would be able to sell even more than the 90,000 sets that he already did for now. At the moment, the player base from China had a population of 5,000,000, but the number might grow up to 9 billion! A full 9 billion! Even if only 1% of that amount bought the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] from him, that would be 9 million purchases! 450,000 sets!

Of course, it would take another 5 years before the population ever grew that much, a whole different level compared to the 90000sets of sales that he has generated over the brief, brief period

of the past 22 days!

Zhang Yang checked on the amount of savings he have at the moment ----- 34,870,000!

Even if a similar outcome was to be expected, gazing upon that amount with his own eyes still shook him deeply!

In terms of numbers alone, in his previous life, he had only managed to deposit about 40,000,000 into his savings account. This was before taking into account the many hardships he experienced just to get there. But now, this was the result after freaking 22 days! 22 days!

Knowledge is wealth.

Zhang Yang had unconsciously allowed a smile to creep upon his face as he thought about it. It was broader than the sun now. It was also a relief, as he only needed to craft 500 - 600 sets of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to satisfy the market's current demand. It also meant that he only had to dedicate an hour a day, crafting potions to make that future happen. The final product would be divided among the 8 main cities to be sold, and the price will drop from 4 gold pieces for one bottle to 1 gold piece for each. However, the price for the herbs will also drop down to 20 silver pieces a set, consistent to the old price margin. He could still benefit from it.

In this period of time, Zhang Yang had naturally earned the most. Since he was a little biased to his own city, he had sold half of his stock in White Jade Castle. Fatty Han profited the most from

it, earning 1,700,000. As for the sales in the other 7 main castles, other than Yu Li, each one of them earned about 300,000! They were all grateful to Zhang Yang as he had made them all wealthy folks, with grins glued to their faces throughout the days!

Always have faith in the veteran!

Relieved of the heavy demands, Zhang Yang could finally prepare himself for his insanely intense grinding plan. Firstly, he planned to mount the two sockets on his weapon with gemstones. Even if there was a rate of failure when mounting gemstones, the fail rate for Level 1 gemstones was negligible, at just 10%. When Zhang Yang's high luck value came into play, it would decrease the failing rate significantly, and the two [Vitality Gemstones] will most probably be successfully mounted in one single attempt!

Even so, purchasing the required gemstones required 20 gold. Hiring an NPC to mount them to the sockets required another 10 gold. That would mean 30 gold would be spent in an instant! The current gold and the cash had a ratio of 1:5. It would be like spending 150 dollars in real life! All in the blink of an eye! Zhang Yang was shaken in the face of that reality. The gaming company would always be the biggest winner, the 30,000,000 that he just earned, if compared with the earnings of the company, would be like an insignificant tiny little fish in the ocean! It's not even worth being mentioned!

Of course, he could choose to save the money and not mount those gemstones. But how many battles could he endure without them?

In ‘God’s Miracle’, the vitality attribute was the most invaluable attribute among all others, having the priority ratio of 2:1 compared to other attributes. At the same level, vitality gemstones could give a +10, but the gemstones of the other 4 main attributes, the intelligence gemstone, spirit gemstones, strength gemstone, and agility gemstone only gave a +5 statistics.

Zhang Yang proceeded to craft some [Intelligent potion], [Agility potion], [Strength potion], [Healing potion], [Mana potion] and mailed them to his party members. Then he equipped himself with enough [Strength potion] and [Healing potion] before heading to his special training ground.

After grinding his weapon on the [Whetstone] and consuming some [Strength potion], Zhang Yang boosted his attributes temporarily:

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 30

HP: 4,750

Defense: 260

Strength: 226

Melee damage: (646-698) X 110%

Critical rate: 11%

Lucky one hit rate: 0.5%

Zhang Yang summoned his Skeletal War Horse and mounted the saddle. Under his command, the war horse galloped upon its hooves of flame, picking up speed until they were but a blur to the players he passed. Indeed, as he went on, he attracted the attention of many players. There it went again, the screams to get his attention, the requests to get into a relationship with him, the offers to get in bed with him.

After interacting with the Griffin keeper, Zhang Yang sat down on the saddle behind the beast and took off to Tullon Town.

Even though flying was so much faster than riding on the ground, the map for 'God's Miracle' was just too vast. It still took Zhang Yang approximately 20 minutes to land in Tullon Town.

After getting off the Griffin, Zhang Yang summoned Skeletal War Horse once again to ride on towards the Misty Valley located at the outskirts of the town.

There were a number of players in the town. Looking at Zhang Yang on his war horse, male players would drool, female players would scream again and again, chasing after him until he left town. They were eventually left behind as he went on, leaving them to stare at his back longingly.

Even so, it was enough for them to exchange a few words with their idol.

The Misty Valley was labeled as a Level 30+ training area on the map. The monsters ranged from Level 30 to Level 39, with Spectres making up the majority of the monsters' population. Rumor had it that a fierce battle once occurred there, and the dead soldiers, discontented with the nature of their deaths, never moved on, staying long enough to turn into Spectres roaming around in the valley.

Knowing that these poor souls would never leave the valley, the Imperial had stopped sending armies to cleanse those Spectres. Even though cleansing them once and for all was the safest way to do it, clearing the Spectre Crypt would also cause a lot of casualties. With the presently tensed situation, any loss was a great blow to the strength of the Imperial!

Zhang Yang stopped at the entrance of the valley. He sent Skeletal War Horse back into his inventory, stepping forward to meet a NPC with a yellow question mark at the top of his head.

Chapter 110: Another Encounter With Rouge Clan

“Boss! Zhang Yang has finally left the city!”

44 Bandits spoke in the Sword and Fire Mercenary party channel.

“About damn time! That bastard sure took his sweet time hanging around there!” Dominating Blade spat on his blade. “And here I thought that this guy was gonna stay in there forever!”

“That’s right, we’ve received the contract on the first of the month and he’s been camping inside for several days now! How do we kill this guy?”

“I thought he might know that we’re waiting for him outside, that’s why he’s been hiding in there since forever!”

Dominating Blade crossed his arms, staring at 44 Bandits.

“Where did he go?”

“No idea, boss! He was taking the Gryphon service. Could be far!” 44 Bandit replied nonchalantly.

Dominating Blade acknowledged in a deep voice, “Hmm, I see. Let those guys in the guild find out his destination. I want to know where he is right now!”

“Roger that, boss!” 44 Bandits nodded.

Anyone in the guild could have access to other members’ basic information like character level, class, race, and also the region of their current location. However, the character’s region location would only provide a general information; for example, 44 Bandits and Dominating Blade were at the White Jade Castle region, and it would not reveal the exact coordinate.

For some time, Lone Desert Smoke had been trampling on the other guilds to reach to the top. Their extraordinary feat was not something the other guilds would let go easily without a proper fight. Guilds from other major cities were powerless in doing anything, but the guilds in White Jade Castle managed to insert spies into Zhang Yang’s guild. Since the Mercenary group were only a small party, they could not send anyone out to be a spy; but their benefactor, The Dominators had been helping them by pulling a few strings inside Lone Desert Smoke itself. Their spies would observe every single thing Zhang Yang did and report it all back.

As soon as Zhang Yang left the city, the undercover player immediately informed the mercenary group.

“44, I know you failed a contract one to kill Zhang Yang. How could you lose? Was he really that strong?”

44 Bandits sighed. “I guess... he was kinda strong. His controls were superb, and he could even detect me when I was in stealth!

Ever since I was killed, my equipment has been kinda shitty! But I think I can kill him this time!”

“Stupid! Killing anyone should be an easy job! Guarding the body is the hard part! How about this? Go and kill Zhang Yang with Floating Up, Beauty Healer, Broken Uranus, and All Wounded. Make sure you kill him as many times as you can. Each kill is worth 10,000 gold coins!” Dominating Blade patted 44 Bandit’s back.

“Boss! I’m good with just Beauty Healer. I could definitely kill him as many times as I want to if I had a healer with me!” 44 Bandit was confident. He was still holding a grudge for being killed in the previous encounter.

Dominating Blade laughed. “Just do your job; guard the body and maybe grind some level for a bit. You can also kill some bosses and get some equipment to sell them for more money! Ah, money does make the world go round!”

“Alright, now that’s settled, fan out and find that guy! Get more people! The more players you have, the faster we can chop off his head!”

...

The Misty Valley, where the mist had been lingering around for almost a year, showed no signs of dissipating. It gave off a creepy feeling, especially with having poor visibility range once a player enters.

“Young man, stop!” The voice of an old man could be heard, and at the entrance of the valley stood an NPC; a soldier. The 40-year old had a muscular body frame and he carried a stoic facial expression. An old rusty sword was hung on the side of his waist and a normal iron shield was on his back. All that he had and wore were worn out, showing signs of previous wars and battles that he had been through.

[Veteran Soldier Baylor] (Normal)

Level: 30

HP: 3,000

Zhang Yang stopped when he was close enough to talk to the NPC. “Respected warrior, why would stop an adventurer?”

“Young man, it’s far too dangerous ahead. If you value your life, turn back and never return!” Though his was fierce, Zhang Yang could hear a tone of despair from his warning as well.

“Why should I? Is there anything up ahead?” Zhang Yang casually asked. The developers did a good job in making the characters as realistic as possible, but that meant that he could not accept the quest immediately and had to have a conversation with the NPC.

“Herein lies the souls of the restless spirits of a thousand heroes of the past. Even death could not quench their thirst for battle!” Baylor sighed sadly. “They’ve all turned into spectres! Young man, heed my warning. Do not disturb the dead!”

“O, respected warrior! You meant to allow anger and rage, letting them roam free in their corpses? Is that how you want them to properly rest in peace?!”

Baylor, wavering, said, “You... you meant to give them peace? You want them to have eternal rest?”

“Yes, I would do that, respected warrior!”

“In that case, I shall take your word for it. Here, take this bottle of [Holy Water]. You will need to kill all the vengeance spirits that have taken over my departed comrades. Once you have defeated them, you’ll need to sprinkle the [Holy Water] on their skeletal remains. Only then will they have peace!”

‘Ding! You have accepted the quest: Peace!’

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Holy Water!’

[Peace] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest description: Kill the vengeful spirits that roam around the Misty Valley! Pour the [Holy Water] over their skeletal

remains and allow them to rest in peace.

Progress: Calmed Vengeances 0/40

[A bottle of Holy Water] (Quest Item)

Use: Allow the dead to rest in peace! The blessing of the gods beseech protection on your soul.

Zhang Yang summoned the Skeletal War Horse and rode into the Misty Valley.

After riding for about 40 to 50 meters, he still did not find any monsters around. It was not normal. Zhang Yang frowned. Was there another player here?

Ding! Tang! Clang!

The sound of metal clashing against each other; the sound of battle. Zhang Yang went further in towards the source and found a party of players killing the monsters. However, the ratio was completely off, having 12 to 13 players killing just 4 monsters. They might as well have just gone off and fought alone without a party...

Zhang Yang could not care less about it and rode further into the valley. His riding speed was quite fast and since visibility was already poor, the party disappeared into the mist. He could not even make out anything that just went past him; everything either

looked like they were submerged in milk or covered by cotton wool. He preferred to think of cotton wool instead... the atmosphere was already creepy enough and Zhang Yang would not want to have any further negative thoughts.

As he continued forward, he triggered many monsters along the way, and they were all furiously chasing after him. The monsters' visions were not affected in the mist at all. As he rode on, Zhang Yang "fished" about 80 monsters in his path.

He quickly jumped down and recalled the horse. Finding an excellent position at the edge of the mountain with a wall of dirt behind him, Zhang Yang was prepared to slay any monster that tried to fight him!

[Restless Spirit] (Normal)

Level: 32

HP: 3,200

The monsters' movement speed was just too fast. In just a few seconds after they arrived, Zhang Yang drew out his sword.

"KIKIKIKIKIKIKI!"

"Come at me, freaks!"

The battle has begun!

The total of monsters that Zhang Yang lured had exceeded 10, and with the geographical shape of where he was, only 10 monsters could simultaneously attack him, while the rest had to take turns, circling around and waiting for the monsters in front to kill him or be killed.

<Block!>

Zhang Yang's current <Block> level was just too powerful. He did not even need to calculate the timing and could spam the skill like there was no tomorrow.

<Block!> <Block!> <Block!> <Block!> <Block!> <Block!>

'-224!' '-224!' '-224!' '-224!' '-224!' '-224!'

10 monsters were attacking together and at least 6 of the attacks were successfully blocked. The reflected damage was normal but when Zhang Yang drew his sword to cast <Horizontal Sweep>, every single monster there popped a '-1,400!' damage text on their heads.

At the same time, he stomped the ground hard and activated <Thunder Strike>.

‘-224!’

Even though the damage from <Thunder Strike> could not match with <Horizontal Sweep>, it made up in terms of having higher number of attacked targets. <Horizontal Sweep> was an AoE attack skill but the damage range could not pierce through to the monsters behind. <Thunder Strike>, however, was a skill that could damage anything in a 2x2 meters around the caster, regardless of the number of targets.

As the battle pressed on, Zhang Yang’s [Absolute Defense Ring] activated, increasing his Defense value by 100 points, totaling up to 360 Defense!

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

‘+100!’

The monster count was too much for Zhang Yang to block; he was continuously taking damage. However, having only about 300 attack damage, the monsters could not surpass Zhang Yang’s defense value and could deal only 1 physical damage at a time.

Zhang Yang had the complete “Brave” equipment set, and the 3-equipped set effect allowed him to have 50% chance of recovering

100 HP after receiving an attack. To sum it, Zhang Yang would be able to heal 100 HP after losing only 50 HP! He was healing more than he was losing!

That was why most players would want to have the “Brave” set! A warrior could survive in a sea of monsters without the help of a healer! The grinding efficiency would be increased to a greater speed!

This is, of course, the advantage of only a few well-equipped Guardians. Not many of them could have as much as 260 Defense value such as Zhang Yang! Most Defenders and Guardians would only use the shield that Zhang Yang made, giving only +80 Defense value! Zhang Yang’s [Absolute Defense Ring] was a rare item that could only be found at the field bosses, and it was a greater task getting that than the shield!

In just 10 seconds, Zhang Yang cleared the first wave of monsters around him, and the second wave immediately rushed in for him. After 2 minutes or so, Zhang Yang completely eliminated every single one of them; his killing speed was off the chart!

If he were to face the monsters one by one, he could only kill 4 to 5 monsters in the same 2 minutes. His own method of killing them all at once was 10 times faster!

While others took 3 days to gain a level, Zhang Yang only needed 8 hours to do the same! The monster respawn rate could not cover up his killing speed!

“Boss, there’s no monsters around anymore!”

“He’s right. There was a bunch of monsters not two minutes ago, and there isn’t a single one left!”

“Hey, hold up! I think there’s a monster there!”

“You’re right! Wait, that’s not a monster! F*ck! Look at that shining armor! I think that’s a high-levelled boss!”

...

Zhang Yang bent over and picked up the items that the monsters dropped. He had not been picking up items ever since he met with Wei Yan Er. At that time, a bunch of players suddenly emerged from the mist, all staring at him.

“Do they think I’m a boss or something?” Zhang Yang laughed in his heart. He had his profile hidden, and the players must have mistaken him for being a boss because of that. However, even a boss would reveal its name! The only two characters that could hide names were either a player or a special NPC.

“Kill the boss! Take his equipment!” No one knew who yelled but they did not care. They charged towards Zhang Yang with their weapons wielded, ready to strike.

Just as Zhang Yang was about to draw his breath to yell at them, he stopped. He saw their name and the guild they belonged to;

Rogue Clan!

He squinted his eyes to see them clearer. Isn't their boss Rogue Bunny?

Still, it was a coincidence! He could not kill them the last time since PK was not allowed in the beginner's village, but they were all now in the field! Zhang Yang stood there motionless and allowed them to strike him from all directions.

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

A chain of weak attacks went through, and neither one of them had the attack power to break his defense. These players' attacks were even weaker than the players themselves! No wonder they had to fight in a large group!

‘Ding! You have been attacked by Rogue Bunny party! You now have 10 minutes to counter attack!’

Chapter 111: Land Lease

Zhang Yang waited for them to strike, to have them gain the [Red Name Penalty](#) first. With just an effortless swing, Zhang Yang activated <Horizontal Sweep> and took out at least 1,400 HP of everyone around him!

Some of the players were still confused on what happened, but they jumped immediately when they saw the damage they just took.

“Holy crap! This boss is strong as f*ck! Look at me! Half of my HP is gone!”

“Damn! His defense is strong too! I could only deal 1 damage to him!”

“Haha! Noob! The stronger the boss, the better the drops!”

“He must be a Gray-Silver boss!”

“No! Stupid! He must be a Yellow-Gold boss!”

Rogue Bunny was fuming with rage. He screamed. “Stupid bunch of mindless, good for nothing idiots! Look at the system notification! Stupid f*cks, it’s not a boss you dimwit! It’s a player! Eh?! Isn’t that Zhan Yu, the guy with the First Clear Achievements?”

As usual, Rogue Bunny was so brute and rude, the words that came out his mouth were filled with so much vulgarity.

Zhang Yang stomped the ground and released <Thunder Strike>. What followed was a series of attacks of <Charge>, <Destructive Smash>, a normal attack, and a <Shield Bash>. Instantly, he had sent one healer to the grave.

“Stop! Please! Stop! For God’s sake, please stop!” Rogue Bunny cried out.

But Zhang Yang did not. He raised his sword and proceeded to kill another healer with two strikes of <Force Strike> and one critical normal attack.

Bunny Bro 4 nudged and whispered to Rogue Bunny, “Psst... Boss. I remember this guy. He was the one that tricked us into dying in the valley last time!” He was sure it was the same guy that had tricked them to shout “Vee Arm Suu Pi”.

Rogue Bunny turned around and stared until he finally remembered the incident.

Yes! He was right! It was the same \$%^& bastard that made them scream “We are stupid” all over the place! It was a shameful event and had them thinking of revenge, even when they were dreaming! Zhang Yang had his profile hidden when they met him then. What were the odds of finding him again in this vast world?

As the saying went, “when enemies meet, the world could be burning”. Why would they care about it, since their hearts were already burning with raging flames? Rogue Bunny did not care about his achievements or whoever had his back, as long as Rogue Bunny could finally have his revenge. If he missed this chance, there would not be a second time.

The entire team of Rogue Clan comprised of 16 members deployed there, with 3 of them as healers. Zhang Yang had already taken 2 of them down. The last healer was so petrified that he ran away into the crowd. Zhang Yang did not care about the others, and he waited until <Destructive Smash> finally finished its cooldown and to begin his rampage again. He killed the last healer in the manner as the others.

“What the actual f*ck are you guys doing!? How could you let one guy take down our healers while you were all standing like strawmen?! There’s so many of you! Get off your ass and kill him now!” Rogue Bunny screamed in rage.

Zhang Yang was laughing. He does not even have the slightest fear in him while slaying them all.

Without a healer, the wounded players could only consume their own healing potions and use their own bandages to heal themselves. Zhang Yang could not stop them from taking the potions but he would not let the remaining players finish fully applying their [Bandage]. Zhang Yang stomped his feet and casted <Thunder Strike> just in time to [interrupt](#) the [Bandage] effect.

They say you could not beat an army with just sticks and stone.

But when Zhang Yang was facing the entire Rogue Clan, it was as if he was holding a machine gun with infinite bullet battling a bunch of weak-ass zombies. No matter how many tries to battle, Zhang Yang could just simply kill them all.

Zhang Yang raised his sword to land a normal attack. Those who had already taken <Horizontal Sweep> twice would be dead in just one more strike. One by one, the Rogue Clan members were sent to the graveyard.

Rogue Bunny made an effort to intimidate him with threats. “Zhan Yu! Don’t get over your head, you pipsqueak! I am the guild master of the Rogue Clan! If you were to kill me, I’ll dispatch every single one of my guild members to find you and kill you!”

Zhang Yang could not care less. After removing the healers from the equation, he moved on to kill the Spellcasters, and took care of the physical attackers last. He had a thick defense; strong against physical attacks but weak against magic. The only defense for magic attacks was the passive skill that gave him 20% damage reduction. That was why he had to kill in that order.

He had the overwhelming advantage against every single one of the Rogue Clan in terms of strength, level, and skills. As compared with Rogue Bunny that was at Level 28, which was the highest level in the guild, Zhang Yang’s <Horizontal Sweep>, <Eagle Eye>, and <Destructive Smash> left Rogue Bunny and his entire guild with no chance to stand against him.

With little effort, Zhang Yang killed everyone, leaving Rogue Bunny alone among the corpse of his guild members. He was left

withdrawing endlessly like a little girl being cornered.

“Bastard, if you stop now, I-I-I would let you g-go! Or e-else, y-you’ll r-regret it!”

Zhang Yang lowered his sword and pressed his hands on his chin, posing as the Thinker. Just when Rogue Bunny was just about to escape from his grasp, he grinned evilly and said, “I’ve thought about it, and if I don’t kill you now, I’ll definitely regret it later!”

He raised his sword and struck the killing blow. There were corpses everywhere and equipment lying around. Even though Zhang Yang was not interested in them, but since he could do more damage to the Rogue Clan, he would gladly do it. He picked up the equipment one by one and kept them in his inventory. He then summoned his horse and started to lure more monsters. As for the consequences of his action against the Rogue Clan, he was not at all afraid of them coming for him, if they dared to come anyway. Zhang Yang would gladly send them back to the graveyard.

After two hours of luring and killing, Zhang Yang actually managed to clear every monster around the valley, and then went back to the old soldier NPC to complete his quest. Just as he predicted, the monsters’ spawn rate was not as fast as his killing speed. Aside from the mist, there were literally no monsters left for him to kill. There was still a few monsters left, but they were not worth being dragged to kill. As for the Rogue Clan, not one of them appeared around the area. They were probably scared shitless by now.

“You’ve done it now, lad! Great work!” Baylor praised Zhang

Yang gratefully as he waved his hand.

As the system notification popped out, Zhang Yang had obtained 50,000 experience points with nothing else. Just when Zhang Yang was about to turn around and leave, he stopped when he saw an exclamation mark on top of the NPC's head. Zhang Yang then prompted him. "Why are you still here, soldier?"

Baylor sighed heavily and had a sad expression while looking up to the sky, as if he was reminiscing the past.

"20 years ago, I was part of the same battalion that perished here. I... no... We were soldiers of the Empire that were dispatched here to safe guard this area. And one faithful day, I was off-duty and went to the nearest town for a date with a young lady. I had funs, but when I got back to report in, everyone was already dead! No, worse! They had been cursed with Necro magic! Their skeletal remains were filled with malice and only killing would satisfy them!"

"By the time the rest of the army arrived to investigate, they reported that it was the contaminated food supplies that caused this massive massacre! The Empire did not want to waste any more resource to clear this area. In the end, they were left here alone to wonder the valley for all eternity!"

"Lad, I do not want my friends to die in vain! Which is why I spent 20 years to personally investigate their death! And finally, I've found it! Deep in the valley lies the resident of the Evil Sorcerer! It was him! He killed all my comrade; my officers!"

Baylor's expression gradually changed from sad to rage as he continued, "Brave young lad. Would you help me kill the Evil Sorcerer and bring justice to the fallen heroes?"

'Ding! Baylor as a quest for you: Enact Justice! Would you accept it?'

Zhang Yang heart sank a little. Could it be the same Sorcerer that he was supposed to search for the main story quest? If it was, then Zhang Yang must call in the rest of his gang to finish the quest!

Accept!

"I thank you lad! May the god of war beseech you with the strength of a thousand men!" Baylor said as he saluted Zhang Yang.

[Enact Justice!] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest description: Kill the evil Necromancer Terpot Ryhar and assert justice to all fallen warriors! You can find the Sorcerer at the Underground Tower in the Misty Valley. Note: Terpot Ryhar is very strong. Please bring your friends to fight this evil Sorcerer.

Progress: Kill the Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar 0/1

What a shame! The Evil Sorcerer was not the same one he needed to find!

Zhang Yang summoned his horse again and rode deeper into the valley. After some time of searching, he arrived at a graveyard. After searching for a little more, he found a glowing lever, pulled it and the ground trembled and a half-moon doorway rose from the ground. The doorway had a 10-meter-tall, 6-meter-wide steel door that gave off a strong presence.

Zhang Yang pushed the steel door with great strength and it opened, revealing a dark pathway that led deeper inside.

Poof! Poof! Poof! One by one, the fire torches lit, illuminating the entire pathway.

‘Ding! You have opened a steel door and found a new area!’

‘Ding! You have discovered Underground Tower. Obtained 5,000 experience points!’

‘Server announcement: Underground Tower have been found by a player. The tower has 12 floors and each floor would have unlimited number of monsters for players to challenge! The first player to defeat the Underground Tower final boss, Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar will obtain the game’s first Land Lease and will be able to buy the specific land in this city! Before anyone claims this Land Lease, all non-boss monster spawn rate will be increased to 1000%. The location of the Land is : XXXXX, YYYYY.’

Holy f*cking Moly! Land! It's Land!

In a flash, Zhang Yang's eyes flashed with the symbol of money! If Han Yin Xue and Wei Yan Er were here with him, people might think that they all shared the same mental disorder.

What is the most valuable thing in the real world?

Land!

That's right! Land!

It's the same in the game!

If a player could get their hands on a land property, he could open his own shop! There would be no need to pay for any service charges like in the auction house! If business was good, it could be the same as opening a shop in the real world!

Previously, out of 100 players that made a fortune in 'God's Miracle', 90 of them possessed property!

However, buying land property in the game was not just about money; you would also need a lease! You could only obtain a Land Lease by killing a boss and the drop rate was so low that you could even farm two or three more mounts before getting one! That was not the worst part. Every piece of Land Lease could only buy a

fixed land! That meant that even when a player worked his ass off to farm a Lease, the area in which he was supposed to buy the land would be a dead town. So even if he could buy the land, it was not worth one bit!

Just like reality, the most valuable and expensive property would be those that were near the business center. However, the original land near those area were so scarce that once it was sold out, there could never be a second one.

That was how valuable land properties were! In his previous life when Zhang Yang had first entered the game, all of the lands near the main city were already grabbed away. He could only watch in tear as other players counted their money until their fingers bled!

He had never known that he could have found the game's first Land Lease!

Even though he was on cloud 9, he could not stop cursing the bloody system!

What the hell!? Why would it even announce it to the entire world?! Did the system gain self-awareness that it bore a grudge against Zhang Yang's luck?! Just like that, the system let the entire world know about how valuable the Lease could be!

Red Name Penalty-When Player A strikes the first attack to Player B, Player A will gain the Red Name Penalty. This penalty will incur a two-level deduction and have a chance to have one of the currently equipped equipment to drop.

Interupption-Spell or item interruption. During a casting of a

spell, a player can stop the spell for being cast by casting an interruption skill. This is also applicable stopping someone from using an item as well. In other cases, when an enemy has successfully cast a spell, which requires channeling*. A channeling spell is a spell that will continue in effect as long as the caster did not stop the spell. Like a flamethrower, the flame will continue to spit flames as long as you press the fuel. A channeling spell can be interrupted in the same manner. This is also applicable to items like [Bandage]. [Bandage] does not require channeling, but it can be dispelled with an attack from someone else or by moving.

Chapter 112: Run For Your Life!

Somewhere around Tullon Town...

“Floating Up. What are we gonna do now? Should we change our course to grab that [Land Lease] or should we stay on course?” said 44 Bandits. Both of the Sword and Fire Mercenary leaders were tanks, and Dominating Blade was the captain of the team. He was a Guardian just like Zhang Yang. Floating Up, the second-in-command, was a Defender, and he led this small man-hunt party.

He answered with a deep and low tone. “I have no idea what this [Land Lease] is. But if the system would go all out to announce it, it must be of some value! We will temporary change our course. Let’s kill the ‘what’s-his-face’ evil sorcerer and get that [Land Lease]! Zhan Yu isn’t going to go anywhere anyway, might as well postpone his inevitable death!”

Following the coordinates provided by the system, the party arrived at the Misty Valley.

Broken Uranus suddenly called out. “Isn’t this place the Misty Valley? I heard that the Rogue Clan had met Zhan Yu here!”

All Wounded laughed menacingly. “He must have come here to get the lease as well!”

Floating Up grinned. “What a coincidence! He’d actually saved us the effort to locate him! Hah! What luck! We can kill Zhan Yu, and kill the boss for the [Land Lease]! Talk about killing two birds with

one stone!”

After 10 minutes...

The party managed to found the entrance to the Underground Tower.

“There! I see the entrance!”

“Let’s go!”

...

As the system notification flashed through the chatting channel, everyone’s greed grew larger. Who cares if they did not have the capability to get that item? They could at least have a try! For the least, there was always a possibility of a “What if?” moment! What if I got it? What if I got the [Land Lease]? What if I can really get that valuable item that the server juts announced?

Every big guild gathered their best players and headed straight to Tullon Town! In a split second, the entire sky was filled with flying Gryphons, covering the sun and making so many silhouettes that it changed the afternoon to evening!

All of the Level 50 maps and below were just mirror images; all of China’s 8 major cities had the same Underground Tower and were simultaneously released to the public. The only difference was the [Land Lease]. The dropped lease from any city Underground Tower

was unique and there could never be a second one.

That meant that not only the players inside each city would have to compete with each other, they would also have to compete with the other cities as well! This was a test; a test of player cooperation and willingness to surpass the other cities! But if they had to cooperate properly to kill the final boss, they would lose the chance to get themselves a rare item!

Zhang Yang cursed everyone's mother and grandmother as he ran further into the pathway. After roughly 30 to 40 meters in, the pathway widened into a huge flat ground!

This was nothing like a tower! This was just a huge-ass building!

In front of Zhang Yang was a short, 7 to 8 steps of stairs that led down towards a huge flat land. The area was basically endless as Zhang Yang could not even see the end of the field. What was worse was that skeletal monsters filled the area with rusting long swords in their boney hands.

Zhang Yang selected one of them and checked on their properties. He almost puked when he saw the information.

[Skeleton Tower Guard] (Elite)

Level: 36

Zhang Yang would not have had a large reaction if there were only 7 to 8 monsters. But as he looked up and gazed into the never-ending field, he could make out at least thousands of them patrolling around. The entire place was cramped! Even if Zhang Yang brought his entire guild to clear these monsters, he was not sure whether they could even manage it!

And then there was the narrow pathway. How many people could squeeze through this pathway at a time? They would have to slowly kill their way in to make more space for more guild members to enter! An extremely slow domino effect!

However, Zhang Yang did not have the luxury of time now. If he were to kill one at a time, it would take him long enough for the other guilds to arrive and take over the tower!

Zhang Yang scratched his head. “Looks like I have to give it a try!”

Zhang Yang started to calculate; if the tower has 13 floors, then according to the system norm, the entrance to the next floor would be located at the furthest part of the current floor! If Zhang Yang could do what he did with the Cave of Bones, having to lure all monsters while he ran towards the entrance of the next floor, he could use the monsters to block the other guilds from proceeding with the tower!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath and walked quickly into the swarm of skeletons. Yes, he walked! Not run, but walk!

Even though there was limited space between the monsters, there was a gap in between their patrol. As long as he could grasp the timing and rhythm, he could avoid the monsters from being triggered.

1 meter, 2 meters... 10 meters... 20 meters!

Zhang Yang kept his mind calm and fully utilized all 3 years of his past gaming experience and walked through the swarm like snakes across a field. If anyone witnessed Zhang Yang's feat, it would be as if a ninja was sneaking into the enemy base undetected. Every step he took could spell disaster, and the tension was so high that other players would perhaps already cower in fear.

Tap... tap... tap...

Each step he took was as light as feather and his sweat was constantly dripping to the floor, like breadcrumbs when Hansel and Gretel were eating in the Candy House. Though this feat did not require him to swing a sword, it was still worse than actually killing something. Zhang Yang calculated every step so many times as he could not afford to make even a tiny mistake which could trigger any monster's aggro; and since this place was full of them, if one notices him, the others will just follow suit!

50 meters... 80 meters... 100 meters! He could barely notice it, but he finally saw a black object that looked like an exit!

His heart jumped with happiness for a second and then -

“Crack...”

He made a misstep.

“GROOAN!” One Skeleton Guard growled and started to swing its sword, chasing after Zhang Yang, while 10 other monsters followed behind it.

Holy f*ck! Here they come!

Zhang Yang had no choice but to fight. He quickly used <Charge> and dashed towards the nearest monster to stun it. He then dealt one normal attack to raise a little Rage before he turned and ran towards the exit faster than Usain Bolt could!

The run started a chain reaction, like ripples from a stone thrown into a lake. Every single monster in the field had their eyes set on Zhang Yang and began running towards him. The area in front of him got larger and larger as the monster cleared.

Their movement speed was faster than Zhang Yang's, and just when they were about to touch him, Zhang Yang stomped the ground and casted <Thunder Strike>, slowing 7 monsters around his skill area. In that instant, Zhang Yang distanced himself even more from them.

However, the monsters that were not affected quickly ran past the slowed ones and got closer to him, jumping into the sky. Zhang Yang somersaulted to counter their attack by quickly activating <Block>.

Ding! Ding! Ding!

A chain of system notification rung as Zhang Yang had blocked the attacks! Zhang Yang landed and continued sprinting to the exit.

This was a type of kiting technique for the Hunter class. Even though he was not a Hunter, it was still extremely useful here.

The problem was that there were still too many monsters on his tail, and there were some attacks that he could not block.

‘-518!’

‘-529!’

‘-532!’

With just 3 attacks, he lost a third of his HP already!

Zhang Yang quickly consumed a [Level 2 Healing Potion] on the move.

[Level 2 Healing Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Immediately restores 1,000 HP.

Cooldown time: 1 minute.

Using any grade of Healing Potion would cause all grades of Healing Potion to have the same cooldown.

Level Requirement: 30

As he kept on running, Zhang Yang jumped a full circle and activated <Block> as he turned behind to keep his momentum going!

<Thunder Strike>, <Charge>, <Block>. Everything Zhang Yang could do had been done to stall the monsters behind him. He had to speed up more to maintain his HP! The monsters around him were just too many that he had already lost 90% of his HP by just moving 20 meters forward!

<Berserker's Heal>!

‘+4750!’

Zhang Yang fully healed himself and quickly moved further up.

But with only moving 30 meters forward, he was down to 1,000 HP again!

Zhang Yang quickly activated the <Lifesteal> effect of the sword and casted <Horizontal Sweep> to deal a chain of devastating damage to the monsters behind him. Simultaneously, 3 green healing texts of '+1400' popped out and his HP was fully healed once more!

<Shield Wall>!

Zhang Yang used another skill with a long cooldown that instantly reduced all incoming damage by 75% for 10 seconds! But in this short amount of time, he could only depend on the set equipment effects to keep his health at the same amount!

Another 20 meters forward! There was only 30 meters more to reach the exit!

<Shield Wall> expired!

'-414!'

'-431!'

'-422!'

...

Zhang Yang began to take continuous damage again. Argh! Just a little more!

Zhang Yang gave it all he got and cried out as he leapt into the sky, dodged the monsters, and rolled into the exit!

“RAWRR...”

Countless monsters squeezed together at the exit. All of them were trying their best to move closer as they growled furiously, but neither of them could take one more step to reach Zhang Yang.

“Phew!” Zhang Yang let out a long breath of relief. He checked on his status and had goosebumps when he saw he had only 127 remaining HP left. If he had made a mistake any bit earlier, he would have probably died in the middle there!

Before the aggro effect disappeared, the monsters outside would not leave and Zhang Yang could not leave the battle mode to eat some health recovering snacks. He could only activate the bandage skill to recover his health.

[Cotton Bandage] (Consumable)

Use: Heal 1,000 HP over 10 seconds. The effect will be cancelled when you enter any action or receive any damage.

Cooldown time: 1 minute.

Requirement: Advance First-Aid

As he had the “A Physician’s Friend” title, the bandage effect was doubled. He healed over 2,000 HP from just one cast itself. He turned to look outside and noticed that all the monsters gathered there had already long dispersed. There were only a few left still standing there staring at him.

What a pity! If only the monsters could just remain there forever! That would be a free blockade for him! Who would dare to get through the entrance when there were so many elite monsters standing together like that? Aside from Zhang Yang, no one else could proceed further into the tower!

With the last monster finally walking away, Zhang Yang got out of battle mode and sat down to eat some health recovering snacks.

“Hey! Noob tank! Did you see the system announcement? Shall we go and fight for the lease?” Wei Yan Er suddenly called Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang smiled and replied. “If I were waiting for you to come over, my little potted plant would have grown into a sky-scraping bean stalk! I’m already in the tower!”

“What the hell, dude! Why didn’t you tell us?! I’m sure you’re

planning to hog all the treasure in there for yourself! Hmph! Cousin! Cousin! Stop counting the money already! Let's go!"

Beep.

The little brat hung up the communicator.

Zhang Yang smiled happily as he lifted his sword and walked towards the second floor with happy feet.

The monsters here at the first floor should hold the other players off for quite some time.

Chapter 113: The Second Floor

“What. The. F*ck. Look at those elite monsters!” 44 Bandits scratched his head in frustration. He could not hold in his surprised and cursed as he saw the ridiculous number of monsters cramped up together at the end of the stairs.

Floating Up frowned with frustration. If they were to enter a regular dungeon instead; even if there were a lot more elite monsters around, the party could take their own sweet time to kill them off since no one else would be competing. But things were not the same with a field boss. Every second counted. They had already gained a huge advantage when they were the first to arrive here, but if they were to start clearing all these monsters here and now, they would lose their advantageous stance.

“Where’s Zhan Yu?” Beauty Healer asked. “Based on the information we got, Zhan Yu should be ahead of us. But from the looks of it, I don’t think he could be in the tower.”

All Wounded replied, “The system explained that the monster spawn rate was increased by 1,000%. Could it be that the monsters he killed already respawned?”

“Impossible!” Floating Up shook his head and explained. “As the official data explained before, monsters outside of the beginner village would respawn every 3 hours. Elite monsters would take 5 hours. Even if the spawn rate had been increased to 1,000%, it would take at least half an hour to fully respawn them all! The system made the announcement only about 20 minutes ago, yet here we can see that none of the monsters were taken out!”

“Perhaps he was under stealth mode?” Broken Uranus joked.

44 Bandits shook his head. “That wouldn’t work. The monsters here have <True Sight>. I saw the <True Sight> icon on the monster’s head when I sneaked in earlier.

Monsters with <True Sight> were naturally born to counter stealth users; Thieves in general. Phantom Assassins, especially, loathed these type of monsters.

“Could it be...that he actually hasn’t arrived yet?” Floating Up muttered alone.

“Who cares about him? Let’s just go ahead and kill the monsters! If that guy hasn’t arrived, so be it! If he does, we’ll kill him. End of story!” said 44 Bandits with a strong killing intent. He was killed 3 times consecutively by Zhang Yang. Even though he did say it was all for business and nothing personal, he could not say it willingly as he was made a fool by everyone else in the Mercenary.

Floating Up kept quiet for a while before he spoke. “So be it. Let’s go. Follow the path on the side, we have to attract as few monsters as we can.”

...

The connecting path from the first floor to the second floor was a long and winding staircase. Zhang Yang walked around at least 7 to

8 circles before he was at the bottom.

Similarly, the second floor was another huge field filled with the same Skeletal Guards. However, the number of monsters drastically dropped. He estimated that there were only less than 10% of the monsters from the first floor!

Did it just get easier?

It didn't make any sense! Instead of getting happy, Zhang Yang frowned worriedly. It was once said that peace was just the calm before a storm. The game developers could not have been that generous enough to lower the difficulty when they had just placed that many monsters in the first floor!

Zhang Yang observed carefully again before he proceed further, and he noticed something different. The tiling on the ground were made up of black and white stones; like a chess board to be precise, but there were slightly more black tiles than the white ones. The monsters were gathered around only on the black tiles.

Zhang Yang tried to walked towards the edge of the platform and stepped on one of the black tile.

... Nothing happened.

He switched and moved on a little and stepped one foot on the white tile.

Fuushh!

‘-1,600!’

A pillar of fire burst out from the white tiles and damaged Zhang Yang.

Hmph! As expected! No wonder there were lesser monsters, there are traps everywhere here! One wrong step and I’ll be cooked for sure!

Zhang Yang continued to observe. Not far from where he stood, a new Skeleton Guard spawned out on top of a white tile. The trap was sprung and it dealt 2,000 damage to the monster. The monster then moved away from the tile and stood on a black tile instead.

Elite monster’s AI system was just simple programming. The monster must have been set to patrol around the area. That was why even though a trap was there, it would still walk over it without any consideration.

‘-2000!’

‘-2000!’

...

As it continuously walked over the white tiles, it took damage

each time. 50,000 HP seemed plenty but no matter how strong it was, it would still die from constantly taking too much damage. After a minute or so, the monster was defeated. Zhang Yang turned around and saw many monsters spawning and dying in the same manner. It was no wonder that the number of monsters around here was that many. The traps laid around here was set to damage even their own soldiers. Talk about realistic friendly fire... The remaining monsters were only roaming around the large black tiled area.

Now that Zhang Yang understood the concept of this floor, he worked a plan and walked on bravely. He stepped on a black tile and followed the path onwards without stepping on any traps. There were still times where he had to jump around as if he was in a gymnastics competition, unwillingly drawing the attention of the monsters around.

“Rawr!”

It did not take long for one of the Skeleton Guard to notice him and charged at him. Zhang Yang scanned the area quickly, forming a battle plan and withdrew 7 steps back.

The monster approached towards him with its sword swinging in the air.

<Block>!

‘-224!’ <Block> reflect damage.

‘-2000!’

The trap that the monster just triggered was part of Zhang Yang’s plan. He wanted the monster to step on it to take the trap’s damage. Two seconds later, the pillar of fire burst out again and dealt another 2,000 damage.

“Damn, I love this place!” Zhang Yang was overjoyed. He was happily activating <Block> and since the skill only had a 1 second cooldown, he did not need to reserve it.

<Block>!

<Block>!

<Block>!

The monster’s attack rate seemed to be one swing every 2 seconds, and it did not have any special skills that Zhang Yang had to pay special attention to as well. He could basically lose his weapon and solely use his shield to bash the hell out of them, not to mention making use of the traps all over the field to help him! With Zhang Yang strong attacks, the monster was defeated under 30 seconds and granted him a luxurious amount of experience points.

It was all because of the OP skill <Block> that Zhang Yang could be so relaxed! 1 second cooldown? No problem man! With the monsters’ long attack interval, they could not break his defense,

let alone even trying to leave a scratch mark on him!

No wonder the skill <Block> had to be nerfed! This skill is just too OP that every Guardian could be so relaxed even in an intense situation!

“Awesome!”

A single monster alone granted him 50,000 experience points, and he only took 30 seconds to defeat one. Talk about super grinding speed! Zhang Yang could not help but to scream out in ecstasy!

Zhang Yang looted the corpse and carried on. One by one he killed the monsters with much ease. As he had already gotten used to the mechanics of this field, he took the trap and used it to his advantage instead. It was like a walk in the park! He arrived at the next floor entrance in no time at all!

“Hmm... the first floor was all about the number of players. If there were not enough manpower, it was instant death! The second floor required the party to limit the number of players! If they were to bring in their entire fleet, this place would burn them all extra crispy style! What an interesting battle ground. I wonder how would it be for the third floor?” Zhang Yang talked to himself.

He has never encountered a place like this before in his previous life. The entire game map was just too large! Just Level 30 training grounds would have exceeded around 11 maps. Previously, when he just entered the game, most of the players already left the low-level

maps. Almost all low-level training grounds were filled with a small number of players. Since there were more monsters than players around, just one map alone was sufficient to train from Level 30 to Level 40!

However, after reaching Level 50 and above, things got a little slower. Since the eight major cities in the China server did not have their own respective training grounds for players above Level 50, players beyond that would have to share the training ground, and things got a little rowdy after that; especially after Level 100. The entire world, all 8 servers including China, had 64 major cities' players come together to fight in their respective level map, and the situation got worse. There were even fights and little skirmishes happening every day!

Zhang Yang walked down the stairs and arrived to the third floor.

There was another overly large field again, but this time the monsters were magic attack types. Instead of wielding swords, the same Skeletal monsters were wearing robes, and the number of monsters around had also dropped once more. There were at least 10 meters of distance between each monster.

[Tower Dark Sorcerer] (Elite)

Level: 36

HP: 30,000

They had the same level and elite tier, but these monsters were 20,000 HP lesser than the previous floor's monsters. Magic-based monsters were naturally built with low defense. However, Zhang Yang could not lower his guard against them since Guardians were only strong against physical attack types. <Block> would not be as effective against them!

Oh well, since the bridge was there, he had to cross it. Time for another killing spree!

Zhang Yang raised the sword in his hand and charge forward. Without delay, one of the monsters quickly noticed him and raised its staff to cast a magic spell.

This is... <Shadow Arrow>!

Zhang Yang was happy for a moment. He then quickly took a [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] and ran into the effective range to cast <Charge> and stunned the monster. The monster's spell was cancelled before it could finish.

‘-742!’ Normal attack.

‘-3022!’ Critical strike! <Horizontal Sweep>.

The Sorcerer quickly recovered from the stun. Zhang Yang could not tell what expression it made since its face was completely made

out of a human skull. However, he knew that the monster began to chant another spell when the boney jaw started to clatter. The <Shadow Arrow> progress bar continued as it chanted.

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds!

Pew!

A <Shadow Arrow> flew across the field and damaged Zhang Yang with 700 damage.

Zhang Yang's Rage rose to 62 points. He first started off with <Cripple Defense> to drop its Defense down to 0 with his passive skill, <Eagle Eye>.

<Destructive Smash>! <Force Strike>! <Horizontal Sweep>!

Zhang Yang prioritized to cast <Destructive Smash> and <Horizontal Sweep> first before the Defense reduction effect wore off before casting <Force Strike> to deplete his Rage.

20 seconds into the battle, Zhang Yang had taken 6 of the <Shadow Arrow> and had his HP reduced down to 550 HP. He quickly consumed a healing potion and healed 1,000 HP. He took another 6 of the <Shadow Arrow> in just 6 seconds!

By then, Zhang Yang only had 150 HP remaining while the Sorcerer had more than 10,000 HP left.

“Damn, I have to rely on my other skills to fight!” Zhang Yang sighed and activated <Berserker’s Heal> and fully recovered his HP.

Chapter 114: Clear Lotus – The Ice Whisperer

If monsters had conscious thought, they would be bawling in frustration and denial like sore losers by now!

What kind of cheating douche was this Guardian?! How does he heal himself back to full health like that?! The worst part of it was the fact that he could heal way faster than any Priest or Scared Knight at his level! What was the point of attacking him anyway... he would just heal himself and they would start from ground zero again... we might as well just give up and drink tea...

The Tower Skeleton Sorcerer however, was not sentient or self-aware in any way, and was chanting non-stop, his boney jaw chattering, to cast <Shadow Arrow> after <Shadow Arrow>. It would stop at nothing to kill Zhang Yang.

However, with one full health bar, Zhang Yang could bring down 2/3 of the monster's HP before he activated any of his HP regenerating skills, as if his healing was on steroids. The one having rough days would be the monsters facing Zhang Yang.

It took him roughly 10 seconds to kill the monster.

“Phew! Sorcerer-types are definitely troublesome!” Zhang Yang sighed as he slowed down to eat some health recovering snacks.

“Ooi! Noob tank! Where are you? Are you inside?” Wei Yan Er

called out to Zhang Yang via the voice messenger.

“I’m in the third floor now! Are you guys here already?” Zhang Yang replied as he walked to the corpse, picking up some [Cotton Cloth] and coins. There was even a Level 30 Green-Copper equipment. It was not worth much, but it could at least be sold for 10 to 20 gold coins.

“Don’t even dream of that happening. There are so many players outside here that the line stretches from Misty Valley all the way to Tullon Town! Some even started getting into brawls since they’re out of options. Woah! Speak of the devil. Woohoo!! Kick his ass! ahem As I was saying, there’s no way for us. We’ll definitely not be entering. What do we do now?”

“Might as well just do something else. You can either wait for the crowd to disperse and then sneak in, or just give it up. If you don’t see any way in, then just go back!”

Against such numbers, they would never be able to fight their way into the tower. They had better odds finding a high-level boss to cast <Silence> on every single player out there.

“Sigh! What a letdown!” Wei Yan Er abruptly hung up on the call.

“What a rude little brat!” Zhang Yang laughed as he continued further down the floors.

Upon encountering the second Sorcerer, he activated the sword's <Lifesteal> to fight it. He made quick work of it, and sat down, waiting for the <Berserker's Heal> to finish its cooldown before proceeding.

One by one, he continued to repeat the same cycle of skills to cut his way through the floor. The progress was snail-paced, only reaching the end of the floor after half an hour. By then, the first Sorcerer that he killed had already respawned.

“Finally! The fourth floor! I’m pretty sure everyone else is still struggling on the First Floor!” Zhang Yang grinned evilly and proceed.

Eh!? What the hell? What a vast difference!

The fourth floor was not a huge field like all the others, it was a huge maze! From the top of the stairs, Zhang Yang could see the maze and all its complexities, but he could not see the end of it. He could not even make out the right path!

“How old-fashioned! This is just an old-school method used in the olden days of RPG to waste a player’s time! Sigh!” Zhang Yang dragged his feet into the maze.

He came across a 3-way intersection after only walking 8 meters in.

“I’ll only need to keep following the right wall, might as well just

walk a few more!” Zhang Yang muttered. This method was slow, but fool proof. If you were out of directions, you could just walk along the walls to your right or left to find your way out.

Shush!

There was a sudden disturbance in the air as Zhang Yang walked. He noticed it immediately and used <Charge> towards the general direction of the disturbance.

‘-691!’

A damage text popped out and a shadowy figure appeared. It was holding a pair of short swords in its hands, as it dashed towards Zhang Yang to attack.

Zhang Yang activated <Block> and <Shield Bash> to reveal its true form.

It was a Spectre Assassin. Its skeletal body was covered in a thick gray colored cloth, its face was also completely covered with the same material but its eye sockets were lit with dark flames.

[Tomb Assassin] (Elite)

Level: 36

HP: 50,000

Only one of the attacks was blocked! The other sword was cutting through the air as it swiftly approached Zhang Yang! A dual-wielding monster! Its attack interval was extremely short!

Zhang Yang quickly activated another <Block> and tumbled over to evade another incoming attack that he could not block. This assassin struck hard and fast, and did so very frequently. Just when it could not get any worse, it revealed its skill! Zhang Yang saw a flash of black light appeared on his body and a DoT icon appeared on his head.

[Fatal Poison]: Receive 500 Natural damage over 15 seconds. Can be stacked 5 times.

Damn! Of all things, he got poisoned! Damn DoT!

Zhang Yang quickly attacked to finish the monster off as fast as he could. Zhang Yang could evade and block almost all physical attacks but he could not prevent himself from the DoT skill!

‘-1,516!’

‘-3,072!’

‘-711!’

Zhang Yang chained attack after attack on the monster, giving all he got and finally killed off the assassin about a minute later.

Zhang Yang sat down and restore his HP with health recovering snacks. Luckily the monster was not as strong as a player. Its DoT effect infliction success rate was low. Zhang Yang was only stacked with 2 layers of the poison before he killed the monster off. He only had 300 HP remaining but he had not activated any of his emergency skills with long cooldowns.

After restoring to full health, Zhang Yang got up and walked over to pick up the loot.

[First Aid: Level 1 Antidote Bandage] (Skill Book)

Use: Teaches you how to make a [Level 1 Antidote Bandage]

Require: Advance First Aid.

Zhang Yang eyes glinted with joy. It was just like a Fatty Han giving him a phone charger when his phone was running out of battery! It was just what he needed, and the game decided to help him with it! He quickly took the skill book and learned it.

[Level 1 Antidote Bandage]: Remove a Level 60 and below Poison effect.

Require: Advanced First Aid.

Cooldown time: 15 seconds.

The items required to make the bandage were only slightly more costly than the [Cotton Bandage]. It only needed an additional [Cotton Cloth], bringing the total to 2!

Zhang Yang snickered. He immediately crafted 10 stacks of [Level 1 Antidote Bandage] for later use. He was now a Specialist-tier First Aid; he could make 6 items at one time. It only took him 30 to 40 seconds to make that amount.

Along the way, Zhang Yang encountered many more Spectre Assassins. None of them could sneak up to Zhang Yang, not when he had so much experience in fighting actual assassin players. Without the fear of getting poisoned, Zhang Yang could easily counter the attacks of the thieves and kill them all without a scratch!

At times like these, a skill book, an item, or an equipment with special effect, any one of these could actually turn the tide of battle for some! Before Zhang Yang had the [Level 1 Antidote Bandage], he could only face one assassin at a time, but now, he could take several of them at a time!

This maze was so complicated that it turned from being tiring to being downright annoying. Coupled with the endless amount of assassins sneaking around, Zhang Yang only managed to escape the maze after 2 hours of wandering about inside!

“GAH! F*cking annoying!” Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He looked up and saw a tightly sealed door no further than 10 meters ahead that led down to the fifth floor. Just as he was about to move his right leg forward, he felt a sudden sensation. It was a killing intent.

Shush!

Zhang Yang slashed at the air to his left side, and a splash of blood appeared in the air!

‘-661!’

The slender body of a woman appeared out of thin air as Zhang Yang had forced the thing out of stealth. It was a super sexy Elf woman with pointy ears, sparkly eyes, and skin so fair that no one on Earth could compete with!

A Spectre! And a highly leveled one too at that!

Only a high leveled spectre could maintain the appearance of its previous life before it died. Based on its appearance alone, you could never differentiate a high level spectre from a normal living being!

[Clear Lotus – The Ice Whisperer] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 36

HP: 400,000

Note: She was the Wind Ranger of the Flame Wolves Army. She was converted into a Spectre by the Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar

Damn! No wonder all the monsters here are Spectres. It looked like those high ranked ones were trapped down here! If the fourth floor has Clear Lotus as the boss, it could mean that up to 10 bosses stood between him and the last floor!

A field boss was quite rare, unlike the boss in the dungeon where a normal player could fight it alone! That was one of the reasons why most of the field bosses out there had better drops than dungeon bosses! Those valuable items like skill book, recipes, pets, and mounts were all drops from field bosses!

10 Gray-Silver field bosses for him alone to kill! Talk about digging up an oil rig!

Zhang Yang recalled back to the time when he killed the Cave of Bones's Shurian; how many awesome items did he have to give up to the team!

Right now, the question was whether or not he could go all the way to the last floor!

If his opponent was a physical attack-type monster, he would be able to force his way through fairly easily. But if he faced a magical attack-type, his <Block> will be rendered useless! That still would not be too much trouble if that particular boss had 30,000 or 50,000 HP, but if the boss had more than 1 million HP, where would he even begin?

“This is a restricted area. All intruders must die!” Clear Lotus let out a crystal crisp voice. She gripped the daggers in her hands and slashed at Zhang Yang’s throat!

<Block>!

‘-199!’ <Block> reflect damage.

‘-447!’ <Shield Bash>.

An eye for an eye, after a normal attack, Zhang Yang cast <Horizontal Sweep> and inflicted a critical attack.

‘-2,472!’

The boss snarled in anger and swung the daggers in her hands even faster than better.

<Block>!

<Block>!

<Block>!

‘+100!’

The set-equipment effect would still trigger with a successful <Block>.

No matter what kind of boss it was, it would be most definitely be frustrating when fighting someone who could activate <Block> every freaking second!

In an instant, a black outline appeared around the boss’ daggers and Zhang Yang head was adorned with a DoT icon above it.

‘Ding! You have received Spectre’s Decay (1 stack). Received 800 Natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!’

‘Ding! You have received Spectre’s Decay (2 stack). Received 1600 Natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!’

As expected from a boss, she could inflict two layers of DoT skill at one go!

Zhang Yang quickly consumed a [Level 1 Antidote Bandage] to clear one Poison effect. The second Poison effect could only be cleared after 10 seconds.

‘-640!’

‘-640!’

‘-640!’

In just 10 seconds, Zhang Yang received a total of ,1920 points of poison damage!

Chapter 115: A Change Of Heart

Almost all of the boss' normal attacks were deflected by <Block>. With that fast attack speed and frequency, Zhang Yang could not spare any single <Block> to waste. At the same time, the <Brave> set-equipment constantly restored his health. Slowly yet steadily, many green texts of '+100' popped over his head.

The DoT effect had inflicted 1,920 damage to Zhang Yang in 10 seconds, but at the same time, the <Brave> set-equipment effect had healed Zhang Yang by over 500 HP. After removing the second DoT skill, he healed another 500 HP again.

'Ding! You have been afflicted with Spectre's Decay (1 stack). Receive 800 Natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!'

'Ding! You have been afflicted with Spectre's Decay (2 stack). Receive 1600 Natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!'

20 seconds later, the boss inflicted another DoT Poison.

Zhang Yang immediately removed the first layer, and the second layer after 10 seconds.

The boss was not like a player that could think and act unpredictably. Their attacks were all fixed with a rotational cycle. For example, some skills would be activated after a fixed duration, other skills would be activated after dropping to a certain level of health, others when losing a certain amount of health within a certain period of time, and many other fixed conditions.

After being inflicted with poison twice by the boss, Zhang Yang learned that the boss would cast the DoT skill once in roughly every 20 seconds! If Zhang Yang had not possessed any [Level 1 Poison Antidote], he would have accumulated over 5 layers of [Spectral Decay] in just 40 seconds! Even though he had the 20% damage reduction passive skill, he would still receive at least 3,200 damage every tick! <Shield Wall>, <Berserker's Heal> and the <Lifesteal> effect of the sword would have only prolonged his struggle for another 10 or 20 seconds!

What luck!

No... could it be that the developers purposely designed the monsters on the upper floor to have the bandage recipe? If they had not done so, even a tank with a healer would not be able to hold for long against this boss!

Zhang Yang was the only oddball in the game that had maximized his <Block> skill level. The [Level 1 Antidote Bandage] required the player to have the First Aid skill mastery raised to Advance-tier to be able to use it. Majority of players around would be estimated to be only around Amateur-tier currently. There could also be players who were unwilling to invest in raising their mastery level, and could be at the lowest rank, Beginner First Aid. Even if they managed to get their hands on the recipe, they could do nothing but stare at it in agony.

With that in mind, Zhang Yang could be the only person in the game with the ability to fight the boss alone!

Zhang Yang started to calculate. If he could nullify every single physical attack from the boss and only receive the poison damage, he would lose, on average, 1,920 HP every 20 seconds. With the help of the set-equipment healing effect, he would heal at least 1,000 HP. This brought down the loss to 46 HP every second! He had <Berserker's Heal>, <Lifesteal> effect of the sword, and also the occasional healing potion consumption, he would last for a long, long time in battle!

There was hope!

Zhang Yang gathered his wits, before stacking 5 layers of <Cripple Defense>, and began his onslaught.

With the cooldown of <Block> reduced down to 1 second, the efficiency of <Shield Bash> grew more significant as it contributed to the total damage over time! Under 5 stacks of <Cripple Defense> and <Eagle Eye>, the <Block> damage reflect could exceed 250 damage and <Shield Bash> could deal at least 530 damage!

That meant that, by only activating <Block> and <Shield Bash> alone, at least 800 damage was dealt per second!

This was definitely a major upgrade, since a 2-second <Block> cooldown could only deal 400 damage, 3-second cooldown could deal 266 damage while a 4-second cooldown would only deal 200 damage!

Of course that could only be applied to bosses with fast attacking speed. If the boss attacked every 2 seconds or even once in every 3

seconds, the combined damage of both <Block> and <Shield Bash> would be reduced tremendously.

Watching how he had managed to pull it off smoothly, Zhang Yang could not help but feel a little prideful of his feat. He sighed again to know that this godly <Block> would be nerfed in the future! If it remains unchanged, Guardians would definitely obtain the highest in the damage statistics against all fast attacking bosses!

After a minute into the battle, Zhang Yang's HP had dropped down to 1,990 HP while the boss still had roughly around 320,000 HP! He immediately consumed a health potion and restored his health back up to 2,990 HP. Another minute went by and Zhang Yang was left only with 230 HP while the boss's HP had dropped down to 250,000 HP! That was 100,000 HP worth of damage in over 1 minute!

Just as the health potion cooldown was done, Zhang Yang quickly consumed a bottle and brought up his HP back to 1,230 HP. However, this little bit of HP recovery could only last him for about 20 seconds! His HP continued dropping like a roller coaster down the slope!

<Berserker's Heal>!

Foosh! His HP was restored back to full health!

40 seconds later, the health potion cooldown was done and Zhang Yang took another bottle and his HP was back up to 3,910

HP. The boss still had around 180,000 HP left!

GAH! What an awesome feeling! It's been ages since Zhang Yang had a solo boss fight!

<Block> and the <Brave> set-equipment effect was just too OP! He could literally just depend on <Block> alone to kill the Gray-Silver boss!

After another minute, Zhang Yang consumed the fourth bottle of health potion and restored his health to 2,250 HP. The boss was only left 100,000 HP!

40 seconds later, Zhang Yang activated the sword's <Lifesteal> effect. Slash! Slash! Slash! He sliced the boss 3 times and stole more than 3,000 HP from the boss! He had healed his HP back to the maximum amount!

20 seconds later, his health potion cooldown was done. At the same time, his <Berserker's Heal> was ready to be used. Zhang Yang remained front of the boss like an annoying cockroach, taking all the hits without even budging from his place!

With this, the defeat of the first boss would be imminent! It was not even a challenge at all!

Zhang Yang could not help but to feel a little sympathetic. A thought came into his mind. If some other party tried to fight this boss, the <Spectral Decay> effect would have easily stacked up to 5

layers which would ultimately reach a super high damage value and could easily kill 90% of any tank out there! In this case, it was not about the other tanks being weak, it was Zhang Yang's excellent exploitation of the game's [bugs](#)!

The boss wailed in despair as it turned into a pillar of light and fell defeated, dropping its battle loot all over the floor.

“Aww yiss!” Zhang Yang clapped his hands. He was extremely excited! To have the ability to solo a boss was every single player's ambition, including Zhang Yang's! But ever since he had defeated the Black Panther King at the beginner village, he had been so preoccupied with raiding dungeons, forming a party, managing a guild, and making potions like there was no tomorrow, that he had been completely drawn into the idea of making money!

Ever since he was reborn, he had always been carrying an emotional baggage. To prevent the misery from occurring again, he increased the load on his bag. The game was supposed to be a tool of entertainment, but Zhang Yang did not see it that way. To him, the game was a tool for him to make a fortune!

At this moment however, Zhang Yang finally had a taste of the game's true purpose! He had experienced the fun from killing a boss! He finally felt the rush of battle! The feeling of victory! Money was important, but so was having fun in the game!

However, he could not ever forgive the man who had cause him despair in his past. Liu Wei and his guild Myth must pay the price! But a man must not live with only vengeance in his heart. If a heart remained wrecked with poison and twisted with nefarious

intent, one cannot be his true self.

With a sudden epiphany, Zhang Yang had felt that the future was not as heavy a burden as he thought it would be. The weight on his shoulders was now lighter than before. He smiled. For the first time after a long while, he smiled, both physically and mentally.

“Time for the loots! Loots!” Zhang Yang laughed as he tried to imitate Wei Yan Er screaming every time they finished a boss fight.

[Blade of the Abyss] (Gray-Silver, Dagger)

Weapon Attack: 125-187

Attack Interval: 1.3 seconds.

DPS: 120

<Level 1 Socket>

<Level 1 Socket>

Equip Effect: After a successful attack on a target, there will be a chance to inflict <Darkness Decay>. Target will have 5% increase in all Natural damage. Last for 10 seconds.

Level requirement: 30

Poison was a Natural damage. A dagger was meant for Thieves, especially the Phantom Assassin. This weapon was the best weapon by far in the game!

Zhang Yang sent a private message to Sun Xin Yu containing the description of the weapon. He then call her on the voice messenger.

“Do you need this?” He asked nonchalantly.

“Yes.” She replied coldly.

“Do you really need it!?” He said a little louder.

“Yes! I need it!” Her tone raised evenly.

“Are you sure...?” Zhang Yang played with her a little longer.

“YES! I NEED IT!” She finally screamed.

“...I don't feel the spirit there. Let me start over again. Do you need this?”

“What the hell are you doing!?” Sun Xin Yu finally got angry. Is

he playing with a dog?

“Haha! I was just playing with you! You need to speak up more! Don’t always wander off alone like that! Get along with us a little more!” Zhang Yang laughed. After he had managed to arrange his thoughts, he was now a little relaxed.

“There... There’s something different about you.” A woman was always sharp with these subtle changes, especially since it was The Ice Queen Sun Xin Yu.

“Is that a good thing? Or a bad thing?” Zhang Yang asked.

“Who cares about that? I’m going to grind my level now! Leave me alone!”

Beep.

Sun Xin Yu hung up.

Zhang Yang continued to laugh at Sun Xin Yu’s reaction and continued to delve deeper into the loots.

[Strength Necklace] (Gray-Silver, Necklace)

Vitality: +15

Strength: +15

Equip Effect: All your attacks will have a 5% chance to trigger a buff that grants +50 strength. Effect cannot be stacked. Last for 10 seconds.

Level requirement: 30

Not bad. It was almost time for him to change the necklace he had since Bangar Crypt. After swapping the new necklace, Zhang Yang's HP rose a little higher, reaching 4,870 HP. It was almost breaking the 5,000 benchmark!

[Will of Defense] (Green-Copper, Shield)

Defense: +120

Vitality: +60

Level requirement: 30

Even though this shield was just a Green-Copper tier, it could still be sold off for a good price because shields in the market were scarce! The best shield so far was [United Elemental Shield], the shield Zhang Yang obtained from the Hardcore Mode of Marzerway's Lair.

There were not many teams around that could conquer Hardcore Marzerway's Lair. Furthermore, even if they did manage to kill Marzerway, there was still the drop rate to worry about. Furthermore, the 20-man dungeon would only be available 3 days after the first raid. So far, the number of players in White Jade Castle who would have this shield was no more than 10!

The shield that was one rank below the [United Elemental Shield] was the [Earthen Round Shield], and its recipe could only be found at the Hardcore Mode Hidden boss of the Bangar Crypt. So far, players around Level 30 had turned back to farm the Level 10 dungeon. Since they could easily defeat the dungeon with their level advantage, the recipe had been found by many players and the shield was now obsolete among the top players. Almost every regular Joe or Jane who called themselves tanks out there had the same [Earthen Round Shield] hanging on their backs.

This [Will of Defense] was not as strong as [United Elemental Shield] but it was far stronger than the [Earthen Round Shield]! Zhang Yang continued laughing softly to himself as he kept the shield in his inventory. Zhang Yang reached out his hand to get more items.

There were no other Gray-Silver equipment but there were at least 4 more Green-Copper equipment for him. However, these were all helmets, gloves, boots, and armor type equipment. Since there was already a set-equipment around, these equipment could only be sold for a low price!

Was that all?

Zhang Yang reached out his hand again to make sure. This was the first death of the boss; the drop rate must be high! There had to be some more good stuff!

[Servant: Spectre Assassin] (Silver-tier)

Use: Summons a Spectre Assassin as your servant in battle. Last for 5 minutes. You can only summon one Servant at a time. Summoning any Servant will cause all Servants to be in cooldown.

Cooldown time: 30 minutes.

Level requirement: 30

Binds on obtain.

A Servant! Zhang Yang eyes glinted with joy!

So far, Hunters were the only class in the game that could summon beasts as minions in battle. In the future, during the Inheritance patch update, Spellcasters and Priests would be able to have the “Summoning” Inheritance. They could form a pact with a demon to obtain a demon pet. The only way for the other classes to have a summon would be Servants!

As far as Zhang Yang knew, there were 3 tiers of servants; Copper-tier, Silver-tier, and Gold-tier. Zhang Yang did not know whether or not if there were any other higher tiered summonable Servants available in the game, since the highest-level player in the game in his previous life was only Level 204. It was quite a stretch from reaching the maximum level of 300!

The biggest weakness of a Servant compared to a Hunter's summoned pet was the duration. Unlike the Hunter's pet, Servants could not last forever in the field. Furthermore, a Hunter's pet would follow the owner's level and gain strength as the owner levelled up. A Servant however, remained the same forever. The drop rates of servants were so rare and limited that only field bosses had a chance of dropping it.

A Copper-tier Servant was the weakest among all. The damage was low and it did not possess any skill. They existed to allow players to have a thrill of becoming a master of a summoned Servant. The benefit of this Copper-tier Servant was that once a player had gotten sick of it, he or she could sell it off to other players. A Silver-tier Servant was much more valuable. It would only be dropped by high level bosses. This Servant's attack was much stronger and had a set of skills to use. The downside of a Silver-tier Servant was that it would be bound to the player once he or she obtained it. It was untradeable and unsellable.

The strongest among all Servants was the Gold-tier. They would only be dropped by super strong bosses! In his previous life, when he did the Inheritance quest mission to defeat the King-Kong, it was capable of dropping a Gold-tier Servant which was an extremely powerful miniaturized version of itself!

Bug – Bug is an error in programming in the game which would

cause the game to have some functions to go out of the norm. There are some cases where the bug could be taken advantage of, like the ones in the previous chapters. In this case, Zhang Yang was exploiting bugs that allowed him to be capable of performing extraordinary feats that no human could possibly perform.

Chapter 116: Powerful Servant

Logically, Silver-tiered Servants were not as rare as Gold-tier Servant, but it was still not supposed to be dropped by Clear Lotus – The Ice Whisperer, a small-fry of a gatekeeper boss! Rather, it should have been dropped by the final boss which was that Evil Sorcerer!

Probably this was due to the first kill of Clear Lotus – The Ice Whisperer, so it was a bonus loot!

Yes! Great fortune indeed!

Zhang Yang felt euphoric, and continued to the staircase, step by step to the entrance of fifth floor.

He followed the steps and walked down, turning 7 to 8 rounds before entering the tower's fifth floor.

This floor was different again. It was full of stelae which were at least as tall as seven or eight people and as wide as about three people. Untamed flora grew across the ground. Zhang Yang was felt like he had just stepped into ancient historical remains, fit to be an archaeological excavation!

Zhang Yang raised his head and gazed into the distance. It was dead silent, and the only thing that caught his eyes were some unknown grade of gemstones glimmering on the top of stelae.

“Stealth monsters again?” Zhang Yang grumbled in his heart.

He gingerly stepped forward, sword and shield drawn and raised.

Shwoop!

A number of projectiles suddenly shot rapidly toward Zhang Yang from all directions!

“I am not able to dodge them all!” Zhang Yang calmly said to himself. He still had <Block>!

‘-562!’

‘-534!’

‘-571!’

‘-557!’

<Block> was completely ineffective! Zhang Yang caught sight of four skeletal archers stepping out from the back of a stela in front of him. The skeletal archers were holding bows, each as long as half a person, gazing at him with strong killing intent.

[Underground Tower’s Archer] (Elite)

Level: 36

HP: 40,000

<Block> was definitely an overpowered skill but it was invalid for ranged attacks!

Zhang calculated that the distance between the skeletal archers and himself was at least 20 meters. Their effective range was 2 to 10 meters so Zhang Yang had to take some shots from them if he tried to close the distance. The skeletal archers would always pull away to maintain the distance between themselves and their targets, while unleashing their attack continuously. However, they would only use melee attacks when they fail to shake their targets off. However, Zhang Yang did not have any AoE immobilizing skill so whenever the skeletal archers spread out, Zhang Yang could only chase after them one at a time and swing at it with all his might!

In a moment. Zhang Yang already thought up numerous strategies, and decided not to rush towards the skeletal archers but instead retreated to take cover behind a huge stela.

In 'God's Miracle', be it by players or monsters, ranged attacks would never penetrate the obstacles unless they broke the obstacles themselves. The four skeletal archers clattered noisily, approaching the stela to attack Zhang Yang.

As the skeletal archers drew closer to the stela, Zhang Yang immediately used <Horizontal Sweep> and four ‘-1400’ damage texts appeared above their heads.

The four skeletal archers punched at Zhang Yang pathetically. Ranged attack monsters’ had naturally low melee damage, and the most they could deal was just 100 points of base damage, which was completely nullified by Zhang Yang’s defense. They each only inflicted 1 point of damage to him. Additionally, as if things weren’t bad enough for them, their valid strikes had also activated Zhang Yang’s set equipment’s HP recovery effect, and three ‘+100’ green text floated above his head.

Still, things won’t be so simple. The four skeletal archers jumped backwards after that attack, and gained about 10 meters of distance!

<Tumble>, this was the unique skill for Hunters as an evasive maneuver whenever danger came too close!

Zhang Yang only curled his lips knowingly, before slipping back behind the huge stela.

If those skeletal archers coordinated like actual players, they could actually occupy each corner and surround the stela so that Zhang Yang would be within one of their line of fire no matter where he hid! Unfortunately, this was not the case; as soon they saw Zhang Yang hiding behind the stela, and as per scripted response, they roared, and approached Zhang Yang’s position again.

Zhang Yang jumped out again when the skeletal archers approached the stela. Ten seconds of cooldown was up, and Zhang Yang used <Horizontal Sweep> again, with four damage texts carrying high numbers appearing above their heads.

Once again, the skeletal archers tried to retreat from Zhang Yang!

This was the programmed combat tactic for a ranged attack monster. Although <Tumble> was still in cooldown and unavailable, the four skeletal archers spread out, retreating after throwing punches in retaliation!

Luckily, Zhang Yang was well prepared, he used <Thunder Strike> and the speed of those skeletal archers were immediately reduced. In the meantime, Zhang Yang zoned in on one of them, forcing the skeletal archer to run towards the direction of another skeletal archer, bunching them up together.

With excellent situational and combat awareness, Zhang Yang herded them like sheep, able to force four skeletal archers to the same direction, with none of them being able to keep their distance away from Zhang Yang in order to perform ranged attacks.

30 seconds later after receiving a lot of harassment from Zhang Yang's sword, <Tumble> was ready once again, and skeletal archers fled as one.

<Charge>!

Zhang Yang dashed towards them, keeping close.

<Tumble> and <Charge> had the exact same 30 seconds of cooldown period, so the monsters would never be able to disengage from Zhang Yang!

Three minutes later, those four skeletal archers died miserably while Zhang Yang's HP had recovered, instead of dropping. He was just 2,000 HP short of his full HP! Those skeletal archers' melee attacks activated his set equipment's healing effect so frequently that it was laughable.

This combat seemed easy but it was actually very difficult to fully execute! To herd four monsters into the same direction, while keeping an attentive eye on the monsters' movement patterns, along with further judgment of when to intercept were required to work concurrently. A lesser fighter would have already been turned into a pin-cushion when the archers had spread out.

Zhang Yang managed the entire fight using his experience and excellent senses.

Zhang Yang looted from the monsters' corpses and continued to move forward.

Zhang Yang only moved another few steps forward when he immediately came under attack again. This time, six skeletal archers jumped out. If it had been more than six monsters, Zhang Yang would have really been in trouble!

Zhang Yang repeated his tactic, using the huge stela to take cover from their arrows, while luring them towards him! However, it was much harder to keep six monsters in a group compared to four, so Zhang Yang simply summoned the servant, taking the opportunity to gauge the strength of this Silver-tier servant.

[Spectre Assassin Clear Lotus - The Ice Whisperer] (Silver-tier Servant)

Level: 36

HP: 3,600

Melee Damage: Main Attack: 256-316 (Attack Interval: 1.8 seconds), Secondary Attack: 84-124 (Attack Interval: 1.3 seconds)

Skill: <Steath>, <Shadow Walk>, <Backstab> and <Substitute>.

<Steath>: Blends into the shadow and reduces the chance of being detected but receives a penalty of 50% movement speed reduction. Cooldown time: 10 seconds.

<Shadow Walk>: Walks in the dark, immediately flickers to the back of the target to deal an increased 20% skill damage. Range: 10 meters. Cooldown time: 30 seconds.

<Backstab>: Immediately attacks the target's back, dealing 150% damage as main servant. Can only be activated at the back of target. Cost: 50 Energy. Requirement: Dagger.

<Substitute>: Transfer master's debuff to the servant and renders the master immune to all damage for the next 5 seconds. If the servant dies before that, the master's immune effect will be ended immediately. Cooldown time: 5 minutes.

It was amazing! It was deserving to be called a Silver-tier Servant, its damage was comparable to a Level 36 player equipped with Level 30 Green-Copper equipment!

The most awesome thing was <Substitute> as it could transfer all of the master's debuff! It was an excellent anti-control trick, even with 5 seconds of invincible status. It was absolutely the most divine skill up to current phase.

Besides that, this Spectre Assassin was a carbon copy of Clear Lotus - The Ice Whisperer. The servant was a bombshell, her top tightly bound with leather and leopard-patterned strips which exposed her plump and firm bosom. Her bottom was wrapped in a leather miniskirt with similar leopard-themed patterning, accenting her curvy and firm booty. Her exposed legs were long and fair!

Such a glamorous appearance added a lot of marks to her! If Fatty Han saw her, he would definitely fall unconscious from a massive

nosebleed!

How would it feel like if I touched her? Such an idea popped up in Zhang Yang's mind and he quickly shook it off. This was definitely due to Fatty Han's dirty-minded influence!

Unfortunately, she could only materialize for 5 minutes!

Zhang Yang sighed in dissatisfaction as he quickly dispatched the six monsters and proceeded on.

For the next 5 minutes, with the help of the servant, he wiped the floor with the monsters. As the servant's duration was up, it suddenly turned into a ray of white light and disappeared into thin air.

There were several more monsters along the way, and he had to deal with several more groups of these pesky ranged attackers. Half an hour later, and only with one-fifth of the entire passaged covered, the servant was once again ready.

He summoned it immediately, even if it was not due to the increase in the speed of his kills, Zhang Yang felt good only from looking at her! After all, killing monsters alone was pretty boring and at least having a pretty girl to accompany him was pleasing to the eyes.

Zhang Yang finally came to the end of this floor after three hours. In front of him was a hall, designed not unlike a Roman-

architecture, supported by twelve huge pillars. The hall had undergone significant damage, with most of the rooftop being completely missing, and the rest of it in powdery decay.

There was a throne carved out from a large boulder at the bottom of the hall, it's back about three persons tall, towering in dominance despite its neglected state! There was a closed door to the left side of the throne. Zhang Yang believed that it was the entrance to the sixth floor! That also meant...

There was also a stout, chunky figure atop the throne, dressed in thin armor which seemed to glow silver-white under the weak lighting. There was a huge bow, at least twice his height, resting against the left armrest of the throne!

He was a Dwarven hunter!

[Supreme Archer Barga - The Mead] (Gray-Silver Boss)

Level: 36

HP: 400,000

Note: Supreme Archer, chief of Flame Wolves Army's archery division. He was the pride of Dwarves but he became a spectre due to Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar.

Looks like the bosses on the earlier floors were the key people of Flame Wolves Army. Unfortunately, all of them had fallen victim to the Evil Sorcerer.

Drawing in a deep breath, Zhang Yang drew his sword and sprinted explosively towards the throne, taking note of the boss' ranged nature.

“Bold intruder, how dare you step into the domain of Lord Terpot Ryhar! Just die!” Barga immediately grabbed his long bow and unleashed a lethal arrow with deadly speed and precision!

Zhang Yang raised his shield and ducked. Although <Block> was invalid, but as a tank, raising the shield whenever encountering an attack has become second nature to him.

‘-1,324!’

A huge amount of damage text floated above Zhang Yang's head, at the same time, his speed was reduced as well.

‘Ding! You are affected by <Concussion Shot>. Movement speed reduced by 50% and lasts for 4 seconds!’

The distance between him and Barga was 20 meters which was out of the range of <Charge>. Even if he was within <Charge> range, he did not intend to use it! The hall may be supported by twelve huge pillars, but the base of the hall was so destroyed it could only cover half a person's height, therefore taking cover was

not an option either!

<Shield Wall>!

Zhang Yang decided to use this long cooldown duration skill and continued dashing towards the Barga.

‘-134!’

Barga unleashed another shot but the damage was greatly reduced.

4 Seconds later, the speed reduction effect ended and Zhang Yang closed the distance.

Chapter 117: Barga - The Mead

Barga - The Mead tried to regain its distance. As an archer, despite being a boss, it was not going to take any situation lightly and avoid any melee contact.

However, moving back while fighting, and fully rushing towards the enemy were completely different matters altogether. 4 seconds later, the speed reduction effect had ended and Zhang Yang rapidly rushed towards Barga.

14 meters, 12 meters, 10 meters... 5 meters, 3 meters, 2 meters!

Barga - The Mead used <Tumble> and jumped backwards by another 10 meters!

<Charge>!

Zhang Yang had been saving his <Charge> earlier on for this very occasion!

‘-673!’

‘-1,520!’

‘-1,492!’

Zhang Yang immediately swung his sword, slashing vigorously.

After the series of normal attacks, he used the <Horizontal Sweep> combo along with <Destructive Smash> instantly dealing a massive amount of damage.

“Wretch, you dare challenge my archery?!” Barga cried out according to the script, but due to the situation, ironically raised his two fists and punched Zhang Yang.

‘-525!’

Bosses were definitely on another level when compared to typical monsters. Although Barga was a ranged attack class boss, it could still deal about 1,000 base damage with its bare fists. However, whenever Barga punched Zhang Yang, the damage was assimilated by Zhang Yang’s 20% immunity to offense, combined with his 260 defense value. Thus, the damage that actually got through was only half of its original value!

Barga - The Mead suddenly swept a stout leg beneath Zhang Yang, and the latter received another debuff.

‘Ding! You are affected by <Stumble>. Movement speed reduced by 50% for 5 seconds!’

Zhang Yang only smiled as he stomped the ground and activated <Thunder Strike>, returning the favor, as Barga was afflicted with a movement reduction effect as well.

Barga - The Mead tried to turn around and regain distance but

with its movement speed reduced by 50%, it was useless, and he could only continue engaging in melee combat with Zhang Yang.

<Block>!

<Block>!

<Block>!

Zhang Yang continued recovering HP due to the set equipment, as Barga continued attacking him.

Zhang Yang laughed triumphantly as he summoned his servant, Clear Lotus and tag-teamed Barga.

Because Zhang Yang had accumulated so much aggro, Barga's back was completely at the disposal of Clear Lotus and damage texts floated across Barga's head as she struck at leisure.

Half a minute later, Barga - The Mead's <Tumble> was ready again so it immediately jumped backwards.

Foosh! Zhang Yang chased after Barga with <Charge>. At the same time, Clear Lotus servant used <Shadow Walk>, flickering behind Barga and continued attacking rapidly like a furious cat.

Zhang Yang alone could cause up to at least 1,000 damage to Barga and Clear Lotus servant caused about 300 damages. In total,

they caused up to at least 1,300 damage; they removed 40,000 HP from Barga within 30 seconds!

“Nasty Warrior, if you have any guts, feel the draw of my bow!” Barga loudly proclaimed, continuously using <Stumble> to try shaking Zhang Yang off. Each attempt was reciprocated with <Thunder Strike> and nothing was gained from it as they plodded along together in reduced speed.

Zhang Yang could not afford to be careless so he had to time <Thunder Strike> precisely. If he used <Thunder Strike> too early, or too late, Barga could pull away from him successfully.

Pah!

Barga - The Mead drew his bow and released an arrow at Zhang Yang at point blank. Zhang Yang's character got <Dazed> and kept on turning around in the same place.

‘Ding! You are affected by <Breaking Shot>, Dazed for 4 seconds!’

Zhang Yang hurriedly selected Clear Lotus servant's <Substitute>, instantly removed <Dazed> effect and Clear Lotus servant replaced Zhang Yang to keep on spinning around at the same spot.

Hoo! Finally Zhang Yang had forced Barga to use <Breaking Shot> but <Substitute>'s cooldown duration was 5 minutes long, meaning it could only be used once per summoning of Clear Lotus.

However, <Breaking Shot> only had a cooldown of 1 minute. Zhang Yang would have to find a way to deal with the following <Breaking Shot>.

90%, 80%, 70%... Barga's HP dropped rapidly due to the bombardment by Zhang Yang and his Clear Lotus servant.

Pah!

One minute later, Barga – The Mead's <Breaking Shot> cooldown's time was up and unleashed an arrow towards Zhang Yang once again.

This time, Zhang Yang could not remove the debuff but commanded his servant step in between them both.

‘-1,335!’

Barga – The Mead successfully pulled away from Zhang Yang and unleashed an arrow towards Zhang Yang

‘-1,322!’

Barga consecutively unleashed a second arrow towards Zhang Yang and his HP dropped by more than 50%!

4 Seconds later, with the <Dazed> effect ended, Zhang Yang used a health recovery potion and dashed towards Barga.

Barga being foolish, shot an arrow towards the sky and a volley of arrows fell from the sky like rain.

‘Ding! Barga – The Mead cast <Barrage>, duration lasts 10 seconds!’

‘-1338!’ A damage text floated above Zhang Yang’s head but he quickly rushed out from the range of <Barrage>!

Silly boss!

<Barrage> was used to attack a bunch of enemies but this idiot used <Barrage> on a single target! Besides, once <Barrage> had been activated, it would continuously rain down at a fixed area as Barga remained rooted to his spot. Thus, Barga had turned himself into a huge wooden pole, unable to react to any attacks!

Zhang Yang strode purposefully towards Barga and began a series of attack with his sword.

Perhaps it was too much to call Barga an idiot because it was part of his design. <Barrage> always existed in its skill list to deal with a bunch of players! The bosses in the game were set up to deal with entire parties of players, even more so when the boss was an open world boss, where there was no limit to the number of players allowed to engage them. AoE skills would be a staple part of their combat mechanisms.

All skills that existed in Barga's retinue would be used based on the situation, and thus, <Barrage> was finally used! In fact, Barga's <Barrage> was truly destructive as it inflicted 2,000 points of damage for every volley of arrows. If <Barrage> was cast to a group of players crowded together, three volleys of arrows would absolutely wipe them out!

Barga had to rely on its comparably weaker melee attacks and every punch he threw was being nullified by Zhang Yang's <Block>. It only served in activating the set equipment's HP recovery effect, and a series of green '+100' appeared above Zhang Yang's head continuously, until he was fully healed!

<Tumble>, <Charge>, <Stumble> and <Thunder Strike>. Zhang Yang corresponded to every skill Barga used and he stuck closely to Barga like a parasite throughout the fight.

Barga used <Breaking Shot> once every minute which posed a significant threat to Zhang Yang but Barga would often do so in poor timing. Whenever Barga happened to cast it at the right time, Zhang Yang used <Berserker's Heal> to remove the debuff!

Five minutes later, Barga – The Mead had lost 370,000 HP and Clear Lotus suddenly turned into a ray of white light and disappeared into thin air.

It was a fair bit of damage output lost, with the servant's departure, but Zhang Yang kept his cool and dealt with Barga patiently.

30,000, 20,000, 10,000...

Another ten seconds later, Barga – The Mead cried out in agony, falling to the ground and dying in miserable manner.

Finally, it was over!

Zhang Yang raised his fist, his posture clearly conveying his excitement.

Suddenly, Barga – The Mead's corpse turned into a ray of white light, swiftly reforming again! It was as if he just resurrected himself!

Zhang Yang reflexively swung his sword at Barga, before any thoughts could take form in his head.

His sword hit nothing but air, and Barga remained untouched.

“Warrior, stay your hand, don't be nervous! For I'm just a soul right now!” Barga – The Mead spoke gruffly.

Don't be nervous? You assh*le of a corpse, how could I not be nervous after what that just happened?!

Zhang Yang looked carefully and saw that Barga's corpse had remained on the ground. The Barga that stood beside the corpse, was actually different compared the translucent Barga that stood

over it. It was definitely how “ghosts” in game looked like.

[Barga – The Mead’s Soul] (Normal)

Level: 1

HP: 0/50

Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief as on the head of Barga’s soul showed a huge exclamation mark which marked the availability of a quest.

“Sigh, I had been turned into spectre, no thanks to that Evil Sorcerer. Because of the Dwarves’ secret technique, a part of my soul had survived, unaffected by that Evil Sorcerer, but I have remained trapped in my own tainted body! My soul has finally been released upon my defeat!” Barga – The Mead bowed its head to Zhang Yang and said warmly, “I thank you from the bottom of my heart, Warrior!”

This was a rare scene of a boss thanking a player for killing it!

Zhang Yang smiled and said: “Dwarf, do you have any other wishes that I can help you fulfill?”

Dwarves were a race, bold and straightforward. It was easy to deal with them, unlike the ‘hum and haw’ pondering and musings

that the noble elf race enjoyed so much, and also unlike hypocritical humans, often riddled with malicious motives. In a way, Dwarves were similar to Beastmen.

“Please, take my my bow, and hand it over to my son at the Hammer Heart Castle!” Barga’s soul looked at Zhang Yang earnestly.

“Ding! Barga – The Mead’s soul has a quest for you: Remnant. Will you accept it?”

“Okay, you have my word!” Zhang Yang nodded his head and accepted the quest.

“Thank you, I hope the God of Titans will always be with you!” Barga’s soul bowed to Zhang Yang again, before dispersing in gentle light.

[Remnant] (Difficulty Level: D)

Quest Description: Hand over Barga – The Mead’s bow to his son, Sith – The Mead! Sith – The Mead lives in the Hammer Heart Castle.

Progress: Hand over [Bow of the Fallen Moon] to Sith – The Mead (0/1)

“Noob tank, have you killed the boss yet?” Wei Yan Er sent a message and asked.

She had already asked once when Zhang Yang was still fighting Barga, but quickly read the situation and left him alone.

“Yeap, he’s dead!”

“Wow, did it drop another servant? You promised to give me a servant!”

Zhang Yang shook his head and smiled as he had never made such a promise, Wei Yan Er had put those words in his mouth. “Little brat, servants don’t fall from the sky! Besides, the tradable servants are only Copper-tiered, they’re nothing much!”

“Waa, you piss me off! I want to kill the boss, I want the servant!”

“Stop fooling around, how’s the situation outside?”

“Hee, people are dying by the dozens, and most of them have given up! It’s so much quieter here now! The Guild Masters of Crimson Rage and Sky High have been unable to contact you but they would like to work with Little Snow and me. They plan to set up a toll at the Underground Tower, keeping the monsters dead. The toll would only allow entry to members of the guilds involved. So what do you think, should we accept?” Wei Yan Er said.

Zhang Yang limited his private messaging function to only his

friends, which was why he could not be contacted. He thought about it and said: “Accept their request!”

Although this was somewhat domineering to others, but, in order to become a strong guild, instilling a degree of fear and respect was necessary. Otherwise, people would think that they were pushovers!

Chapter 118: Sixth Floor

Zhang Yang reached out to loot Barga – The Mead’s corpse.

[Bow of the Fallen Moon] (Quest Item)

Item Description: Remnant of Barga - The Mead, one of the seven sanctified equipment of the Dwarves.

Sanctified equipment! It was just a grade lower than Celestial-tier equipment. Unfortunately, this was merely a quest item. If Zhang Yang got an actual sanctified weapon now, nothing would stand in his way!

Zhang Yang shook his head while smiling. There were two types of sanctified equipment, Holy-tier and Ascended-tier. The Holy-tier equipment could only be looted from above Level 170 bosses while Ascended-tier equipment could only looted from above Level 200 bosses. Zhang Yang was able to obtain only 2 pieces of Holy-tier equipment in his past life!

Dream Technology would not be foolish enough to release such divine equipment and break the balance, with the game being this young.

[Recipe: Legendary Beast Mane]

Use: You will learn to make Legendary Beast Manes.

Requirement: Advance Smithing Skill.

Mining Specialist had always been sending Green-Copper Bars to Zhang Yang, and thus, Zhang Yang already increased his Smithing to Advanced level as he worked on the craft in his free time. All he had to do now was to tap the recipe against his body and learn to smith [Legendary Beast Mane].

[Legendary Beast Mane] (Consumable)

Use: Add [Legendary Beast Mane] to ranged weapon and increase 50 Dexterity points.

It was awesome!

An additional 50 points of Dexterity was absolutely beneficial to Hunter job! The Hunter's Dexterity was the equivalent of the Warrior's Strength, and Zhang Yang had only about 170 points of Strength, even with his Gray-Silver equipment. A [Legendary Beast Mane] added so many points of Dexterity. As a result, this item was definitely divine at the current phase of the game!

But looking further at the ingredients for smithing [Legendary Beast Mane], Zhang Yang let out a sigh! It required 10 units of [Silver Bar] and 2 of the [Meteor Fragment]. [Silver Bar] could

easily be obtained from the spawn points of Silver Veins but [Meteor Fragment] was a rare drop, and the chances of harvesting it was very low.

It meant that [Legendary Beast Mane] could not be sold in bulk like [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]!

Zhang Yang thought about it before contacting Mining Specialist, asking, “Master Miner, can you mine [Silver Ore] yet?”

“I have achieved its requirements but I’m only Level 25 and will be unable to reach the locations of Silver Veins!” Mining Specialist replied immediately.

The spawning points of Silver Veins started as high as maps for Level 30 players, it was really hard for a Level 25 player to go reach such places.

Zhang Yang said: “Dude, you should train faster, I’ll be waiting to buy [Silver Bar] from you!”

“It’s not like I’m against the idea of levelling! I wish that I was Level 100 now, mining away Gold and Violet-Platinum Veins!”

Zhang Yang laughed and said: “You should cut down on mining and train more! Those low-grade ores won’t sell for long, higher grade ores are rare and valuable. Go ahead and train, claim your position in the ore market!”

“Alright, alright, I will train later! With more and more players picking up Mining nowadays, the spawning points of Iron Veins are getting scarce. Whatever that took me half a day previously to get takes a full 3 days now. If this goes on, I’m going to starve to death!” Mining Specialist complained.

It would be strange if Mining Specialist really did starve to death! Zhang Yang had bought over 100 stacks of [Green-Copper Bar] from him for 5 gold per stack. The exchange rate was 1 to 5, so Mining Specialist had actually earned 2,500 dollars! Besides that, he must have sold the remaining stacks to other players. It wasn’t much, but he could actually earn another 3,000 dollars.

Zhang Yang knew about it but he had nothing to gain from debunking Mining Specialist and said, “Fine, keep all [Silver Ore] for me when you get there, especially [Meteor Fragment]!”

“Okay, bye!”

Zhang Yang ended the conversation with Mining Specialist and continued looting from Barga’s corpse.

[Skill Book: 10 Strikes]

Use: You will gain the skill: <10 Strikes>.

Class Requirement: Hunter.

Level Requirement: 30.

Unexpectedly, it was <10 Strikes>!

This skill was useless in the beginning as it required 100 Focus Points to be activated and the damage was pretty low which only 40% of ranged attack. But this skill could be leveled up. Whenever a Skill Point was added to it, an extra arrow would be added to the skill as well. When it reached Level 10, ten arrows would be shot at once!

This skill would only start to shine when upgraded to at least Level 5. However, Skill Points were highly limited for players. Zhang Yang and his team who continuously claimed multiple “First Clear” and the additional skill points that came along with them were a different case. Regular players who obtained Skill Books were usually at a high level, but even if they learned <10 Strikes>, they would not have enough Skill Point to increase the skill level.

The requirements of levelling increased as players levelled higher. It would take 3 days for a Level 31 player to gain a level up to Level 40, while at Levels 41 to 50, each level would take 5 days. Players would only be rewarded with a Skill Point after one to two months. How many players could stand to invest in a long term skill like <10 Strikes> instead of gaining immediate advantages from upgrading other skills?

Therefore in his past life, while many Hunter players did learn <10 Strikes>, you would rarely find anyone with Level 5 <10

Strikes> or more!

“None of my concern, really. I’ll just toss this skill book to Fatty Han and Hundred Shots and let the two of them figure it out!” Zhang Yang tossed the skill book into his inventory and continued looting from Barga’s corpse.

The remaining loots were a pile of Green-Copper equipment, a few pieces of [Cotton Cloth] and about 80 Silver Coin.

After looting, Barga’s corpse slowly disappeared.

The door beside the throne creaked opened upon Barga’s death, and Zhang Yang walked down the stairwell, turning 7 to 8 rounds before reaching the sixth floor.

It was a desolate land, and it smelled so rotten that even the Graveyard could not compare! The mud on the ground was masked by a black fog. Visibility was limited to about 10 meters. Zhang Yang couldn’t see anything beyond that.

“Stealth monsters again?” Zhang Yang thought in his mind. This place was wide and open, there were no stelae for him to hide this time, unlike the previous floor.

... This was too perfect for anything that lurked in the shadows!

Zhang Yang cautiously advanced.

One step, two steps... seven steps, eight steps!

The mud on the ground morphed suddenly. Close to his left foot, mud flew up and a figure jumped from the ground, charging towards Zhang Yang!

[Sleeping Warrior] (Elite)

Level: 36

HP: 50,000

Zhang Yang laughed at the circumstances, activated <Block>, simultaneously cutting at the black shadow using his sword.

<Block>!

‘-750!’

The monster which attacked him had its whole body covered in mud, even its face was completely covered. Zhang Yang could only see its eyes, glowing with dark flames.

Such eyes were the feature of a spectre. Dark flames were their inexhaustible power source! According to the official statement, it

was alright for spectral monsters to lose their limbs as they were undead, they only needed to reassemble themselves!

The spectral monsters would be killed only if their flames were extinguished!

Higher leveled spectres usually had their dark flames hidden inside their body, undetectable at first glance.

“Spectres everywhere! This is seriously getting old!” Zhang Yang slashed mechanically at them.

Suddenly, that monster started to spin at high speed, dull light reflecting off its sword as mud flew off its body.

“Ding! Sleeping Warrior has cast <Tornado Cleave Dance>. Lasts for 3 seconds!”

<Tornado Cleave Dance> caused great damage every second but Zhang Yang’s <Block> also came into effect every second. <Block>! <Block>! <Block>! 3 Seconds later, the Sleeping Warrior stopped spinning and Zhang Yang remained unscathed!

Currently, Zhang Yang was like a God, fighting in single combat against physical-type monsters!

Slash! Slash! Slash! Zhang Yang continuously attacked, removing the monster of all 50,000 HP in slightly over a minute!

‘Ding! You have killed Sleeping Warrior. Obtained 50,000 EXP!’

Zhang Yang looked at his EXP bar, it was at 96% of Level 30. He was close to levelling up! But when he glanced at the Player Level Ranking, Fatty Han and the gang were no longer in the Top 10. Currently, a Level 36 player was in the first position, while the 10th position was held by a Level 34!

The leveling addict, Floating Fire Ball was nowhere to be seen in the Player Level Ranking. According to Fatty Han, someone had hired Sword and Fire Mercenary to kill Floating Fire Ball continuously, causing him to drop 10 levels! Zhang Yang also had thought of killing him previously. However, Floating Fire Ball had a paranoid fear of death, and he always brought along hundreds of members along with him whenever he went training. Those members would lure the monsters to him and he had more than ten healers to stay behind him. So, it was really hard for a Guardian like Zhang Yang to kill him alone unless he killed all of them one by one. Otherwise, it was almost impossible to even spot Floating Fire Ball.

However, Sword and Fire Mercenary had sent out two Thieves who waited for the chance to kill Floating Fire Ball. They found their chance seven days later, to assassinate Floating Fire Ball even amidst his huge crowd of followers, and they had killed him ten times instead of once! Zhang Yang had to acknowledge that “Trash” Mercenary had some capabilities indeed!

Besides the Player Level Ranking in China Server, the system had recently added another new ranking which was categorized by

Capitals, where system listed the top 20 Player Level Ranking in each Capital. Currently, those who were in the top 20 of White Jade Castle were the people from Crimson Rage, The Dominators, Sky High and Sword and Fire Mercenary.

Previously, these strong guilds kept their strength hidden. Nowadays, with the many spies pouring in from other guilds, there was no point in hiding any longer. So, the Guild Masters simply let it all out into the open. It was a good method of promoting their guilds as well!

Zhang Yang thought deep, and decided that it was time to show himself in the list again! He was already considered as “public figure”, anyways.

However, even the twentieth player in White Jade Castle’s Player Level Ranking was Level 33. Things were getting really competitive!

“I must get Fatty Han and the gang to train faster! They wasted too much time on the Level 30 class quest!” Zhang Yang sighed gently, “Anyway, those who just bother about getting their levels are going to regret taking the class quests lightly!”

Zhang Yang fought on for two hours before reaching the end of the sixth floor. It was strange that he was able to enter the seventh floor without having to fight a boss!

Zhang Yang walked in and out through the entrance of seventh floor, trying to trigger something, hoping that the boss may be

stuck, or bugged, but nothing happened. Zhang Yang was disappointed!

Looking at the time, it was already later than 7 P.M.!

Zhang Yang immediately logged out from the game and went out to get food. He was so busy fighting through the Underground Tower that he had skipped his lunch! He was already feeling faint!

Chapter 119: Dual Boss

After finishing up his meal with his mind refreshed, Zhang Yang reconnected back online.

“Hey, warrior of stink-ass, where have you been?” the attractive voice of Han Ying Xue floated lightly by his ears.

“Entering the seventh floor! How’s the situation up there?” Zhang Yang asked casually.

“Stage clear! We’re currently clearing the monsters in the first floor, and we’re almost done with it. Give us another 10 minutes tops, and we’ll be able to enter the second floor!” Han Ying Xue spoke squeakily, as if she would not accept it if she failed to melt the others with her sweetness and charm.

“Oh, yea...” Han Ying Xue paused for a second, and said, “Sky Shaman and Snow Seeker had been asking about your whereabouts!”

The world system made the announcement, so everyone knew that the value of the land was definitely sky high. Sky Shaman and the others refused to believe that Zhang Yang would sit himself out of this golden opportunity, so it would be natural for them to suspect Zhang Yang planning some scheme in some dark corner of the game.

Zhang Yang asked, “Then what did you tell them?”

“I just told them you’re still crafting potions, you money-grubber!”

Zhang Yang burst into laughter. “You dare to accuse me of being a money-grubber? If I really am, you must be the female money-grubber! We’re meant for each other, then!”

Zhang Yang regretted immediately as soon as he said that. You could flirt with anyone else, just don’t flirt with this witch!

“Tsk tsk tsk, you don’t even have your pubic hair yet and you dare to make an attempt on me?” Han Ying Xue squeakily insulted him.

Zhang Yang thought about throwing back at her, “In fact, I actually have all my pubic hair.”, but giving more thought about it, it would be unwise to do so with this witch, giving her the opportunity to fire him from all directions. So he distracted her by changing topics.

The seventh floor and the floor before it were similar in a way that both were uncultivated and had a gloomy environment. Not a single monster was in sight.

Pushing forward.

“Gong!” the swampy ground rifted open all of a sudden, and a Skeleton with a shield equipped on its left hand and an axe on its

right jumped out of it. It lunged towards Zhang Yang without holding back.

[The Shield Holder of Undead] (Elite)

Level: 36

HP: 60,000

A shield-armor warrior type?

Zhang Yang charged straight up to the enemy without hesitation.

‘<Blocked>!’

‘<Blocked>!’

Both the monster and Zhang Yang had the word ‘<Blocked>!’ appeared just above their heads.

Zhang Yang felt a pleasant rush, thinking to himself, how many times can this monster use <Block>? Could the monster really compete with him?

The first normal attacks were blocked on both sides. Only a little

rage point had been accumulated over the battle as each second passed. It was not even nearly enough rage points to launch any simple skill, so Zhang Yang could only wait for the next turn to attack.

‘-571!’

‘<Blocked>!’

On their second clash, Zhang Yang launched another successful <Block> and avoided the damage while the monster took a solid hit from Zhang Yang’s swing of his sword.

With the accumulated rage point from the hit, along with the rage point from embracing the damage received, he was ready to launch his respective skills.

‘-1,390!’ <Horizontal Sweep>.

‘Dodge!’

A normal attack followed by a skill damage was not enough to cut it, even after using <Block> once after every second. Zhang Yang made preparation for this early on, moving his body with his legs, as he dodged the heavy attacks.

The good thing was that the monster’s skills usually had very long cooldown time, unlike the players, otherwise Zhang Yang would have had to crack his head to win the fight.

Being a shield-armor type, not only did it have a significantly high shield armor defense value, it also had a passive skill that granted 20% damage reduction. Even after slamming 5 layers of <Cripple Defense> onto the monster, coordinated with <Eagle Eye> in effort to bring the defense down to zero, Zhang Yang could only cause so much damage that was still lower than his basic attack damage!

But a low damage was damage nonetheless. It did not bother Zhang Yang to make more cuts. It was just a matter of time, and it did not take that long for the monster to let out a screeching mourn before shattering onto the ground, turning into a pillar of white light and giving a substantial amount of experience points to Zhang Yang.

He touched the dead body of the monster to find only 3 silver coins. “Poor bloody bastard!” Zhang Yang could not help himself but feel despise again and again.

He spent more than 2 hours clearing all the way down and tossing himself around the dungeon before finally reaching the end of the seventh floor.

Rawgh! Rawgh! RAWGH!

Two heavily armored NPCs were clashing on each other. One looked short and fat; without a doubt being a dwarf, with a shield on one hand and a mace on the other. The other one is a big orc with a tall and sturdy body, holding a long spear with both of his

hands. Horizontal swipe, slice, chop, poke, every move he made with his spear forged ahead with the vigor and vitality of a tiger!

To have the ability to hold a shield, it must have been either a shield-armor type warrior or a guardian. For the other NPC, it could either be a berserker or a Templar to be able to wield a two-handed weapon. Since both monsters had a rage slot over each of their heads, Zhang Yang was certain that they must have been warrior-type monsters.

[Brandon - The Ale] (Grey-Silver Boss)

Level: 36

HP: 380,000 / 500,000

Note: The battalion commander of the first battalion of Flame Wolves Army. It is definitely authentic!

[Akashic - The Lionheart] (Grey-Silver Boss)

Level: 35

HP: 300,000 / 400,000

Note: The battalion commander of the first battalion of Flame Wolves Army. It is definitely authentic!

So this was why he could not see any bosses on the sixth floor, as they were all gathered here!

Seeing the bosses battling fiercely with each other from afar, Zhang Yang suddenly widened his eye a little, as he suddenly had an idea, “Why don’t I wait until their HP depletes until 100,000 or 200,000 first before I charge in to kill both of them instantly?” So he waited quietly in the corner.

“Akashic, you dumbass orc! Today will be the day I tell you, only shield-armor type warriors are the true warriors of all, and I am the legitimate battalion commander!” Brandon was swinging around his attacks while screaming at his enemy!

Akashic rustled up with two stabs from his spear, “Nonsense! It will never be a coward shrinking in his own turtle shell! Only the fearless man is legitimate to claim the title of warrior! And to think, you becoming my battalion commander, I rather knock my own brain out to the ground!”

“You asshole! No one can criticize the great warrior of the dwarf, especially calling me a coward!”

“Hahaha! I shall pierce your weak turtle shell ass with my almighty spear!”

The two bosses were obsessed with slaughtering each other, leaving Zhang Yang to enjoy watching their drama, cheering quietly from the bottom of his heart! The more ruthless they fight among themselves, the easier it would get for him to clean up the mess afterwards!

The battle among NPC was on a totally different level compared to the battle among players. Just looking at the damage values that popped up on the screen was absolutely terrifying. Damages exploding at 100,000 and 20,000! Taking a moment to imagine, if this amount of damage was applied onto the players, there would be no way out of it at all! Death would be inevitable!

It did not take long for the bosses to bring down their HP to the stage, with one boss left with 30,000 HP while the other with only 10,000 HP.

Zhang Yang was uncertain of whether one of the bosses would actually die by the end of their battle, but he was sure of one thing, a boss being killed by another boss would never allow him to pick up its equipment!

Zhang Yang charged straight up to the bosses, ready to be the fisherman that collected the mussels before the crane, to take advantage of the situation. Bam!

‘-1374!’

‘-1492!’

With his <Horizontal Sweep> rising high, he dealt a substantial amount of damage in one shot on both bosses in an instant!

“Despicable c*nt! You dare to interrupt our sacred duel?” Brandon was furious in that instant, brushing up his battle mace towards Zhang Yang.

Akashic aimed the tip of his spear at Zhang Yang as well, yelling furiously, “Human filth! Only your filthy kind would know no shame! I will crush you, you shorty sh*t!”

“You dumb orc, do not mention the word shorty in front of me or I shall knock your brain out!” Brandon yelled at Akashic almost immediately.

“Kill!”

Both bosses turned their assault towards Zhang Yang.

‘<Block>!’

Zhang Yang prioritized his assault onto Akashic as he has the least HP. Using <Destructive Smash> and summoning Clear Lotus at the same time, he commanded her to join their attacks on Akashic.

‘-1488!’

“Argh...!” Suddenly, both bosses let out a roar at the same time, and their bodies instantly glowed in red light.

“Ding! Brandon - The Ale used <Berserker's Heal>!”

“Ding! Akashic - The Lionheart used <Berserker's Heal>!”

“+500,000!”

“+100,000!”

Two large numerical green texts popped out right on top of Brandon and Akashic's heads!

“Oh, f*ck me!” Zhang Yang immediately cursed! Are you kidding me? Both bosses knew how to use <Berserker's Heal>? If their cooldown is as expected to be 2 minutes long, killing the bosses would not be possible forever unless my firepower is strong enough to blow the bosses' HP to zero in that time!

It was lucky that Zhang Yang used <Destructive Smash> on Akashic before that. Under the influence of decreasing 75% of the healing effect, the <Berserker's Heal> only healed 100,000 HP!

At that moment, Brandon was at full health, while Akashic only had 110,000 HP!

This meant that Zhang Yang dealt a full 290,000 damage on the

boss with one swing of his sword! This was even bossier than the boss! To do a 300,000 damage in a single attack, players would require to equip themselves with a full set of legendary artifacts and use high-level skills with long cooldown time before making that happen!

So cool!

While dodging the attacks from both bosses, Zhang Yang focused all of his damage output on Akashic, swearing to take out one of the bosses first.

With 2 bosses around, it was impossible for Zhang Yang's <Block> to achieve zero damage! Even with his godly pick-and-roll dodging skill, he would still be caught in some of the attacks. So Zhang Yang tried his best to reserve <Block> for Akashic, because a Berserker warrior would have an insanely high damage output in a single blow which was way too much to be handled, as a Guardian warrior was well known for its low offense and high defense, which meant that Guardians could still hit back even after sustaining some damage!

‘-915!’

‘-724!’

Brandon's basic attack was around 1,500, so when it hit Zhang Yang, the damage output was about 900 damage, and with the addition of the [Absolute Defense Ring] effect being superimposed, the damage dropped further to 800. But Brandon knew <Thunder

Strike> that had the tendency of dealing damage that ignored <Block> and <Dodge>. The target would suffer as soon as they fall within the attack range. The boss would use the skill approximately after every 10 seconds, causing a considerable damage to the defending Guardian.

At the same instant, Zhang Yang would also tried to unleash his damage on Akashic. With the bosses attacking from both at the front and rear, <Block> was fully utilized to the point that the shield was hit hard, until it flew!

In just a minute, Zhang Yang was beaten to the bottom of his HP while Akashic only had 30,000 HP left! As for Clear Lotus, she took 4 direct hits of <Thunder Strike> and died, letting out a sad cry after.

<Berserker's Heal>!

‘+4,870!’

Zhang Yang instantly returned to full health and continued to unleash his attacks wildly on Akashic.

Suddenly, Akashic raised up his spear and started spinning in high speed!

“Ding! Akashic - The Lionheart used <Tornado Cleave Dance>! Speed increased by 100%, causes 3,000 physical damage to radius of 3X3 meters per second, last for 3 seconds!”

Zhang Yang would have used <Block> to embrace the boss's skill if there was only Akashic on the battlefield, but the dwarf was just right beside him knocking him with that big-ass mace, pushing him to use <Block> on Brandon instead!

‘<Shield Wall>!’

Without hesitation, Zhang Yang made a life-saving decision by using the right skill.

‘-240!’

‘-240!’

‘-240!’

10 seconds passed and the <Shield Wall> had faded, and Zhang Yang continued to unleash his assault. Fighting two bosses at the same time was really too stressful for him! But if he could somehow take out one of them, then he would be able to torture the other boss slowly to his death!

<Horizontal Sweep>, <Destructive Smash>, <Force Strike>, <Shield Bash>!

Once again, Zhang Yang was beaten to the bottom of his HP bar again!

The vampiric effect of the [Lover's Sword] activated!

Kill! Kill! KILL!

Bastard boss, please die faster!

Chapter 120: Luck Is Also Part Of Strength

300,000, 200,000, 100,000!

With Akashic's HP depleting wildly, it finally hit as low as 100,000!

Zhang Yang had only... 2,489 HP left to be exact!

‘-528!’

‘-528!’

‘-528!’

In that instant, <Shield Bash> burst out a strong lethality onto Akashic! The <Shield Bash> was supposed to have a lower basic damage value, dealing approximately 400 damage point to bosses that were wearing high-defense armor. But Zhang Yang could neutralize the boss' armor to zero with <Cripple Defense> and <Eagle Eye>, completely unleashing the full damage of <Shield Bash>!

“Urgh!” Akashic was finally beaten to his last drop of HP, falling hard to the ground, while Zhang Yang only had 518 HP left!

‘Ding! You killed Akashic - The Lionheart, acquired 400,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! Congratulations! You have reached Level 31! All attributes +1, acquired 5 attribute points!’

A golden light flashed, with Zhang Yang progressing one level higher magnificently! And more crucially, leveled-up players would have their health reset to full!

Zhang Yang burst into laughter, as there was no more convenient time than this! He was mentally prepared to die once and to run all the way back to take out the second boss, but this sudden level-up occurrence was perfectly placed to solve his dangerous situation!

Now that he was battling a boss with low offense and high defense, Zhang Yang had no stress anymore. It was just a matter of time before he took it down.

Furthermore, Zhang Yang also believed that the boss would not continuously use <Berserker’s Heal>. It was obvious that it would be a one-time occurrence, allowing the two bosses to square up with the players with full health regardless of the time they were battling each other. But it may also be a negligence in the design, seeing that there was a little delay before the skill triggered. If the bosses were programmed to use <Berserker’s Heal> the moment they detected any players within their aggro sight range, it would become impossible for them to be affected by the reduction of healing rate in the first place, otherwise, facing Akashic with 400,000 HP would make it impossible for Zhang Yang to take out the boss without having his own HP being emptied out.

With more luck on his side, he actually leveled up the moment he took down the first boss!

Sure enough, luck was also part of strength!

Zhang Yang turned around to face Brandon!

The difficulty of this stage was facing two bosses at the same time, so taking out one of them instantly took away any further difficulty to face the other boss!

Every melee attack that Brandon threw at him was counteracted with <Block>. Zhang Yang only sustained some damages from the area effect damage coming from <Thunder Strike>. Even though AoE damage was around 600 every time it struck, the damage only happened once in every 10 seconds. Depending on his armor set's healing effect, some [Healing potion], constant use of <Berserker's Heal>, and the special effect of the [Lover's Sword] in play, Zhang Yang could totally hold on to it!

The only disadvantage at hand now was that the boss had a passive reduction of 20% damage in play, not to mention the boss having over 500,000 HP, making him slower and harder to kill compared to the previous bosses he encountered before.

The battle dragged for 12 minutes long before Brandon was finally beaten down to his last bit of his HP, forcing him to close his eyes.

Phew! Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief. It was really tiring, but definitely satisfying! Beating two bosses at the same time all by himself, it felt awesome!

He could not help it but to giggle, “Hehehe...”, to the point that he could not hear Han Ying Xue calling out to him from afar. With her multiple shout-outs on his name, he finally came back to his senses.

“Hmm?”

“Are you deaf or retarded? I have been calling your name for so long and you couldn’t hear me at all?” Han Ying Xue was sullen.

“I was distracted, forgive me!”

“... Should I call you stupid Zhan or stupid Yu?” Han Ying Xue did not talk down to business, instead, she was mumbling to herself.

Zhang Yang let out a heavy sigh, “I’m guessing you are not here to ask me about this?”

“Oh, right!” Han Ying Xue quickly reacted, “So, we have passed through the first floor, but while doing the clear-out, the players in the whole city were provoked. So I did some discussion with Snow Seeker the others, and we came up with the conclusion to let the other players to come in as well. We’ve already entered the second floor, and the monsters on the first floor had already been cleared

out!”

Zhang Yang nodded his head a few times, “It is best not to provoke any public anger, because when they are united, any guild will just be powerless!”

“So how’s your progression now?”

“Just cleared the boss on the seventh floor!”

“Yo, that was actually pretty fast! You can take down a boss all by yourself? That’s awesome!”

“Well about that...” Zhang Yang spoke out of his pride and smiled, “Alright, keep me posted on the progress up there!”

“Alright, roger!”

The most exciting moment after killing a boss was to open the dead body of the boss in front of him; the best moment to look forward to.

[Bloody Chest Plate] (Gray-Silver, leather armor)

Armor: +8

Vitality: +70

Strength: +8

Agility: +42

<Level 1 socket 1>

<Level 1 socket 2>

Required level: 30

Judging from only one attribute, [Bloody Chest Plate] had 50% more attribute value than the armor sets of the Thief and Hunter classes. But players would normally not give up on the set effects to wear the armor separately as the set effect only worked when all pieces of the armor were together.

Just like the current Zhang Yang, with the 5 pieces of armor as a set giving him a boost of 10% damage, it would take changing up at least 4 pieces of Level 30 Gray-Silver grade equipment to have the same effect again! The 3 pieces of armor that triggered the set bonus of healing attribute was one hell of the advantage for him, too. It was like having <Heal> with him all the time! Definitely not going to replace it!

If they were to be compared to each another, Level 30 equipment had the advantage of increasing higher HP, which was great for

supporting the maximum HP.

But we should keep that aside first, because he could not meet the requirement of the maximum HP to challenge the 4th boss in a Level 40 castle region dungeon with his current Level 20 armor set. So he took precaution and kept it to prepare himself for what's coming in the future!

[Rapid Traveling Boots] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Armor: +12

Vitality: +40

Strength: +16

Agility: +4

<Level 1 socket>

Equip: Increase Movement Speed by 10%.

Level required: 30

Increasing movement speed by 10%... that's really awesome! But

it's a shame that the [God Oil] has been used up already. At recent times, even though Lone Desert Smoke conquered the boss in the Cave of Bones, but the [God Oil] that increased movement speed never appeared again among any loots ever since.

[Akala's helmet] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Armor: +12

Vitality: +80

Strength: +34

Agility: +6

<Level 1 socket 1>

<Level 1 socket 2>

Level required: 30

Not bad at all... two pieces of equipment with high vitality values out of these draws!

After collecting the 3 pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, there were

still 7 to 8 pieces of [Green-Copper Clothing]. Without any consideration, Zhang Yang put all of them into his inventory. If he could acquire the title deed for the land, in corresponding with a better property location, then maybe he could start a shop of his own. By then, these equipment may be used to make a merrier scenario.

There was also a skill book among the equipment.

[Skill book: Blood Rage]

Use: Teaches the skill <Blood Rage>.

Required: Warrior.

Zhang Yang had his eyes widened a little at the moment. He instantly touched the skill book onto his body.

<Blood Rage>: Sacrifice a part of HP to generate 30 points of rage.

Consume: 1% HP.

Cooldown time: 1 minute.

It was definitely useful for starting up battles on monsters. 30 rage points was actually enough to launch a skill!

Zhang Yang continued his journey forward, heading into the entrance of the 8th floor of the Tomb Tower.

Ting, ling, ling!

Just when he stepped out of the stairs on the right, he suddenly saw a flash of white light, followed by continuous thunder claps, issuing a deafening sound of thunder!

This was completely a world full of lightning, with flashes of white light constantly coming down from the top of the rock pits. They were just so dense and frightening!

At the ground, there were a few monsters scattered in the area. But they were constantly being struck by the lightning strikes. With just a few strikes, they died and were turned into white ashes. And then, new monsters began to spawn again in the area just to be struck down again by those frightful lightning strikes. The whole process was quick and short. Similar to the 2nd floor of the tower, this floor was more of the mechanism-style. Even the ground was covered with the same material of stone in the shape of square, just that this time they were not black and white but all white!

Zhang Yang did not have to personally test the damage these lightning could do, because all he had to do was to look at how fast

the monsters were being struck to death, and he could already know the damage output of each lightning strike, which was about 4,000 points!

It's so disorganized!

That was the first impression Zhang Yang had when he first stepped in. There seemed to be no pattern for where the lightning would strike, with different strikes ending on different spots of the ground! He eventually began to grasp a pattern for it, with his eyes wide open with every passing second.

Left, left, right, right, right, and then left, right, right, left, left!

Zhang Yang repeated the sequence deep down his heart, took another look at the patterns again before he finally decided to act!

Go!

Left, left, right, right, right, he made it safely!

Left, right, right, left, left, it was a smooth breakthrough as well!

The lightning struck him once, but Zhang Yang insisted to push forward!

“Ow...”

One skeleton warrior spawned just beside Zhang Yang, holding a gigantic mace with both hands, instantly drawing Zhang Yang straight into battle. It slammed the mace heavily towards Zhang Yang.

He turned around and used <Block>, totally ignoring the monsters and kept on pushing forward!

Bang!

The lightning directly struck the monster, reducing 4,000 HP of the monster. It seemed like that was just 10% of the monster's health.

The enraged monster howled and smashed over and over again with his mace.

Zhang Yang turned around and used <Block> on the attack before pushing forward just like before, as he did not dare to stop even for a second.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The lightning strikes continued to drop, and the monster did not hold for long. Just in the matter of seconds, it turned into a white light, dropping a few loots. And among the loots, there was a piece of equipment that flashed a Green-Copper luster!

Zhang Yang could only take a peek without having any thoughts

about stopping for it; he could only push forward. He knew that if he even gave in to his slightest greed, he would definitely end up being struck to death by those horrible lightning strikes!

At that exact same time, Zhang Yang suddenly had a weird thought: What if Han Ying Xue or Wei Yan Er were to be in the same situation? Would these two women rather be struck by lightning just to get to the loots?

Well with 80% probability, they would!

A gray shadow flashed by. It was another monster that spawned not far from Zhang Yang. This time, it was a spell-type monster. The moment it sighted Zhang Yang, it raised its staff and started to chant a spell.

Bang!

One lightning strike struck down, beating the monster's spell back by a length. With unyielding will, the monster continued to chant the spell again.

When players or normal monsters read spells, the incoming attacks would delay the time for them to finish chanting their spells.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

With the continuous strike of the lightning, the spell was

interrupted continuously, with the initial 3 seconds to chant a spell delayed to 6 seconds! After that, a sound of “Shew” was heard, seeing a shot of shadow bomb being launched towards Zhang Yang.

‘-800!’

In return, the monster was brutally struck by the lightning, 300,000 HP was instantly being brought down to 6,000 HP!

Bang! Bang!

Another two lightning strikes. The monster was turned into ashes while trying to chant its second shadow bomb spell.

50 meters, 100 meters, 200 meters... Zhang Yang constantly pushed forward.

1 monster, 5 monsters, or even 7 monsters, countless monsters were spawned on the way, but none of them survived even more than 15 seconds. Every single one of them were heavily struck by the lightning!

Monsters that deal physical damage did not worry Zhang Yang because he could use <Block> to neutralize the incoming damages. It was the monsters that dealt magic damage that worried him, as Zhang Yang would have no choice but to sustain one or two damages from their spells. However, one red potion, coordinated with <Berserker’s Heal>, would allow him to maintain his high HP.

It was more than 10 minutes later when Zhang Yang had finally made it through the lightning area!

Phew!

He let out a very long sigh. Even though it was just about 10 minutes, but maintaining high focus for that long was mostly tiring!

And there wasn't even a boss over there!

Zhang Yang looked at the widely opened entrance. Deep down in his heart, he understood the design in this area: If the door to the next floor was shut still, then there must be a boss nearby. But, if the door was opened widely, it would only mean that there was no boss!

After reaching the door, there was no boss, only a chest with a flash of silver white light luster that was lying quietly by the entrance side of the wall.

Chapter 121: Rescue Merlinda

Zhang Yang went up to open the silver chest.

10%... 40%... 70%...

Pow! The chest opened. Zhang Yang could see the loots in the chest with his own eyes. 3 pieces of Green-Copper equipment and a bottle of potion.

It was natural that Zhang Yang would not waste time on checking the Green-Copper equipment, as he readily loaded them straight into his backpack. He then took a closer look on the last bottle of the potion. All potions that would fall from bosses or treasure chests were impossible to be crafted or be learned to craft; they were normally very rare and valuable.

Just like these 3 pieces of Green-Copper equipment, they could also be considered to be a product of foundry, leather-made, tailored, but the pattern or design of the equipment was not something players could learn to craft.

[Beginner's Colorful Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Increase all magic resistance by 1,000, last for 8 minutes.

Cooldown time: 2 minutes.

Level required: 30

As expected, the effect was astonishingly good!

There were 5 type of magic attributes in ‘God's Miracle’: Ice, Fire, Shadow, Nature, and Light. Alchemist players could learn to craft all 5 different types of magic resistance potion, but with only one effect in one potion, never more. It was just like Zhang Yang learning how to craft the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], only enhancing the shadow resistance of the player. Zhang Yang carefully put the potion into the backpack with a wavering heart.

At first, he was worried about how to take on the final boss, the Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar. Seeing obviously from its name “the Evil Sorcerer”, that boss was definitely a magic-casting monster which would deal in spell and magic damages. Battling an elite spell-casting monster was already hell to him, he would definitely die horribly if he went up against this boss!

But now there was still hope to give it a try after acquiring the bottle of [Beginner's Colorful Potion].

Zhang Yang went into the tunnel and walked on the stepping stones, with twists and turns all around the places, as he finally found himself a way into the 9th floor of the tower.

“Argh...”

“Argh...”

“Please help me...”

The countless voices of crying and groaning were heard as soon as Zhang Yang set foot into the floor. He felt a chill straight up in his heart as he gazed around. He could only see the design of the floor and it looked like the wards in the hospitals, not being able to move his eyes away from the neatly placed experimental tables. In every table there was a soul tied up on it; human, elves, orcs, dwarfs, even gnomes!

Every one of their stomachs were ripped open and their limbs cut off. They look utterly in pain! With a few of them still barely alive, they moaned and cried miserably.

Countless Skeletal monsters were patrolling and shuffling back and forth, with all holding swords, maces, axes in their hands. Every step gave off the fractioning sound of the bone joints, combining with the moaning and groaning, making the atmosphere creepier than ever!

“There is no doubt he is one evil sorcerer, much eviller than Jack the Ripper or any [BBK](#) kind!” Zhang Yang instantly lifted his Lover’s Sword and started charging forward. In an instant, he approached a Skeletal monster and he continued to charge forward explosively.

[Elite Guard] (Elite)

Level: 36

HP: 80,000

Even though the HP was slightly more, it did not change the fact that it was still a monster that only dealt physical damages. That meant that the monster would only be tortured to death slowly by Zhang Yang!

A minute passed, and the elite guard roared in anger before turning into white light and died, leaving some loots behind.

Zhang Yang picked everything up and continued to push forward.

It was a slaughter all the way down, killing countless monsters, leaving countless insignificant items and equipment to occupy Zhang Yang's backpack to the point that he had to cast away some invaluable stuff to clear out spaces for better things to come.

Bam!

With another monster beaten death to the ground, Zhang Yang went on to touch the dead body as he would.

[No.1 Laboratory Key] (Special item)

Use: Open the door to No.1 Laboratory.

Zhang Yang went blank for a moment. Even though there were hundreds or even thousands of experimental tables, none of it was categorized as “room/laboratory”. He took a closer look at the monster again, noticing that the name was really different from the other monsters. This was labeled as “No.1 Laboratory Guard”.

It didn't matter for now, just put it in the bag first and think about it later.

Zhang Yang kept the key and continued to move forward. Killing, slicing and chopping all around, it took him 3 hours to finally reach the end of the floor.

Look at the time, it's almost 1am in the morning! Wei Yan Er and the gang had definitely gone offline to sleep by now.

But remembering what they told him earlier, Crimson Rage, The Dominators, Sky High and the other guilds were progressing overnight with the resolution to acquire the server's No.1 [Land Lease] title!

Thus, Zhang Yang lost his courage to sleep or rest anymore!

With the bosses in every floor being taken out by him, there was

no way the other players above would be delayed for too long by the monsters and the traps. He would wake up to find that he was surpassed by others, or might even lose his [Land Lease] to others!

So, he decided to go all out, then! It was just staying overnight for this one time!

The entrance of the 9th floor was similar with the 8th floor. With the door opened wide, it meant that there was no boss in this floor. Zhang Yang gazed further; if there was not any boss in the area, there should at least be a treasure chest lying around somewhere.

There was no treasure, but on the same spot where a treasure chest would be found, there was an intermediate small room made of stones with the door locked, and it would not budge.

Zhang Yang took out the key from his backpack, and with the slightest effort, “click!” he opened the lock on door and pushed the door wide open.

This was a standard laboratory with many reagent tubes braving a variety of color bubbles in the corners of the room. There was a large experimental bench in the middle of the room. On top of the desk lay an Elvish female, with her four limbs and her neck shackled in the form of strange halo. She could not even move an inch.

There was an infusion tube inserted into one of her arm, transmitting some kind of green chemical substance into her, only god knows what that could be!

The Elvish female overheard the sound of the door opening, forcing herself to look over. When she realized that it was an actual pure human walking through the door, her face instantly revealed her surprise and joy buried within her heart, “Brave warrior, please help me!”

[Captived Merlinda - Song of the Forest] (Elite)

Level: 45

HP: 38,123/45,000

Right above her head was a huge yellow exclamation mark!

“Friendly elf, can you tell me how could I help you out of this place?” Zhang Yang did not believe that he could easily cut those strange looking halo shackles off her so easily.

“I have been held captive by the Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar with his Shackles of Shadow, and only the Elemental Stone can free me from these shackles! The Elemental Stone is in the hand of Ron Weasley - The Death General. He is in the deepest place you can find just beneath next floor. Brave warrior, please help me, I can feel that my will has been forcefully shaken, the evil force of Terpot Ryhar is affecting my beliefs to the God of the Moon, and I will not be able to hold it for much longer!”

Merlinda uttered a painful groan.

‘Ding! Captived Merlinda - Song of the Forest has assigned you a quest: Rescue Merlinda - Song of the Forest, accept or decline?’

Accept!

[Rescue Merlinda - Song of the Forest] (Difficulty: S-rank)

Description: Slay Ron Weasley, take the Elemental Stone from him, and rescue Merlinda - Song of the Forest! You can locate Ron Weasley at the 10th floor of the Underground Tower.

Note: You must be fast. If Merlinda’s soul is being controlled by Terpot Ryhar before that, the quest will fail.

Progress: Rescue Merlinda -Song of the Forest 0/1

Zhang Yang noticed that the HP of the NPC dropped by 90 since she began talking. It was dropping about 3 HP every second! If the NPC supposedly hit the bottom of her HP bar, it would only mean that she would be controlled, just like the bosses in the previous floors, becoming an undead soul!

After a series of calculation, Zhang Yang realized that he only had 3 hours left! Although it seemed well, but in practicality, clearing the monsters and minions of the whole floor would take about 2 to 3 hours, in addition with the time to slay the boss, the time gap just got so much tighter!

Without wasting any precious time, Zhang Yang headed straight to the entrance of the 10th floor after accepting the quest. Even though he did not know what the use of rescuing the NPC was, but since the system has assigned an NPC here, she must have a special role in it!

‘Server Notice: Player Zhan Yu has become the first player to enter the 10th floor of the Underground Tower, getting closer to the [Land Lease]!’

Zhang Yang just set foot into the 10th floor when the system decided to give him a big surprise with an announcement!

With shock going through his spine, Zhang Yang almost cursed out of anger!

The plan to make a fortune silently had been interrupted by the server announcement that attracted the crowd. Fine, I can live with that. But announcing him setting his freaking foot onto the 10th floor? That was like informing every player on the top without getting anything in return; telling them that there was someone clearing the floor faster than them!

Originally, conflicts exist among guilds such as Crimson Rage,

Sky High, and The Dominators. Even though they were temporary joining forces together to charge further down the tower, they would still try to slow each other down, hoping that they were leading at the front line. A little delay in time could do no harm anyway. It would be even better if they could get other guilds to get themselves killed in the process!

But in this sudden event, being made a fool by the system server, whether it was the guilds in the White Jade City, or the remaining guilds in the other seven main cities, everyone temporarily put down their grudges against each other and worked together to clear the floors all the way down the Underground Tower!

Fighting against each other again? Things were about to be taken away, what kind of fart do they still think about fighting against each other for?!

The original plan was to enter the stage quietly, but now... This is just great, the whole world knows about this now!

“F**k me!” Zhang Yang was already rushing to complete his quest, and now he could afford to make any more mistakes.

The 10th floor of the Underground Tower had fewer monsters, but the monsters were mostly magic type. It was the most hated monster-type of all for Zhang Yang to face in battle!

[Hermione's Witch Apprentice] (Elite)

Level: 34

HP: 30,000

With a <Charge>, followed by summoning a puppet, he continued with some mad hack and slash attacks!

As Zhang Yang held all his anger and grudges within him for quite some time, he finally found a chance to vent it all out on these monsters. Charging his way through, he staggered his <Berserker's Heal> and the <Lifesteal> effect of [Lover's Sword] together to put them into good use, and when both skills are on cooldown, he would use some bandages to make up for it.

The lucky thing was that there was not that much monsters on the way. Zhang Yang already reached the end of the stage in about 40 minutes or so.

The door to the 11th floor was tightly shut, with a gray shirt man standing in front of the door with his sword. The man had an extremely tall body and both eyes blinking with a ghostly green flame, indicating his identity as one that became an undead soul.

He held a large and long sword in his hand.

[Ron Weasley - The Death General] (Gray-Silver leader)

Level: 36

HP: 600,000

Note: Terpot Ryhar's best servant.

This should be a physical-type boss!

There was no need to fear! Not to mention it had just 600,000 HP. With even 1,000,000 HP, he could still take the boss out!

With a raise of his [Lover's Sword], Zhang Yang charged forward to the boss with quick steps.

With no time to lose, he had to act fast, whether it was to rescue Merlinda, or to stay in the lead to obtain the [Land Lease]!

BBK – The author used this term to describe a sort of horror element. I have no idea what this BBK stands for.

Chapter 122: Ron Weasley

“Damn it, I was still wondering, after 5 floors of battle, there’s still no sign of any boss. So it was Zhan Yu, that little brat who is one step ahead of us!” Humbly Gentleman spoke out with anger, tightening his teeth. His hatred towards Zhang Yang had not been just for one or two days; and now he got fooled by Zhang Yang without knowing again. He was about to burst into flame, out of his own anger!

“No wonder the Lone Desert Smoke members went offline already. It seems like they have already sent a part of them ahead of us!” Humbly Gentleman tried to provoke the other two guilds to channel their hatred towards Zhang Yang, with the thoughts to crush Lone Desert Smoke to the ground by having the 3 guilds to work together.

But, Snow Seeker smiled gently and said, “Getting the field bosses has been a first-come-first-serve basis for all of us! It all depends on our own capabilities on whether we get to them first or not, so what’s with all the angry ranting, Humbly Gentleman?”

Sky Shaman laughed with contempt, “This hypocrite is just greedy and stingy, only having thoughts about having all the good things to himself. Pui! And he does not even reflect on his own bad virtue!”

With two of them criticizing him to the point that his face turned greenish, he spoke with his gloomy face, “So we just sit by and let the Lone Desert Smoke claim the [Land Lease], and then we congratulate them with smiles on our faces?”

Snow Seeker smiled again and said, “I already said it, field bosses are claimed by those who acted faster than the others. So we will never know the results until the very last moment of it. Things might still change! So now, we shouldn’t take arms against each other, because what we should be doing is to work together to speed up our progress down this tower without any restraint!”

“Haha, guild master Snow is really fast in basically everything!” Humbly Gentleman spoke and took a peek at Snow Seeker’s pretty face and her mountain-shaped boobs, secretly drooling. Previously in other games, there were offline competitions held, and that was how he had the honor to see her true person, which was both beautiful and sexy. He already accumulated his bad intentions towards her for quite some time, but it was a pity. No matter how he tried to serve or impress her, she just did not react to him!

With wrinkled eye brows, Sky Shaman said, “We should be well aware of the situation when it involves the Lone Desert Smoke! Other than Zhan Yu, the capable ones are Little Snow and the gang; only 5 of them altogether! We know that all 5 of them are offline at this very moment, and the number of remaining scattered members of the Lone Desert Smoke does not exceed 300! But, we do know that these 300 members are held up in the 3rd and the 4th floor!”

With a slight idea on her mind, she asked, “Sky Shaman, are you saying that Zhan Yu is now alone?”

“If the Lone Desert Smoke did not keep any secret units from our knowledge, I am afraid so!” Sky Shaman nodded his head.

gasp!

The people who were listening to the 3 guild masters talking could not help themselves but to take in a breath of surprise! They have certainly experienced it, the might of the monsters in the Underground Tower, every one of them are strong as f**k that the players had difficulties in holding their souls together in one piece!

If Zhan Yu could clear through the path all by himself... Let alone clearing the regular monsters has already proven him to be unimaginably strong, what about the bosses?

Is the gap between the two sides in terms of their strength really that wide?

...

On the other side of the tower, the Sword and Fire Mercenary had fully dispatched their forces into their crusade in regards of the [Land Lease]. They assembled a party of 10 for their storm fortification strategies. Although they were small in numbers, but every single member was an ace of their own expertise. They were like a sharp spear; unstoppable, clearing all their way through to the 7th floor of the Underground Tower, being more efficient than the 3 main guilds combined.

The moment they knew about the announcement, Dominating Blade paused and said, “This Zhan Yu is far more powerful than we can imagine!”

“44 Bandit and I are the first group to reach, so we can guarantee that none of the monsters in the tower had been slain! That meant that Zhan Yu has forcefully charged through the herd by taking advantage of the special particularity of the entrance, without taking out any monsters. He turned the table around by using these monsters to block players who are coming in!” Floating Up analyzed seriously.

“But this also explains that -”

“He is definitely alone!”

Dominating Blade and Floating Up spoke in unison.

“44 Bandits, Not Telling My Name, you two get past through quietly and do a sneak up on Zhan Yu, take him out! The [Land Lease] can only be claimed by us, the Sword and Fire Mercenary!” Dominating Blade spoke with extreme domineering!

44 Bandits and Not Telling My Name were both Thief class players. With <Stealth>, they could easily get through the monsters without laying a finger on them. Monsters with “True Eyes” were only located in the 1st and 2nd floors!

“Yes!”

The two thieves then instantly immersed themselves into stealth mode at the same moment, and slowly fumbled forward.

...

“Ah, ha! Another living material to be used as a test subject! Master Terpot Ryhar will definitely be pleased!” Weasley had a vast aggro radius. He instantly spotted Zhang Yang charging towards him from afar. Swoosh! He pulled his huge sword and started waving towards Zhang Yang with the attempt to hack Zhang Yang in half!

<Block>!

‘-195!’ ‘The block has neutralized some of the damages.’

With the shield raised up high and coming in contact, clashing with the huge sword that the boss swung towards him, a burst of fiery stars flashed on sight.

“Oh sh*t, son of a boss, just give up on the futile struggle! Just lay out your neck and be ready to die!” Zhang Yang laughed happily. Instead of being bored by himself, why not tease the boss and have fun? With his brain waves surging, he even summoned out his servant Clear Lotus, launching his attacks towards Weasley.

Unlike players, a boss had a specific time of discharging skills, beginning with the simplest normal attacks.

97%, 94%, 91%, the HP bar of Weasley was decreasing slowly.

“Ouh...!” the boss suddenly let out a burst of roar. After a swing that missed his target, Weasley held his sword with his other hand and plunged it straight into the ground.

Boom!

A black light suddenly started to spread in all directions. At least a 3 meter radius of the area where the boss was standing was instantly turned into an atmosphere glowing with only darkness!

‘Ding! You have received the Plaque of the Undead effect, movement speed has been decreased by 50%, receive 500 damage from dark-shadow effect every 2 seconds, last until you leave the effective range of the Plaque of Undead!’

Zhang Yang already started to retract the moment he saw the boss acting weird, but the skill discharge was way faster than the player’s movement speed. A new negative effect symbol instantly appeared on top of Zhang Yang’s head, followed by an instant decrease in his movement speed.

He was lucky to have ran earlier. Even with his decreased movement speed, he could still manage to run out of the effective radius of the <Plaque of the Undead>, with just a damage of ‘-400’ popped out on top of his head. After leaving the effective radius, the negative effect on him was automatically lifted away.

After Weasley was done with that powerful skill, he immediately pulled his sword out from the ground and continued to pursue his attacks on Zhang Yang.

<Block>!

<Block>!

<Block>!

It was too bad that the frequency of the boss' attack were not exactly high, with a swing of his sword only in every 2 to 3 seconds. But judging from every vigorous and heavy strike of the sword, Zhang Yang believed that the damage output for each of slashes would definitely be higher than 3,000!

Shoof! With a shadow-step, Clear Lotus managed to escape the radius of the Plaque of the Undead. She then continued to poke and stab the boss from the back, dealing a series of damage on the boss. But it was unavoidable that she had to sustain two attacks from the boss, decreasing a total of 1,000 HP!

Zhang Yang did not lose much of his HP after a few successful <Block>, and he could just rely on his armor set effects to heal his HP back to the max.

Another 10 seconds or so has passed, and Weasley plunged his sword into the ground once again, discharging another round of <Plaque of the Undead>.

Zhang Yang was certain, the boss would use the skill once his HP dropped every 10%.

78%, 77%, 76%, 75%!

Weasley's pupils instantly flashed. His ordinary eyes which did not differ much from an ordinary person's eyes ignited with greenish ghostly flames. With an explosive "Boom!", the large sword was surrounded by black aura, emitting a palpitating horrific atmosphere.

'Ding! Ron Weasley has used <Shadows of Death>, all physical attacks have been increased with additional 100% dark-shadow damage, last for 5 seconds!'

<Block>!

'-3200!'

Oh lord!

Zhang Yang immediately activated <Substitute>!

'Immune' 'Immune'!

Within the 5 seconds, the boss did a series of 3 consecutive attacks with his sword. Other than the first attack, the damage from the remaining attacks were neutralized by the additional effects of <Invincible> which came after <Substitute>!

Even with the 20% damage avoidance passive, Zhang Yang still took some dark-shadow damage of 3,200, which meant that the boss dished out 4,000 damage in his regular attacks!

The boss triggered <Shadows of Death> when his HP hit 75%. That would mean that the skill would be triggered every time 25% of his HP was deducted! The servant could only sustain one attack from the <Shadows of Death>, leaving Zhang Yang to forcefully take on the last two remaining attacks that was yet to come!

3 minutes later, the boss' HP was brought down to 60%. The 4th <Plaque of the Undead> was triggered, with two consecutive numerical value of '-500' popped out right on top of Clear Lotus, emptying out her HP. With a miserable scream, she turned into a white light and disappeared into thin air.

“Hahaha, you weak soul, just accept your fate!” Weasley waved his sword to dance. Usually, when a boss kills a player or a player's pet, he or she would speak a few dialogues.

“You've spoken too much nonsense!” Zhang Yang stared closely at the boss' HP, because the moment it dropped below 50%, <Plaque of the Undead> and <Shadows of Death> would be discharged at the same instant, definitely making that instant the most dangerous moment in the whole battle!

Unfortunately, if he knew the skills of the boss a little earlier, he would have summoned his servant a little slower, reserving <Substitute> until then!

59%, 55%, 50%!

“Go to hell, you insignificant soul!” Weasley plunged his sword heavily into the ground and triggered <Plaque of the Undead> once again.

Zhang Yang withdrew himself at the very first moment!

‘Ding! Ron Weasley has used <Shadows of Death>, all physical attacks have been increased with additional 100% dark-shadow damage, last for 5 seconds!’

Followed closely with triggering <Shadows of Death>, the boss quickly pursued Zhang Yang with his sword pulled out of the ground.

‘-400!’

<Block>!

‘-3200!’

Zhang Yang could only use <Berserker’s Heal> in that instant.

Shoosh! Instantly healing his HP back to full health!

<Block>!

‘+100!’

‘-3200!’

The second swing of the sword was negated with <Block>, but the dark-shadow damage was unaffected and banged up on Zhang Yang!

The <Lifesteal> effect of the [Lover’s Sword] activated!

‘-1573!’ <Horizontal Sweep>.

‘+1573!’

‘-1499!’ <Destructive Smash>.

‘+1499!’

‘-777!’ Regular attack.

‘+777!’

In just an instant, Zhang Yang’s HP was restored back to full once more!

<Block>!

‘-3200!’

The effect of the <Shadows of Death> ended with the 3rd strike of the boss!

“Hahaha, you should be the one that should accept your fate... to die!” Zhang Yang burst into laughter. With every slash he did onto the boss, relying on the armor set’s recovery effect, along with the additional use of red potion, he could slowly replace back the HP that he lost.

40%! 30%!

Another 2 minutes has passed, the boss’ HP was nearing 25% left, which meant that the 3rd <Shadows of Death> was about to begin.

Chapter 123: Double Assassination!

25%!

‘Ding! Ron Weasley has used <Shadow of Death>, all physical attacks have been increased with additional 100% dark-shadow damage, last for 5 seconds!’

During the voice notification from the system, Weasley was swinging his huge sword, at that moment surrounded with dark-aura, charging towards Zhang Yang in huge steps, ready to cleave him in two!

<Shield Wall>!

<Block>! <Block>! <Block>!

‘-800!’ ‘-800!’ ‘-800!’

With effects of <Shield Wall> and <Shield Oath> in play, the damage was reduced by 80% The 3 huge swings that could have dealt 4,000 point of damage ended up only doing 800!

With his final trump card, <Shadows of Death> having been used up, the boss was finally set on the one and only path remaining - the path to his demise!

Zhang Yang was in the zone, swinging the sword in his hand,

slicing and dicing, ferociously depleting the HP of the boss.

24%, 23%, 22%...

The boss' HP continued to drop, from 15% to 10%, and then down to 5%. Victory was already beckoning Zhang Yang!

4%, 3%, 2%, 1%!

“Argh... Master Terpot Ryhar shall revive me! I will be back! I will definitely be back!” With that, “Clang!” Weasley dropped his huge sword and his tall body collapsed heavily onto the ground.

‘Ding! You have slain Weasley Ron, and acquired 600,000 Experience Points!’

Zhang Yang turned his head to glance around, and he could see that a new batch of monsters had begun respawning further away from him. The respawning boom would catch up to his position in no time! Time.... There was no time to waste! He hastily grabbed all the loot dropped from the dead body of Weasley Ron and jammed them into his backpack, before he turned around and jogged to the 9th floor.

As he rushed back, two thirds of the monsters had already respawned and were blocking his way, leaving him with no choice but to clear them out one by one.

Taking advantage of that moment of brief respite to eat snacks to

restore his stamina and HP, Zhang Yang finally had the time to look over the loots he obtained from earlier on.

[Glory of the Undead Warrior] (Gray-Silver equipment, Ring)

Vitality: +20

Strength: +10

Equip: Recover 30 HP in melee combat when attacking.
Maximum rate of activation: Every one second.

Level required: 30

A <Lifesteal> ring!

Lifestealing equipment such as this one did not seem much by themselves, but if they were equipped as sets, a recovery amounting up to a few hundred points of HP would definitely be something!

Zhang Yang immediately replaced his initial ring with the new one, putting the Level 20 Gray-Silver ring into his backpack. Even though the ring was no longer useful to him, it was still an awesome piece in the eyes of 90% of the current players. It was still highly sellable.

[Proof of the Deceased] (Gray-Silver equipment, Holy book)

Intelligent: +54

Level required: 30

Profession: Sacred Knight.

Holy book was a special equipment exclusively meant for Sacred Knights and could be equipped in the secondary weapon slot. This was because Sacred Knights were unable to equip staves despite being a magic profession. They could only wield maces as their primary weapons and Holy Books as their secondary.

“It’s such a pity that we don’t have any Sacred Knights in the gang at the moment!”

Zhang Yang could only sigh. Although Priests and Sacred Knight belonged to the same healing role, both of them had different focus points. Priests were more focused on group healing while Sacred Knights were more focused on healing individual targets. But with Han Ying Xue who has such a large large capacity (mana), supporting two players at the same time should not be a problem at all!

Other than the two Gray-Silver grade equipment, there were also

7 or 8 Green-Copper equipment. However, Zhang Yang was keener on getting a skill book, but that did not happen. Of course, the quest item [Elemental Stone] was among the loots, lying quietly within his backpack inventory.

After equipping the ring with the <Lifesteal> effect, Zhang Yang's efficiency in clearing monsters had found itself on another level. A recovery of 30 HP in one second did not seem much, but over time, that would be a total of 1,800 HP recovered in 1 minute, almost equivalent to two Grade 2 healing potions!

Another half an hour passed, and Zhang Yang was finally back at the 9th floor.

The moment he walked out of the stairs, Zhang Yang could vaguely feel an unusual disturbance in the air. He instantly pulled his sword out and acted, and slash at the top left position in front of him.

“-741!”

Blood splashed, a shadow figure was abruptly hit by Zhang Yang and he came out from his stealth mode!

‘Ding! You have initiated an attack on 44 Bandits. You are now penalized with the Red Tag! If you are killed in this condition, you will drop by 2 levels and have a 100% equipment break off!’

It was this 44 Bandits again!

Zhang Yang lit up with a murderous glare, it did not matter if they tracked him on purpose or it was a meeting by chance, he would not hold anything back for the sake of his [Land Lease]!

“F*ck!” 44 Bandits let out a curse, “How the hell did you see me?!”

He also never expected to see Zhang Yang suddenly coming out from the stairs of the 9th floor. Even he was caught off guard, leaving him to wonder, how his opponent discovered him in stealth.

That could only be described as a sixth sense that Zhang Yang had developed over 3 years of experience in battling Thieves, nothing else!

Zhang Yang grinned, “Hey brother, there’s demand for my head again?”

“-1,523!”

Talking was one thing, but his hands kept moving. Those hands did not show a single bit of mercy, coming straight up with a <Horizontal Sweep>, he took a big chunk of HP away from 44 Bandits!

44 Bandits only had a total of about 4,000 HP, give or take. Being sliced two times by Zhang Yang had taken half of his health

already! Shocked, he groped for his HP potion while trying strike back, “That’s right, you better be frank and let me slay you a couple of times, who knows if I’m in a mood, I might just kill you a few times lesser!”

Zhang Yang was surprised at those words. He consulted his instincts. A Thief being forced out of his stealth mode, facing a same level Guardian with the same level of equipment and a full health bar, yet had that expression on his face. This was not bravado! There must be another agenda behind it!

That was the instance where Zhang Yang felt another faintly unusual disturbance behind him... there must be a second Thief!

With an instant change of mind as swift as lightning, Zhang Yang summoned his servant Clear Lotus.

< Ambush >!

Another vague shadow appeared from behind of Zhang Yang, striking straight on the back of Zhang Yang’s head, knocking Zhang Yang into stunned state.

“Haha, you must have never thought that there were 2 of us. Let’s see how you die with our dual attacks! I shall get my revenge for the - Huh?” 44 Bandits was still laughing proudly until he saw servant Clear Lotus’s appearance, suddenly he uttered a sound of surprise!

“Who is this... No, a servant! What is this sorcery?”

<Substitute> skill activated!

Servant Clear Lotus immediately replaced Zhang Yang to be stunned. Zhang Yang swung his sword and took another slash at 44 Bandits.

‘-737!’

<Immune>!

At the same instant, the two Thieves unleashed a flurry of attacks, but they could only helplessly watch their attacks invoke the word that crippled their psyche - <Immune>.

Zhang Yang burst out in laughter, activating his <Destructive Smash>!

“-3,100!”

A critical attack that directly sent 44 Bandits to his demise!

Zhang Yang turned around and faced the other thief directly, Not Telling My Name.

Hmm, another famous player to be in the future, it was

unfortunate for him to face Zhang Yang this soon!

Not Telling My Name was the type who let his actions do the talking, calmly reentering his stealth mode. His opponent had just been hit with regular attacks, there was no way for the opponent to instantly activate any skills at the moment with so little rage points. He will evade the enemy for now, before striking like a poisonous snake in the dark. When the opponent was at his most vulnerable state, he would jump out of his hiding to give the final blow to his opponent!

Zhang Yang closely followed after the thief, with his invincibility still in effect, the thief's <Ambush> posing no threat whatsoever.

<Blood Rage> activated, increasing his rage value by 30 points!

<Thunder Strike>!

‘-234!’

Not Telling My Name was instantly forced out from the shadow, a damage value appearing on the top of his head. His face unable to hide his surprise, never expecting Zhang Yang to have this much Rage points.

The 5 seconds of the <Substitute> effect was over, and Clear Lotus recovered from her stun. With a “poof!” she instantly appeared behind Not Telling My Name with <Shadow Walk> and began her assault!

Zhang Yang had also followed up in tandem, slashing wildly.

Toot!

The whole body of Not Telling My Name turned translucent.

Both Clear Lotus and Zhang Yang found themselves striking a ghost.

<Missed>!

<Missed>!

The word ‘missed’ appeared on top of Not Telling My Name’s head, with no changes to his HP bar. Some attacks from Clear Lotus managed to deal some damage occasionally, however.

Zhang Yang widened his eyes for a bit, and said, “So you have learned <Blur>!”

[Blur] (Level 1): Draw from the power of shadows to shroud your attackers, causing them to miss 75% of their attacks. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown time: 10 minutes

Had it been mastered it to a full 10 levels, the cooldown time

would be reduced significantly to 5 minutes. It was an emergency life-saving skill like the Guardian's <Shield Wall>! However, <Blur> was not one of the skills taught by the Thief Class Instructor, it was a rare drop from a certain Field Boss!

Not Telling My Name did not say a word, swinging his 2 long sword he resumed his assault on Zhang Yang. Unlike 44 Bandits, he was a fighter-type thief, far more effective in direct combat, unlike the literal cloak and dagger play style of agility-type thieves.

But the moment he swung his blade, he lost sight of Zhang Yang, unable to even see a trace of his shadow. The two swords landed on nothing but air. He vaguely realized that Zhang Yang had moved behind him, so he quickly turned. As he turned and turned, he could only see Zhang Yang's shadow out of the corner of his eye as the Guardian fleetingly stayed in his blindspot!

Not Telling My Name was shocked and stunned, as he attempted to charge forward, backpedal, side-step rapidly in order to face Zhang Yang! But Zhang Yang was just like a chewing gum, staying on his *ss!

A master player! Definitely a master, second to none!

Not Telling Your Name had used the same tactic before to toy with some players before killing them. This required both operational skills and situational awareness that far surpassed the capabilities of the opponent. He once took pride in that, but now the role of the predator and the prey had been switched, leaving him with cold sweat and a bottomless pit in his stomach. He wanted to bang his head against the wall, having been played with

like that!

10 seconds had passed in the blink of an eye, <Blur> was over!

‘-715!’

‘-1489!’

‘-1502!’

...

With a series of cuts, Not Telling My Name was manipulated, tortured to death, and butchered alive, with no chance of facing Zhang Yang from the front at all!

Phew!

Zhang Yang sheathed his sword, looking at the two corpses on the floor, smiling broadly.

Those who might become master players in the future were still in the learning stages, like how toddlers learning to walk. With an additional five years of experience, on top of his vastly improved self in his new life, Zhang Yang would not let anyone surpass him!

So tremble on, rookies!

Chapter 124: Beyond Perfect Score

Zhang Yang returned to the Lab Room. He took out the Elemental Stone and showed it to Merlinda, who saw the rock and was happy beyond measure.

“You’ve done it, brave warrior!” said Merlinda gratefully.

[Elemental Stone] (Quest Item)

Item Description: Dispels the bind on Merlinda – Song of the Forest.

Zhang Yang walked closer and held out the stone in his hands. “How do I use this?”

“Place it on my chest!” said Merlinda. “I will absorb the power of the stone to break free of these shackles!”

Zhang Yang nodded and walked over to the NPC. He then placed the crystal-like rock on her chest. What a beautiful elven woman. Her body was so alluring that when Zhang Yang placed the Elemental Stone on her chest, it slipped down and rested in between her voluptuous breasts!

If only the thing between her boobies could be replaced with his...

What the hell am I thinking!?

Zhang Yang shook his head violently! Could this be?! It has been a while since he had felt the warmth of a woman since he was reborn. Was he really that “dry”? Still! No matter how depraved Zhang Yang became, she was still an NPC! A program!

Sigh... He blamed the developers and designers for doing their job so excellently. If she could lose those pointy ears, her pale eyes, and the emerald colored hair, how would anyone differentiate this NPC from a real woman!? It was no wonder that movie producers would collaborate with ‘God’s Miracle’ in the future to make their movies. The audiences could not even tell the difference between the actors and NPCs!

“Aun Vu Zin Du Ving Ga...” Merlinda started to chant a spell. As she chanted, white light started to radiate from the inside of the Elemental Stone. As she chanted on, a total of 8 rays of light burst out from within the Stone and formed a magic circle in the air. The circle expanded slowly and wrapped itself around Merlinda.

Ping! Ping! Ping!

The light rings that bound Merlinda shattered into pieces. There was a sudden tremor when the NPC started to glow brighter. Her hair started to float supernaturally, without any moving air in the room.

FOOM!

The light glowed brighter to the point that Zhang Yang had to shield his eyes with his armored hand as even his eyelids couldn't block out the light.

When the light dispersed, Zhang Yang lowered his arms and opened his eyes. Merlinda was freed and now standing right in front of him! Zhang Yang could only assume that the energy the stone released had been a little too powerful, it was the only explanation he could come up with, seeing that the dress she wore was now in pieces. Even her undergarments were all torn apart! Her body was only covered with less than a few torn pieces of cloth still sticking to her fair skin, conveniently at the places that really mattered! As she moved, the perfectly full breasts jiggled so seductively that any weak-willed man would fall to his feet! A sudden surge rose from within Zhang Yang that he started to sweat like a horny pig. Damn! How could Zhang Yang drool over an NPC!? He was starting to behave like the notorious Fatty Han!

Fortunately for him, Merlinda quickly produced another dress from the ring she wore and changed into it. The pale, purple Amherst colored dress complimented her green Emerald colored hair. As she flung her hair to adjust the dress, her hair gracefully came to rest on her back. The dress was soft and tight enough that it plastered itself on her skin, showing her slender form to the world. Everything about her was unearthly.

Hold up. Did she just pull out a dress from a ring? What's this? A Fantasy Novel? Or was she the [Flash](#)?

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Rescue Merlinda – Song of

the Forest. Obtained 100,000 Experience Points!

Total Time Taken: 97 minutes, Score: Good.

Player Count: 1. Increased Score.

Average Players Level: 31. Increased Score.

Final Score: Beyond Perfect!

‘Ding! You have obtained the reward: Merlinda’s Appreciation Ring.’

Beyond Perfect? What was that score? He had never heard of it before!

Zhang Yang had never encountered a score that was beyond Perfect and no matter how hard he tried to recall; he could not remember anyone in his previous life scoring Beyond Perfect!

‘Total Time Taken: 97 minutes, Score: Good.

Player Count: 1. Increased Score.

Average Players Level: 31. Increased Score.

Final Score: Beyond Perfect!’

Zhang Yang recalled the system notification and thought to himself.

“Perhaps I got this score since I completed the quest alone? Did the system award me with a ‘Beyond Perfect’ score since no one else has ever done it alone? After Excellent, comes Perfect. Perfect was the highest level there is – or that’s what I thought previously. Could it be that there was actually a score higher than that?”

Zhang Yang grinned. “That has to be the case. I could be the only one player who maximized <Block>. Since I was lucky enough to obtain the [Servant] Clear Lotus and also <Berserker’s Heal>, it was possible for me to kill Ron Weasley with them both!

A “Perfect” score reward was already considered to be the ultimate prize. What would the system’s reward be when Zhang Yang scored a “Beyond Perfect”?

Zhang Yang took out the ring in his inventory.

[Merlinda’s Appreciation Ring] (Yellow-Gold, Ring)

Vitality: +50

Strength: +50

Use: Summons Merlinda's Shadow to join the battle. Last for 10 seconds. During the summoned duration, she will act as your healer and has perfect Invincibility.

Cooldown time: 3 minutes.

Special: Item's level requirement has been dropped down to Level 30. Limited only to Player: Zhan Yu.

Bound.

WHAT IN THE NAME OF NEPTUNE?!

Level 50 Yellow-Gold equipment! And he could equip it now!

Now the system was just being lazy. A "Perfect" score must have awarded a Gray-Silver tier equipment. By its logic, the reward for attaining "Beyond Perfect" would be a Yellow-Gold equipment. However, a Yellow-Gold equipment had a requirement of level 50. They probably felt that the player was bound to let it collect dust in the inventory. So, taking the circumstances into consideration, they lowered the level requirement. This could be the only such equipment in the entire game! If other player got hold of this news, they would just cry their eyes out in jealousy.

Zhang Yang had struck the jackpot!

Now, he had a problem. Which of the rings should he remove?

[Absolute Defense Ring] granted a bonus 100 Defense points, while [Dead Soldier's Pride] had the <Lifesteal> effect. Argh! Which one of these had to go!? Damn it! If only the system had given Zhang Yang a necklace, then he would not have to crack his brain thinking about it.

In the end, Zhang Yang had decided to swap off [Absolute Defense Ring] and adapt based on the situation. If he were to grind his level, he would put on the [Absolute Defense Ring]. If he was fighting an elite, or a boss, he would swap back to the [Dead Soldier's Pride].

Zhang Yang swapped off the rings and his attribute was rose dramatically.

HP: 5,380.

Strength: 276

Melee damage: (716-768) x 110%

“Brave warrior! Let us make haste! We must now defeat the Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar and rid this land of evil!” said Merlinda with vigor. An ancient magical staff appeared in her hands. She

twirled it around as she walked, casting a healing spell to recover her own health.

[Higher Regeneration]: Restores 5% of the target's HP every second for 30 seconds.

“Alright, let's go kill him!” Zhang Yang was delighted since an NPC was willing to lend a hand.

“Please lead the way, I will stay behind and heal you!” Merlinda pushed Zhang Yang upfront.

Hah! What a smart NPC! She even knew how to cower behind a player!

There was no time to waste. There were players chasing after him from the upper floor! There was literally no time for him to waste! Zhang Yang quickly stepped onward and led his “party” down to the tenth floor.

By then, the monsters that were the closest to the entrance were still dead while the monsters further down the floor had already respawned. Zhang Yang had to kill them all again to make it to the next floor.

As annoying as it may seem, this time, there was an NPC healing him, and Zhang Yang was able to kill his way through at leisure,

without depending on his long cooldown skills to survive.

Underground Tower 11th Floor!

‘Server announcement: Player Zhan Yu is the first player to set foot in the Underground Tower 11th Floor! Player Zhan Yu is now getting closer to the Land Lease!’

Just as he stepped in, the server acted up again.

Zhang Yang had already gotten used to it. It looks like the system would make an announcement every single time a player entered a new floor after the 10th floor of the Underground Tower.

The 11th floor was almost the same as the 10th floor. It was filled with the same magical attack-type monsters. His killing speed was tremendously slower since <Block> could not be used against magic attacks, which directly affected the usage of <Shield Bash>!

Their slow attacking speed was to be expected.

After 40 minutes, Zhang Yang arrived at the end of the floor and entered a small library.

A petite human girl was sitting high up a ladder, searching around for books as she muttered by herself. The girl had a long, straight, and blonde hair, and her figure was well built like a true Western beauty.

[Hermione, The Witch] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 36

HP: 600,000

Note: She was Terpot Ryhar's assistant.

“Hermione! You must have thought that I could never escape, did you!”

Before Zhang Yang did anything at all, Merlinda started to taunt.

“You beast! How could you do this to me!? We were friends! How could you betray my trust!?”

Hermione closed the book she was reading gracefully and looked up.

“Well well well...Look what we have here. You actually escaped now did you? What was Ron doing? Sigh...What a useless imbecile.” She raised her staff and muttered, “Shrink”, and the stairs then moved down on its own and placed her gently on the ground.

Merlinda quickly turned to Zhang Yang and said, “Brave warrior! You must kill this witch! Without her, Terpot Ryhar would lose half of his power!”

Merlinda quickly chanted a spell and cast a <Higher Regeneration> on Zhang Yang. Somehow, her expression looked like it was saying “Go ahead! I’ll cover you from behind”.

Sigh. Not like Zhang Yang had any say in the matter, did he?

Zhang Yang quickly dashed toward Hermione.

Hermione raised the staff in her hands and pointed it at Zhang Yang, beginning to chant a spell. “O Lord of Flames, beseech your almighty power and exterminate this heretic, cleanse his blasphemy!”

Shush!

Zhang Yang casted <Charge>.

‘-728!’

<Cripple Defense>!

<Cripple Defense>!

Just as Zhang Yang had managed to inflict two counts of <Cripple Defense>, Hermione had finished her spell. A ball of fire blast out and hits Zhang Yang.

‘-1,612!’

‘+269!’

Zhang Yang received a huge damage and received the first heal from the <Higher Regeneration>.

2 seconds later, another fire ball landed on Zhang Yang.

‘-1624!’

‘+269!’

‘+30!’

‘+269!’

‘+30!’

Zhang Yang received 2 ticks of healing while the ring <Lifesteal> effect was triggered twice. Although Zhang Yang was recovering, but it was not enough to dampen the boss’ damage.

After casting <Higher Regeneration>, Merlinda did not bother Zhang Yang anymore. She turned her target to Hermione and cast a <Punishment Ray> on the boss, dealing around 500 damage a spell.

Merlinda's healing spell could not be depended upon; since both of them started traveling from the 10th floor all the way to the 11th floor, she had never cast anything else other <Higher Regeneration>! Based on this reason, Merlinda could have only <Higher Regeneration> and nothing else besides that.

While this was happening, Zhang Yang was faced with a dilemma. It was concerning the [Rainbow Potion]!

If he took it now, he could increase all elemental resistance and fight the boss evenly. However, if he did use the potion now, how would he face the final boss later on?

Gah!

Zhang Yang finally decided to take the potion. He had to do whatever he could to survive here! Otherwise, he would not even reach the last floor!

Flash – The Flash from DC Comics stored his costume in a ring.

Chapter 125: Hermione The Witch

Gulp! Zhang Yang drank the [Rainbow Potion].

His entire body radiated in 5 different colors.

“That’s cool.”

The light was then absorbed back into this body and a buff icon appeared on his head. ‘All Elemental Resistance +1,000!’

Hermione pointed her staff at Zhang Yang and blasted him with a fire ball.

Boom!

‘-600!’

To think that the potion could reduce all incoming magic damage by 1,000! It was the right call to make!

Zhang Yang swung his sword and laid waste on Hermione after inflicting 5 layers of <Cripple Defense>! He then summoned his [Servant] after. To maximize time and attack power, Zhang Yang had strategically summoned the [Servant] only after stacking the <Cripple Defense>. Every second saved counted!

“God! I hate warriors!” Hermione cried as she raised her staff up

high. 3 dim orbs of light beamed across the room and landed on Zhang Yang, his [Servant], and the NPC Merlinda.

‘Ding! You have received <Weaken>. All damage and healing will be reduced by 50%. Cannot be dispelled. Last for 10 minutes!’

WTF?! How was he supposed to fight in that condition?!

Zhang Yang quickly activated <Substitute> and transferred every negative debuff from him to the [Servant].

“Hmph! Petty little magic!” Merlinda scoffed. “Hermione! Do not forget this! I’m the loyal believer of the Moon God!”

She too raised her staff up high and similarly sent orbs of white light everywhere. Instantly, the debuff on her and the [Servant] was removed.

Woah...She’d even had this sort of thing hiding up her sleeves.

Zhang Yang thought. If he had not undergone the quest in the 9th floor, he would not have encountered the quest and saved Merlinda. He would not have been able to even survive this boss without her help! It was all linked together! Facing this kind of boss that could ‘weaken’ a player, in order to counter this painful headache, one would have to depend on numbers to defeat her.

It was inevitable for Zhang Yang to misjudge a field boss in having multiple target type skills. Sometimes, the sheer numbers

never guaranteed victory. You could defeat a boss with a party of 5 men; yet sometimes, you could lose a boss with a whole 500-man army!

Had he known sooner, he would not have wasted <Substitute>! It was all because of Zhang Yang's superhuman reaction. It was a huge advantage to have, but at times it could lead to something like this.

‘-845!’

‘-5,070!’

‘-1,575!’

Zhang Yang lost the edge granted by his OP skills of <Block> and <Shield Bash> whenever he fought a magic attack type monster. Zhang Yang could only depend on <Horizontal Sweep> and <Destructive Smash> as his main damage dealers, along with <Force Strike> for some negligible bonuses. With Lady Luck smiling at him, he was able to hit a Lucky Strike with <Horizontal Sweep>, dealing 3 times the damage!

If the damage had been directed towards a player, Zhang Yang could have instantly kill any class with just a single stroke of his sword! It was a shame that the Lucky Strike's [proc rate](#) was just too god damn low! It was not like he could control its rate; it would have been bloody fun having a never-ending kill streak in the PvP ground otherwise.

“Pesky little bugs! Let the shadow consume your souls!” Hermione pointed her staff directly at Zhang Yang and a debuff icon appeared on his head.

[Shadow Starbreaker]: Explodes after 3 seconds, dealing 3,000 shadow damage to all targets within 10 x 10 meters around the inflicted target.

Zhang Yang read the skill description and quickly commanded the [Servant] to get away from him. Zhang Yang himself started to sprint away in the opposite direction to maximize their distance.

Boom!

‘-1400!’

<Shadow Starbreaker> exploded and only damaged Zhang Yang.

Clear Lotus returned to the scene and continued her attack.

After a while, the boss raised her staff again to cast <Weaken> but was dispelled by Merlinda a few seconds later. Zhang Yang could not help but to praise himself for being able to discover the hidden quest. If he had wanted to save time and skip on saving the NPC, he would not have been able to “recruit” her and survive fighting this boss.

It was a miracle that he had saved her in time! He even got a Yellow-Gold tier ring out of it!

Hermione's favorite skill was the fire ball which would set off every 2 seconds, dealing 600 damage a pop. Zhang Yang had <Higher Regeneration> which would heal him 269 HP every tick. Coupled with the <Lifesteal> effect of the ring that he wore, healing him by 30 HP every second, Zhang Yang basically nullified the fireball damage.

The extra damage was from the <Shadow Starbreaker> that would activate once every 20 seconds that dealt a significantly high damage each time it exploded. Zhang Yang would have to activate <Berserker's Heal> after 1 minute. In that short amount of time, Zhang Yang drained away at least 50,000 HP. With additional damage from Clear Lotus and Merlinda, the total HP that Hermione had lost since the start of the battle was about 80,000 HP!

2 minutes into the fight, Zhang Yang's HP had dropped down to the danger zone. He then activated the sword's <Lifesteal> and recovered around 4,000HP. After a bottle of health potion, Zhang Yang recovered full health.

3 minutes in, Zhang Yang finally summoned Merlinda's Shadow to test out her ability.

The summoned shadow looked exactly like the current Merlinda. The only notable difference was that the shadow appeared translucent. Besides that, she had the same long pale dress, a magic staff in her hand, and those voluptuous breasts that would jiggle

around lustfully.

‘+1000!’

‘+1000!’

‘...’

Once the Merlinda’s Shadow appeared, it started to cast healing spell on Zhang Yang. She would heal 1,000 HP every second! Foosh! Foosh! Foosh! After just 3 heals, and Zhang Yang was healed back to full health!

Awesome! No! F*CKING SPEACTACULAR!

As expected of a Level 50 Yellow-Gold equipment! Even Han Ying Xue, the finest healer in the entire server of China could only heal 1,100 HP every 2 seconds! This shadow could heal over 1,000 a second! How strong was that?!

In just 10 seconds, Merlinda’s Shadow healed a total of 10,000 HP! The first few heals were effective as they were, but the rest were completely unnecessary! After 10 seconds, the duration of the skill expired and Merlinda’s Shadow dispersed into thin air.

90%, 80%, 70%, 60%. The boss’ HP was dropping quickly. Zhang Yang was progressing rather fast with the help of Merlinda (NPC) and Clear Lotus.

Zhang Yang realized that it was useless to have so many people just to fight this boss.

With more players around, the death rate would increase drastically when <Shadow Starbreaker> exploded. The most effective number of players would be Zhang Yang's own personal team of misfits, including Sun Xin Yu a.k.a Frost Night. Fire and Sword Mercenary party would also do quite well here.

53%, 52%, 51%, 50%!

"I've had it with you worms! Let me crush your body and soul with the Ray of Obliteration!"

Hermione struck the ground with her staff heavily and chanted something, keeping her poker face upright. A long progress bar appeared on her head. The cast time was extremely slow. Everything around her started to tremble as if she was emitting unimaginable power. Her hair started to float around violently on its own.

1 second... 2 seconds... 5 seconds, 7 seconds... Damn! It was still casting. Zhang Yang started to have second thoughts about the skill she was about to cast. It could be something extremely powerful.

Argh! No time to think! Activate <Shield Wall>!

9 seconds... 10 seconds!

The spell was completed. She plucked her staff out from the ground. A ball of black light emerged from her chest and floated no further than half a meter away from her. The orb of light began as a small fist sized ball but suddenly expanded to a 3 meter wide orb, looking just like a black colored wrecking ball!

Shuuoomm! Boom!

The orb exploded, releasing a wave of black flames everywhere around her!

‘Ding! Hermione has used <Ray of Obliteration> dealing 10,000 shadow damage to all targets 100 x 100 meters around her!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-1,000!’

Zhang Yang, Clear Lotus, and even the NPC Merlinda received the damage from Hermione’s <Ray of Obliteration>. Only Zhang Yang and Merlinda remained standing. Clear Lotus cried in pain and fell defeated.

What a powerful [ulti](#)! AoE multi target, 10,000 damage!

Zhang Yang could not help but wonder if there was any party around that could defeat her? It was not like everyone could use <Shield Wall>. In that case how does one survive that ulti-like skill?! If it really was a matter of numbers, then he would need to recruit at thousands of players just to fight her.

Merlinda's <Higher Regeneration> seemed to change according to the target. The effect on Merlinda herself was different from that of Zhang Yang. Merlinda had over 45,000 HP, every tick should have healed her by 2,250 HP. Somehow she only took 4 seconds to completely heal herself back to its full health.

Zhang Yang had a sudden epiphany. If he stopped fighting, Merlinda could kill off the boss, even if it would take an eternity for her to do so! Zhang Yang was not the main character here. Merlinda was! He was just taking a ride all along!

Now that he thought of her, Zhang Yang could not help but to stare at her body from behind her. Those long slender legs and seductive bodyline was truly a work of art! As expected of the genius minds in the development team! They had successfully brought out the most from the Elf race! Bravo!

“Impossible! How could you survive my spell? This is outrageous!” Hermione stared at Zhang Yang. He could see the fear in her eyes.

Impossible! Impossible!

Haha! I'm your greatest fear! I'm freaking Zhan Yu! The legendary Guardian!

Zhang Yang muttered to himself more self-praises as he slashed away her HP!

The boss was not programmed to respond to the player's taunts and speech. She then returned to casting fire balls.

Pew! Pew! Boom!

No matter how many fire balls she casted, it would always be reduced by 1,000 damage. With the <Higher Regeneration> on Zhang Yang, the boss could do nothing to kill him off!

The attacking power dropped when Clear Lotus had left the battle. Still, Zhang Yang was making progress.

40%... 30%... 20%... 10%!

By the time Hermione's HP was about to reach 0, Zhang Yang realized a terrible situation. The [Rainbow Potion] effect was about to end!

Crap! He had to be fast!

45,613!

10,141!

35,314!

28,718!

By the time it reached 22,000 HP, the potion effect ended.

‘-1,600!’

A fireball landed and dealt its full damage!

Shit!

‘-1600!’

‘-1,600!’

After 3 shots, Zhang Yang quickly activated <Berserker’s Heal> to restore full health!

Whenever Zhang Yang received huge damage, his Rage would pile up. This time, Zhang Yang could spam <Force Strike> and increase his attacking power.

‘-1,600!’

‘-2,400!’ <Shadow Starbreaker>.

Merlinda’s Shadow!

‘+1,000!’

‘+1,000!’

‘...’

12,387!

8,134!

3,013!

1,343!

310!

o!

“Gyaa...” Hermione wailed pitifully as she crashed down to the floor, gracefully like how maidens died in classic Chinese martial art movies. Her eyes were still wide open as she died, unwilling to

accept her fate.

Finally!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He had only 2,000 HP left. If Hermione had lasted a little longer, she could have killed Zhang Yang with two more shots of her fire ball.

“I pray that the Moon God blesses your soul. Rest in peace my friend...” Merlinda was kneeling down beside Hermione’s dead body as she wept for her. She wiped her tears away and waved her staff around the body.

A white light flashed and a translucent, monochromic ghost appeared beside the body.

“Good bye...” said Merlinda as she nodded to the ghost. The ghost nodded back and dispersed into the air.

Proc rate – The trigger rate of any skill, item effect, or critical/lucky strike, or almost anything at all that are governed by the rules of probability.

Ulti – Short for Ultimate. Ulti is the common term for powerful skills. They usually have long casting time and equally long cool down. However, Ultis also deal extremely high damage. Usually an uliti is used once in a battle to deal extreme damage or to cast a strong debuff on the enemy. Ultis are commonly used to deal damage. However, there are also defensive or support type ultis. In other games for instance, a Priest Ulti could resurrect several dead players within the vicinity or cast a strong protection buff to prolong a player’s survivability in battle.

Chapter 126: Chimera

“Yo Boss. Not Telling My Name and I would take a while before we could rejoin you!”

44 Bandits and Not Telling My Name had just only revived themselves and had to start all over again from the first floor. It was just like any save point system of any regular dungeon. At the floor, both of them would have to fight the monsters with <True Sight> head on, since <Stealth> was no longer an option.

There were players around, joining them in their crusade down the tower. However, the other players were in similar circumstances as 44 Bandits and Not Telling My Name. They too, had died before and were separated with their main party. Alone, they could not perform any better and those who had just revived.

Dominating Blade was speechless. “How could you not beat Zhan Yu? There’re the two of you and only one of him!”

“That bastard was just too strong for me. It only took him 2 to 3 strikes to kill me off! I didn’t even have a single second to react!” 44 Bandits complained.

Dominating Blade ignored that ridiculous excuse, he continued on and asked the other guy.

“What about you Not Telling My Name? Didn’t you have the skill called <Blur>? What’s your excuse? That you’ve been killed without having time to react?” Dominating Blade was confused.

Not Telling My Name was one of his elite members. He was only able to defeat Not Telling My Name in a friendly match thanks to his <Shield Wall>.

“I did use it!” said Not Telling My Name. “It’s still useless! That guy stuck to my back like a gnat! I couldn’t shake him off! <Blur> ended by the time I managed to get back on track!”

Gasp

Everyone in Dominating Blade’s party sucked in a breath collectively. They knew that their own ability was fairly strong. They thought they could just play with Zhang Yang, like a lion playing with its food. However, when someone as strong as Not Telling My Name was defeated by Zhang Yang in such a manner, they knew that he had overly underestimated Zhang Yang’s prowess.

“What do we do now boss?”

“...pick up the pace. We have to kill him before he gets to the last boss!”

...

It was time for the prize!

Just by looking at it, Zhang Yang grew excited when he saw a silver glimmer.

[Hermione's Staff] (Gray-Silver, Staff)

Magic Attack: 522-558

<Level 1 Socket>

<Level 1 Socket>

Equip Effect: Increase critical chance by 1%.

Level Requirement: 30

“Was Han Ying Xue's staff a level 20 Gray-Silver?” Zhang Yang rubbed his chin as he tried to recall. “Oh well. I'll give this to her if she needs it. Or I could sell it if she doesn't.”

[Petrification Necklace] (Gray-Silver, Necklace)

Vitality: +15

Dexterity: +15

Equip Effect: Creates a chance to <Petrify> the target on every

attack received. <Petrified> targets will be immobilized and cannot perform any action. Lasts for 2 seconds. This skill will only trigger once every 30 seconds.

Level Requirement: 30

OP equipment. It was too bad that the attribute was Dexterity. This item could be useful for Hunters and especially Thieves. Since Hunters were ranged attackers, and they had their pet to help them take damage, the effectiveness of the necklace would be at minimum. Thieves had to fight at an extremely close range. The necklace effect would be at best when Thief-class player trade blows rapidly with a monster or another player.

Hmm. Too bad Sun Xin Yu had logged out. Zhang Yang had wanted to have a little more fun with her.

The rest of the equipment here were only of Green-Copper tier. Zhang Yang did not even take a second look and scoop them all into his inventory.

“Warrior! We do not have much time left! I can feel the evil sorcerer’s magic grow stronger by the minute. We cannot drag this any longer!” said Merlinda.

Zhang Yang stood up and replied. “In that case, let us depart with haste!”

After the death of Hermione, a door at the corner of the library unlocked. The door opened and revealed a secret staircase that led down to the 12th floor.

‘Server announcement: Player Zhan Yu is the first player to set foot in the Underground Tower 12th Floor! Player Zhan Yu is now getting closer to the Land Lease!’

Keep calm... Keep calm...

Zhang Yang muttered to himself and observed the entire floor.

The area around this floor was somewhat smaller than the previous floor. He could clearly estimate that this entire circular field was only around 200 meters in size! There were lighted torches hanging on the wall. However, the light from it was so dim that they only illuminated 5 meters around each torch. The rest of the field, mainly the center, was completely covered in darkness. Metal chains dangled from all over the ceiling as if they were massive cobwebs. It felt like this was the lair of a beast that was currently hiding in the darkness, ready to jump out anytime.

“All du lah fe li zi do ri ah som lu!” Merlinda chanted as she pointed her staff toward the darkest region of the area.

Orbs of light started to form at the tip of the staff and flew across the area, giving off a bright and warm sensation as the light touched Zhang Yang, and the entire field was illuminated like stars in the sky.

“ROOAHHH!” A thunder growl blasted through the air. The walls and everything on it started to shake. Torches rattled in their metal holders. Dust dropped from everywhere.

Boom. Boom. Boom.

Like the sound of a train crashing into one another, a huge beast appeared in the field. Its entire structure was the shape of a dog. It was almost 10 meters in size and 4 meters in height. It had 3 heads with boney wings attached to its back. The 3 heads were not that of dogs but of a wolf, a lion, and a tiger. Every head was panting, their jaws open and slack. Foul, viscous fluid was dripping from its lower jaws.

[Chimera, the Demon Hound] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 38

HP: 800,000

Note: Terpot Ryhar’s experimental product.

“By the gods! That sorcerer! He has done it! H-he has done it!” Merlinda’s face went pale. Her voice was shaken.

Zhang Yang asked calmly. “What is that?”

“He had always wanted to create the ultimate beast. He had been experimenting with animals. To combine them all into one, to make a Chimera so powerful that it has the power to crush an entire civilization! T-the world...We are doomed!” Merlinda dropped to her knees and cowered.

“H-he has done it! Our world...the Union...everything will be destroyed!”

“ROOOAHHHH!” All three heads growl together in unison and started to charge towards Zhang Yang.

<Block>!

<Block>!

<Block>!

Zhang Yang quickly countered the attack. He gritted his teeth and said. “As long as we kill that sorcerer, as long as we kill the source of this madness, the world will be safe from this kind of threat!”

Merlinda raised her head. Her pointy ears flicked. “T-that’s right! The world will be safe without the Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar! In the name of the Moon God and everything he stands for, bless this humbler follower! Grant this servant of yours strength to vanquish this evil from this earth!”

She waved her hand out and casted a <Higher Regeneration> to Zhang Yang.

The Chimera would not stop attacking him. Each head had its individual rhythm of attack that it felt like there were 3 individual monsters attacking him at the same time. <Block> could not properly negate every single attack from the beast.

<Block>!

‘-1348!’

<Block>!

Zhang Yang stacked 5 layers of <Cripple Defense> and summoned Clear Lotus immediately after. Because of its insanely quick attacking frequency, Zhang Yang had to maximize <Block> to its full capability, simultaneously raising his overall damage since <Shield Bash> could be triggered every time <Block> was used.

‘-304!’ <Block> reflect damage.

‘-607!’ <Shield Bash>.

Just these skills alone had 900 DPS!

Even when Hundred Shots, or Sun Xing Yu, or Wei Yan Er were

hitting a stationary boss, their DPS was only around 700 – 900! So far, anyone who had DPS higher than 500 was considered to be insanely strong!

If he included his normal attack and the other skills such as <Horizontal Sweep>, <Destructive Smash> and <Force Strike>, his DPS would already sky rocket to 1,800! That was not normal! It was not even beyond insane! Zhang Yang had reached a level beyond any professional player!

Just like that, Zhang Yang's super powered attack had managed to reduce the monster's HP by 10% in just 40 seconds!

“HOOOAH” The Chimera howled and spread its wings out, covering nearly every inch of the stone chamber.

Suush!

The wings started to rotate like a high-powered screw driver. The sight of it truly struck fear into anyone who witnessed it.

‘Ding! Chimera the Demon Hound has used <Mad Wings>. Every target in the effect range will receive 2,000 damage per second for 3 seconds!

‘-1,340’

‘-2,000!’

‘-2,000!’

Everyone, including Merlinda and Clear Lotus took damage. Clear Lotus had only taken 2 damage ticks and fell defeated.

Zhang Yang had to quickly consume a healing potion to save himself. The Rage gauge was already filled instantly by that attack, allowing Zhang Yang to spend it all to attack with a chained skill. [Servant] was just too weak against strong AoE skills.

However, if she was replaced by any other player, they would have suffered the same fate as she did.

89%, 88%, 87%...

Even without the summoned [Servant], Zhang Yang could still deal as much damage as before.

The boss unleashed <Mad Wing> again at 80% HP threshold. Zhang Yang activated <Berserker's Heal> and survived the onslaught.

75%. No other skills.

50%. No other skills as well.

Looks like this boss had only one skill. However, that skill alone

was enough to kill 99% of other party!

Zhang Yang could not help but worry. What if, he had brought the others along with him, how would they have attacked?

...Supposedly, it should start with normal attacks. Before the <Mad Wing> could be unleashed, Zhang Yang would have the party withdraw all the way to the entrance of the floor. The party will come back and continue the attack only after the skill was cast. It looked like the skill range could not surpass the border to the previous floor. During that time, the tank would have to rely on his own potions and skills to endure the damage.

40%... 30%... 20%!

No matter how earnestly the boss unleashed the skill, Zhang Yang managed to survive each time by switching between <Berserker's Heal> and the <Lifesteal> skill from the sword. It was just the same against any other physical attack type boss facing Zhang Yang. Their attempts to kill him would be the same as a dog trying to eat a porcupine.

10%!

“ROOAHHHH!”

Over and over, the boss could only roar as no matter what it did, it cannot stop Zhang Yang from tearing it apart.

7%! 4%! 0%!

BOOM!

The monster fell in an enormous heap! Like a crumbling mountain, it sent tremors all over the place. The stone floor even cracked at where it fell.

‘Ding! You have successfully killed Chimera the Demon Hound! Obtained 800,000 Experience Points!’

“You’ve made it! Oh! Brave warrior! The world will be indebted to you!” Merlinda praised. “I have never seen a valor of warrior such as you!”

Alright... stop kissing my ass.

Zhang Yang swept every loot into this inventory without taking a look. Except one.

[The Bones of the Chimera] (Gray-Silver, Shield)

Defense: +300

Vitality: +120

Equip Effect: Every attack you received will have a 2% chance to miss.

Level Requirement: 30

It was a pity that the shield Zhang Yang was currently wearing had a +1 <Block> effect. He could not use the new shield there and then.

Chapter 127: The 13th Floor

[Light in the Shadows] (Gray-Silver, Necklace)

Vitality: +10

Intelligence: +20

Equip Effect: 1% increase in Magic Attack or Healing Power

Level Requirement: 30

This necklace was by far the best equipment for magic attack classes. It could be sold for at least 1,000 or 2,000 gold coins! If the lease he would get could be used for him to open a store, he could use this necklace as one of the main attractions!

Other than the 2 Gray-Silver equipment, there were also other 8 Green-Copper equipment. He also obtained one [Chaos Gem]. Zhang Yang was delighted! He helped himself to the gem and used it to expand his inventory for an additional 10 slots. His inventory now had a total of 60 slots. That was at least 50% more than any majority players around!

This was one of the benefits of going for solo raids. When good items appeared, he would not need to compete with anyone for it.

Sigh... If only this tower had 30 floors. Zhang Yang hopelessly prayed for it in his mind.

Merlinda cried out after she had been left standing there for some time. “Warrior! Let’s make a move on! The time is nigh! Every second we waste here will only give more strength to Terpot Ryhar!”

Zhang Yang nodded and replied. “Alright! Let’s go and kill the son of a b*tch!”

There was no door nor a visible entrance anywhere around, so Zhang Yang circled around the entire area before finally discovering a hidden lever. He pulled the ancient metal bar, and the floor at the center of the area split apart with loud cracks, revealing a spiral staircase leading down.

Moving down, Zhang Yang had to watch his step as the entire area was completely dark. After 30 seconds or so, a bright light flashed when he reached the bottom. The last floor was a laboratory about the size of a basketball court. Racks of cabinets were attached to every single surface of the walls around this room. Test tubes were arranged nicely in racks here and there. At the center of the room were the carcasses of dead animals. Not far from the mess was a man in black cloak, walking about in circles.

The man was completely shrouded in a black color magician robe. Underneath it was a face that was so shrivelled up that it looked like a skeleton! His eyes were gaunt and hollow, sunken deep in his eye sockets! His hands were all wrinkled up as if he had been left in the desert to dry up for years!

‘Server announcement: Player Zhan Yu is the first player to set foot in the Underground Tower 13th Floor! Player Zhan Yu is now getting closer to the Land Lease!’

The system announced his arrival just as Zhang Yang placed his foot into the lab. Oh well, since he had arrive to his ultimate goal. Might as well just go along with it.

Zhang Yang walked closer and observed him and his description.

[Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 40

HP: 10,000,000

Bloody hell. How was he supposed to fight that? He just used the [Rainbow Potion]. Merlinda’s half-ass healing was just as useless. Unless <Berserker’s Heal> and the sword’s <Lifesteal> had long cooldown, how was he supposed to fight this monster alone?!

“Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar! In the name of the Moon God, I’m here to exterminate you!”

While Zhang Yang was busy frowning, thinking of a possible

battle plan, Merlinda had boldly went up and pointed her staff furiously at him.

“Kuh kuh kuh...You managed to escape.” Terpot Ryhar raised his head and stared at Merlinda. He then turned over and gazed at Zhang Yang with those eerie eyes. “Did this little pest free you?”

Crap! I wasn't doing anything!

The innocent Zhang Yang had triggered the boss as he automatically entered battle mode; his Rage gauge had started to generate 2 points a second.

Now that it had come to this, might as well just try and fight him. At least he could understand the boss's skill.

Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and dashed towards the boss.

“Hnng! Take this! Evil Sorcerer!” Merlinda cried out as she started to chant a <Punishment Ray> and fired it at the boss.

‘-200,000!’

I'll be damned!

Was that real? Did she just blast 20% of the boss HP away? Zhang Yang nearly slipped as he ran.

Could this boss have done something indecent to her in the past? Why else would she suddenly become so enraged and powerful?

Well? Go ahead! Shoot more of those super beams!

Just four more times and Zhang Yang could just walk over to pick up the loots!

Zhang Yang was enthusiastic. He then used <Charge> and started to attack as soon as he was in melee range.

“Gargh! Damn you, woman! Stay still!” Ryhar muffled. He pointed his staff at Merlinda and waved.

Zoom! Zoom! Zoom!

6 orbs of grayish light appeared and flew across the field. It latched onto Merlinda’s hands, feets, waist, and head.

“ARGH!” Merlinda cried as she was bind by the light orbs. The staff in her hand clattered onto the floor.

Huh? What was that? Not 10 seconds ago she was the best attacker Zhang Yang had ever witnessed, yet now she was completely useless!

After taking care of Merlinda, the boss turned to face Zhang Yang. He pointed his staff at Zhang Yang and began casting a spell.

3 seconds later, black flames started to form in the sky and fused into countless spears. They rained downwards, piercing all over the 13th floor!

‘Ding! Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar has used <Rain of Flaming Spears>. All targets within the effective range will receive 2,000 Chaos damage!’

‘-1,600!’

Chaos damage is a special magic attack element. It would not be effected by any kind of Elemental Magic Resistance. It was the same as an attack that ignored defenses.

3 seconds later, the boss used the same skill again. Following closely was the same skill.

‘-1,600!’

‘-1,600!’

Could this boss only cast nothing but AoE magic attacks, just like Unduin? But this boss’ attacks were from the sky! There were no rocks in the world to hide behind from that!

What now? What now!?

Zhang Yang quickly activated <Berserker's Heal> to save himself and started to rack his brain for a solution!

“Could I kite the boss to the entrance? Perhaps I could use the dodge and attack strategy there. Damn! The entrance is 200 meters away! It would at least take me 20 seconds to reach there! The boss would have already cast more than 7 times then! I will die before I even reach there!”

Might as well die trying! He used his summoned [Servant] to lure the boss over to the entrance and fight the boss there!

“Rise! My slaves! Fight for your master!” Terpot Ryhar raised his staff and unleashed a different spell.

‘Ding! Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar has used <Summoned Servant>!’

Crack! Crack! Crack!

Several pairs of boney hands burst out from the ground underneath Zhang Yang. 20 skeletal monsters crawled out from the ground and lumbered towards Zhang Yang.

[Terpot Ryhar's Servant] (Normal)

Level: 35

HP: 3,500

‘-65!’

‘-262!’

‘+100!’

‘-69!’

‘+100!’

...

A chain of damage and healing texts popped up simultaneously, cluttering up his display. Those that were under 100 damage were monsters that attacked him from the front, those that had exceeded 200 were attacks that struck his back. The healing he received was from the <Brave> set-equipment effect.

Zhang Yang had wanted to give up. He had planned to just die and come back here as fast as he could. But when these skeletal monsters suddenly popped out, things have changed. He now had hope!

The monster’s attacks were around 400! Zhang Yang had an idea.

He quickly swapped his shield with the [The Bones of the Chimera] to increase his Defense by up to 360 points. He then adjusted his position to only allow the monsters to attack him from the front.

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

After the monsters’ attacks have been reduced by 20%, the base attack of 400 was unable to break through Zhang Yang Defense. They could only inflict 1 damage to him, and because he was under attack by 20 monsters, the set-equipment effect was triggered continuously!

The boss continued casting <Rain of Flaming Spears>, one after another, creating several more flaming spears in the ceilings.

‘-1,600!’

‘+100!’ ‘+100!’ ‘+100!’ ‘+100!’...

Zhang Yang HP dropped tremendously every time he received the attack, but at the same time, he was healing rapidly from the set-equipment. On average, Zhang Yang predicted that the monster’s attack interval was around 2 seconds. Since there were 20 monsters around, he would heal an estimated amount of 1,000 HP every 2 seconds. This was based on his set equipment’s 50% chance

of healing. He would heal 3,000 HP at most over the course of 6 seconds! The boss would need 3 seconds to cast the <Rain of Flaming Spear> that would deal 1,600 damage. In 6 seconds he would lose 3,200 HP while he would still cover that amount concurrently. Ultimately, he would only lose 200 HP every 6 seconds, which would total up to 4,000 damage over 2 minutes. He could solve this healing problem with <Berserker's Heal>!

Just when he thought that this boss could not be defeated alone, he was now able to do it because of the boss's own attempts to quicken his death! Talk about eating his own medicine!

Zhang Yang kept circling around the boss endlessly while facing the monsters to ensure that they would only attack him from the front. All AoE skills that Zhang Yang had could not be used since it would only damage those skeletal monsters! Why would Zhang Yang kill off his 'healers'?!

79%, 78%, 77%... Zhang Yang was making extremely slow progress but at least he was shaving off the boss' HP.

Since he could not use most of his skills, the damage rate was slow. The skill's cooldown was longer than 10 seconds, and he could not use his major skills as they would hit multiple targets!

1 minute... 2 minutes... 3 minutes... 5 minutes...

75%... 70%... 65%... 55%...

Slowly and surely, Zhang Yang was definitely obtaining victory!

“Ayy boss, there’s someone there fighting!”

“I bet it’s Zhan Yu!”

“Haha! What perfect timing!”

“Kill that bastard! We can fight the boss after he is dead!”

The field suddenly turned rowdy as a group of players from the Sword and Fire Mercenary and entered the 13th floor. All of them had their eyes on Zhan Yu, preparing to unleash their fury upon him!

Let’s see how you take on 8 of us together! We’ll flatten you up nicely like a pancake!

Just then, the boss spell was completed. A ceiling full of flaming spear rained down on everyone.

‘-2,000!’ ‘-2,000!’ ‘-2,000!’ ‘-2,000!’ ‘-1,600!’ ‘-1,500’...

Among them all, Floating Up was the only player who had suffered the lowest damage! He was a Defender with a passive 15% physical damage reduction and another 10% magic attack reduction passive skill.

“Shit! What was that! We just walked in when the boss was using his ulti!”

“Healers! Do your job!”

Everyone remained calm and orderly even though they had just taken a massive group attack! Everyone was doing their role perfectly; the healers methodically healing everyone, while the rest of the party headed straight for Zhang Yang.

Boom! Shush! Shush! Shush!

3 seconds later, another wave of flaming spears rained down.

“WTF! Another ulti?!”

“How could the boss repeatedly use his ulti!?”

“We’re in deep trouble now guys! 7 Feet! Don’t just heal the tank alone! Save the rest of us as well!”

Eventually, they broke down in panic.

Shush! The third wave of flaming spear rained down while the mercenaries were just 60 to 70 meters away from Zhang Yang!

‘Ding! Player Bottoms Up had died!’

‘Ding! Player Broken Uranus had died!’

‘Ding! Player All Wounded had died!’

The healers could not keep up with all the damage that their party had just taken. They had lost 3 players in just a few seconds! While the rest...the rest were standing on a thin ice!

Sword and Fire Mercenary has failed!

Chapter 128: Lease Obtained!

“Rise! My slaves! Fight for your master!” Terpot Ryhar waved his staff towards the party, and many skeleton monsters began to crawl out from the ground beneath everyone.

Dominating Blade and Floating Up were quite responsive. They both unleashed <Thunder Strike> and <Devotion> in the split second to keep every monster there. At the same time, they were side stepping towards the boss to prevent any monsters to attack then from behind!

However, unlike Zhang Yang, both of their Defense values were only below or around 260 points. Even if the monsters were attacking from the front, they could deal at least 60 to 70 damage. The <Summoned Servant> skill would create 20 monsters for every player on the field. Since the party, excluding Zhang Yang, had 5 surviving members, the summoned monsters totaled up to 100! The tanks would at least have to “eat” 3,000 damage alone! Though they might have the <Brave> set-equipment, it would only help them recover 2,500 HP or so; it would not be enough to cover the HP they had lost!

3 seconds later, and another <Rain of Flaming Spear> dropped down.

‘Ding! Player Point And Kill has died!’

‘Ding! Player Beauty Healer has died!’

Boom! Just like that, they lost two more members, leaving only 3 men standing.

“Damn it!” Dominating Blade was so angry at himself. Initially, he thought that he could take advantage of the situation, to have Zhang Yang killed and claim the boss as his own. Who knew that the boss’ attack would be so strong that he could kill every one without even getting close to them! If Dominating Blade revived, he would have to start from the top of the dungeon all over again! By then, it would already be too late!

“Teeheehee...” Zhang Yang snickered.

“What an honor to meet the famous Mercenary! I had always wanted to meet you guys! Who knew that we would actually see each other here! What a coincidence?”

Coincidence, my ass!

The surviving members cursed under their breath, but there was nothing that they could do to turn the tide. How could a single Sacred Knight heal everyone?

Boom! Another <Rain of Flaming Spear>!

‘Ding! Player Dominating Blade has died!’

‘Ding! Player Floating Up has died!’

‘Ding! Player 7 Feet Boobies has died!’

That attack had killed off every single player from the Mercenary group.

However, the problem was not solved just yet. The summoned 100 monsters still remain even after the Mercenaries were defeated. Soon, every single monster turned around and set Zhang Yang as their new target to be destroyed.

Damn it! What a drag!

20 to 30 monsters were not a problem for Zhang Yang to control. But when the numbers increased to 100 and more, Zhang Yang was drowning in monsters like a drop of sugar among ants. With the monster all over his back and front, his shield defense lost its meaning. Every attack was around 300 and more!

Sigh.

<Charge>!

Zhang Yang started to attack the monsters. He cast <Thunder Strike>, followed by a <Horizontal Sweep>. Countless of ‘-284’ and ‘-1,600’ damage texts popped out. Zhang Yang then used <Block> to give himself a little room to breathe and the reflected damage text popped out endlessly. On one hand, the boss was not chasing after him. Without the need to go closer, the boss could still hurt him

since <Rain of Flaming Spear> had a massive attack range.

The moment Zhang Yang had dealt with the surrounding monster, another batch came flocking in. Zhang Yang tried his best to move around, to try and make the monsters to flock together into a cone shape so that he could at least try to bottleneck the monsters. However, no matter what he did, there were just too many to lure! If he were to expose his back for even a second, he would not be able to heal back the lost HP! There were many ‘-1!’ damages but also a lot of damages that exceeded 200!

Luckily the monsters had only 3,500 HP maximum. Since Dominating Blade and his war buddies had damaged them a little, Zhang Yang could wipe them all quickly after recovering his HP with <Berserker’s Heal>. Zhang Yang stopped killing when he had made sure that the remaining monsters were around 20 or so. Zhang Yang changed his target and started to hack and slash at the boss.

The remaining 20 monsters followed Zhang Yang while still hitting on him endlessly. With many ‘-1!’ damages Zhang Yang received, he was healing 100 HP all the way happily.

Finally! Zhang Yang gleefully screamed in his heart. He was able to solve that problem.

50%, 40%, 30%, 20%!

From the looks of it, Terpot Ryhar only had two skills, <Rain of Flaming Spear> and the <Summoned Servant>! If he had only used

the massive AoE attack over and over, he would be the undefeatable boss Zhang Yang had ever faced so far. Lucky for Zhang Yang and bad luck for Terpot Ryhar, the boss had also used the <Summoned Servant> to “help” Zhang Yang turn the tides of war!

15%, 10%, 5%!

“We’re finally here!”

Huh?

“The system had not announced anything yet! The lease is definitely still there!

“Look! There’s someone fighting there!”

“Go! Go! Go! Kill the boss and get that lease!”

Among the chattering, it looked like there were 60 to 70 players that just arrived to this floor. Following closely behind were many more players that were bottlenecked at the entrance!

“Take a look! The boss has only 4% left!”

“Haha! The timing was just right for us!” Humbly Gentleman laughed. “Brother! Get the boss! Get the lease! The Dominators are the strongest!”

“OOOOOOOAHHHH!”

“Go.” Sky Shaman on the other hand commanded his team calmly.

Snow Seeker was smiling on one end thinking, “Zhan Yu... Indeed you have proven yourself as the best fighter there is. To think that if we had arrived just a few minutes later, you would have gotten your hands on the lease! What a shame!”

She immediately contacted Zhang Yang via the voice messenger.

At the same time, the boss unleashed a wave of raining spears!

‘-2,000!’

‘-2,000!’

‘-2,000!’

...

Everyone received a devastating damage.

Zhang Yang was not afraid of them coming in to [KS](#) the boss. He was more concerned about the <Summoned Servant>! Right now,

there were so many players that just arrived. If the boss used <Summoned Servant> now, it would definitely spawn a large swarm of skeleton monsters. When the players would be killed off, who will the skeleton monster target next? Even if Zhang Yang did everything that he could, he would still be trampled alive by the sheer number of them!

Zhang Yang picked up the call. “What can I do for you, guild master Snow?”

“I’ll be direct. We will help you to block the other players here to buy you some time. In return, I want my guild to have a part of the [Land Lease]!” Snow Seeker offered him a bargain with hopes that someone as smart as Zhang Yang could accept. Unless Zhang Yang was a [GM](#) of this game, he could not survive the attack from all 3 super guilds at the same time! Even so, there were no GM in this game in the first place!

Without showing any sign of slowing down, Zhang Yang laughed and replied. “Guild master Snow, I suggest you’d better withdraw from this floor! You could at least still save some repairing cost!”

“What are-“

Boom! Another wave of <Rain of Flaming Spear> came down and caused a chaotic scene among them.

“What the hell? Did the boss just use another ulti?”

“Damn it! Heal me now! I only have 346 HP left!”

“Go back! Go back to the entrance! Wait until the boss is finished with his ulti and then we’ll come back around!”

“Stop your bull crap! By the time we wait until the boss finishes his ulti, he will be dead! Just rush in and kill the boss! The skill will stop when he’s dead!”

Some people were just being a Captain Obvious. The skill will stop when the boss is killed. That seemed natural. But could they even come close? Even the Mercenaries could not get close enough and died midway, how could a mediocre “elite” team from 3 super guilds handle the pressure?

“Rise! My slaves! Fight for your master!” When it all came down, the boss used the one skill Zhang Yang feared the most.

The field was instantly flooded with countless of skeleton monster that started to swarm the guilds.

Boom! Another wave of flaming spears! Just in the nick of time!

‘Ding! Player MahGroin has died!’

‘Ding! Player Stormbringer has died!’

‘Ding! Player Annie RU Okay has died!’

...

A series of system notification flooded the channel.

Zhang Yang did not pay any attention to them. He continued to concentrate on killing the boss

2%!

1%!

8,123!

By the time the boss hit 1% HP, everyone was either healing on one side or running around like a lunatic on the other. The situation was chaotic! The Skeleton monsters formed a brigade that looked like a swarm of hornet. Wherever it went, no one would survive! Just in a little time, all 3 super guilds were completely killed!

Thousands of skeleton monsters turned around and started to “buzz” towards Zhang Yang!

Crap!

5,612!

4,130!

With only a drop of blood left to kill of Terpot Ryhar, the swarm of monsters had arrived and flooded Zhang Yang.

<Shield Wall>!

<Merlinda's Shadow>!

3,413!

2,348!

1,345!

713!

124!

0!

‘Ding! You have successfully killed Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar! Obtained 10,000,000 Experience Points!’.

Thud! The boss dropped on the floor. Zhang Yang did not stop.

Swiftly, he took all the loots and shoved them into his inventory without even glancing at any of them. He did not even notice a black glowing orb that was among the loots.

‘Server Announcement: Congratulation! Player Zhan Yu had obtained the first [Land Lease]! The battle of Underground Tower is now concluded! All monster respawn rates in the tower will return to its normal rate!’

Victory!

<Shield Wall> ended after 10 seconds and Zhang Yang started to receive damage faster than a minigun could fire! Zhang Yang become a hero just by enduring a few seconds in the last scene!

‘Ding! You have died!’

Zhang Yang let out a long sigh of relief. He then released his soul from the body and was sent to the nearest graveyard. He was not alone there. There were many players around who were still wondering how did they perished!

“Zhan Yu.....” Snow Seeker contacted Zhang Yang again. “I had never thought that you could still grab the lease when its completely chaotic down there!”

“Haha! Guild master Snow should not be that disappointed. This

is not the only lease in the world you know! There will be a chance for you to have them as well!” Zhang Yang consoled her. Zhang Yang was not bluffing. In his previous life, Crimson Rage had obtained many land property in the past and one of them was on the hotspot, right in the center of Crimson Sky City where its true value would be shocking to know.

“Hehe! In that case, you would not mind that if you would hand over the lease to us! We will return you a lease the next time it’s available!” said Snow Seeker while wearing a playful smile on her face.

“Huh? Hello? This is odd. Why can’t I hear anything? Hello!! HELLLLLOOO! Guild master Snow! Are you still there?”

“ ... ”

Zhang Yang ran to the entrance of the Underground Tower. Without any command prompt window, he felt a sudden jerk and was revived immediately on the spot.

“Luckily I had managed to prolonged my death for a little longer! Or else, I had to run all the way down again to collect my goods!” That thought alone sent shiver down his spine. To think that he had to go through the sea of monsters again, he could actually feel sick!

Zhang Yang tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to White Jade Castle. It was already morning by the time Zhang Yang was done with the tower. Zhang Yang immediately logged off.

ARGH! HUNGRY! TIRED! SLEEPY!

KS – Kill Steal. A term used by most MMORPG gamers whenever someone else come to deliver the last killing blow to the monster that he or she were killing first. In most games, the last hit was the determining strike that will have the player who strike the last blow to have the most benefits. Other player might be able to steal the other players' monster's loots by delivering the last hit.

GM – Game Master. The administrative personal of the game itself. They have complete authority over the game and can basically do anything they want.

Chapter 129: Little Merchandize Shop

Zhang Yang slept throughout the entire day and had only woken up after 7pm. After having his dinner, Zhang Yang turned on his computer and visited the official site to find out the aftermath of his feat. However, before he could even click on the forum link, he saw an update notice on the official site home page.

What was happening?

The update patch was only supposed to be implemented on 13th of August! There was still 5 months' time!

Zhang Yang felt a sudden omen. He must have done something to this timeline. It was probably affected by yesterday's feat when he solo killed a boss and obtained the Beyond Perfect score.

According to the summarized notice, the first patch update did not have much changes. It had several changes to the warrior, especially Guardian skill update.

"1. <Block> skill cool down has increased from 10 seconds to 15 seconds! Every successful <Block> instant would grant 30 Rage points instead of 10 Rage points!"

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes in frustration. Just like that, the officials had nerfed his OP skill to become a trash! What a shame! If only this patch would only be implemented 5 months later, Zhang Yang would still have been able to perform better feats. It was probably due to his superior performance that forced the officials'

hands to launch the patch.

The Rage generation was improved but even so, the number of <Block> instances for Zhang Yang, or anyone else for that matter, had been reduced! So, what if the system increased the Rage points by 20? It was still useless!

“2. <Force Strike> cool down time increased from 1 second to 5 seconds!”

Again! Another major nerf!

Unlike Hunter or Thief, a Warrior’s Rage gauge would depend on attacking and receiving attack to refill. That was why in boss fights, whenever the boss struck the Warrior, the Rage will be filled up at a faster pace, allowing them to use <Force Strike> to properly spend off the remaining Rage after using other skills.

“3. <Shield Wall> cool down reduced from 10 minutes to 7 minutes!”

Ah! Finally, a [buff](#)! After maxing the skill level, the cool down should be reduced down to 2 minutes! This would help a tank’s survivability in battles! This buff was quite strong. Probably the system was trying to balance out the major nerf.

The other patch note was about combat behavior.

“1. Increased battle realism. A “Knockback” effect is added. The

knockback effect and distance would be determined by strength of each side of the battle.”

This would mean the stronger player would be able to knockback a weaker player by a certain distance. Before this, battles would look like two stick man fighting each other stationary.

“2. Anti-Disturbance Protection. Physical contact between players could only be established between friends. Players who are not added into the friend list would be alerted with a system notification. The player being touched without consent will be allowed to lodge a complaint to the system. Depending on the level of the offense, the offender would be locked in the main city’s jail. The duration would range from 10 minutes to 3 days depending on the offence. Any Thief under <Stealth> would be automatically revealed once they have made contact with another player.”

This update must be targeted to players like 44 Bandits. That sly bastard had dug his own grave. He had always been misusing <Stealth> to sexually harass other female players around.

“3. Dungeon refresh rate adjustment.

5-man dungeon Normal Mode: Unlimited entry.

5-man dungeon Hard Mode: Once a day.

10-man dungeon all difficulty mode: Once every 2 days.

20-man dungeon all difficulty mode: Once every 3 days.

50-man dungeon all difficulty mode: Once every 7 days.”

“4. Auction House service charge has been increased from 10% to 20%!”

Bullshit! What is this? Daylight robbery?! Before Zhang Yang could continue to rage on, he remembered about the lease he obtained and breathed a sigh of relief. Luckily, I would not have to face this kind of problematic situation!

“5. All high-level equipment would only display the equipment effect and sockets available after successful item identification.”

Sigh! Another way for the company to make money!

For example, the [Combined Elemental Shield], if Zhang Yang had not identified it, it would look like this.

[Combined Elemental Shield] (Gray-Silver, Shield)

Defense: +200

Vitality: +80

<Unidentified>

Level requirement: 20

You can hire an Identifier to have the equipment identified and the sentence “Equip Effect: Increase <Block> skill by one level” would only appear and be applied. If you did not identify the equipment, you could still equip it. However, the special effect would not be in effect.

Black-Steel, Green-Copper tier equipment do not have special effect. Special effect would be available from Gray-Silver tier and onwards. Even if there were no special effects on the equipment, there were still the sockets there. The company could earn a massive fortune just when the number of player would increase to millions.

“6. Status effect skills would now have no effect on the boss. However, status effect skills could possibly interrupt the boss’ casting.”

Oh! Another buff! A boss could not be stunned by <Charge> but now, the boss could be interrupted when using a skill.

“7. Damage reduction recalculation. All damage received would first be reduced by the Defense or Magic Resistance, and further reduced by skills or passive skills.”

Crap! A nerf! If a monster had 2,000 damage, a player had 400 Defense, with a 20% damage reduction skill... The previous calculation was $(2,000 \times 0.8) - 400 = 1,200$ damage received. After the patch, the calculation would be $(2,000 - 400) \times 0.8 = 1,280$ damage received. The higher the Defense, the higher the effect.

“8. Inventory adjustment. To help save inventory space, every item group has been increased from 20 to 200 items count per stack. “

“9. Players killed in PK would not drop levels, they would only have all their collected experience point cleared. Red Name penalty would not have their levels dropped whenever they are killed, instead, the drop rate of the equipped equipment is increased to 100%.”

If a Level 29 player with 34% experience points was killed, the player would still be Level 29 but the experience point would be 0%. No matter how many times the player was killed, they would still be at Level 29. However, the Red Name penalty has been lightened. What a pity. If only this new update was implemented in his previous life, the player Endless Starlight would have raged, quit the game and deleted his account.

“10. Removal of Deathmatch in battle arena.”

Without the thrill of dropping a level, Deathmatch would be meaningless.

“11. <Provoke> effect adjustment. The current effect was to force

the monster to attack the caster for 2 seconds while copying the monster's previous attacking target's 99% aggro value. (If the aggro value was higher, the copy effect would not be implemented). Monsters that could not be affected by <Provoke> would remain un-provoked.

This was a huge buff for a party with 2 tanks, or more. This was especially useful for a boss attack.

With so many changes in a time, Zhang Yang had to spend some time to digest everything. After a while, he went to the forums and found a complete chaotic mess. Players were mainly focusing their complaints towards the increased service charge for the auction house. Everyone was insulting the company for being a gold-digger. Some players mentioned that without the players' massive support to the game, the game would not have its current popularity. They even mentioned that the company had been ungrateful, that they were also being overly greedy to even chop off the players' limbs for their own profits!

However, no matter much the players complained, the officials did not care. Zhang Yang understood it better. Sooner or later, the players' rage would die down. Just like the situation in his previous life, players could complain all they want but no matter how much they hated the implementation, they could not leave 'God's Miracle' for other game after being immersed for so long!

What a greedy company!

Zhang Yang cursed as he put on the gaming helmet and logged into the game.

Just when he logged in, he was bombarded by his gang.

“Ayy! Noob tank! How long did you plan to sleep!?”

“Dumb Yu! Sleepy hog!”

“Little Yang, did you have a threesome last night? No wonder you had just logged in now! It must have been a tiresome night I reckon!”

“Zhan Yu! You’re awesome! You could even raid the entire Underground Tower alone!”

Zhang Yang laughed as he replied their private message one by one. No long after, he summoned his Skeleton War Horse and rode to the Property Manager NPC.

He took out the [Land Lease] and handed it over to the NPC.

“Hmm... This has been identified. It’s authentic!” said the NPC, Count Boggart as he flipped the lease back and forth.

“Right, the property would be yours for only 20,000 gold coins!”

“What? I would still need to pay?” Zhang Yang stared with his eyes wide open. Zhang Yang had not known about it since he had never owned a property before.

“Of course! Any transaction within the Empire has to be enumerated! What do you think this is? An under-table transaction with a private owner? Hehehe... that is an offense that could send you to jail. No, probably execution by beheading!” said Count Boggart while whickering his little mustache.

Oh well. It was just 20,000 gold coins. He could just earn that money back at any time he wanted to. However, he did wish that his money was for a hot spot instead of a rundown town!

Zhang Yang paid the sum, and the NPC snorted and stamped a seal on the [Land Lease].

‘Ding! Congratulations! You have obtained: Property!’

Zhang Yang frantically took the paper and read it. The initial paper that had only two words [Land Lease] written on it now had a complete paragraph of words. The lowest part of the entire paper had the property’s location.

White Jade Castle!

Zhang Yang was extremely delighted to see those three words! As long as he was getting a land in a main city and not somewhere far in the outskirts.

Zhang Yang exited the Property Manager building and rode to the location of the lease.

Almost there!

Zang Yang rode for around 10 minutes and arrived at a 2 story elegant building that was as wide as 3 houses. Zhang Yang examined the paper and the house's lot number and got happy again when it matched each other.

Ta Ta Ta. Not long after, a player, two players... more and more players walked passed by like a busy street. Zhang Yang turned around and saw that the building he was opposite to was the auction house!

JACKPOT!

Zhang Yang had always known that the first [Land Lease] was extremely valuable. But he had never known that the developers would be so kind enough to have his first property to be set directly opposite the popular auction house!

This was the best of the best of all locations ever!

Zhang Yang was so happy that he could just flip over. He got down from the mount and unsummoned it. He walked with heavy step into the very first building he now own.

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu had entered the property. Initializing Tutorial!’

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu, do you wish to set the building properties? You could have the building set to be: Shop, Repair Store, Hotel, Restaurant. Do you wish you set?’

“Yes!”

‘Ding! Please determine the building properties!’

“Shop!”

‘Ding! Please input your shop name!’

“...Little Merchandize Shop!”

‘Ding! Little Merchandize Shop has been completed. Current level: 1. Sale item count: 1,000. Next level: Sale item count: 2,000. The first floor will be available. Upgrade cost: 100,000 gold coins!’

‘Ding! You can now add items to the shop for sale. Please set the price for the item to be sold. The Shop inventory and the player personal storage can be identified.’

‘Ding! Advise to have valuable items to be displayed on the Display Desk and the other items to be in the item menu!’

‘Ding! Advise to hire a [Maid] to manage the shop! You can select the [Maid] from the Property Option, Shop Option window.’

‘Ding! This concludes the tutorial. You can open the Property Option, Help, for further information! Good luck!’

In regards to setting up shop, Zhang Yang was bewildered. He tried and opened the Shop Menu window and selected to add items for sale. He then threw every Green-Copper equipment in his inventory into the menu.

The item price could be set to a fixed value like a shop in reality. He could also set the item to have a bidding value. He must have a fixed selling price but he could choose to not set the maximum price.

The ground floor was already designed to be just like a super market. There were aisle and racks around to have items placed on them. The items placed here could be viewed instantly so Zhang Yang had reserved them for rare and valuable items, while the rest of the items were set to be viewed in a menu like the auction house. You could key in words to search and locate the item.

A shop is like the combined version of a store and an auction house.

Buff – Here in this context, a buff is an action that depicted a skill being strengthen. This term is not to be confused with the buff in the game when a player would cast a skill to grant a beneficial effect.

Chapter 130: A Challenge Of Sword And Fire

Needless to say, items that should be placed in the display board should be the Gray-Silver equipment!

Zhang Yang had turned into a man of fortune. He had obtained plenty of Gray-Silver equipment from the Underground Tower. Even if he had kept some away for his gang, there were still plenty more that he could place at the display board to attract attention.

Others would definitely see it, but they might not be able to buy it. However, they would be intrigued to know what else inside that they could buy!

At least, Zhang Yang no longer needs to set bottles after bottles in the auction to sell them off. Now, as long as he set a fixed price in the shop, players could buy the desired amount of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. The shop will automatically restock the item from his storage to be sold! This was much easier than buying and selling from the auction house!

Zhang Yang opened the Shop Assistant menu and viewed it selections of helpers. There were many characters available for him; from man and woman, to humans, elves, dwarf, and also beastman. Pity, there were not any Gnomes around. Those little devils were the best at making money!

So far, the current male players in the game far exceed the number of female players. Zhang Yang then picked the first option, to remove all male, beastman, dwarfs and plain looking

females. The selection was reduced from over 100 to only 20 options left. Zhang Yang carefully selected one by one and finally decided on a maid. A cool, beautiful, and sexy looking human girl. Her chest was so pointy that they could just pierce through the outfit and reveal two small dots!

It's decided! Zhang Yang would pick this one!

[Natalia] (Normal)

Level: 1

HP: 50

3-size: 34D – 22 – 33

Personality: Cool.

Service fees: 1,000 gold coin / month

Zhang Yang confirmed his selections and 1,000 gold was taken away. A white light flashed and Natalia appeared in front of Zhang Yang. She bowed down and greet him, “Master.”

When she bowed, the ultra-low-cut of her maid uniform dropped and accidentally (or was its intentionally) revealed a large portion

of her pale white breast. Zhang Yang could clearly see her two ginormous melons as if they were shoved right into his face. When she stood back up, her breast bounced and jiggled a little. Extreme virgin killer, to be honest.

Zhang Yang placed Natalia to stand at the front entrance of the shop. A cool, sexy girl in maid uniform. How often could you see that in the street?

He then announced his shop in the local channel. “Today is the launching day of Little Merchandize Shop! Come at once if it’s convenient! If it’s inconvenient, come all the same! The shop is located directly opposite of the auction house! There will be a beautiful girl to welcome you to the shop! Today is a special day! You’ll get a special 20% discount!”

When the announcement was released, it captured many players’ attention; especially those who were close to the auction house. They walked over since they were so close and had nothing else to do. It was not like they would be forced to buy anything at all, there was definitely no harm in going.

Truthfully, Zhang Yang did not need to make that announcement. Natalia alone was sufficient enough to attract many male players around. Humans were indeed a funny being. Once there was a person standing there staring at the sky, and more people joined him to stare into the sky without knowing what to look at. Yet this little shop had something to look for, and that was Natalia, the sexy maid.

There were players who just stared from outside. Some entered

the premise. Zhang Yang was not worried about his items not being able to attract the customers. As for security, it was impossible for any thievery to occur within the premise since there was the system protection. You would have to digitally buy the equipment to be able to have it.

Zhang Yang opened his inventory and found out there were still plenty of battle loots from the Underground Tower. He had forgotten to take out the rest of the item when he took out the [Land Lease]. As for the last boss, Terpot Ryhar dropped plenty of items. There were at least 14 pieces of Green-Copper equipment and 4 pieces of Gray-Silver equipment. There was only 1 Gray-Silver equipment he could use. The remaining items were a skill book and a piece of Alchemy recipe.

[Heart of Fallen Warrior] (Gray-Silver, Accessory)

Use: Increase your Defense by 2,000 points. Last for 15 seconds.

Cool down time: 5 minutes.

Level Requirement: 40

Finally! A decent item!

In ‘God’s Miracle’, a character may equip the following

equipment: Helmet, Necklace, Cape, Body Armor, Gloves, Pants, Boots, 2 Rings, Weapon, and 2 Accessories.

Weapon and Accessories were special.

Weapons could be categorized to one-handed weapon, shield, two-handed weapon, staff, and ranged weapon. A character may equip two pieces of one-handed weapon at the same time, but only one piece of two-handed weapon, staff, and ranged weapon. A Thief for example, could equip a one-handed weapon as his primary weapon slot and a shield as his secondary weapon, just like a Guardian and Defender. Only 1 Two-handed weapon, staff, and ranged weapon could only be equipped at a time.

Accessories were special. Accessory does not provide any bonus attribution, such as Dexterity, Strength, Vitality, and so on, but it does contain a special effect. The one that Zhang Yang had just obtained, [Heart of Fallen Warrior] was commonly called an Active Accessory. The player would have to manually activate the skills that the accessory provided. Merely putting it on or off would not have any effects on the character. On the other hand, there were also some Passive Accessory, such as the effect, “Equip-Effect: Increase all attack or Healing effect by 5%”.

Accessories were equipment that would only appear in the late-game period. They were extremely rare. Level 40 accessories should be the game’s lowest and easiest accessory. There were a majority of players would still be wearing a Level 40 accessories when they reached Level 200 because of the rarity. Accessories were only dropped by field raiding bosses such as the Underground Tower with 13th floors or the Cave of Bones.

[Skill Book: Apparate]

Use: Teach you <Apparate>.

Required Class: Spellcaster.

This is a must-learn skill for every PK Spellcaster. The character would be able to instantly move 10 meters into any direction and dispel any status effect such as stun, bind, slow, and other various debuff. This skill was a rare drop.

So far, there were no Spellcasters around that learned the skill yet. None of them truly understood the value of this skill. Zhang Yang then preemptively set the price to 10,000,000 gold coins to attract customers.

[Recipe: Beginner Iron Skin Potion]

Use: Teach you how to make [Beginner Iron Skin Potion]

Requirement: Advance Alchemy

Good item! Zhang Yang took the item for himself and learned it.

[Beginner Iron Skin Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Increase 100 Defense points for 30 seconds.

Cool down time: 2 minutes.

It was a good item, but the ingredient and material to make the item was just too much. It even required an extremely rare herb called [Iron Cane]. It was so rare that you could not even buy it with any money that you would have!

Just leave it aside for now.

Zhang Yang smiled satisfyingly and left the shop to meet up with Han Ying Xue. The party then went on and raided the Shadowmoon Castle's Garden dungeon. After that, the party proceeded on and gathered more guild members to raid Marzerway's Lair: Main Wing, and was able to procure a little more Gray-Silver equipment.

Everyone was going crazy when they saw Zhang Yang had the [Servant: Clear Lotus] and the Yellow-Gold equipment; especially Fatty Han. He was so impressed that he could make a river with his drooling.

The Level 20 Gray-Silver equipment from the Main Wing were

sold out to the guild member via the guild contribution points. On the other hand, the Level 30 Gray-Silver equipment were prioritized to the gang. If there were equipment that were not suitable for any of them, Zhang Yang would sell the item at his shop and the profit will be shared among the 6 of them.

Not only was he able to fill up the empty spaces in the shop, the money that he obtained from the sales was not deducted by the system. It was a better advantage than Zhang Yang had expected.

“Dummy! I haven’t seen you for a day and yet here you are a shop owner!” Han Ying Xue winked seductively at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed and replied, “Haha, what’s wrong with that? You want to be my muse?”

“Kekeke! You’ve learn to flirt now! Looks like the little doggy has turned into a fine doggy!” Han Ying Xue winked again.

“Please stop! Please act your age, cousin. I’m so ashamed to even walk with you!” Wei Yan Er gritted her teeth.

After raiding two dungeons, Zhang Yang had but little time left. He then put some effort to make more [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to sell them in the shop. So far, Zhang Yang was the only player who could supply the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] in White Jade Castle. Even though the sales had dropped, the market was still stable at around 30 stacks of potions sales a day. Zhang Yang predicted that it would not go any lower than that. 600 gold coins a day was not that bad. Since there was no more stock in the

auction house, players would have to visit the Little Merchandize Shop to buy the potions. This was one way to bring in more customers to his shop.

Before he logged out, Zhang Yang calculated the total earnings for just one night. He sold 17 Green-Copper equipment, 3 Gray-Silver equipment, and 387 bottles of potion. His total earning was 2,700 gold coins. It was much lower than his previous earning during the peak sales period, but Zhang Yang was not frustrated since the sales was going to be never-ending. Plus, the popularity of his shop should be getting higher over time, and by then, he should have more customers. By that logic, his sales should also be better than ever.

The main benefits of selling in the shop was the absence of the 20% service charge. He could sell items cheaper than any item being sold in the auction house and still earn a profit. For example, if an item was sold for 100 gold coins in the auction house, Zhang Yang can sell the same item for 90 gold coins in his shop. The other seller would have 20 gold coins deducted by the service charge, and earn only 80 gold coins for selling at 100 gold coins.

If Zhang Yang encountered other ‘[Gnomes](#)’ business players, he could still buy an item for 81 gold coins that was worth for at least 100 gold. Since those ‘Gnomes’ could supply a large number of stocks in a go, although it was only 1% profit charge, 1% service charge was still a large number!

Just like when Zhang Yang was selling massive amount of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], the service charge has already taken over 40,000,000 dollars!

Zhang Yang arranged a few matters with Natalia and set the price for the several items to buy from players themselves. She was then tasked to approach passerby to promote some items to be sold. Anyone would be thrilled to have a lovely little maid striking a conversation with them. Zhang Yang then deposited 10,000 gold coins for the shop's purchasing funds and logged out to have his rest.

After a good night of sleep, Zhang Yang was finally free from the discomfort of staying overnight. He felt refreshed and revitalized. He spent an hour or so to exercise, and then he then logged into the game after having his breakfast.

Zhang Yang need not worry about the shop. He only needed to occasionally check on the shop's funds to make sure it was enough to buy more items from players. Eventually, the shop would progress better and the funds would no longer decrease but only increase.

‘Ding! Player Dominating Blade has sent you a friend request. Will you accept it?’

Zhang Yang was stunned for a moment. He then recalled that he had turned off private messaging from strangers. If anyone wanted to contact Zhang Yang, they would have to engage him face to face or become friends with each other.

‘Accept!’

Beep! A voice call request from Dominating Blade arrived.

The setting for the voice messaging could be toggled as so: Those who were closer to him would be set to immediate contact without the need to wait for the other party to accept the request. He had set it that way for Fatty Han, Han Ying Xue and the rest of his gang. They could just yell at him anytime and anywhere without any permission. Anyone else, Zhang Yang had set that they would have to wait for him to accept their call, like a cell phone, to be able to have a conversation.

“Dominating Blade, is there anything I could do for you?” Zhang Yang accepted the call.

“Hehe! We met you yesterday but could not engage in a proper introduction. You know, you are quite famous among our Fire and Sword group. Could I interest you in a match at the battle arena?” Filled with a dominating tone, he requested Zhang Yang through the call. After yesterday’s incident in the tower, neither one of them were satisfied with the result.

Zhang Yang delayed his respond and answered nonchalantly. “I accept! However, a fight alone is just boring. How about we bet something for it?”

“What do you like to bet on?”

“Just a small thing to heat things up a little. One round, 1,000 gold coins!”

“Done!”

“Alright! Let’s meet up at the arena in about 5 minutes!”

Zhang Yang ended the call and rode his horse to the area.

The battle area was the best place to release one’s frustration. It was also the place where famous players were born! The game would document every player’s battle record and display the player with the highest victory rate. Before the launching of the Professional League, this list represented the PK player’s strength.

However, to prevent players from abusing the system ranking, the system would not record any battle that was pre-arranged by the player. Only through registering their fights by the system, and the system would arrange a random player by their strength, would only be recorded into the system.

However, this could not 100% prevent players from finding a loophole. At least this way, they could prevent two Level 10 players to have 100 matches every day and be listed in the top ranking. However, there was no special reward from being in the top. Even if you could get yourself up to the number 1, no one would acknowledge your strength.

Zhang Yang immediately received Floating Up’s battle request once he arrived at the battle area.

“44 Bandits and Not Telling My Name has lost to you before!

They're out of the fight! Healers are not a combative character, so they are out as well. What's left is the 6 of us. There's something I have to request of you personally. As long as you can defeat all of us, we will admit your strength and our weakness. We will never again accept any business regarding your death!" Dominating Blade said with a strong voice.

"Alright. I accept your promise."

Zhang Yang was always worried about the "Trash" Mercenary group. Right now, the difference in ability between him and them were miles apart. However, these group of people were extremely strong as they learned and progressed faster than anyone. If its 1v1, he strongly believed he would never ever lose of any of them, but what if they would ambush in a party of 5? Or the entire group of 10?

To be always in the grudge of others was not a wise move! Since neither side had any grudge nor vengeance to resolve, there was no need to have them fight to the death! If he could solve this problem now, why should he not take the chance to do so?

Zhang Yang accepted the battle request.

'Ding! You have accepted player Floating Up battle request. The battle will start after 5 minutes, please make your preparation!'

Gnome: This part here is rather confusing. The author did not specify whether it was either a race of the player character or just a general term used to describe a player who is good at doing business.

Chapter 131: Two Down

Both sides placed their bets of 1,000 gold coins and waited for the bells to ring.

With each team having famous players, spectators were already gathering in the arena. However, when they wanted to enter the arena to spectate, the room was locked with a password. They could only ask around, waiting for someone to reveal the password to enter the arena.

The password was placed by Floating Up, fearing that they may face public shaming if either one of them loses the fight, or so Zhang Yang thought.

5 minutes passed like the wind and both contenders entered the battle field. There was no one around the arena aside from the remaining 9 members of Sword and Fire Mercenary group.

‘Ding! The battle will start in 10 seconds!’

[Player: Floating Up]

Level: 34

HP: 4,560

9,8,7,6,5,4,3,2,1,0!

Clang, Clang, Clang...Boom! The steel cage dropped behind them.

Shiing!

Floating Up glowed with a yellow golden light and there was a shape of a battle axe icon on his head. It looked like he gained a buff.

[Commanding Seal]: Every melee attack will inflict additional 30% melee damage as Holy Elemental damage. Last for 30 seconds.

He then dashed towards Zhang Yang. When he was 15 meters away from him, Floating Up stomped the ground hard and tossed his shield towards Zhang Yang.

<Shield Toss>!

‘-1!’

A nullified attack damage popped over Zhang Yang’s head.

[Shield Toss]: Throws the shield in your hand to cause 100%

physical damage to the target and 2 other nearby targets. Inflicts a 50% movement speed reduction. Last for 3 seconds.

Floating Up was wearing a complete Level 20 Gray-Silver equipment, so his Strength should be around 220. Even of the set-equipment effect would increase his attack by 10%, it would only be raised to 250! Zhang Yang equipped the [Bones of the Chimera], which made his Defense to be up to 360 points. Floating Up damage was unable to break his defense and could only inflict a nullified damage value. However, Zhang Yang was still inflicted with the slow effect.

Floating Up was not surprised of his nullified damage, since he had crossed blades with Dominating Blade once and had the same effect. However, Zhang Yang's equipment was not weaker but only stronger!

Shush! Zhang Yang rushed in with <Charge> and stunned his opponent.

He then ran behind him and attacked him normally, followed by a <Horizontal Sweep>.

‘-644!’

‘-1,313!’

Defender had 15% damage reduction passive skill but would still

be in effect even when an enemy attacked from behind.

<Blood Rage> +30 Rage!

‘-1,325!’ <Destructive Smash>!

2 seconds later, Floating Up recovered from the stun and consumed a bottle of healing potion. He then turned around to face Zhang Yang but only to find Zhang Yang following his back like a shadow. Zhang Yang swung the sword in his hands and dealt another attack on him.

‘-656!’

Floating Up now realized that the opponent’s ability to reposition was much better than his. If this dragged on, he would be played around by Zhang Yang, only to be killed. Without hesitating further, Floating Up activated a skill. A flash of golden light beamed out and Zhang Yang was stunned.

[Sanction]: Punish the target, stunning the target immediately. Last for 5 seconds.

Skill range: 15 meters.

This skill’s advantage was that the caster did not need to face the target directly to activate!

Similar to Zhang Yang's strategy, Floating Up went behind Zhang Yang and sliced Zhang Yang's back.

'-453!' Normal attack.

'-150!' <Commanding Seal>.

'-501!' <Strong Hammer>

'-290!' <Justice Bash>.

'-827!' <Judgement>.

Defenders and Guardians possess a different kind of system. A Defender did not need any Rage. They could cast the skill at any time they wanted as long as the skill was not on cool down. Additionally, majority of the Defender's attacking skill was Holy element, which could not be reduced by Defense value.

Floating Up stomped the ground and activated <Devotion>. A golden light spread out and Zhang Yang started to receive 20 damage every second.

After a series of skill, Floating Up had to rely on normal attacks while waiting his skills to finish their cool down.

'-458!'

‘-153!’

‘-462!’

‘-149!’

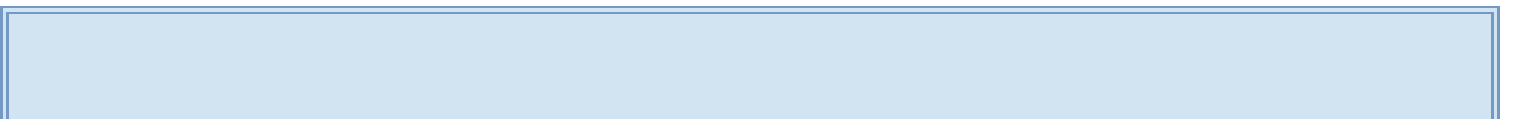
5 seconds’ stun ended!

Zhang Yang had 3,000 HP shaved off by Floating Up. The moment he got control of his character, he quickly turned around and faced Floating Up directly. His skills was ready to be unleashed when his Rage gauge was already full.

‘-1,322!’ <Destructive Smash>.

Floating Up wanted to learn from Zhang Yang, to follow someone’s behind like a shadow and to kill him that way. But that was just a beautiful wish that could never be granted. Before he was even able to react to Zhang Yang’s attack, Zhang Yang had already smashed him to have only 1,500 HP left. Zhang Yang attacked him another round and was left with only a drop of blood from death.

Floating Up quickly reacted and activated <Divine Protection> and <Holy Restoration>.



[Divine Protection]: Dispel all negative status effect and grant immunity to all attacks. All damage output and healing will be reduced by 50%. Last for 5 seconds.

Cool down time: 7 minutes.

[Holy Restoration]: Fully restore all of the caster's HP.

Cool down time: 2 minutes.

Shiing! Floating Up had recovered all his HP in a second and also gained immunity to all attacks.

Zhang Yang only grinned. After moving himself repeatedly, Zhang Yang was now behind him. This time, Floating Up could not cast <Sanction> to counter him as the skill still had 45 seconds of cool down time!

Zhang Yang waited until the immunity expired and then attacked him slowly.

Floating Up tried his best to move around faster than before, but no matter how fast he moved, he was unable to shake off Zhang Yang. He could only hope to deal damage to buy some time for <Devotion>.

‘-671!’

‘-1,341!’

‘-656!’

.....

One by one, Zhang Yang struck him as if there was nothing Floating Up could do to stop Zhang Yang. Eventually, he was killed.

“Damn!” Floating Up could not help but leave a curse at his death bed.

‘Ding! Player Floating Up was killed. You have obtained victory!’

A flash of light passed and Zhang Yang was sent out of the battle ground.

What a pity. Floating Up may have damaged Zhang Yang by 3,000 damage but he could not force Zhang Yang to use any of his skills: <Berserker’s Heal>, <Shield Wall>, [Servant], <Lifesteal> skill from the sword, and <Merlinda’s Shadow>.

There was no one from this current timeline had the capability to even be on par with Zhang Yang!

They would need at least train hard for at least until half a year later, to have their skill sharpened to its best.

Victorious, Zhang Yang had obtained the 1,000 gold coins from the bet and thought to himself. “If I could earn 1,000 gold coins for every battle I fight, I could earn quite some money there!”

‘Ding! Player Dominating Blade has sent you a battle request. Will you accept it?’

After Zhang Yang accepted the request, the battle was announced on the announcement board. However, the room was locked with a password. Players from outside were not able to enter the room to spectate the match. Many of them were already frustrated by it.

“Not bad.” Dominating Blade sent a private message. “Alright. Just this match. The rest of them won’t be fighting! They are all weaker than I am. Since both of us are Guardians, if I lose to you, the rest of them are not worth to be your opponent.”

Zhang Yang smiled. “I listen and obey!”

5 minutes later, both of them were teleported into the corner of the battle ground.

10 seconds count down started and the battle began.

Both fighters dashed towards each other and once they were close enough, they activated <Charge> at the same exact second,

causing both Dominating Blade and Zhang Yang to be stunned.

2 seconds later. Both of them raised their sword and simultaneously struck each other! They were like a mirror image of each other!

<Block>!

‘-139!’ Zhang Yang’s <Block> reflected damage.

<Block>!

‘-1!’ Dominating Blade’s <Block> reflected damage.

How could both side’s <Block> reflected damage could have such high difference? On one end, Zhang Yang had a higher Strength and Defense value. The most important factor was Zhang Yang’s <Eagle Eye> that could ignore 50% defense!

“Eh? Do you have a passive skill that could ignore defense?” Dominating Blade brandished his sword as he asked.

“Yeah.” Zhang Yang nodded and swung his sword as well.

‘-526!’

‘-272!’

Dominating Blade was wielding the exact same sword as Zhang Yang but the damage done from both sides were so much different from each other!

When one was at the disadvantage of equipment and skill, maneuverability and tactics were depended on to overcome his opponent! However, could Zhang Yang's capability lose to Dominating Blade?

Before this, Dominating Blade always relied on his equipment and skill level to win a fight against others. But now, his opponent was Zhang Yang, who had better Strength, higher Defense, stronger equipment, and crazy amount of skills! Dominating Blade could not help but feel a little bitter. He wanted to say his catch phrase to Zhang Yang, as he always said to others: "If you have the capability to wear the same equipment as I am, then you have my permission to fight me!"

But with the huge gap in power, Dominating Blade had already lost more than 3,000 HP when Zhang Yang had only lost 1,700 HP. Zhang Yang had not used his regular play style, to hide behind the opponent's back and attack him there. Without a skill like <Sanction> Zhang Yang could torture him as much as he wanted to.

Dominating Blade started to flinch. He knew this battle was going south. He then quickly activated <Shield Wall> and fought Zhang Yang head on. Until <Shield Wall> expired, he activated the sword's <Lifesteal>.

Zhang Yang grinned. He used <Block> to block off one attack and activated <Shield Wall> after.

<Block>!

‘-68!’

‘-134!’

In 3 attack instances, one was blocked. The total damage Dominating Blade had dealt was only 200 damage. He had only healed 50 HP since he had the <Destructive Smash> effect on him!

Dominating Blade was so frustrated he was not sure whether to cry or just give up the match!

Zhang Yang unleashed a fury of attack and ended Dominating Blade’s life before he could decide to do anything.

...

“Boss! You’re quite strong you know? You could last for 40 seconds! That’s much longer than what Floating Up could get!” All Wounded laughed.

Floating Up was enraged at his joke. “Hey! At least I managed to deal 3,000 damage! Dominating Pig here had only deal 2,000 over, you want to compare my ass then?”

Dominating Blade smiled bitterly. “He must have held his punches when he was fighting with you! Floating Up, he didn’t use <Shield Wall> when he was with you!”

After a temporary silence, 44 Bandits spoke.

“Are we going to reject every contract for him?” said 44 Bandits with a tone of disappointment. After all, Zhang Yang’s head was worth 10,000 gold coins a kill. It was so much more than any other contract that they had ever received. Now that the system had implemented the new system, that kills would not cause a level drop, clients wanted the snapshot of the scene where Zhang Yang was killed. They wanted to use it and post it in the forums to demolish his reputation.

Dominating Blade suddenly went pale. He turned to 44 Bandits and said, “We had accepted two contracts to kill Zhan Yu. But how did that turn out again? Right. You and Not Telling My Name dropped a level!”

Floating Up solemnly said, “Our group strength is strong, but Zhan Yu also had a team. He even had an entire guild backing him up! If we ever cross paths again, he might turn it around and kill us all. His capabilities are just...”

All 10 members of the Sword and Fire Mercenary group turned sour.

They had never been afraid of any super guilds. ‘God’s Miracle’

map was so god damn huge! How could anyone find them? They could just be hiding behind any tree or cave! As long as they were alive, they could just wait for the perfect moment and strike you down without you knowing it! Their controls were strong, equipment as well! The worst-case scenario, both of them would die!

But, Zhang Yang exceed them in every way they could think off. How could they even hope to attack him, much less kill him?

“There won’t be a next time for us. We will no longer bother him ever again!”

Chapter 132: Invitation From Snow Seeker

Ah! What a waste! Zhang Yang had only earned 2,000 gold coins!

Zhang Yang sighed a little. He thought that he could have at least earned a little more before they gave up. Oh well, since they did forfeit their challenge, there was nothing else he could do. Zhang Yang summoned the mount and rode to his Little Merchandize Shop. From afar, he could see that there were at least 20 players in the shop, checking out the goods.

“Not bad.” Zhang Yang nodded.

Outside the shop were a few nerds surrounding Natalia. They would not stop peppering Natalia with questions. Natalia answered each and every question coldly. Her cool, devil-may-care attitude was truly impressive. She could make that bunch of lonely nerds drool all over the street.

Sigh...what losers. They would even try to flirt with an NPC!

Beep!

The voice messenger rang. Zhang Yang glanced at the notification and saw that it was from Snow Seeker. He accepted the call without hesitation.

“Guild master Snow, is anything the matter?”

“Nothing...Why can't I simply talk to you when you're free?!” Snow Seeker voice was neither soft nor sugar coated. Her voice was something Zhang Yang could not properly determine. It was on a borderline of between direct and kind. It was somehow enticing, subconsciously convincing another to have a longer conversation with her.

“Of course you can!” Zhang Yang did not bother arguing. He knew that man will always lose to a woman in an argument.

Snow Seeker giggled playfully. “I merely jest. Indeed, I have some matters to tend with you. The reason I'm calling you was that I'd like you to help us, the Crimson Rage, to fight a boss!”

Zhang Yang was stunned by her sudden request. “Haven't you guys already beaten the Garden before? I remember that you even managed to break the speed record!”

“No. I mean...It's not a dungeon boss! Y-You have your own team. How could I ask you to waste your entrance count on us!?” Snow Seeker wavered a little. “It's a field boss. Yesterday, we spent a whole day just trying to take it down. We suffered several complete wipe outs for at least 30 times!”

“Oh ho...” Zhang Yang raised an eye brow. He was interested at where this conversation was going. A dungeon is always there, always available. The refreshment period of the dungeon was short and quick. Anyone could form a proper party to raid the dungeon whenever they wanted to. That was why, even though dungeon loots were strong, they were never as strong as the equipment found on a field boss! There could be only 1 or 2 of them in an

entire region. If someone else kills it, there won't be another one replacing it anytime soon. The items that could be found from this field boss were extremely rare. Zhang Yang's mount, [Skeletal War Horse] was one of such.

“What's the boss name?”

Snow Seeker smiled. “If I tell you that now, you might take advantage of us. Who knows? You might even wait until every one of us is dead and claim the boss loots for yourself?”

“Hey!” Zhang Yang cried out defensively. “Do I look like that kind of person?”

“You're not. But as they say, you can't judge a book by its cover. Humans are just wolves in a skin suit.” Zhang Yang could hear pain in her voice. She quickly laughed it off. “How about it? Will you lend us a hand? As a reward for your help, I will give you one item from the boss loots. I will even let you have the first pick!”

Zhang Yang started to think. He recalled the scene yesterday when every other guild were there to kill the boss for themselves. Snow Seeker on the other hand, had approached Zhang Yang to ask for cooperation instead. From a Guild master's perspective, that was a rather bold move.

No matter. This is a kind gesture. A favor to be precise. That said, Crimson Rage is a strong guild now and will be even more so in the future. If he could get on their good side now, it would only benefit him and his guild, the Lone Desert Smoke!

Zhang Yang made his decision on the spot. He nodded. “Okay. I’ll help. Recruit me!”

Snow Seeker immediately sent over a party invitation. Zhang Yang was added into the main party once he accepted the invitation.

In ‘God’s Miracle’ the party member limit could reach up to one thousand. Within the huge party, 50 members would be compartmentalized as a subgroup. There would be a total of 20 subgroups. In the party list window, those subgroups looked like a series of chain webbing. You could click the name of each group to see a party of 50 players inside. Each subgroup would have their own communication channel. They could also be able to listen to the main party communication and see any announcement made there.

Crimson Rage’s expedition party had 13 subgroups, with a total of 637 members. Zhang Yang entered the party and was immediately assigned to be in the first party with Snow Seeker.

Zhang Yang briefly scanned the area and found that all 49 members were female, by IGN at least. He was the only one that stood out among the crowd.

“Everyone, please welcome Guild master Zhan Yu!” Snow Seeker announced in the party channel.

Not long, a continuous chain of greetings in the form of chirps

and shrill cheers broke through the air. They came in varying tones, cold, sweet, a little overtly excited, and a little monotonous. No matter the tone, all he could hear was the slightly higher pitched voices of females. Zhang Yang had thought that he had fallen into the Themyscira, the Amazonian island of Wonder Woman. He could not help but think that if other male players had joined Crimson Rage's party, they would either be high in ecstasy or be completely femininized by them on the other end of the same scale...

“Attention. From now on, only subgroup leaders are allowed to use the public channel, the rest of the member are only allowed to communicate within their own subgroups! Let's proceed. Just like we did yesterday! Spread out, and rendezvous at the Bison's Hill!” Snow Seeker laid out her instructions clearly and full of commanding aura.

Zhang Yang joined Snow Seeker and her team and gathered at the Gryphon Manager. Some of his team members were familiar faces. There was Thorny Rose, White Orchid, and Perfumed Water. All of them made up a party of 10.

When Zhang Yang joined the girls, he was greeted by the rest but was insulted by Thorny Rose.

“Hmph! Bloody Swindler!” It was hard for her to forgive him.

Zhang Yang curled his lips and defended himself. “Well. Technically, I didn't rob of you of anything. In fact, you were very much on the winning side there. For your information, 2 pieces of [Refined Iron Ore] could be traded for more than 70 pieces of [Iron

Ore]!”

“What has that got to do with you running off with our [Iron Ore]s!” Thorny Rose was frustrated. She jumped up angrily, causing her 34D huge boobs to bounce up and down vigorously.

Zhang Yang sighed. “Didn’t you say it yourself, that you will not resort to sexual appeal whenever you lose in an argument against me! I’ve got to warn you though. I don’t have much resistance against that!”

Thorny Rose was even further infuriated. With one hand on her waist, and the other pointing at Zhang Yang, Thorny Rose held her chest up high. She was fuming mad.

“That’s enough Rose. You’re being fooled here. You’ll fall into his trap if you’re angry!” Snow Seeker laughed lightly as she pats her shoulder.

“Sister Snow! I really hate that guy!” Thorny Rose rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang.

“Alright, alright. Let’s go!” Snow Seeker cried. “Fly to Goodlands Town!”

Everyone sat on the Gryphons and flew off. Along the way...

“...Fei Fei, the guy that you met yesterday. How did the date go?”

The party channel started to filled with the idle conversation.

“Sigh...the guy is another big pervert. He would even get busy with his hands while we were watching the movie!”

“So Fei Fei, did you give him a good slap in the face?”

“Coral. It’s not like you didn’t know. Our Fei Fei is also a big sl*t, born to ride that stallion. She could do it forever till kingdom comes!”

“Damn b*tch! How could you even come up with such a description of me like that!”

“You stupid swine! Don’t keep those obscene thoughts to yourself!”

“Honestly though Fei Fei, did you really go twenty toes with him?”

“Yeah yeah! Say! Say! What happened?”

“I mean. What can I do? He wanted it. He took the shot! I’m not the kind that would say no, so yeah. We did it!”

“Hehehehe. How was he? Was he good?”

“Ehhh...He looked good, but he wasn’t that good in bed! I must say, he was so horny in the car. It was like he was so dry. I was thinking that he probably haven’t been with a woman in his past 8 lives! That guy got on me and was done before I could even feel anything at all! I had to go back home and do it myself. Sigh...”

“That’s right! Hah! Might as well get a vibrator than a boyfriend. Am I right?!”

“Hahahaha!”

“AHEM!” Snow Seeker purposely coughed loudly as she could no longer hold in her shame. “Girls, I’d like to remind you that we have a guest here!”

Only then did the girls lower their voices. Eventually their whispers turned into full conversations again. Zhang Yang could make out words like “length”, “size”, and “endurance”. Even Zhang Yang began to tremble at the power of a woman’s dirty talks. Once these women were brought together, they could just go on and on about any topics at all. It is no wonder that two women could just talk for an entire day!

The Gryphons’ speed were fast but even so, they took almost half an hour to reach their destination. Afterwards, they walked into the depths of the mountains. All subgroups of the party were beginning to converge there. The numbers started to grow as more and more groups arrived. The entire plain was filled with women’s chattering. There was a sense of power among the girls.

Even as a Guardian with super high defense, Zhang Yang knew that he could not withstand the number of lashes and heart piercing talks from the girls here. He lowered his head and followed Snow Seeker obediently like a dog and his owner.

As they proceeded further into the mountains, the region name changed from Goodlands Town to Bison's Hill.

Bison's Hill was pretty straightforward. There were Wild Bisons everywhere. However, no matter how ferocious they looked, they were just puny little calves from the girls' perspective. There were even several girls there voicing out that they want to cut down the Bison's horns, saying that they were better at performing compared to certain adult body parts. That topic alone induced a vigorous power among the girls.

The expedition took another 30 minutes to reach the peak of the mountain. The surface of the peak was extremely flat and wide. It felt like the peak was sliced away by someone else. The place was as huge as the football fields you see in the FIFA world cup! This field had a 10-meter tall and 1 meter wide stone pillar struck in the middle of it. On the top of the pillar was a gigantic humanoid monster sleeping on the flat surface of the pillar. It's entire body was covered in pieces of grayish rocks. There was moss grown all over the rocks on his body. The giant rolled over and a gigantic arm dangled from the edge of the pillar. It was as long as 10 meters!

The monster was sleeping soundly. Its snores were so loud and powerful that the nearby sand and rocks were rolling back and forth with each breath.

Zhang Yang selected the monster and examines its properties.

[Chalvos, King of the Mountain Giant] (Silver-Gray, Elemental Being)

Level: 40

HP: 50,000,000

Note: He was a King. But he got exiled when he has lost the fight for the true King's position.

Zhang Yang had never fought this boss before in his past life. But he did once fight another King of the Mountain Giant! That was a level 120 Mythical tier boss! One strike could kill you several times over! Every attack he has was imbued with AoE damage and Knockdown effect! A true party killer!

Zhang Yang turned to Snow Seeker. He knew that they had died over 30 times and must have a clear understanding on every skill the boss had.

Snow Seeker smiled knowingly back and said, "This is Zhan Yu's first battle! I will now repeat the attack plan! This boss's attacks are simple. He would either strike the target or stomp the target. Either way, both of his attacks has the same effect. Direct attacks

would deal around 4000 physical attack, which would create a shockwave, causing 3000 physical damage to targets within 35 meters. It would also cause a Knockdown effect which would cancel spells or skills casting.”

Strong!

Spellcaster, Hunters, ranged attackers could only have a maximum 30 meters attack ranged. Healer also had a 30-meter healing range. If anyone wanted to heal or attack, they would have to enter the boss’s blast wave range and take 3000 damage. On top of that, it was a AoE skill. This would inevitably end up with a huge mess. The boss also had the ability to interrupt skill casting. If the healers were interrupted, the tank could be killed instantly!

Chapter 133: King Of The Mountain Giants

The special feature of a field boss was that they had at least one powerful AoE skill. Even if there was a sea of players coming to kill him, they would be killed off with a clean sweep! The key to victory was not about the number of players!

“Zhan Yu will position the boss dead center in the field. The rest of us will spread into a circle. The first 50 attacking will attack within the 30 meters’ range. The healers will form another circle 20 meters behind the first circle to escape the boss’s attacking range. The first group of attackers will surely die as the healer will be unable to heal in time. Once the first team is down, I want the second team to take over the line. Do not break the chain!” said Snow Seeker’s beautiful voice echoed clearly in the party channel.

“Fragrant! Petal! Both of you are in charge of healing Zhan Yu personally. Bitter Coffee, your team will stay behind and heal Fragrant and Petal. You must not let them die!”

“Yes Ma’am!” said the female army in unison.

Zhang Yang turned around and saw two human Sacred Knights standing behind him. Both of them were quite beautiful. Fragrant Baby was slightly taller than Little Petal. However, both of them were very well built. Their waists were slim and slender. Their butts matched the size of their breast, both pairs were full and well developed.

Zhang Yang checked their properties and was surprised to see

them.

[Player: Fragrant Baby] (Sacred Knight)

Level: 32

HP: 4320

MP: 1520

[Player: Little Petal] (Sacred Knight)

Level: 31

HP: 4260

MP: 1510

Both of them had such high HP! They must have added all their AP (Attribute Point) to Vitality! There was no way they could have more than 4000 HP when their equipment was only level 20 Gray-Silver tier! Their MP was at 1520, that’s just too little!

The most orthodox method to build a Magic class character was on a ratio of 3 AP on Vitality and 2 on Intelligence. The other common method was 2 AP on Vitality and 3 on Intelligence. If they had followed the orthodox way, they would have around 3600 HP maximum with their current equipment. Unless they had somehow managed to boost their HP, there was no way that their HP would exceed 4000!

Zhang Yang had to open his mouth. “As expected of the infamous Crimson Rage super guild. You have all sorts of dedicated builds here!”

Magic type classes all depended on Intelligence. Now that those two guys had sacrifice that and had invested all their AP in Vitality, they must have a tough time grinding their level. In order to level up properly, they would have to depend on others to, in a way, donate experience points. However, it looked like their levels were rather high. It must be the work and dedication of their guild!

Snow Seeker smiled gently. “We have many types of healers here with special builds. There are the full Vitality builds, but we also have full Intelligence builds and also full Spirit builds. All these are designed to handle different types of situations!”

Zhang Yang nodded his head, acknowledging her ideals. This was how a guild performs. How could you ask someone to give up on their plans and to invest in this sort of unorthodox, highly risky build? However, this was still the early stage of the game. When players start progressing further, the weapon levels will go higher, thus providing more bonus attribute. The bonus attribute could get so high that the attribute invested by the free AP would be

negligible. You could even stock up all your AP without investing them and you'll get 1500 AP when you reach level 300. That amount was nothing compared the attribute points gained from equipment!

Still, right now, those two had only over 1500 MP. How are they going to last?

Frowning over their stats, Zhang Yang stared back and forth between the girls and Snow Seeker.

Somehow, she knew what Zhang Yang was thinking about and answered him. "They have <Grace>!"

[Grace] (Passive): Recover MP every time you receive healing. Convert 10% of the healing amount to MP.

<Grace> is a skill that only Sacred Knights could learn. This skill was not obtainable from the class quest, but through skill books. According to the early designs of the game, this skill was made specially for Sacred Knight. Since Sacred Knight is a class that depended on both Vitality and Intelligence, their MP and HP could not be as high as the other class. Originally, their MP would not last after a series of skills. How else to replenish their MP, but need to acquire this skill and have others healing them.

What a heavy expense!

Zhang Yang sighed mentally. <Grace> skill books were extremely rare, yet both of Crimson Rage's Sacred Knights were able to procure these skills. They must have a certain amount of strength to do so! The skill does not shine really well in normal fields. However, now that they could fight bosses like Chavlos, this skill has become their ultimate weapon!

Argh! A guild's power sure are strong!

Zhang Yang had to praise her. "Guild master Snow, you sure have a full head of ideas huh!"

Perfumed Water smiled slyly and said, "Hehe! Our Sister Snow here indeed has her head full of ideas. But you know what else is full and huge? Her tits!"

"Perfumed!" Snow Seeker uttered a rather cute squeak. She was so abashed that her cheeks turned pink. Normally they would have made similar jokes amongst themselves and Snow Seeker would not have anything against that. However, now that there was a male around, she was embarrassed beyond words.

Little Petal started to laugh. "Brother Zhan Yu! Our Sister Snow is still single, and ready to mingle. We could help you pull some strings and set you up on a date! Sister Snow is a lady among ladies! Not only that she is beautiful, she was also very smart and brave. She is the perfect wife any man could have!"

Once by one, soon the entire party started to talk up Snow Seeker to Zhang Yang. The scene was like several sales promoters in the

supermarket, trying their best to get you to buy their product. In this case, the thing that they were selling was none other than their own guild master.

“Please...STOP...” Snow Seeker quickly stopped the scene before it could get any worse.

“Please get ready for the fight now! Take your potions!”

She turned over to Zhang Yang; he could still see some pinkish hue on her cheeks that had not faded away. “Zhan Yu, everything is in your hands now! Yesterday, we were wiped because Fragrant and Petal were interrupted during their healing. The tank was killed instantly which eventually leads to a team wipe!”

Zhang Yang nodded his head. “I understand. I will do my best!”

“Prepare yourselves! We are starting now! Healers! Team 1 attackers! In your positions now!” Snow Seeker then gave the signal to Zhang Yang and he nodded back.

“Here I go!”

Zhang Yang unsheathed his Lover’s Sword and dashed towards the boss.

1 meter, 2 meters, 3 meters,...10 meters...20 meters!

Still, the boss remained asleep! Even when Zhang Yang was already so close to him, he was still snoring happily.

<Charge>!

Zhang Yang slid across the ground and stunned him.

Unfortunate, the boss was not stunned. Instead, he merely stood up. His gigantic body was so tall that it looked like he was touching the sky! Chalvos looked down at Zhang Yang and bellowed. “Who dares disturb Chalvos’s slumber! Chalvos will destroy him!”

“-688!”

Zhang Yang swung his sword in answer and raised his Rage to 41 points. Both <Cripple Defense> and <Horizontal Sweep> were cast simultaneously. The boss’s defense was so strong that Zhang Yang had to stack up 5 <Cripple Defense> to see how he could damage him.

Crimson Rage’s first attack team got into their position. After an instant, fireball, frost arrows, arrow heads were raining down on the boss.

The boss growled loudly and stretch out his arms to grab the pillar.

Crack! Boom! Chalvos pulled the pillar out of the ground, sending tiny broken pieces of debris flying everywhere. Some of them hit

Zhang Yang armor, bouncing off with metallic “Ding Ding Tang!” chinks.

The boss then swung the pillar around like Sun Wu Kong and his golden staff, smashing Zhang Yang with its edge.

“-2912!”

The pillar struck Zhang Yang hard, at the same time giving off a strong shockwave that emanated everywhere. The first attacking team was hit by the waves and received 3000 damage each.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

All players within 30 meters around the boss had fallen down, revealing their hidden regions out to the sky as skirts bunched up and legs spread eagled! The healers outside the main circle was healing as hard as they can.

“Hahahaha! Now I have something to play with!” Chalvos laughed menacingly.

Zhang Yang had received around 3000 damage in an instant, causing his Rage gauge to fill up instantly. With a swift stroke, Zhang Yang quickly converted all that built up Rage into damaging skills.

<Cripple Defense>!

“-314!” <Cripple Defense>.

“-1610!” <Horizontal Sweep>.

“-764!” <Force Strike>.

“-224!” <Thunder Strike>.

Since Rage was currently not a problem for him, he could just spam all his skills without worry.

“+1022!”

“+1034!”

Fragrant Baby and Little Petal’s heals had landed on Zhang Yang. As Sacred Knights, they had stronger healing in terms of single target. Even though they only had around 500 magic attack, they could heal over 1000 HP by casting <Holy Light> which took a mere 2 seconds each! That was even stronger than Han Ying Xue’s healing capabilities!

Chalvos’s attacking speed was not fast nor frequent. He only lifted the stone pillar after 3 seconds and struck Zhang Yang’s head with it.

<Block>!

Zhang Yang immediately used <Block>. Since he had equipped the [Combined Elemental Shield], <Block> skill level had dropped down to level 9. The cool down was at 6 seconds!

Boom!

Even though Zhang Yang had blocked the attack, the attack could still generate the shockwave that exploded everywhere and caused everyone around to fall over.

Both Fragrant Baby and Little Petal fell, but they quickly got up and recast the healing spell to heal Zhang Yang.

Chalvos was laughing happily as he saw the players around falling over. Zhang Yang had deduced his laughter to be as innocent as a child playing with a dog. He then lifted the pillar and struck Zhang Yang like the game, whack-a-mole.

This time, Zhang Yang had no <Block> to use. He quickly rolled over and evaded the attack!

“-2112!”

Thud!

Even though he was able to avoid the attack, the shockwave was generated and knocked him off his feet. Zhang Yang leaped to his

feet as swiftly as he fell and quickly attacked the boss.

Zhang Yang had managed to stack 5 layers of <Cripple Defense> but the boss' defense was so strong to begin with, that it still had a Defense value measuring over a hundred. Hunters around the boss were having a headache but the Spellcasters were not affected.

Chalvos attack pattern was indeed quite simple and straight forward. He would use the pillar to smash and the shockwave would knock down players around. Zhang Yang could endure the attacks but the attacking team could not. Even though they had a team of healers supporting them, eventually, they would all still perish after 1 or 2 turns of smashing.

Zhang Yang continued to slashed the boss as he talked to Snow Seeker. "Why didn't you recruit just a few elite attackers instead of a whole team? They could last longer if all the healers here were only focusing on a few of them instead of 50?"

"It's too slow! The fight will be dragged on for too long. The tank might not be able to last the whole fight!" Snow Seeker replied quickly.

That explanation didn't seem to make sense to Zhang Yang. The boss' attacks occurred once every 3 seconds. His <Block> cool down was 6 seconds, which would enable Zhang Yang to properly block off half of the assault. The remaining attacks would not be a complete hit either! Zhang Yang would only receive damage from the shockwave instead. 2000 damage was not that much, and 6 seconds was a luxurious time for the healers to heal him back!

As if he wanted to further confuse Zhang Yang, Chalvos smashed Zhang Yang once with the pillar and suddenly lifted a humongous foot, and brought it down on his head. Almost like a mountain dropping on his head, Zhang Yang felt a huge pressure crushing his skull.

Chapter 134: Collapsed And Crushed

Zhang Yang had just used <Block> three seconds ago, and there was no way he could evade that giant foot, so he simply had to take the full blow!

Time froze, as he did some quick calculations in his mind.

His Max HP was 5,780 and 2,112 HP had already been deducted as he received damage from <Shockwave> earlier. He had 3,668 HP remaining. If Chalvos' attack did 4,000 base damage points, The damage Zhang Yang going to receive would be around 3,000, so he could withstand that foot just fine, even if it was cutting a little too close.

But to be on the safe side, Zhang Yang still drank a bottle of health recovering potion and instantly, his HP rose to 4,668.

‘-2912!’

Chalvos' giant foot landed on Zhang Yang, and a huge damage text floated above his head, along with a debuff icon!

<Collapse>: You were stomped on by Chalvos! All your armor was completely destroyed. Increases all damage received by 100%. Last for 10 seconds

Crush!

Zhang Yang immediately said: “Guild master Snow, why did you not mention this debuff from Chalvos!” Zhang Yang had defeated the Mountain Giant in his previous life, but there was nothing like this debuff!

“Ah, I forgotten!” Snow Seeker apologetically covered her mouth with her tiny hands, her eyes full of genuine remorse.

Oh god, this woman will be the death of me!

This time, <Shockwave> occurred yet again during the <Stomp>. Those who had landed on their butts not a moment ago, were hit by <Shockwave> again before they could get up! The interval between the two <Shockwaves> was just around one second and the damage inflicted in total was about 6,000, instantly killing a lot of players!

Luckily, Fragrant Baby and Little Petal had ten healers continuously healing behind the two of them. With their abundant HP and equally abundant healers, they survived the ordeal! However, they missed out on so many healing opportunities! They got knocked down, and got back up, and got knocked down again! It was just like the song "Tubthumping" by Chumbawamba!

Boom!

Chalvos swung at Zhang Yang with a pillar once again.

‘<Block>!’

This time <Block> was used promptly without delay which gave Fragrant Baby and Little Petal enough time to cast healing spells.

‘+1020!’

‘+1031!’

Zhang Yang’s HP recovered up to 3,807.

“Little one, I’m going to crush your bones!” Chalvos laughed out loud, he raised the pillar and swung at Zhang Yang yet again.

Without a doubt, this time Chalvos would actually kill Zhang Yang! As Zhang Yang had a debuff, increasing all damage received by 100%, even a <Shockwave>, would cause at least 4,000 damage points to Zhang Yang. Once the tank dies, the whole team would be annihilated completely!

No wonder Crimson Rage was annihilated more than 30 times yesterday. When tanks encounter this situation, tanks would usually use lifesaving skills to buy some time. The problem was, how many times could the tank use such lifesaving skills?

Zhang Yang rolled aside once again to evade Chalvos’ attack, activating <Shield Wall> at the same time.

‘-1056!’

Terrifying! Even though Zhang Yang used <Shield Wall>, he still received at least 1,000 damage from Chalvos' attack!

‘+1021!’

‘+1029!’

Fragrant Baby and Little Petal healed Zhang Yang steadily.

Boom!

Three seconds later, Chalvos attacked once again with a pillar.

‘<Block>!’

‘+1024!’

‘+1033!’

Hu! Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief, finally, the debuff on Zhang Yang's body had expired.

However, Snow Seeker's brow was furrowed! As far as she knew, there were only two lifesaving skills for Warrior which was <Shield Wall>, used once every seven minutes, and <Berserker's Heal>, used once every two minutes. In addition to that, the

lifesteal effect of Lover's Sword could be used once every three minutes.

After going through many times of annihilation yesterday, she knew very well that Chalvos' <Collapse> occurred as frequently as every minute! Under those circumstances, the most reasonable skill sequences used by tank should be:

1 <Berserker's Heal>,

2 Lifesteal effect of Lover's Sword,

3 <Berserker's Heal>,

4 <Shield Wall>

5 <Berserker's Heal>,

6 <Lifesteal> effect of Lover's Sword,

7 <Berserker's Heal>,

If no mistakes were made in this sequence, they could actually survive for seven minutes!

Crimson Rage could roughly reduce Chalvos' HP by 14% every minute, which gave them a high chance to defeat Chalvos!

However, once <Shield Wall> is used first, they could only survive for four minutes! After four minutes, they would definitely be annihilated completely!

Certainly, this was only a theoretical scenario! In fact, if they made a slight mistake, it could cause the whole team to wipe out as well. They spent an entire day trying to defeat Chalvos, and the best record they manage was only five minutes as somewhere, somebody, or something would make a mistake, leading to the eventual collapse of the entire party!

This was why she invited Zhang Yang as their tank against Chalvos, and she was greatly impressed by Zhang Yang's tanking ability!

"Forget about it, I should be blamed as I had never mentioned the sequence, he'll figure it out himself the next time!" Snow Seeker said to himself.

99%, 98%, 97%... Although the party was huge, only about 50 players could deal damage at any given moment. Besides, they were constantly knocked down. This greatly reduced the total DPS, with most of the players only able to use four to five skills before being killed off!

10 groups of damage dealing teams lined up one after another, each team containing 50 members. It was like an assembly line of attackers, whenever the damage dealing team at front line is killed off, another damage dealing team would replace them. The dead

members would resurrect at the graveyard, recuperating. The distance between this place and graveyard was quite far, so these 10 groups of member were functioning in an endless cycle, 9 groups of member either dealt damage or were in the midst of running back after resurrecting, with only 1 group of member remaining in the graveyard to recover.

However, in this game, the durability of equipment would decrease by 10% each time a player dies. So, when a player has died ten times, then the durability of equipment would almost be gone and they would need to search for a blacksmith to fix their equipment! When each team having died more than 10 times, it would cause their damage dealing to be reduced even further, unless they have second equipment set!

A minute later, Chalvos' HP reduced by 14%.

‘<Block>!’

Zhang Yang raised his shield to withstand the pillar hurled by Chalvos towards him. <Shield Bash> immediately activated at the moment of impact.

‘-607!’

After applying 5 stacks of <Cripple Defense> on Chalvos, Zhang Yang's damage dealing skills were maximized!

Chalvos roared loudly, suddenly lifting up his giant foot to stomp

on Zhang Yang.

‘-2912!’

Zhang Yang instantly received huge damage, at the same time, once again receiving a debuff from <Collapse>!

Fragrant Baby and Little Petal were interrupted when they cast healing spell half way, they both fell flat on their backs, their skirts slipping up to reveal their pink undergarment as well as their slim, fair legs.

“Hahaha, I had fun playing with you guys!” Chalvos laughed out loud, once again knocked over with pillar!

Even if Zhang Yang evades the direct blow and merely takes damage from <Shockwave>, with a debuff increasing all damage received by 100%, and with his current remaining HP of 2,868, he could have died even if he drank a bottle of +1000 HP recovering potion!

‘<Berserker's Heal>!’

‘+5780!’

Zhang Yang instantly recovered to full HP, at the same time rolling aside to evade Chalvos’ attack.

‘-4224!’

A stupendous damage text carrying a ridiculous number floated above Zhang Yang’s head!

‘+1023!’

‘+1031!’

Fragrant Baby and Little Petal had finally cast healing spells on Zhang Yang, relieving Zhang Yang’s urgent need of HP recovery!

‘<Block>!’

‘+1025!’

‘+1037!’

Three seconds later, Zhang Yang’s <Block> cool down timed up, giving the Sacred Knights time to heal him.

‘-4224!’

The debuff of <Collapse> had finally worn off, and Zhang Yang immediately drank a bottle of health recovering potion, recovering his HP to 2,448.

They survived Chalvos' <Collapse> once again!

They continued fighting and reduced his HP.

85%, 84%, 83%... Chalvos' HP reduced at snail's pace!

After <Block>'s cool down time was amended, tanks were forced back to the ear when they needed to anticipate a boss' actions before deciding to use <Block>, otherwise, the one second duration of blocking frontal attacks from the enemy would be wasted! However, Zhang Yang started this game earlier in this life, except for him, no other Warriors ever enjoyed one-second duration of blocking frontal attack from the enemy, so it did not matter whether he used to it or not.

Still, how the <Block> was used would actually reflect the differences between an excellent tank and an ordinary tank. Zhang Yang always used <Block> just right in time without wasting a <Block>. Therefore, he also saved a lot of room for the healers to cast healing spells and subsequently reduced the possibility of the tank getting knocked down which could lead to the demise of his team!

72%! They had lasted 3 minutes!

Zhang Yang used <Block> once again to dodge Chalvos' attack. But at this moment, Chalvos lifted up his giant foot again!

'-2112!'

‘<Collapse>!’

<Shield Wall>, ready! <Berserker's Heal>, ready!

Lifesteal effect of Lover's Sword activated!

Once again, they got through the third time of Chalvos' <Collapse> thrillingly!

At the third minute, <Berserker's Heal> cooled down completely and they got through Chalvos' <Collapse> once again.

At the fourth minute, Chalvos' HP remained at 44% and the fifth occurrence of Chalvos' <Collapse> was coming!

Snow Seeker could not help but sigh. At this time, all of Zhang Yang's skills were not ready, how could he possibly survive this?

Despite her slight disappointment, she was still full of admiration towards Zhang Yang. From the beginning till now, except for Zhang Yang's skill sequence was incorrect, he performed perfectly in all aspects, he never wasted his <Block> and every round he only absorbed the damage from <Shockwave> which greatly eased the pressure for healers to perform healing!

In comparison, Crimson Rage's main tank, Little Apricot, was not that strong. First of all, her <Block> cool down time was longer

than Zhang Yang, besides, she could not successfully block frontal attacks from Chalvos every single time, nor could she reduce damage by taking the <Shockwave> instead of the direct hit. Thus, contrary to the seven minute scenario Snow Seeker had calculated, Little Apricot usually dies within two to three minutes.

Hu! Chalvos raised his giant foot and stomped on Zhang Yang once again.

‘-2912!’

Boom, stone and mud flung to the air, Fragrant Baby and Little Petal’s healing spells were interrupted and both of them fell on their bottoms!

Chalvos waved the pillar in a wide, unstoppable arc towards Zhang Yang!

Health potion! <Merlinda’s Shadow> summoned!

‘+1000!’

‘+1000!’

Zhang Yang’s HP instantly increased to 4,868!

‘-4224!’

‘+1000!’

‘+1000!’

‘+1000!’

<Merlinda’s Shadow> was impervious to all forms of damage and debuffs. She casted three healing spells and recovered Zhang Yang’s HP bar to full.

‘<Block>!’

<Merlinda’s Shadow> stayed on for 10 seconds, so they easily got through Chalvos’ <Collapse>!

“Zhan Yu, what skill is this?” Snow Seeker gawked with her eyes wide open. She was not the only one. The rest of the members were shocked at both Merlinda’s great healing spells and her plump bosom!

“Hehe, secret! It is a secret!” It was better not to reveal his trump card. Zhang Yang immediately smiled and said.

“Stingy!” Thorny Rose said angrily.

“It doesn’t matter if I’m being stingy or generous, it’s as long as we can fight against Chalvos!” Zhang Yang replied Thorny Rose.

I don't owe you anything and you are always trying to get on my nerves, if I really got angry someday, I'm going to mark you with a circle and cross!

Thorny Rose could not help but stare down at her chest, the corner of her mouth twitched a little!

Chapter 135: Loot distribution

... The fifth minute, Zhang Yang activated <Berserker's Heal>.

... The sixth minute, the Lover's Sword <Lifesteal> was activated!

... The seventh minute, once again <Berserker's Heal> was activated!

3%!

Chalvos had 150,000 HP remaining! After getting through the latest Chalvos' <Collapse>, the whole team broke out in cheers, with victory in sight!

2%!

1%!

There was a sudden change! Chalvos' body released a red aura, his grayish white colour body turning into bloody red colour.

'Ding! Chalvos is enraged! All damage increases by 200%!'

"F*ck!" Zhang Yang scolded, this Chalvos had such a violent death throe! He was planning to drag Zhang Yang along!

Fortunately... <Shield Wall> was ready once again!

<Shield Wall> activated!

‘-1728!’ A huge damage text floated above Zhang Yang’s head.

All around, every member who stood within 30 meters away from Chalvos instantly died as ‘-9000’ damage texts popped up on their heads.

Fragrant Baby and Little Petal responded quickly, activating <Sacred Protection> simultaneously like synchronized divers. Two semi-transparent, golden hued barriers surrounded them. They were now immune to all sorts of damage and debuffs but their healing effect was now reduced by 50%!

‘+502!’

‘+512!’

The next damage dealing team in line immediately moved up, replacing the dead team.

However, the range of Chalvos’ <Shockwave> was 35 meters. They needed to run 5 meters in to strike Chalvos. Hunters with high Dexterity attributes could make it less than a second but Spellcasters needed at least one to two seconds to make it. They also they required a casting time in order to deal any damage, and if they came in at the wrong time, they would be killed before

dealing any damage!

After Chalvos performed another cycle of AoE attack, the second group of damage dealing team were all annihilated once again while the first group of damage dealing team had only just resurrected and were recuperating. The group prior to that had just reached the end of the damage dealing queue. Snow Seeker hurriedly commanded the freshly killed team to start heading to the fight immediately. There was no point in recuperating any longer. With Chalvos killing them all with a single hit, there would be no difference between 1 HP and full HP anymore!

During this time, Chalvos still retained 29,000 HP!

Three seconds later, the latest attackers had reduced Chalvos' HP to 20,000 but were also wiped out in the process!

Fragrant Baby and Little Petal died after their <Sacred Protection> effect ended.

The fight went on, and Chalvos was barely alive, at 9,000 HP

However, there were no attackers around! They had been killed faster than they could return to the fight, with the closest team 15 seconds away.

Snow Seeker anxiously yelled, "All healers come forward and use spells to attack!" Because it was pointless to keep the healers at this moment, it was better than nothing if they could cause even 100

points of damage!

The field instantly became a very gory scene, with Sacred Knights and Priests moving forward one after another. They could only use a <Punishment Ray> or a <Sacred Blast> before they died screaming.

Chalvos still had 3000HP remaining.

‘<Shield Wall> ended!’

[Servant: Clear Lotus] was summoned and Zhang Yang activated <Substitute>.

‘Immune!’

‘-9000!’

Although Zhang Yang had evaded the pillar itself, the <Shockwave> still came for him and Clear Lotus was needed to take that damage. As soon as she died, the invincibility quickly ended.

But Zhang Yang had just bought himself another 3 seconds to strike the boss!

‘-1575! <Horizontal Sweep>’

‘-845! Normal Attack.’

‘-821! <Force Strike>!’

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Chalvos! Obtained 416,717 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

‘Bang!’

Chalvos the giant’s corpse crashed onto the ground and the battle had come to an end!

Hu! Zhang Yang’s heart nearly leaped out from his chest, that was way too close!

“We have killed Chalvos the giant!” Less than ten survivors cheered in excitement.

After a while, everyone had regrouped, the huge lady army fully assembled again.

The atmosphere was truly joyous, with all the girls were dancing and hugging each other, and Zhang Yang was dragged into the crowd, pelted with kisses and assaulted with hugs. His anti-harassment system alarm went off like sirens! At this point, ‘God’s Miracle’ had programmed it with equality in mind, so that both female and male players were protected by the anti-harassment system!

This gang of perverted girls!

Zhang Yang could not help but cry. He has not kissed anyone since his rebirth, and here he was, having his first, second, third and hundredth kiss robbed from him!

However, this event was indeed a good cause for such excitement! It may have only taken seven or eight minutes, but every second was as tense as anything else could ever be. A single careless mistake could have killed off their entire team! The lady army of Crimson Rage really couldn't restrain themselves, having been stomped on by Chavlos the giant for an entire day previously!

Perfumed Water looked at Zhang Yang, smiled and said: "How is it, our sisters are really lively aren't they! Would you like to join us?"

Zhang Yang laughed loudly and said: "Crimson Rage welcomes male players as well?"

"If it is someone else, of course not! But you Zhan Yu, I can make an exception for you and give you a title as the head of eunuchs!" After defeating Chavlos, even Snow Seeker visibly loosened up, joking with Zhang Yang casually.

Faced with these cruel and violent ladies, Zhang Yang hurriedly said, "Alright, alright, let's loot from the giant! I can hardly wait for my loot!"

“Tch!” Thorny Rose pursed her lips and said, “Look at those sneaky eyes of yours, we are women, we always keep our word unlike you guys who cheat on women and always hide your true intentions!”

This woman must have been dumped by men more than hundred times. It was the only way her resentment could be explained! Zhang Yang was slightly annoyed at how she ruined the mood. “Guild master Snow, I do not want anything else, I simply want this woman as my servant!”

Thorny Rose stood up proudly, proclaiming, “You damn liar, can you even afford me?”

Snow Seeker, however said with a deadpan expression, “Zhan Yu could indeed afford you! Did you think about how he sold plenty of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potions] on previous days? He could have at least earned 10,000,000 to 20,000,000!”

“Sister Snow, how can you help the outsider?!” Thorny Rose shrieked, hugging Snow Seeker, causing her bosom to squish against Snow Seeker’s own plump bosom. The scene would have given any other men a nosebleed!

Zhang Yang did not share Fatty Han’s dream to have many girlfriends and set up a huge harem. But this did not mean that he could not admire pretty girls throughout his life. Faced with this hot-blooded scene, he definitely could not act like a gentleman, who would politely look away, but instead crossed his hands and

stared directly at them.

Thorny Rose had thought of making a fool out of Zhang Yang, but she never thought that Zhang Yang would look at them so blatantly, so she was greatly disappointed and released Snow Seeker, rolling her eyes.

“Sister Snow, loot Chalvos’ corpse. We worked so hard to defeat Chalvos, it just has to reward us fairly!” All the girls said together.

“Okay, okay, don’t yell at me. I’ll go deaf from all of you!”

“Sister Snow, the technology is developed nowadays, hymens could be replaced, your eardrums are no big deal!”

Zhang Yang felt cold sweat streaming down his head, these women were dangerous!

Finally, Snow Seeker looted Chalvos’ corpse. Because she used Leader’s Distribution Mode, she had to post each of the loots one by one.

[Salamander Battle Armor] (Green-Copper, Armor)

Defense: +10

Strength: +48

Vitality: +24

Dexterity: +8

Level Requirement: 40

“Ah, guild master Zhan Yu, why don’t you take this equipment? It’s for Level 40s and is definitely the first equipment of it’s type in this game!” Snow Seeker smiled and said.

“Pass! Pass!” Zhang Yang hurriedly said.

[Stone Skin Boots] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor)

Defense: +6

Strength: +40

Vitality: +8

Dexterity: +32

Level Requirement: 40

“Guild master Zhan Yu, what do you think of equipment?”

[Chalvos Nose Ring] (Green-Copper, Necklace)

Strength: +10

Dexterity: +10

Level Requirement: 40

“Guild master Zhan Yu, what do you think of equipment?”

Snow Seeker incessantly posted seven to eight pieces of Green-Copper equipment together with their attributes continuously.

“Sister Snow, you are really bad!”

All of the girls were laughing hysterically.

Finally, Snow Seeker entered her businesswoman-like demeanor and posted a few pieces of decent equipment.

[Bloody Chestplate] (Gray-Silver, Armor)

Defense: +20

Strength: +96

Vitality: +48

Dexterity: +16

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 40

[Heavy Stone Shield] (Gray-Silver, Shield)

Defense: +400

Strength: +160

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 40

Only these two pieces of equipment were applicable for Zhang Yang, but due to the new version's update, special effects and sockets would only be revealed after being identified by an Item Binder, so he could not know all the attributes of the equipment.

“That’s all? Are you serious?! Equipment is not the most important loot from open world boss, but valuable skill books are!” Zhang Yang looked at Snow Seeker.

Snow Seeker could not help but shook her head and said, “Can’t you just be dumb for once?!”

Zhang Yang laughed, “If I was dumb even for this instance, then I shall suffer a big loss!”

“There’s always something to be won from losing, I’m sure some famous author actually said that before, right?” Snow Seeker smiled and said.

Nevertheless, she did as he said.

[Skill Book: Slice and Dice]

Use: You will grant <Slice and Dice>.

Class Requirement: Thief

Level Requirement: 30

[Skill Book: Deep Wound]

Use: You will grant <Deep Wound>

Class Requirement: Warrior and Knight

Level Requirement: 30

[Servant: Mountain Giant] (Copper-Tier Servant)

Use: Summons a Mountain Giant to fight for you and lasts for 5 minutes. You can only summon a servant at the same time. If you summon any other servants then all servants will undergo the same cool down timer. Cool down time: 60 minutes.

Level Requirement: 40

“That’s it?” Zhang Yang asked.

Snow Seeker smiled forcedly and said, “There’s really nothing else!”

Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, “Then I want the [Skill Book: Deep Wound]!”

“Zhan Yu, you have enough power already, give this [Skill Book: Deep Wound] to our Little Apricot!” Perfumed Water said and pushed Little Apricot to the front. Little Apricot was a pretty girl with sweet lips and slim long legs, “Ah, well. How about Little Apricot giving you a kiss for it!”

“Nope, nope! No kisses. I just want that skill book!” Zhang Yang said hurriedly.

Perfumed Water shook her head and said: “Sigh, you hurt our Little Apricot’s heart!”

Snow Seeker saw that Zhang Yang had already made up his mind, and so, she gave the [Skill Book: Deep Wound] to him and kept the rest of the loot into her inventory. How they distributed the loots among themselves was none of Zhang Yang’s business.

“Guild master Zhan Yu, happy working with you!” Snow Seeker reached out her tiny hands towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang did a handshake with Snow Seeker, smiled and said: “If there are any good tasks like that in future, you are more than welcome to find me! I also hope that Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage could form an offensive and defensive alliance and together become famous in ‘God’s Miracle’!”

“He he, we also thought of forming an alliance with Lone Desert Smoke!”

“Then, I’ll take my leave first!”

“Bye bye!”

Zhang Yang left the team and tore off [Teleportation Scroll] before the eyes of violent and cruel lady army, he was promptly teleported back to White Jade Castle.

Chapter 136: Hammer Heart Castle

Zhang Yang returned to White Jade Castle, where he took out [Skill Book: Deep Wound] and laughed heartily. He patted the skill book against his body and gained <Deep Wound>.

<Deep Wound> (Passive): After a successful critical attack, inflicts an additional 30% melee damage as bleeding damage. Lasts for 6 seconds.

This was a good passive skill, as long as any attack hits critically, <Deep Wound> would be activated automatically! Although 30% melee damage did not seem much, this was a free skill book and bleeding damage was unaffected by Defense.

Certainly, anything that ignored defense was kind of pointless for Zhang Yang who already had <Eagle Eye>. But in a battle arena, other than a tank versus tank scenario, otherwise, he would not have enough time to stack the effects of <Cripple Defense>, so the effect of bleed would be very practical in this kind of situation.

Zhang Yang did not fight Chalvos for long, but wasted a lot of time on the journey to Bison's Hill itself, so he had actually been away for an hour. Zhang Yang thought about it for a while, and took out [Bow of the Fallen Moon] from his inventory and decided to complete the quest of “Remnant” by sending the Dwarves’ celestial item back to Hammer Heart Castle.

Hammer Heart Castle was far away from White Jade Castle and

Zhang Yang needed to get through two training map rated to be over level 30. Hammer Heart Castle was located on the Sivar Hills in the Land of the Red Cloud.

Zhang Yang could not take a Gryphon to reach Hammer Heart Castle directly. Instead, he needed to reach Gutan Town in the Land of the Red Cloud before walking to Sivar Hills and finally arriving at Hammer Heart Castle.

After making payment, Zhang Yang sat on Gryphon and he reached Gutan Town after an hour. This journey made him bored and sleepy as besides chatting, players were not allowed to do anything, even if it was making potions, when they were taking the Gryphon.

Zhang Yang came down from Gryphon and summoned [Skeletal War Horse]. Once he mounted it, this impressive war horse immediately reared on its rear hooves and began to rush forward quickly.

Although the training map in the Land of the Red Cloud was kind of far away, Zhang Yang could still see a few players were training in this training map. Once they saw Zhang Yang's impressive mount, they could not help but stare at his war horse in envy.

The monsters in the Land of the Red Cloud ranged from Level 30 to Level 39, but Zhang Yang's level was just 31, so he attracted many Level 35 monsters' aggro and those monsters chased behind him. However, the [Skeletal War Horse] increased 300% player's movement speed, so those monsters were unable to catch up to Zhang Yang. After they chased Zhang Yang a distance, they went

back to their spawning point when the aggro went out of range.

After another 40 minutes of galloping, Zhang Yang finally arrived at Hammer Heart Castle which was well-built, unsurprising for the Dwarves.

The castle was huge but it had only three levels, unlike human castles which were designed to be as high as at least ten levels. The castle was not high but covered a wide area which gave a stout, solid feeling. The shape of the castle was similar to a Dwarf's body shape, stocky and thick.

Dwarves' city defense was unlike human castle which was surrounded by moats and natural hazardous terrains, there was no moat or drawbridge surrounding the main entrance of Hammer Heart Castle but generously opened up their two huge iron gates with eight Dwarf Warriors patrolling forth and back. When Zhang Yang looked carefully, it was Level 60 Elites, who could probably kill the best players at the moment with a single blow.

However, this did not mean that defense of Hammer Heart Castle was lacking in any other manner, as they had placed cannons on their castle's wall! These cannons could cause a lot of damage with a single shot.

It was said that Dwarves loved to dig into the ground so they actually found a stone relic from many years ago which gave them many advanced technologies! In addition to that, Dwarves were the outstanding smiths, thus, they created cannons, and ballistae and several other siege engines.

“Stop there, this is the domain of Dwarves and you are not allowed to trespass on our domain!” Zhang Yang’s path was blocked by the eight Elite guards at the entrance of Hammer Heart Castle.

Zhang Yang had no intention of provoking the guards, even if they spat on him. No even Zhang Yang would be able to fight against eight Level 60 Elites!

He removed his [Skeletal War Horse] mount earnestly, before walking forward and saying: “I’m the Union’s adventurer, I was ordered by Barga – The Mead come to Hammer Heart Castle to send his remnant!”

“What? Lord Barga!”

“Didn’t he die in a war twenty years ago?!”

Eight Dwarf guards instantly whispered and discussed with each other.

After a while, one of the Dwarf guards said: “Warrior, Lord Barga already died twenty years ago and you look like you’re barely 20, how could Lord Barga entrust a baby to complete his testament?! Hahaha!”

The Dwarves laughed together.

Gaining entry wasn't going to be easy.

Zhang Yang took out the [Bow of the Fallen Moon] from his inventory. He held it with one hand and said: "Barga definitely died long time ago, but his soul was not destroyed. So I met his soul, and he passed me the Dwarves' celestial item and entrusted me to pass it to his son, Sith - The Mead!"

"This... this is 'Bow of the Fallen Moon'?"

"One of the seven sanctified items, 'Bow of the Fallen Moon'?"

"Oh god, I can feel the life force of the Great Sage Smith on this 'Bow of the Fallen Moon'! That's right, this sanctified equipment can only be created by our Dwarves' Great Smith!"

The eight Dwarf guards bowed respectfully as one.

"Young warrior, please forgive our previous impudence! You have brought back our long lost treasure, you are as good as any honoured guest and friend! Please follow me, and I will lead you to meet Lord Markan!"

One of the Dwarf guards bowed to Zhang Yang and that sudden change in demeanour somehow pleased Zhang Yang. They were not all too different from humans after all.

That Dwarven guard led the way at front and brought Zhang Yang into their castle. After walking through a few corridors, he

followed the staircases and moved towards third floor.

Along the way, Zhang Yang saw several Dwarven women and children. The Dwarves stared at this human, strange looks on their faces. If Zhang Yang had not been escorted by Dwarf guards, he guessed that these Dwarf NPCs would have attacked him already.

Although the four races formed the Union to fight against the invasion of demons and specters. However, this did not mean that the four races were close to each other like family! In fact, before demons and specters became a disaster, these four races fought against each other for dominance over the land. They had no choice but to form the Union as they were defeated miserably by demons and specters.

Zhang Yang came to third floor, and the Dwarf guard leading Zhang Yang stopped in front of a stone room. That Dwarf guard announced in a low voice in obvious reverence of the occupant, “Lord Markan, there is a human adventurer here. He has brought us the [Bow of the Fallen Moon] and said it was Lord Barge – The Mead’s testament!”

Clack!

The door of that stone room opened immediately. A male Dwarf with red hair and red beard walked from that stone room, his long beard, tied up in several braids, reaching his crotch.

[The Great Smith Markan, Leader of the Hammer Heart

Castle] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: ???

The HP of a Yellow-Gold Chief NPC was not visible!

“Young warrior, welcome to Hammer Heart Castle. I thank you for your great effort! Please rest, we will hold a banquet for you later and will eagerly be awaiting your tale!” Markan spoke warmly.

Zhang Yang replied hurriedly: “Lord Markan, I was merely entrusted by Barga – The Mead, to send the [Bow of the Fallen Moon] to his son, Sith - The Mead. Please allow me to fulfill my promise towards the deceased!”

Markan revealed a trace of smile on his face and said: “Young warrior, you have a noble heart! Alright, Tumar, lead our noble guest to meet Sith!”

“Yes, Lord Markan!” That Dwarf guard bowed to Markan.

Markan went into the stone room once again. Zhang Yang followed that Dwarf guard and went all the way down to the basement.

Dwarves were inborn with a passion to dig, and dig, and dig, and thus, they constructed more buildings underground than they did above ground! From the outside, this Hammer Heart Castle was only three storeys tall. In fact, it had five levels of basements! They stopped at the forth level.

The three levels above the ground were the living quarters for Dwarves, while the five levels underground was the workplace for Dwarves and many Dwarf smiths were making items with their hammers underground.

That Dwarf guard led Zhang Yang to the front of a young male Dwarf and said: “Sith The Smith, there is a noble guest would like to meet you!”

That young male Dwarf was designing some sort of blueprint. He heard what that Dwarf guard said, he turned around and said: “Eh, who is that?”

[Sith The Smith - The Mead] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 40

HP: 4,000

Zhang Yang strode forward and said: “Mr Sith, my name is Zhan

Yu, I'm an adventurer from White Jade Castle! I have explored Misty Valley and I accidentally found your father's soul who entrusted me with his will to send [Bow of the Fallen Moon] which is the Dwarves' holy equipment to you!"

"What? My father's testament!" Sith showed a puzzled facial expression.

After a moment only he said: "Respectful warrior, please follow me, I would like to know everything in detail!"

F*ck, I'm still not allowed to complete the quest directly!

Zhang Yang had no choice but followed Sith and went back to castle's third floor before entering a house. That Dwarf guard went back to his post at the castle's entrance, having completing his task.

Sith poured a glass of wine for Zhang Yang and said: "Respectful warrior, please tell me, how did my father die?"

Dwarves loved wine, wine was their most common beverage, and serving it was the same as how humans served their guests with tea.

Zhang Yang took out [Bow of the Fallen Moon] and put on the table then said: "Your father was turned into a specter by Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar. But with the protection of 'Bow of the Fallen Moon', his soul was not completely controlled by Evil

Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar. Thus, he able to pass me [Bow of the Fallen Moon] and entrusted me to send it to you!”

“Thank you...” Sith immediately stood up and bowed to Zhang Yang.

“Ding! You have completed the quest: Remnant. Gained 50,000 Experience points!”

F*ck, I travelled such a long way but gained only 50,000 Experience points? If he had known this earlier, he would not come for this trip! Zhang Yang could not help but regretted.

Sith picked up [Bow of the Fallen Moon] on the table, gently touched the bow with an loving expression, clearly cherishing his father’s memory, “My father was a great archer among the Dwarves since he was young. Hence, the King bestowed him ‘Bow of the Fallen Moon’ and let him use this celestial equipment!”

Eh, there is a subsequent quest?

Zhang Yang was about to tear up a [Teleportation Scroll] but he when heard what Sith said, so he stopped and observed the situation.

“My father...” Just as Sith begun speaking, a single tendril of dark light burst out from the [Bow of the Fallen Moon] and skewered his body!

“Ah!”

Sith suddenly uttered a roar like an earthquake!

Chapter 137: One Against Twenty Four

There has been a situation!

Sith opened up his arms, the skin exposed from the clothes were like waves of water, trembling up and down continuously! His face was full of agony and his pair of coffee-brown eyeballs were emitting an evil aura that provoked evil thoughts just by the sight of it.

“Sha Sha Sha... I, Terpot Ryhar will be back, for sure!”

Sith spoke out in a low and husky voice before... ‘thud’, collapsing onto the ground facing up at the sky.

Oh f*ck, an evil spiritual possession had just happened!

Gong...

The door was knocked open, with about 10 dwarf guards charging in. Every one of them were staring at Zhang Yang with their angry eyes, pointing their wielded weapons towards Zhang Yang.

“You sly human bastard, how dare you use trickery to enter our castle with the purpose to ruin our kind?!”

“Kill him!”

“Kill him!”

“Kill him!”

The rage was fiery among the crowd, with everyone gritting their teeth together, seemingly wanting to crush and burn Zhang Yang into ashes.

Zhang Yang quickly raised his both hands up and said, “This was not my doing!” It seemed like he had triggered a new quest.

“Halt!” an impressive and dignified voice came from afar, and every dwarf in the room obediently put away the weapons. They opened out a path in between them, paying their respects to a red hair dwarf with a red beard; The Great Smith Markan.

“A very strong evil force!” Markan stopped by Sith’s side, examined him thoroughly and said, “Sith’s soul is being engulfed by an evil force as we speak, his body is also turning into one of the undead in a slow manner!”

Hearing such words, the Dwarves were even more enraged, pulling their weapons out again.

“I believe, this young man has a pure and noble soul, he would never be capable of such things!” Markan tried to back Zhang Yang up.

“But Sir Markan, why did something happened to Sith the moment he came? Besides, only two of them were in the room!”

“That’s right, it must be him setting Sith up with his poisonous hands!”

“You fiend, release Sith of your witchcraft at once!”

Zhang Yang sighed and said, “The evil sorcerer who corrupted Barga’s soul has infused his evil force into the Bow of the Fallen Moon, I think. He was just simply waiting for me to pass the bow to Sith, letting the evil forces infest onto Sith’s body, leading to this transformation!”

Markan picked the Bow of the Fallen Moon up from Sith’s hand, looked at it for a good while and said, “That’s right, for it is real, the relic still contains a sense of evil force in it!”

Zhang Yang spread out both of his hands and said. “Now, that proves me to be innocent, right?” As of just now, he tried to use a teleporting scroll, but the system hinted him that the item was temporary unavailable!

Markan pondered for a moment, then he said, “Even if this was not your intention in the first place, but it was definitely because of the thing you brought, Sith has to suffer this way! So, you must save him, get him back!”

The old fellow was such a sly. What was sent back was one of the

relics of the Dwarves, but now he intend to cover it up rashly with the word ‘the thing you brought’ to omit the credits by bringing up the matter about wounding one of his! So, there would always be old sly people, even among simple Dwarves!

Zhang Yang said, “But I am not a Priest, nor a Sacred Knight, I have nothing to disperse evil spell!”

Markan pondered for a while again, and said, “Deep in the mountains of Sivar Hills, there is a Fountain of Soul. Drinking the water from the fountain can disperse any evil spells! Young warrior, acquire the water from the Fountain of Soul to me, I beg of you, to save Sith!”

‘Ding! You accepted a quest: Fountain of Soul! The quest cannot be deleted, before the quest is completed, you will be affected by the effect of the ‘Dwarf’s Warning’!’

[Dwarf’s Warning]: You are burdened with a dwarf’s life, go save him quickly! In this period of time, you are forbidden to use any teleportation equipment, entering any main cities will result in banishment!

This was just too ruthless!

Zhang Yang opened up his quest list to check on the description of the quest.



[Fountain of Soul] (Quest: S-rank)

Description: Acquire the Fountain of Soul, return back to save Sith The Smith - The Mead!

Completion: Acquired Fountain of Soul 0/1

“The Fountain of Soul is a relic of the Centaur Tribe, a fine rare one. It is not easy to acquire the Fountain of Soul from their hands! Centaurs are cruel and aggressive tribe, young warrior, you must be extra careful on this!” Markan continued to say.

Zhang Yang tried to ask, “Master Markan, to be able to treat and cure Sith as soon as possible, can you spare some men for me to the way to acquire the fountain?”

Marken shook his head, then he spoke, “The relationship between the Centaur and the Dwarves have been tense over the time, and if our men happen to enter their territory, that would only mean war, and things will eventually get of hand!”

Player, to be tossed around; it was fated so!

“Quickly go and return, I will have a priest to slow down the irruption of the evil force into Sith with best effort, but time is of short!” Markan waved his hands, commanding the Dwarves to give way for Zhang Yang to take leave.

Zhang Yang left the Hammer Heart Castle. He summoned his Skeletal War Horse and advanced deep into the mountain forest.

Carrying the effect of the 'Dwarf's Warning' on him while having the limitation to never return to any main cities, he could only choose to complete the mission at hand.

Riding on a horse alone in the mountain forest, with only knowledge on the quest saying that the sacred fountain was deep within the mountains, without any specific coordinates given, he could only explore the mountain forest aimlessly like a headless fly, turning around at every corner within his sight.

After for about an hour, no fountain was sighted; only a large number of monsters were attracted instead. Since he was unoccupied at the moment, Zhang Yang kept his battle horse aside by a mountain wall and cleared out all the monsters on his ass. By doing so, he acquired a large amount of experience points and two additional black-steel equipment pieces.

Looking at the time, it was already 1 in the afternoon. So, Zhang Yang hustled down from the server for lunch.

After a cup of hot tea and a moment of good rest, Zhang Yang reconnected onto the server and continued his search for the sacred fountain.

Another half an hour or more has passed, and Zhang Yang had finally passed through the forest, but what he saw in front of him was a scene of big battle.

Over 20 players or more were besieging a huge grizzly bear, about 7 melee combatants, 5 hunters, 8 mages, and 4 healers in additional. It was obvious that they were in the same guild, wearing the title 'Pride' above their heads.

Although the besieged grizzly bear was a boss, but its HP was almost depleted out, with only 20% remaining at the looks of it.

[Frantic Bear King] (Green-Copper, Beast)

Level: 34

HP: 120,000

Among the people of 'Pride' guild, there was one player who did not engage in the battle. Instead, he had both of his hands behind his back, looking like a superior that gave commands to the crowd.

[Player: Floating Fire Ball] (Pyromancer)

Level: 30

HP: 3,600

For a moment there, Zhang Yang could not help himself but to let a murderous sight escape through his eyes!

To secure his place in the first of the ranking list, this guy actually sent his underlings to murder those players before him! Fatty Han was pushed back a level because of him, furthermore, he also hired that trash 44 Bandits to assassinate Zhang Yang. But regrettably instead, 44 Bandits was brutally f*cked in the ass by Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang had long wanted to give him the dose of his own medicine, but since Floating Fire Ball was extremely afraid of dying, he would bring a large number of players along with him every time he went out for training, and the locations he went would also stay confidential. Zhang Yang did put all his focus on the dungeons and making money in his first phase in the game, with no time at all to free up his hands for taking him on.

Now this coincidence was just convenient!

Riding strategically on his horse, Zhang Yang charged towards Floating Fire Ball under high speed.

Thud thud thud, the Skeletal War Horse had an unusual speed when it came to running, so when Floating Fire Ball heard the sound and turned over to see, Zhang Yang was just less than 10 meters away from him!

Charge!

Zhang Yang instantly dispatched himself off the horse, rushed over like a lightning bolt.

Floating Fire Ball was struck into a state of unconsciousness.

With the summoning of his servant [Clear Lotus], Zhang Yang struck out his sword, slashing it at Floating Fire Ball, at the same instant, triggering his <Blood Rage>, causing his rage point to rush up to 67 points in just an instant!

‘778!’ Regular attack.

‘1,680!’ <Destructive Smash>.

‘812!’ <Force Strike>.

At the same time, [Clear Lotus] also dealt a series of damages on Floating Fire Ball from behind with her continuous strike from her dagger.

‘-273!’, ‘-66!’, ‘-430!’

“Argh!” Those instant explosive high valued damages on Floating Fire Ball gave him no time to react at all, instantly got him killed in the state of his unconsciousness!

Crying out in misery, he dropped a piece of silver shiny equipment and turned into a soul ready to report himself to the graveyard.

Zhang Yang had quick eyes and agile hands, reaching out his hands for a scoop and obtained the equipment into his hand. But it was just a Level 20 Gray-Silver set's Mage Chestplate!

At this moment, only the other members of the 'Pride' guild managed to react to the situation. Other than a tank keeping the boss occupied and another mage healing the tank, all other members were aiming their assaults toward Zhang Yang.

Floating Fire Ball was furiously barking in the team channel as well, "F*ck this sh*t, kill him for me! Kill him! It wasn't easy for me to reach Level 30 with 89% experience point, now I'm being pushed back by this f*cker all the way back to 0% experience points! He also wasted my equipment set clothes that I bought for 3,000 gold!"

With a cold grin on his face and a stomp onto the ground, he activated his skill <Thunder Strike>, instantly slowing 6 of the charging melee combatants. With a wave in the [Lover's Sword] in his hand, he performed a <Horizontal Sweep>, instantly dealing 6 '1,500+' high damages, hitting off at least half of the HP bar of six players respectively!

The servant [Clear Lotus], on the other hand, used <Shadow Walk> to appear at the back of the priest who was healing the tank

from aside, and started her ferocious attack onto the healer.

Pak! Pak! Pak!

A ranged mage and a hunter attacked heavily over, inconsistent numerical symbols such as ‘-600’, ‘-200’ that instantly floated up on the body of Zhang Yang. The high damage value was coming from the attack of the mage, and because hunter’s attacks were physical, and they were reduced by the protective armor, therefore giving lesser damage values.

So, that concluded that mages were the worst enemies of the roughened skin and thickened flesh, the Guardians!

8 mages launched a volley assault together with another 5 Hunters that caused about 5,500 of damage, which nearly emptied out Zhang Yang’s HP bar within seconds!

<Shield Wall>! <Merlinda’s Shadow>!

Zhang Yang was so light on his feet, he had already rushed into the long-ranged camp of the ‘Pride’ guild, instantly beginning his epic slaughtering!

With the <Shield Wall> in effect, the amount of HP Zhang Yang was losing mattered so little that he ignored it, and under the healing of <Shadow of Merlinda>, his health bar recovered back to full swiftly!

On the other hand, the servant [Clear Lotus] had already handled the priest!

One should know, the servant [Clear Lotus] was Silver-grade, her attack was on par with a Level 36 player wearing Level 30 Green-Copper equipment set. Meanwhile, the priest was only Level 29 wearing a full Level 20 Green-Copper equipment set, with a HP bar that did not exceed 2,400. So, how could he take all the ravages from [Clear Lotus]? He could only hold up for 8 to 9 seconds, and it would be the end for him after.

Once the priest died, the tank could not hold up longer than a few more seconds! The boss instantly switched his aggro onto the mages of the 'Pride', with a loud roar of "Aow!"

Unexpectedly, the boss knew how to charge! With a strike on a mage, a wave of its paw, the boss swung and created a series of blur, and it was a range attributed attack! Immediately, the HP bars of the mage and a hunter around him were knocked off by approximately 1,500 points.

The members of the 'Pride' were miserably screaming, for they did not know for a moment whether to get rid of the boss with little HP left or to attack Zhang Yang who had just restored his HP bar back to full.

Chapter 138: Escort Mission

<Destructive Smash> cool down was complete. Zhang Yang immediately used <Destructive Smash>, followed by a <Force Strike> on one of the mages, dealing two damages of ‘-1,680’, ‘-821’ respectively, sending the players to the afterlife in seconds!

[Clear Lotus] drifted back, under the command of Zhang Yang, and then she wildly unleashed her assaults onto the members of the ‘Pride’ inside out!

“Take out Zhan Yu first!”

The members of ‘Pride’ had finally come back to their senses and reacted. After all, the boss was just an NPC controlled by a computer (artificial intelligence), with limited IQ. As long as the tank returned, the problem could be solved easily! But it was different when it came to players, as players would exploit the softest spot before stabbing in!

Zhang Yang laughed loudly, and he said, “You guys are taking neither of us out!”

<Thunder Strike>, slow down movement speed!

<Horizontal Sweep>!

‘-1,578!’

‘-1,627!’

‘- 3,360!’

‘-1,611!’

‘...’

A dozen of horrifying damage values fluttered on each of the players, with two of them as critical hits! Even before the effect of <Deep Wound> could trigger, the two members were instantly smashed into waste products!

The melee combatants of the ‘Pride’ had Zhang Yang rounded up, while the remaining 18 players that were still alive unleashed their attacks at him one after another. With their skills disorderly spammed, it would be unbelievable that so many players could not do the justice in killing one player!

<Substitute> skill activated!

Zhang Yang immediately escaped the controlled situation, descending into the state of 5-second invincibility. The [Lover’s Sword] emitted a cold flashing aura. It was like a grim reaper frantically harvesting the lives of the players!

While on the other side, the Berserk Bear King did not go soft on them at all, waving its wrathful claws, landing it onto 3 different targets at the same time, dealing a basic damage of 1,500, give or

take. When it came to a non-tanking class without any skills that decreased or avoided damages while not being, all it took for the boss to kill off the players were 2 aggressive attacks!

The 5-second invincibility ended, but the number of the ‘Pride’ members had been drastically decreased to only 11 people, with their magic-type players all gone, leaving 7 melee combatants and 4 Hunters behind!

“Sun of the beach, this b*tch’s damage output is terrifying!”

“Heal? Someone please support me with some HP recovery!”

“There’s no way we could fight anymore, one Zhang Yu is already hard enough, and there is a boss creating disturbance at aside!”

The members of the ‘Pride’ were screaming their miserable lungs out.

‘Pride’ guild was not a large guild in the gaming world, and there was not much master-level players around, with Floating Fire Ball more concerned with training instead of clearing dungeons. Because for him, equipment could be bought with money, but him being rich did not mean that his underlings would be rich too. Most of the members only had Level-20 Green-Copper grade equipment, while only a small number of them had a few pieces of Level-30 Green-Copper equipment.

As for the Gray-Silver equipment pieces? Sorry, there was no way for an ordinary level guild to roll against Marzerway in Hardcore Mode!

According to the setting of 'God's Miracle', in Normal Mode, players around Level 10 could perform a raid, and those at least Level 20 were be eligible to challenge Hard Mode, and lastly, the Hardcore Mode required players to be Level 30 or higher!

Players around Level 30 wearing Level 20 Green-Copper equipment with about 2,500 HP without equipping a shield were totally incomparable to Zhang Yang or the boss, no matter what!

Just like a whirlwind sweeping away some scattered clouds, Zhang Yang and the boss joined together to dispose of the remaining 11 players of the 'Pride', like tearing away some withered stumps.

However, the moment all members of the 'Pride' were taken care of, the boss navigated its aggro onto Zhang Yang.

"Ouw!" Berserk Bear King let out a furious roar, waving its huge paw, slamming towards Zhang Yang.

<Block>!

With a lift of his shield, Zhang Yang sheltered himself from the attack. But the impact was so strong that it pushed him 3 to 4 steps backward before he could regain his stance!

The presence of the knock back effect only meant that the strength that the Berserk Bear King had was so much stronger than Zhang Yang's!

‘-274!’ Deflected damage.

With a grin on his face, Zhang Yang said, “You stupid ungrateful piece of bear! I took care of those people for you, and you are trying to kill me instead of thanking me! Sigh, being a nice person is really a mistake, after all I have done, I only get a bite in return, no wonder there are lesser nice people around in this year!”

‘-1,154!’ <Shield Bash>, critical!

Instantly, the body of the Berserk Bear King was added with a negative effect, <Bleeding>, causing a damage value of ‘-79’ to pop out once in every 2 seconds.

The battle must be ended quickly as his powerful skills drained him of his stamina quite enough. If the members of the ‘Pride’ happened to revive themselves at the moment, even he could not bear it!

After all, their equipment pieces were only 1 level different from each another. If he has his skills at ready, Zhang Yang could roll with it again. But once <Shield Wall> and <Substitute> were on cool down time, even Zhang Yang cannot underestimate a party with 20+ members in it!

Berserk Bear King has only 20,000 HP left in the bar. Under the joint attacks of Zhang Yang and [Clear Lotus], the boss could only last for 20 seconds more. With the <Lifesteal> effect also in play with the Lover's Sword, Zhang Yang eventually took out the boss!

After picking up the loots from the boss and the equipment dropped from the members of the 'Pride' in a quick manner, Zhang Yang summoned his war horse and left the spot, leaving the 'Pride' people to their sulking.

About 7 or 8 minutes later, curses coming from the 'Pride' people started to appear in the regional channels. Zhang Yang smiled at it; only incompetent people would rely on cursing to make a scene for themselves.

Passing through the mountain forest, Zhang Yang continued for his search on the location of the sacred fountain. In fact, he was keener to locate a Centaur. According to Markan, the Fountain of the Souls are a sacred relic of the Centaur, so there should be Centaurian guards around the fountain guarding it.

'Pikplak!'

One of the bushes suddenly split in half, and from between the separated bushes came a weird looking creature rushing through... the lower body of a horse, and the upper body of a human! With 4 legs it could really run fast, just like a gust of wind blowing by, with a long bow in his hand.

A Centaur!

“Rawgh!” Right behind the Centaur was a sabretooth leaping out from the same way. Its size was bigger than a huge bear, tall and sturdy, with long and sharp teeth, gleaming with cold white light!

Having Zhang Yang in sight, the Centaur instantly ran towards him, at the same time, he shouted, “Help! Help! Please help!”

[Bangar Kukulo] (Normal, humanoid creature)

Level: 35

HP: 1,235/3,500

Note: “Coward” Bangar Kukulo, Kukulo of the Centaur tribe.

Instantly, Zhang Yang made an immediate judgment, went straight at the sabretooth and landed a slash onto it.

2 seconds later, the sabretooth regained conscious, switching its target to Zhang Yang and threw over a bite.

At first, Zhang Yang wanted to cast a <Provoke>, but seeing that Bangar Kukulo did not cause any damage to the sabretooth, it became easier to pull agro in.

No wonder Bangar Kukulo had a nickname of ‘The Coward’, assuming that he would run the moment he saw the sabretooth, the long bow in his hand might only be a decoration!

Although the sabretooth was indeed tall and sturdy, but it was just a normal Level 33 monster. With just a few tricks in his sleeves, Zhang Yang took it down for good, leaving only a few strings of tiger hair behind.

“Hero! Hero! Gratitude for saving Bangar Kukulo!” The coward Centaur put away the long bow into the backpack on his horseback. He made a move swiping away his sweat and said, “Bangar Kukulo will repay you!”

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “In my travels I would draw out my sword whenever I would see any injustice being done!” As the words came out right from his mouth, he felt a shiver on his back for a moment.

“Hero, a person like you definitely would not want the dead body of this tiger! Then make it as a gift to Bangar Kukulo!” after talking to himself, Bangar Kukulo immediately pulled the dead sabretooth and hung it around his horseback! It was unforeseen that even though his courage was so puny, but his strength was definitely strong as hell, not to mention his face was so thick to the point where no words could describe it!

Zhang Yang continued to ask, “So how did you ended up in such a tragic situation?”

“Sigh!” Bangar Kukulo said, “Today is my coming-of-age ceremony, only by hunting down a sabretooth all by myself would I become one of the real member of the Kukulo family! But this beastly sabretooth was too powerful that Bangar Kukulo could not defeat it!”

Could not defeat? Or perhaps it was him who was so terrified to the point that he just could not do anything, being chased over by the sabretooth a few blocks through maybe?

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “Yes, this sabretooth is indeed very hard to hard to be dealt with!”

Bangar Kukulo was instantly very pleased in hearing that, seeing Zhang Yang as his friend, and he said, “Hero, Bangar Kukulo has another favor to ask of you! Please escort Bangar Kukulo back to sacred land! Bangar Kukulo will definitely pay you handsomely once we are at the destination!”

“Ding! Bangar Kukulo has a quest for you: Escort Bangar Kukulo. Will you accept it?”

Of course Zhang Yang naturally accepted it, having not to worry about finding the place where the Centaur lives anymore!

[Escort Bangar Kukulo] (Difficulty: C-rank)

Description: Escort Bangar Kukulo back to the Centaur camp. If Bangar Kukulo dies, the mission will fail.

Completion: <Escort in progress>

“Thank you so much, hero!” Bangar Kukulo filled his face with a smile, immediately leading Zhang Yang by walking towards a direction.

On their way, it was unavoidable to be attacked by sabretooths, thunderstorm wolves, chimeras and other beast-type monsters. Anyhow, Bangar Kukulo would escape as far as he could go whenever a battle began, and he would only return after Zhang Yang has taken care of the monsters. Then he would show that face of his that says “I was not refusing to aid you in battle, I was on the look-out for you.” Meanwhile, he would pick up the corpses and hung them on his horseback, until the point that he no longer could move his ass, and then dropping the monsters’ corpses with a bitter heart.

After heading straight for more than half an hour, they finally reached the Centaur camp. It was a very well hidden in a far-off valley. If it was not for Bangar Kukulo’s guide, Zhang Yang might not even find the place even after searching for 3 days.

The entrance of the valley was surrounded with high wooden fence, each of the top sharpened, to prevent anything from invading over the wall. In the middle of the fence was an open wooden door, a Centaur guard armed with bow and arrows was standing guard of it.

The sight of that Centaur was extremely great, he could see Zhang Yang and Bangar Kukulo from afar. Immediately raising their awareness with arrow loaded onto the bow, they made a defensive stance.

“Matta Kukulo, do not shoot, it’s me!” Bangar Kukulo was timid, worrying that the opposite side would shoot the arrow over to him, he shouted at once. It reminded Zhang Yang of the phrase, [“Tai Jun, don’t shoot, it’s me”](#).

“Bangar Kukulo, why did you bring a human into our camp?” the guard did not lower his guard down at all.

“He is an important guest which Bangar Kukulo invited to join the coming-of-age ceremony!” Bangar Kukulo was smart, giving Zhang Yang a title of ‘guest’.

Zhang Yang could not help to have his mouth twitching about. Previously with the dwarves, he was also a guest, but in a blink of an eye he almost got turned into a prisoner! Hopefully this time around, the situation would not be the same!

The guard hesitated for a moment before putting away his bow and arrow, so he asked, “When did you know such a human?”

Maybe Zhang Yang was there backing him up, so Bangar Kukulo became bold and strong, with a head full of pride, he said, “Do I need to tell you?”

Under the guide of Bangar Kukulo, Zhang Yang had finally entered the Centaur camp.

A line from a Chinese movie.

Chapter 139: Polishing Reputation

The valley was large, with rows of houses made of wood planks neatly arranged. From time to time there would be two or three Centaurs passing by, and they would all have this strange expression in their eyes, as if they just saw some kind of a monster.

Perhaps, just like how humans feel strange looking at these four-legged strange creatures, they also felt that two-legged humans are some sort of a monster!

Following Bangar Kukulo back to his staying place, the mission was prompted as completed, and Zhang Yang was rewarded with 50,000 experience points.

‘Ding! You have activated the Reputation of the Centaur, current reputation: Unfriendly!’

Zhang Yang brought up the reputation list and took a look. Sure enough, he saw there was a new additional entry for the Centaur, currently labeled as Unfriendly 0/3,000. Continuing to walk outside, the initial names of the Centaurs shown in red have all turned into pale-red in color.

In ‘God’s Miracle’, monsters with their names shown in red meant that they were aggressive, as soon as you entered their aggro range, you will be attacked. So the reputation system was basically the correspondent to the aggro.

Monsters with their names shown in pale-red meant that their

corresponding reputation would be at Unfriendly. These monsters would not initiate their attacks on the players. However, if the players were battling these monsters, it would attract any nearby monsters of the same type, if there was any, to gang up on the players. It was just like people having a street fight in the street, if a person saw a relative or friend in some sort of trouble, they would definitely put their fists out to help.

Monsters with their name shown in yellow meant that their corresponding reputation will be Neutral. Neutral monsters also would not initiate their attacks on players. In fact, if players attacked these type of monsters, it would not attract aggro even though there were the same type of the monsters passing by around the place. It will be just like looking at one of their fellow villagers fighting, just enjoying the show from the side.

Monsters with their names shown in green meant that their corresponding reputation would be Friendly, Respect, Admire and Worship. Unless a player switched on the indifferent attack option, they would not be able to attack green-named monsters. However, green-named monsters were usually an NPC of a main city. Once players attack their kind, it was highly possible that the players would suffer the banishment from the main cities, which would only mean loss and detrimental to one self.

Not long after Bangar Kukulo returned to the camp, he vanished. As an NPC that guided players to activate the reputation of the Centaur, his mission was to continuously be pursued by monsters and turn to players for help, bringing players back to activate the Reputation of the Centaur.

Zhang Yang gave himself a thought that since there was a Reputation of Centaur, then there surely must be a reputation shop around selling some different levels of reputation-corresponding goods.

He took a look around the valley and found the reputation shop not long after.

[Tulong Kukulo, The Reputation Shopkeeper] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 120,000

“Hey, human, want to buy something nice? All we Centaurs have are only natural authentic goods, never a fake one around!” Tulong Kukulo was indeed a professional businessman career, and regardless of his cold corresponding reputation, he started selling immediately. As he was talking, he opened his sale catalog to Zhang Yang.

The first glance into the list was the Fountain of Soul! It was selling at the price of 1,000 gold per bottle!

So, the Fountain of Soul required in the quest can be bought from NPC! And, without any doubt, this is certainly the only way to get

the Fountain of Soul!

The slight overprice of the item could be overlooked, but if this was a reputation shop, that meant the natural authentic goods that Tulong Kukulo sells had a reputation requirement to be fulfilled, And the reputation requirement for the Fountain of Soul was: Worship!

The Fountain of Soul would bind with the players that picked it up. Therefore, do not expect to let players that have fulfilled the reputation requirement to purchase the item on behalf of those who have not!

In fact, any items with reputation requirement would bind with the players.

However, the reputation requirement did not go without any benefits. Other than the Fountain of Soul, Tulong Kukulo had other nice goods including skill books, professional recipe blueprint, and small pets and so on!

There were a total of 6 skill books, corresponding to the six major occupations respectively, with the same reputation requirement of worship! The Warrior skill book was the <Blast Wave>, a skill that Zhang Yang saw before in previous game. The effect was to send a shock wave to the front, causing damage to all enemies within the range, stunning all targets for 4 seconds.

The recipe and blueprint for the forgery and alchemy were the <Recipe: Centaur Battle Axe> and the <Recipe: Beginner Power

Potion> respectively.

Zhang Yang had no idea on what attribute was the Centaur Battle Axe, but he was very clear on the effect of the Beginner Power Potion: Increases the damage output by 20% for 15 seconds.

This potion was not bad at all, giving miraculous effects for situations that required focus and swift attacks.

During PK, players might get to make a total comeback with just a bottle of power potion! The disadvantage was that all the potions shared the same cool down, and consuming the power potion would prohibit players to consume other potions. So, whether it was life insurance or charging hard, it was necessary to consider for one over the two choices.

Zhang Yang had no love for small pets. Moreover, he could not sell it for money either because of the pick-up binding feature. So, he skipped straight through it.

Other than that, there was also a special whetstone ----- Powerful Whetstone. Once applied on the weapon, it will grant 1% critical rate bonus.

Among the rest, skill books required Worship reputation tier, crafting recipes required Admire reputation tier, Pets and whetstones required only Respect reputation tier.

Why was this quest S-rank then? In ‘God’s Miracle’, if the level of

the monster was higher than the player which led to the label of the difficulty of the quest to become higher , it will only change between the ranks of B, C, and D. Rank-A mission meant that there must be a boss to kill, but killing the boss will not be too challenging. However, if it was an S-rank mission, there definitely will be a main boss, such as Shurian of the Cave of Bones, and Terpot Ryhar of the Underground Tower!

S-rank missions signify burden, but also stand for a very handsome reward!

Needless to say, it would be necessary to battle some kind of a big boss is in the process of elevating reputation!

“What say you? Tempted or not?” Tulong Kukulo grinned with a sinister smile of a businessman. “Such a shame you are a stranger, as our clan have rules, never to sell our precious goods to strangers that is! But, you can run some errands for us, errands that are not convenient for our hands to handle. Then we shall trust you, and gradually treat you as our good amigo (friend)!”

After finished talking, a yellow exclamation mark suddenly appeared right above Tulong Kukulo’s head.

Here came the quest!

Zhang Yang immediately said, “Alright, Tulong Kukulo, I am willing to serve the great clan of the Centaur!”

That flatter had landed so solidly onto the ass of Tulong Kukulo, making the prestigious businessman melt in smiles, so he said, “Alright! We shall look upon your sincerity then. Prove it if you can, then I shall consider offering you more quests! Winter is upon us, we need food reserved for the winter. Go hunt us something upon your return!”

“Ding! Tulong Kukulo has a quest for you: Food for the Winter. Will you accept it?”

Upon accepting the quest, the exclamation mark right above Tulong Kukulo has disappeared, meaning that there were no other quest announcements.

“Ding! You have acquired a [Butcher Knife]!”

Zhang Yang summoned his Skeletal War Horse and left the Centaur camp, at the same time, he was checking on the quest list.

[Food for the Winter] (Difficulty: Rank-C)

Description: We want meat! Tulong Kukulo of the Centaur clan requests you to collect as many meat as possible to get them covered for the soon-to-be winter! You can hunt for monsters around Sivar Hills and carve their meat down with the [Butcher Knife].

Completion: Collected meats 0/100

Quest reward: 50,000 experience point, 250 Centaur reputation points.

[Butcher Knife] (Quest item)

Use: Cut the meat from the monsters/beasts.

Zhang Yang rode on his horse and pulled a few dozen of beast-type monsters such as sabretooths, drizzly bears, and violent wolves to him in one shot, then he got down and started his killing-spree. These normal rank monsters only have a basic damage of 600 more or so, hitting on Zhang Yang would only cause about 250 damage.

With just moving around and <Block>, triggering a <Berserker's Heal> or the special effect of [Lover's Sword] with no big deal, Zhang Yang slaughtered all the monsters with his slightest effort, and used the [Butcher Knife] to cut the meat down.

One beast gave about 2 to 4 pieces of meat, as for its specific numbers, it was totally random. For one turn of cutting the meat, Zhang Yang had an addition of 44 pieces of meat. With 2 more pulls and clearing monsters out, the number of the meat was summed up to 127 pieces.

But the set of meat could pile up to 200 pieces, and Zhang Yang was too lazy to discharge the excessive meat out, so he ran straight to Tulong Kukulo to deliver his quest.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Food for the winter, received 50000 experience points, Centaur reputation +250!’

Looking at Tulong Kukulo again, another exclamation mark in blue appeared above his head... a repetitive quest.

It was still the same, killing wild beasts to cut some meat, collect 100 pieces of meat to deliver the quest. On the basic practice of the game, these repetitive missions would only be unavailable when it reached a ‘qualitative change’, for example, when a player has leveled up, or the reputation has elevated to another level.

It required 3,000 reputation points to elevate from cold to neutral. Each mission rewarded 250 points, meaning a total of 12 times completion, which also meant collecting 1,200 pieces of meat. Just a walk in the park! Let’s depart now!

Zhang Yang summoned his [Skeletal War Horse] and began his hunting operation. This time, he intended to fully score 1,100 pieces of meat before delivering back to Tulong Kukulo for the quest rewards, elevating the reputation level to neutral in one shot.

With Zhang Yang’s current equipment, skills and strength, he could only take on as much as 30 or 40 monsters of his similar level. However, the beasts in the area were too spread out, making it possible to pull only about 10 monsters at a time, as the previous monsters that were pulled would leave their pursuit in combat due to target being too far away.

It required about 2 minutes for the whole process which included pulling monsters, gathering and killing the monsters in a spot, and cutting the meat. Most of the time would be wasted on searching for monsters, not to mention that cutting the meat was also a time-consuming process. However, killing the monsters consumed the least of time.

About an hour later, Zhang Yang had collected 1,100 pieces of meat and he headed back to Tulong Kukulo to deliver his quest.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Food for the winter, received 50,000 experience points, Centaur reputation +250!’

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Food for the winter, received 50,000 experience points, Centaur reputation +250!’

‘Ding! You have completed the...’

After delivering the quest for 11 times, Zhang Yang received a glow of green light across his body, which meant that his reputation had been elevated by a level.

“Human, I can feel your worship heart towards us Centaurs. As a token of encouragement, I shall grant you a new quest!” Tulong Kukulo smiled with much satisfaction and he said, “Our food for the Winter is very much enough now, but we could need a large amount of pelts to fight the cold! Human, hunt the White Spot Antelope, cut their skin down for me! The more, the better!”

“Ding! Tulong Kukulo has given you a quest: Clothes for the Winter. Will you accept it?”

Was it possible to decline?

[Clothes for the Winter] (Difficulty: Rank-C)

Description: It's cold as hell! Hurry up and bring some exquisite fine woolen blanket made of antelope skin! Tulong Kukulo requested you to collect the skin of White Spot Antelope. Help the Centaurs solve their Winter problem. The Sivar Hills are full of White Spot Antelopes.

Completion: Collect skin of the White Spot Antelope 0/20

Reward: 5,000 experience points, 250 reputation points.

This was also a repeatable quest, just like the previous one.

Chapter 140: Hunting Sheeps

The White Spot Antelope was a social kind of animal, finding one would mean that you will find the whole herd. However, the number in each herd was only roughly 10 ;shorter time required to kill them all, but what upset Zhang Yang was that the antelope skins did not drop every time!

With only 3 antelope skins harvested from 17 White Spot Antelopes, the drop rate was considerably very low!

No other way, just keep searching!

White Spot Antelopes were all over the various location of Shiva Hills. To kill one or two herds, it was still easy. But to collect enough to support the criteria of elevating from neutral to friendly required 240 antelope skins. It was insanely difficult! Fortunately, Zhang Yang had [Skeletal War Horse] that increased his movement speed to extremely fast, enabling him to run the hills and the forest.

Even so, he could only collect 53 antelope skins by 6.p.m. And it was time for him to leave the game for his dinner.

After dinner, Zhang Yang went online again, continuing his quest to bring trouble to the doorsteps of the antelopes! In a while, came Han Ying Xue's sweet-moving voice through the voice communication device.

“Silly Yu, it's time to go down to the dungeons!”

Zhang Yang could not help himself but to give a gentle tap on his forehead, for him trying so hard polishing his reputation to the point that he forgot about his business in the dungeons tonight!

“I am engaged in a quest right now, you guys go ahead and find any tank you like!”

Han Ying Xue would not give in, and she said, “This cousin does not want to give her healing to anyone else! I only want to give it to you!”

Zhang Yang was full of black lines after listening to it. Big cousin, the tease was just so lavish! He smiled and said, “Oh why, you could not resist to be my second wife?”

“What the...” Han Ying Xue instantly broke out, “Become your second? Your pubic hairs are not even fully grown! Hmph, if I could be the first wife, then I shall only consider about it!”

“Fine, next time, we shall find a time and get married! That time, you'll belong to the Zhang household! Or, you can come over to warm the bed for your husband tonight?” One must be bolder and more direct than Sister Yu who loved to tease in order to scare her off!

Han Ying Xue went silent for a while and she said, “Silly Yu, so you have earned much wisdom and you even dare to take liberties with me!”

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “By the way, I am polishing up my Centaur reputation. The reputation shop over here has some really good stuffs, you guys can come over and check it out. If you feel there is a need, come and polish yours with me!”

“Oh, let me ask Yan Er and the gang then! Silly Yu, let me tell you a secret of mine. When I sleep, I don’t wear any clothes!”

Pak! Han Ying Xue disconnected the voice communication device.

You w... wit... witch!

Zhang Yang could not help himself into his own imagination, imagining Han Ying Xue lying on the bed with totally nothing on her, waking up in the early morning, with her upper body slightly lifted, the thin blanket sliding and getting stuck by her two prideful peaks, half-revealing pairs of plumpy boobs, some words were better left unsaid....

That was totally irresistible!

How could my will be so weak?

Zhang Yang ferociously slaughtered the herd of antelopes while sighing, admitting that the bewitched Han Ying Xue was indeed profound in her ways.

Hack and slash, slash and hack, all the way to 11.p.m. Where Zhang Yang went offline to sleep. He could only collect 97 pieces of the antelope skins, and it was still a long way before getting 240 pieces of the skins. However, his experience bar on Level 31 had advanced straight up to 87%, leaving him so much closer to Level 32.

He could have leveled up if it weren't for the scattered spawning of the monsters, totally unlike the concentrated spawning of the monsters in the Misty Valley.

Next day in the morning, Zhang Yang finished up his training and had his breakfast before logging into the game.

It was still the endless slaughtering of the antelopes. Unlike the 1,200 pieces of meat that he easily collected, this collection of antelope skins was on a totally different level of difficulty. Looking at the bright side, the experience points were not that bad or slow either, he could treat it as a training.

In the end, he spent his whole day in the Sivar Hills before he went offline to sleep. All he ever did was to increase the collection of the skins up to the amount of 207. As for his level, he already reached Level 32 around 1.p.m. in the afternoon; he was about to catch up with Hundred Shots.

Earlier on, Zhang Yang spent a total of 12 days to craft potions. That was why he got stuck on Level 30, letting the rest of his 5 gang members surpass him.

Fatty Han was at Level 35, being at highest level among them because he spent the least amount of time in his profession quests. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er could currently team up to kill monsters for leveling up purposes. Although their time spent in leveling up was not as much as Fatty Han did, they had also reached Level 34. Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu did not fall behind even though she was not online much, because she had 50% additional experience points to boost her up. She was currently Level 34 as well.

On the contrary, Hundred Shots was currently only Level 33 because he had put too much time into his class quests.

It was 11.a.m into the third day, Zhang Yang had finally collected exactly 240 pieces of antelope skins, with a burst of grievance, he returned to Tulong Kukulo to deliver the quest request.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Clothes for the winter, received 40,000 experience points, Centaur reputation +250!’

‘Ding! You have completed...’

After the 12th time of his delivery, Zhang Yang received a glow of green light flashing across his body, representing that his Centaur reputation had been elevated to ‘Friendly’.

However, to elevate from friendly to a higher level required a substantial amount of reputation points! From Friendly to Respect required 6,000 reputation points, from Respect to Admire required 12,000 reputation points, and lastly, from Admire to Worship

required 21,000 reputation points!

Zhang Yang had faintly felt a pain in his eggs, no, felt his eggs being crushed!

Tulong Kukulo stared at Zhang Yang and smiled, “Human, you have done us a great deal of favors, even our chief has heard about your brilliant achievements! You see, she even commanded me to invite you to her tent! My admiration is all on you, human, master chief is the best beauty there is among the Centaurs, she is indeed a dreamy lover to all our Centaur men!”

Zhang Yang looked at Tulong Kukulo’s head and there were no sign of any exclamation mark other than his title.

Obviously, Tulong Kukulo would not publish any quest at the moment. To proceed with the elevation of reputation, one must meet with the chief of the Centaur.

Zhang Yang asked Tulong Kukulo for the location of the chief, and he went to the largest wooden house in the middle of the tribe.

“Halt, human!” two female Centaur guards were guarding the wooden door of the house. Armed with their long spears and their heads looking down to him, it was extremely intimidating.

So, Zhang Yang informed, “I am here under the invitation of the chief herself!”

Chiang!

The two Centaur guards pulled their spears aside and said, “Go in ahead, the chief has been expecting you!”

Zhang Yang took a big step into the wooden house, he could only see a female Centaur wandering around the house. Noticing his footsteps entering the house, she instantly turned herself over and looked at Zhang Yang.

What a huge Centaur! Centaurs such as the kind of Tulong Kukulo was considered as tall and big, but to compare this Centaur with the others, others would become inferior in an instant, just like comparing the size of a baby elephant with a mother elephant!

[Maya Kukulo, Kukulo Centaur Tribe Chief] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: ???

With a firm fist of his right hand placed on his chest, Zhang Yang greeted with a respectful gesture of an adventurer, and he said, “Master chief, thank you for your hospitality, it is my great pleasure!” While talking to her, Zhang Yang also felt a sour sting in his heart.

Maya Kukulo seem pleased with Zhang Yang's performance, she nodded her head and said, "Human, you have made a series of contributions to our tribe in recent days, I have knowledge of it! Very well, you have proved your sincerity to, but, to be a friend to the Centaurs, sincerity is not enough. You must have enough strength in you! If you have thoughts to befriend us, go and have word with Andark Kukulo!"

Yet another 'kick you out of the house' scene has presented itself!

It was just like some office, A told you to find B, and then B told you to find C, and C would say it was none of his business and ask to look for D, and D would inform that you would need a stamp from A before you could proceed.

Andark Kukulo was located just above a platform set up with woods, with a shiny yellow exclamation mark above his head.

This was just like a chain pulling another chain, if the reputation had not reached friendly, Tulong Kukulo would not have allowed players to meet with the chief, which the talk with the chief would not happen, and Andark Kukulo would not be here publishing new quest.

[Andark Kukulo, Duel Manager] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 120,000

“Human, we Centaurs will never be friends with useless people! Come, prove your strength and see if you are worthy of becoming our friend!”

While waiting for Zhang Yang to come over, Andark Kukulo spoke in a low and draggy voice.

‘Ding! Andark Kukulo has given you a quest: Ever the victorious! accept or decline?’

After clicking down the accept button, Zhang Yang immediately pulled out his quest list to check on it.

[Ever the Victorious] (Difficulty: Optional)

Description: Challenge the Centaur opponents, prove your might and strength! You can only challenge once in every hour, you can choose your enemies among 4 difficulties, A, B, C, D. Defeating an opponent of different difficulty will reward you with different amount experience points and reputation points.

Rank-A difficulty: 100,000 experience points, 125 reputation points.

Rank-B difficulty: 50,000 experience points, 75 reputation points.

Rank-C difficulty: 30,000 experience points, 50 reputation points.

Rank-D difficulty: 10,000 experience points, 25 reputation points.

Progress: Centaur reputation reaches Respect. Current reputation: Friendly

The game was fair, players with stronger strength acquired reputation points faster than average players!

Zhang Yang immediately said, “Andark Kukulo, I would like to make the challenge now!”

“Very good, I favor your courage, please pick an opponent for your challenge!” Andark Kukulo laughed hard.

In the game interface, a selection box came out suddenly, and Zhang Yang picked the Rank-A difficulty without any hesitation.

Shew!

With a blur in his eyes, Zhang Yang found himself teleported

onto the platform on the side above him.

Gong gong gong!

A huge Centaur entered the platform from the other side, and the heavy weighted body pressed against the wooden floor making a series of creaking sound ‘creak creak creak’.

[Centaur Warrior] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 35

HP: 35,000

‘Ding! The challenge will commence in 10 seconds!’

10, 9, 8... 3, 2, 1!

“Rawgh!” The Centaur warrior let out a loud roar, opening up all four of his legs and started charging towards Zhang Yang with his long spear in his hands straight up. This attack would break a boulder or worse!

<Charge>!

In a flash, Zhang Yang charged and rammed over. Very good, a stun effect, giving a gap of 2 seconds for him to make his next move. Summoning his servant [Clear Lotus] would not cause any cool down problem because only one challenge can be made in an hour.

‘-738!’

‘-1,633!’

The Centaur warrior regained conscious very quickly, roaring in rage and striking his long spear towards Zhang Yang.

<Block>! +30 rage points.

‘-254!’ Block damage deflected.

‘-557!’ <Shield Bash>.

The HP of the Centaur warrior was going down fast like an avalanche.

Chapter 141: Aura Effect

The centaur warrior let out a series of roars in rage, once again flailing the long spear in his hands about, finally drawing first blood on Zhang Yang.

‘-1,312!’

The attack was really ferocious, it’s basic damage must have gone up to 2,000!

But Zhang Yang had help from [Servant: Clear Lotus], his damage per second has exceeded 1300. To strike down the mere 35,000 HP of the centaur warrior would only take about 30 seconds or so! With all sorts of survival skills activated, he could blast the centaur warrior to death without budging an inch.

“Ding! You have defeated the Centaur Warrior, received 100000 experience points, centaur reputation +125!”

After attempting to speak further to Andark Kukulo garnered no response, Zhang Yang stepped up to his face. The centaur finally said, “The warriors are resting now, you should come back another time!”

Since he had much time to spare, Zhang Yang went out to the outskirts of the valley to train and level-up. After an hour, he would go back for another challenge. Within a day, his experience bar had increased to 91% of level 32, but his centaur reputation had only increased by 1,500 points, it would take some time before it

reaches 6,000 points.

On the other hand, without Zhang Yang as their main tanker, Han Ying Xue and the gang did not adjust well, they could barely handle the dungeons, but they could at least still clear the Hardcore Mode of the Garden dungeon. Zhang Yang had initially intended to let Fatty Han lead other dungeon parties, he was happy to see them slowly adjusting without him being around.

Another two days had passed. Zhang Yang had his centaur reputation at 'friendly' level, with 5,250 points at hands, he was about to break through into 'respectful'. Moreover, he had trained himself up to level 34, being the same level as Hundred Shots, leaving Han Ying Er and the gang speechless.

On the third day at 3.pm, Zhang Yang defeated the 48th centaur warrior, and a green light flashed through his body, indicating that his centaur reputation had finally reached another tier!

After delivering the quest to Andark Kukulo, the NPC said, "Human, you truly are a wonder that surprised me well! In just a few days, you have beaten many brave centaur warriors! Oh my, do you have the slightest idea on how much herbs are being wasted on us?"

Zhang Yang burst into laughter, and he said, "The centaur is a sturdily strong race, such scratches shouldn't hurt them at all!"

Andark Kukulo smiled wryly at the indirect gloat and said, "Alright, you have proven your strength, and now, you have

earned the right to speak to our chief, she may have some quests awaiting you! However, human, I must warn you. Do not ever have any improper thoughts towards our chief, because the most beautiful female centaur can only be married to the greatest male centaur!”

Improper thoughts my arse! Even if I ingested all the aphrodisiac that the world can offer, there is no way that I will be turned on by a horse’s ass!

After leaving Andark Kukulo, Zhang Yang was back to see Maya Kukulo.

“Very good, human, very good indeed! We now consider you a friend to the centaurs! However, to further win your favor over, you must put more effort in contributing!” Maya Kukulo looked at Zhang Yang and said, “Human, do you know why our camp have so few of us here that we even need outsiders to help us prepare food and clothes in anticipation of the winter upon us?”

“Why?” Zhang Yang asked back at her.

“About 2 months ago, there evil souls were constantly rising from the ground in the area of the second half of this valley, and they launched their assaults on our camp! To protect our home, we centaurs were forced to send most of our bravest warriors to the front line to defend against the undead!” Maya Kukulo expression turned dark, and she said, "The prospects are not looking good for us, we need more warriors, so, human, are you willing to help us?"

“Ding! Maya Kukulo has given you a quest: The Crisis of the Centaur. Will you accept it?”

[The Crisis of the Centaur] (Difficulty: Rank-B)

Description: The constantly rising of the undead is slowly invading the defense line of the centaur, they are desperately in need of your help! Slay all the evil undead, lay ease upon the stressful situation of the centaur!

Progress: Reputation Level for Centaur race at Respect / Admire

Upon accepting the quest, Maya Kukulo kicked Zhang Yang out of her tent. Fortunately, it wasn't literal.

Zhang Yang headed to Tulong Kukulo before anything else, having his reputation at 'respectful', he could finally buy something from the reputation shop.

[Roasted Meat] (Consumable)

Use: Recovers 8,000 HP and 4,000 Mana in 30 seconds. Can only be used under non-combat situation, any movement or entering combat would disrupt the consuming effect.

Required: Centaur reputation - Friendly.

Level required: 30

Bound on acquire.

The [Sweet Bread] in Zhang Yang's backpack heals 2,000 HP and 1,000 mana points, which is vastly inferior! Without having second thoughts, he immediately threw the [Sweet Bread] away and purchased two sets of [Roasted Meat].

One set of [Roasted Meat] contained 200 pieces, so 400 pieces should last him for a while. He was mainly limited by the space of the backpack, he could not afford to have the snacks occupying all the space. The price for one set is 2 gold coins, which is already equal to 10 dollars.

[Powerful Whetstone] (Consumable)

Use: Use a weapon on it, increases critical strike rate by 1%.

Requirement: Respectful centaur reputation.

Required level: 30

Bound on acquire.

But, although the [Powerful Whetstone] looks promising, it's effect was still not as good as the [Level 2 Whetstone]. Because, even skills that had the highest damage output such as <Horizontal Sweep> and <Destructive Smash>, would only range between 1,586 – 1,701. 1% of that was only equivalent to 15-17 points. On the other hand, the [Level 2 Whetstone] increases 20 damage points at most, so it was still more effective than the [Powerful Whetstone]

However, as Zhang Yang updates his equipment, the addition of a 1% critical strike rate that the [Powerful Whetstone] offers will surpass the effects of the [Level 2 Whetstone]. Any item that adds effect by percentage are categorized as progressive type items, where the higher the basic stats, the higher the value will become after the amplification based on the percentage presented.

Without hesitating, he bought the [Powerful Whetstone]. This place is far off, it isn't easy to travel here, so purchasing a set and depositing them into the bank for the moment until there is a need for them can save him the trouble of traveling back to this location.

After the necessary preparations, Zhang Yang summoned his [Skeletal War Horse] and traveled all the way down to the bottom of the valley.

The place was fortified with guards, not only with a dozens of sturdy and strong centaur guard, but also with rows of spiked wooden walls, it was truly amazing. A few days back, Zhang Yang came by and he was held back by the guards there. That made him

believed that they were actually guarding the [Fountain of the Souls] all along!

“Human warrior, you are hereby declared qualify to enter the battleground!” While Zhang Yang was riding by, one of the centaur guard shouted at him, saying that, “Hey, human, you better not die in there! Rumors told me that you have bested many centaurs, but those aren’t elites! The greatest centaur warrior is standing right in front of you! When you come back alive, I shall teach you a thing or two about the true strength of the centaur!”

“Pui, the greatest centaur warrior is me, Bala Kukulo!”

“Bullsh*t it is, I dare to swear on the name of the prettiest Maya Kukulo, Kukulo, Chief of the Centaur Tribe, only I, Nianba Kukulo, am the greatest Warrior of all centaurs!”

The centaurs were in dispute of who is the greatest, shouting among each other.

Zhang Yang rode past the level and entered a brand new area.

This area is actually a part of the valley too! The centaur camp was located in the valley corner of a gourd. The area was divided into two parts, the front half and the back half of the valley, and the level is located just in between!

But, at the moment he entered the back half of the valley, Zhang Yang instantly felt a strong silent murderous intent! Not far from

him, there were hundreds of centaur warriors formed in a straight line of defense, battling and fending off a variety of undead creatures. There were many kinds of undead creatures, a variety of beasts, and there was even undead centaur warriors among them!

It was obvious that the centaurs had the upper hand of the situation. With centaur warriors in the front line sweeping the undead army with their spears, the centaur archers can focus on releasing their arrows onto their enemies from afar. Moreover, the spawning undead creatures are just normal grade monsters, with not much HP on them. Before they could even touch the front line, they had already lost half of their HP, a few more stabs and slices from the spears, finished them off swiftly.

Suddenly, an undead creature with a very huge body slowly approached from afar, it looked humanoid, albeit at least five meters tall, and being obese as f*ck. It's belly was hollowed out, and puddles of green slime constantly dripped out from the hole. Other than the two normal arms, there was a limb hanging right behind it's back. Upon a closer look, it was apparent that this monster's body was stitched together with the metal wires. On the way to the front line, it left behind puddles of green gas, which took a pretty long period of time to slowly disappear.

[Amalgamation of Hate] (Elite, undead)

Level: 35

HP: 100000

The Amalgamation of Hate had a vast area of aggro. Unexpectedly, it had already entered into combat mode with the centaurs being 30 meters away, increasing its movement speed, spilling the green slime on the ground all the way through.

The centaur warriors had also taken note Amalgamation of Hate, surrounding the monster up to initiate their attacks. However, the moment when centaur warriors got near the Amalgamation of Hate, they were receiving a damage of '-200' for every second they stood around that monster.

As Zhang Yang was gazing upon the scene, he discovered that the monster was constantly surrounded by an effect, it was called <Decay Aura>.

[Decay Aura]: Causes 200 natural damage in every seconds to targets within a range of 2 meter diameter.

So it is an aura!

An aura is a kind of very special skill, and it was unobtainable from instructors, this kind of skill can only be acquired through skill books. Aura does not differentiate professions, in theory, any players with any professions or classes can learn any kind of aura skills. But the truth is, the aura skill books have minimum rate of falling, making the number of players with aura skills poorly low!

In conclusion, there are two types of aura: One affects oneself and the friendlies around, the other affects the enemies around.

For example, <Vigor Aura> increase 10% strength of the friendlies within the range of 30-meter radius, and for the other example, <Weaken Aura> lowers 5% damage dealt by enemies within the range of 30-meter radius.

If any wild dungeon party can get a player with aura skill, it would lower the difficulty of the dungeon by 10% at least! Therefore, players with aura skills were like big bosses, they were very popular no matter where they went, every single one of them will be have their *sses kissed up to the top of the world!

Aura skill books will only fell from bosses that were at least level 50 or above. Therefore, Zhang Yang knew that it was extremely rare to see a level 35 Amalgamation of Hate having aura effect around it!

Chapter 142: The Fall Of The Evil Necromancer Zac

What's weird should remained weird.

Zhang Yang unsheathe his blade and dashed towards the monster, joining the centaur fight against the weird Amalgamation of Hate.

“-160!”

The moment Zhang Yang got close to the monster, Zhang Yang received a damage tick.

Amalgamation of Hate was an elite tiered monster, which was far stronger than a regular monster. However, no matter how strong it was, it could not last for long under the focus fire of so many NPC and Zhang Yang's powerful attacking power. It died swiftly.

‘Ding! You have killed Amalgamation of Hate. Reward based on damage contribution: Obtained 27491 Experience Points. Obtained 50 Centaur Reputation Points!’

It was a pity that the monster only dropped several [Cotton Cloth]s and 78 Copper coins, and it definitely did not drop the skill book that Zhang Yang was hoping for.

After killing Amalgamation of Hate, all the centaurs returned to

their original posts and reformed the absolute defense line. There, they continued to hold back the endless incoming spectres. However, after the battle, the centaurs had sustained heavy damage and had only little HP left. They could not last long against a single wave of spectral assault. Casualties started to increase as more and more spectres engaged the centaurs.

Zhang Yang took the liberty to attack the spectres on his own. The incoming spectres were so weak that Zhang Yang had only need to slash 2 to 3 times to kill one. However, he only obtained experience points and no reputation points.

To obtain the required reputation level to “Worship” Zhang Yang would need to kill 240 Amalgamations of Hate to obtain the required reputation points. The worst part of this quest was that the spawn time for each Amalgamation of Hate was 15 minutes. In an hour he would only encounter 4 of them, which would only earn him 200 Reputation Points.

To properly sum this up, excluding the time he eats and sleep, he would need to fight for at least 15 hours a day to farm 3,000 Reputation Points, for at least 4 days continuously. To make matters worse, the monsters around here were all spread everywhere. Once they appear, the centaurs will immediately react to their aggro and fight. Zhang Yang wanted to draw them all together and kill them all in one go. However, since they were drawn in by the centaurs, he was unable to lure them all and had to fight them one by one. It took him really long to simply grind and thus reducing his grinding speed tremendously. What that would usually take him a day has now turned into 2 days to gain a single level.

What could have been done, had been done. There was nothing else that could make things quicker.

4 days passed by in a blink of an eye and Zhang Yang had managed to raised his Reputation to Admire and he level to 36 with 2% experience points.

After submitting his quest, the most beautiful centaur in the camp had been ignoring Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang tried to take with every NPC with a name tag but none of them had any quests for Zhang Yang to complete. Zhang Yang then proceed on to talk to Tulong Kukulo and bought the [Recipe: Beginner Power Potion] and learned it. Zhang Yang could not find any other quest around and had to rely on killing Amalgamations of Hate to further raise his reputation. Zhang Yang felt that killing monsters alone for 4 days straight was as dull as ever. However, he was able to procure the recipe out of the mess. It made him slightly satisfied.

[Beginner Power Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Increases all attack by 20%. Lasts for 15 seconds.

Cool down time: 2 minutes.

Note: The cooldown period is shared among all other types of potions when using a potion.

Level Requirement: 30

Zhang Yang was unable to return to the city, thus he entrusted Han Ying Xue and the rest of his friends to help him buy ingredients for the power potion and mailed them to him. Once “Dwarf's Warning” was gone, he could immediately start making the potion to sell them at his Little Merchandize Shop.

It had been several days since he had returned to White Jade Castle. He would not have known how the shop was doing. Was Natalie harassed by any nerds or bypassers? Luckily, Zhang Yang had premade an absurd amount of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to begin with. It should last for a few days since the demand was not that high. Since Natalia was instructed to buy all sorts of ingredient and sell them at the price similar to the ones in the auction house, the shop would not be empty for a while now.

After what seemed to be 7 days of hacking and slashing, Zhang Yang was already sick of the sight of spectres. By then, his centaur Reputation had reached Admire at 20999/21000 to Worship. No matter what he did, it just would go any higher! At first, he had not realized it. He was so rigid and robotic-like that he had spent 2 hours wasting his energy and time on killing more Amalgamations of Hate. By the time he realized, it was already too late.

How does he get the last point of Reputation?

Zhang Yang turned back around to Maya Kukulo. There, he found a yellow exclamation mark hovering on top of her head!

Finally! If he could complete that one quest, he could raise his

reputation to Worship! And only then, he could buy that [Bottle of Holy Water] and completed the “Fountain of Soul” quest. He could then finally be rid of the annoying “Dwarf’s Warning” and return to White Jade Castle!

With tears rolling down his cheek, he had been circling around for god knows how long! He can finally see a glimmer of hope of returning home!

“Human. Your timing is just right. I have an important task which only you could complete!” Maya Kukulo raised her head and spoke loudly when she saw Zhang Yang.

“O great chief! Please!”

“After sending off my precious warrior to search for clues, I have obtained information at the price of their precious life!”

Maya Kukulo faced darkened in rage as she continued her speech. “I have found out that these evil spectres were the creation of a certain Evil Necromancer! He is hiding deep in the valley! In the Castle Ruins!”

“Castle Ruins? Chief?” Zhang Yang tried to clarify.

“A few hundred years ago, we, the centaurs were a mighty race. We were split into 17 tribes but were united nevertheless, under one king! The brave Jean Lostark! However, like thunder, an earthquake struck the castle without any warning. The castle was

destroyed and sunk into the earth!”

Maya Kukulo suddenly turned solemn. “The great king and all of his successors had perished! After the incident, all 17 tribe leaders started to fight for the king’s position. Eventually, the war and torn us apart! The kingdom was lost! Yet we, the Kukulo tribe remained here! To serve the king and protect the Castle Ruins!”

“That wretched Evil Necromancer! How dare he disturb the souls of the palace! He had turned them into restless spectres! I will never forgive his impudence!” Maya shook with fury. “That one named Zac, the Evil Necromancer must die!”

‘Ding! Maya Kukulo has a quest for you: To Protect the Holy Land. Will you accept it?’

‘Ding! Main Story Quest: Hunt down the Evil Necromancer Zac! Completed. The proceeding quest had been activated: The Last Strike!’

[The Last Strike] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: Kill the Evil Necromancer Zac! The sinner of the world has to pay for his crime! Bring your friends! Zac is very strong!

Progress: Kill Evil Necromancer Zac 0/1

Zhang Yang was stunned. He would have never thought that he would stumble upon the main story quest here! After he recovered from the surprise of having unexpectedly progressed in the main story quest, he quickly accepted the quest offered by Maya Kukulo.

“Hey! Stupid Yu! I saw the main story quest suddenly changing!”

“Noob tank! What did you do? Why did the main story quest suddenly change?”

“Little Yang. Did you notice any changes with the main story quest?”

Everyone’s private messages came flooding in.

Zhang Yang instinctively added all of them into his party and told them the situation.

“I’ve just discovered a quest to kill Zac. That was why the search for Zac quest had completed. I found him! Now it has turned into a kill! Get over here! Let’s complete the main story quest!”

“Little Yang. Sky High and The Dominators have already started to explore the Shadowmoon Castle: Castle Interior Hardcore Mode! If we get distracted with the main story quest, we might not be able to claim the First Clear Achievement!” said Fatty Han worriedly.

Zhang Yang smiled. “It’s not that big of a deal. Honestly, the Castle Interior is very strong. I think the guilds might need to take about 10? 20 days maybe, to even try defeating it. Let’s leave it there. For now, we’ll complete the main story quest and get awesome rewards! We might even get stronger to kill the dungeon boss easier!”

Even though Sun Xin Yu did not trigger the main story quest, Zhang Yang had still invited her to the party! Zhang Yang had let them complete the “Escort Bangar Kukulo” quest to gain a certain amount of reputation. Otherwise, they could not enter the Kukulo Centaur tribe area safely without having their Reputation status changed from Hostile to Unfriendly.

The escort quest could be done with many people simultaneously. The party, except Zhang Yang, had gathered at the Sivar Hills and waited at the path where they would stumble upon the wimpy Bangar Kukulo. When they had arrived at the tribe camp, they saw what the Reputation Shop items have and lit up in excitement. They even scolded Zhang Yang for not telling them earlier.

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes. He had actually invited them to come over to join him several days ago but neither of them had expressed their willingness to join. Yet now they are pushing the blame on him instead! Zhang Yang was completely dumfounded but he was too lazy to even argue with them.

Zhang Yang checked the quest and found that the rest of the party had been able to proceed on with the quest “To Protect the Holy Land”. He could not help but felt a little cheated. He had

spent so much time and energy just to farm the ridiculous amount of Reputation only to have the party leech off from him!

[To Protect the Holy Land] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: Kill the Evil Necromancer Zac and protect the Holy Land of the Centaurs!

Progress: Kill the Evil Necromancer Zac 0/1

Both quests overlapped in mutual conclusions, both of them required the killing of Zac! Thankfully neither of the quests asked them to submit the beheaded head of Zac, or else they would not know which one to submit first!

The time was already 5pm. Zhang Yang prompted the party to log out of the game and to reconvene at 7pm after having their dinner!

Zhang Yang logged off as well. He took off the gaming helmet and stretched his neck to the left and right, rubbing his eyes. He was a little tired after all. He blinked his eyes and searched for his wallet. He picked up the flatten leather pouch and open it, only to find he had only 7 pieces of 10 dollar bills. Even though he had at least 8 digits in his savings account, he could not use his card to purchase box lunch for a street stall. 70 dollars was enough for him to last for at least 5 to 6 days. After that, he had to visit the bank to withdraw some hard-cold cash.

“It is time for me to change a place to live? Or perhaps I should get a car?”

In his previous life, Zhang Yang had entered the A-tier Professional League and became one of the few rich men in China, having a large summer house somewhere and a luxurious car. Truth be told, Zhang Yang had missed that life. More importantly, he missed the car. Which man in the world would not love cars?”

“Argh...perhaps some other time! There will be another chance for me to earn a fortune when the Level 50 dungeon Flame Poison Land is released! The more capital I have, the better money I could make!”

Level 50 Flame Poison Land party dungeon was the second dungeon that was used to farm the game’s second set-equipment. Outside the dungeon, there will be an NPC standing at the entrance. He will grant a buff that will grant immunity to Flame Poison at the cost of a [Solid Iron bar]

No matter how strong the party is, without the buff, setting foot inside the dungeon alone would kill you, let alone fighting the boss!”

Which is why [Solid Iron Bar] was a must-have item if you wanted to raid the dungeon!

Chapter 143: New Member

[Solid Iron Bar] is a composite item. The materials needed to craft a [Solid Iron Bar] are 100 [Iron Bar], and they had to go through a process known as Smelting, similar to its real-life counterpart.

As this goes, the original price of [Iron Bar] will increase. The highest price for 200 bars was 50 gold coins. The price will fluctuate and eventually stabilize at 10 gold coins for 200 bars later. This is part of the game's system to prevent gold coin inflation.

After an update patch in the future, [Iron Bar] sorted out to 200 bars a stack compared to the previous 20 bars a stack. So far in the game, a majority of the players had already reached level 30 on average. Their Profession must have reached to at least Amateur or higher. [Iron Bar] was a basic ingredient that would not have any demand as players' Profession level rose. As the demand drops, the price would drop as well. Since the item had been lacking in demand and interest, the prices that once begun 5 gold coins for 200 bars had dropped to 2 gold coins for 200 bar.

However, the moment players started to take part in the Flame Poison Land dungeon raid, the price for [Iron Bar] would be raised up to 10 gold coins for 200 bars! That's 5 times the original value!

If Zhang Yang invested 40,000,000 gold coins, the money will multiply itself to 200,000,000!

The only problem Zhang Yang faced now was the shortage in storage! The total storage unit that Zhang Yang had so far were his

own personal bank storage at 400 slots, the guild's secondary storage at 1000 slots, and the Little Merchandize Shop storage at 1000 slots. All of them would total up to 2400 slots of storage space.

Zhang Yang had first planned to buy a few more storage slots for the guild storage. He also planned to level up the Little Merchandize Shop to increase its storage space. He was willing to spend all his money to upgrade it all! The more he spends, the more he stands to earn!

However, the guild storage expansion fees will be at 1,000,000 gold coins per page¹. Even though the exchange rate of the game currency to real life currency has dropped to 1:4, it was at least 4,000,000 dollars! That's a crazy amount of money for expansion! Since the rate will continue to drop even further, Zhang Yang thought that he should wait for a while before he purchase any inventory expansion. Until the inventory space was completely used up, he should not make any hasty decision.

7pm, and the party of 6 logged in together at the same time. The team then proceeded to venture deeper into the valley. So far, the team status was: Zhang Yang at level 39, Fatty Han at level 40, Hundred Shots at level 38, Sun Xin Yu at level 40, Han Ying Xue at level 40, and Wei Yan Er at level 40.

After the team entered the entrance of the valley, they were greeted with a large cave entrance. The inside of the cave was so dark that they could not see how deep it went.

“WAAAA...”

“KYAAA...”

Just as when Zhang Yang was about to signal the party to go in, they heard a sudden wail, followed by two loud “Thud!”. Two mangled, bloody bodies of players dropped right in front of them.

The party instinctively looked up at the peak of the valley. The height of the little hill was at least 200 to 300 meters tall. Anyone would have their head rolling off their body if they had a fall from that height!

The two deceased had already released their souls to respawn. The bodies that remained there still had their name tag hovering over.

Endless Starlight, Dwarf Defender, Male, Level 38

Daffodil Daydream, Human Pyromancer, Female, Level 39

Neither of them were in a guild.

Zhang Yang was stunned! It’s them!

Endless Starlight! The outstanding character that was sought out by many super guild as the best tank there is! It turned out that Endless Starlight did not want to leave his own guild and it led to the alliance of 3 super guilds to sabotage his guild to the point

where he had deleted his account.

Daffodil Daydream was ranked last in the Top 10 Spellcaster in the entire China server in Zhang Yang's previous life. She was one of the top players in China where everyone would know her name!

In this turn of events, Zhang Yang would have never thought that he would meet these two superstars here! What sort of twisted, weird, and crazy story would lead them to fall out of the sky?!

Zhang Yang quickly cried out to Han Ying Xue, "Revive them!"

Curious, Han Ying Xue was lost in her own thoughts, thinking as of how these two weirdos would fall down from the peak. She quickly cast <Resurrection> and revived the two of them.

20 seconds later, the two of them were revived one after the other. However, once Daffodil opened her eyes and saw Endless Starlight standing in front of her, she immediately cast a <Fire Blast> and almost killed Endless Starlight who only had 20% of HP at upon revival.

"Stop! Stop! Stop!" Zhang Yang quick stepped in and stood in front of Endless Starlight to protect him. "I don't know what kind of fight you guys had before, but why do you have to kill?"

Daffodil had a beautiful appearance but what stood out the most was her long, slim legs that could intoxicate any one with that kind

of fetish to dub her as the “Leg Goddess”.

Angry and puffing steam out of her nostrils, Daffodil strafed left and right to get past Zhang Yang in order to get a clear shot. But when Zhang Yang proved that he was much better at covering the poor man, she gave up and finally spoke.

“I was fighting a boss at the peak when suddenly, this guy appeared out of nowhere and was under my feet! I was too surprised to even realize that I was running away in the wrong direction! That was how I fell down from the top of that cliff!”

Zhang Yang turned around and his back facing Daffodil and asked Endless Starlight. “What’s your story?”

Endless Starlight was staring back and forth between Daffodil, Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, and Wei Yan Er before he realized that Zhang Yang talking to him.

“I was at the top of the hill taking a nice walk. You know...to explore the area. And then! Just like that! As if the goddess had descended upon me! There, standing right in front of my eyes were two perfect, beautiful, flawless legs, the best I have ever seen! I chased after the miracle that was bestowed to me and before I knew it, I was dead...”

The moment Endless Starlight had mentioned “goddess” Zhang Yang and the girls were already frowning.

Fatty Han was laughing loudly and patted Endless Starlight's shoulder and said, "Brother! You're one brave one! You have my respect!"

"Hahahahaha! It's nothing really!" Endless Starlight replied with a pervert smile on his face. "To chase after the perfect beauty is every man's dream!"

"Well said! Brother!"

"We're the same!"

"HAHAHAHAHAHA" both of them laughed even louder.

This...this was the guy? The man who was fought over 3 super guilds? The one who had raged quit the game? The Endless Starlight?! Zhang Yang could not help but to have thousands of doubts in his mind. He turned around to face Daffodil Daydream. "Sigh...Just...Just forget about this stupid fool. It's not worth your anger."

Daffodil stomped the ground angrily and screamed. "Why shouldn't I? That bastard had me waste a boss kill! I have to kill him! At least once!"

"Kill me! O goddess! I would die for you!" said Endless Starlight while kneeling down with a face of ecstasy.

Just as she was about to cast <Fire Blast>, Daffodil shuddered and

failed the cast, frightened by his perverted expression.

Zhang Yang laughed it off and said, “Alright! Keep calm guys! Daffodil, it’s just a boss! How about this? We are actually on our way to kill a Gray-Silver boss for our quest. How about we team up for a bit?”

Everyone on Zhang Yang’s party was stunned. They turned to look at Zhang Yang, thinking that he might have an interest in Daffodil Daydream.

Indeed, Zhang Yang was interested in Daffodil, but not in that kind of way!

She was one of the Top 10 Spellcasters of all China! If Zhang Yang could recruit her to his side, his future would be brighter than ever! He could obtain all First Clear Achievements! He could win Professional Leagues! She was the big bag of gold found at the end of the rainbow!

“Gray-Silver boss?! Woah! I want! Invite me! Invite me!” Before Daffodil could react Endless Starlight had already crying out like Wei Yan Er would.

Zhang Yang noticed that Daffodil had showed a slight interest in his suggestion but did not manage to react in time. Zhang Yang smiled and sent them both a party invite.

‘Ding! Player Endless Starlight had joined the party!’

‘Ding! Player Daffodil Daydream had joined the party!’

Both of them accepted the invitation rather quickly.

“Hmm? Aren’t you guys the party that got those First Clear Achievement?” said Endless Starlight as he got excited. Other than Fatty Han, the rest of the party had picked up Zhang Yang’s habit and hid their personal profile information. Daffodil was more subtle than Endless Starlight but her eyes betrayed her awe.

Zhang Yang laughed it off. “Let’s go!”

He tried to share the quest [To Protect the Holy Land] to the two new members but neither of them could accept the quest. Looks like they must complete the prerequisite escort quest and raise their Centaur’s Reputation to be able to share the quest.

As the party moved into the dark pathway, Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight were positioned at the most front as both of them were tanks.

“Damn son! I’m so jealous of you! Look, you have the ice-cool lady, a boobalicious babe, and a little spicy loli! Holy cow! I’d wish I had the girls like you have! Imagine living the life, surrounded by girls! Aww Yiss! I would not want to be a king without his harem!” Endless whispered to Zhang Yang.

“...” Zhang Yang was completely speechless.

“I’ll tell ya! My dream is to make my own harem guild! Every day, I would bring those girls along with me into the dungeon and fight those monsters! Dude! That’s the dream!” said Endless Starlight with a strong sense of justice.

Zhang Yang was stunned. This guy...Did he delete his account because the guild was disbanded, and he could not have any girls by his side? Pfft... if that was the case then, it much have been a real shocker!

The moment Zhang Yang had laid eyes on these two new members of the party, he already had plans to recruit them into Lone Desert Smoke. Endless Starlight was a strong tank. He could lead a separate team as an exploration team! Daffodil Daydream on the other hand was to fill the empty slot of the main party, she could be one of the core member in the battle team for the Professional League!

As they walked for about 7 to 8 minutes into this dark pathway, the party had walked out of the darkness and into the bright day light. They were standing by a huge hillside. There, by the side of the hill, stood a majestic castle, albeit in ruins. The entrance door of the castle had the carvings of two huge Centaurs. One of them was wielding a spear and was in an attacking stance. The other was drawing a huge a long bow. Both of them looked like they were gods immortalized into art. Surrounding the entire hillside were burning torches stabbed into the ground to illuminate the surrounding.

“Let’s go!” Zhang Yang unsheathe his sword and took the lead.

‘Ding! You have entered the Centaur Castle! The Castle has 5 floors. The Evil Necromancer Zac is located at the highest floor of the Castle! You have to survive each test at each floor to defeat the Evil Necromancer Zac!’

Everyone’s mini-map display had changed into the castle interior.

“This is the land of the dead slumbers...Anyone who dares to intrude shall die!” A husky voice echoed from afar. No one could tell whether the voice belonged to a female or male.

“Damn. This place is spooky. I’m getting the creeps here!” said Endless Starlight. He had successfully taken over Fatty Han’s role of being the party’s most annoying, talkative person.

Everyone proceeded further into the massive castle and was shocked to what they saw. There were so many monsters around they could not contain their tense intake of breath upon sighting them. The place was so huge that it could fit 10 thousand people and still have the space to play soccer! The worst part of this place was that it was completely filled with monsters, squeezed tightly like sardine in a can!

The monsters around here only comprised of one type. They were all centaurs, presumably the royal guard. They were all undead, walking skeleton, some of them still having rotting flesh dangling from their skeletons.

[Centaur Royal Guard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 40

HP: 80,000

The HP was not much but their numbers were.

“Nice! There’s so many monsters here! Grinding would be a piece of cake!” Fatty Han cried out excitingly. Even since they had reach level 30, Fatty Han had never got the chance to be enlisted into the Level Ranking Board. Since there were so many monsters around to kill, the amount of experience point to be obtained here was luxurious!

Zhang Yang stopped and thought for a moment before saying, “Fatty, use <Barrage> and get the monster’s aggro to start the fight. Run behind me after that!’

“Ok!” Fatty Han immediately cast <Barrage> and attack the furthest region. A wave of arrows was shot into the sky and landed on the monster.

“-307!”

“-310!”

“-301!”

...

Various damage text floated over and over 10 monsters stomped their hooves and charged towards Fatty Han.

“Good lord! How did you pull so many monsters! I can’t handle that much!” Endless Starlight cried. He thought that Zhang Yang and the rest of the party knew he was a Defender, who excelled in mass crowd control, that was why the party had pulled that many monsters in one go!

Even though he was a future super star, but as of now, he was just a new player who had only joined the game for only 2 months. The moment he saw there were more than 10 monsters charging towards the party, his heart sank. However, he did not budge from his stance, as a tank, even if he had to die, he must die in the front line!

Zhang Yang saw how Endless Starlight was behaving and laughed. “Honey dear, give me a shield!”

Han Ying Xue gave Zhang Yang a stare, but nevertheless waved her hand, casting a <Holy Shield> on him.

Zhang Yang activate <Blood Rage> and gained 30 Rage points. He quickly used <Charge> and dashed towards the incoming monsters.

<Thunder Strike>!

<Horizontal Sweep>!

With two AoE attack skill unleashed, all incoming monsters were inflicted with “-262!”, and “-1550!”. Every monster that had their aggro on Fatty Han instantly turned towards Zhang Yang.

“Start the attack!”

Zhang Yang commanded. The verbal command was for Endless and Daffodil. Everyone else had already got used to Zhang Yang’s attacking pattern. They would automatically attack without him needing to command.

Endless Starlight was attacking the monsters but when he noticed that neither of the monster had their aggro on him, he cried out. “Zhan Yu! You’re one strong dude! You could still handle all the aggro properly when there are so many monsters! Honestly, I’m so confused right now! Which class was the one supposed to be good at handling mass aggro control again?”

Daffodil Daydream was being cautious. She was so afraid that her attack would OT. However, after one <Rain of Fire>, the monster had completely ignoring her! She was both surprised and happy at the same time. She was surprised that Zhang Yang could handle the aggro so well after a Pyromancer attacked. As a high DPS class player, she had never felt the joy of casting all her demolishing spells without the worry of OT!

Zhang Yang was not standing statically in the field, instead, he used <Thunder Smash> to slow the monsters around before rounding them up together to maximize the damage caused by the team's AoE skill. While he was doing that, he used <Block> to nullify the monster's attack. Still, he was taking some light damage, but he was not worried for even a second as there was a super healer standing behind him!

If he had to, he could unleash all his skill and could still heal over what Han Ying Xue could!

Endless Starlight charged into the fight as well. As a professional tank, he never broke the rhythm. He activated <Devotion>, <Justice Bash>, <Strong Hammer> and a series of AoE skills to attack the monsters.

¹Page: Page here refers to the windows tab. Usually a tab would have a fixed amount of storage slots. Zhang Yang had already expanded page which means one page will be 500 inventory slots.

Chapter 144: Another One!

Endless Starlight's first thought was, once all the skills were out, even if he could not capture all the monster's aggro, he could at least capture 3 monster's attention. However, he was surprised that not a single monster had turned to face him!

Pro!

As a tank, especially a Defender tank, Endless Starlight understood clearly the difficulty at maintaining a mass aggro! As a Defender that was said to excel in mass aggro control, whenever he faced a large group of monsters, there was bound to be one or two monster that would slip pass his fingers and cause trouble to the attacking players. It cannot be helped, even if a Defender is supposed to be strong at mass control, they had only <Devotion> and <Spike Shield>, the rest of a Defender's skills could only hit a maximum of 3 targets. That was why when a Defender pulled a group of monsters, he must not focus on one but all monsters simultaneously. A Defender had to switch his target constantly to make sure that all monster had an equal amount of aggro.

Zhan Yu here on the other hand was an odd existence. Not only he had managed to prevent anyone from OT, he could even prevent a Defender from getting ahold of any monster's aggro! This guy is extremely strong, beyond epic proportions!

Even though the Centaur Royal Guards were elite monster, they did not last long when everyone was attacking together! Since players obtain their AoE skill at level 20, as long as the tank could hold on to the monster's aggro firmly, they could attack to their

heart content, and increase their killing efficiency to its maximum! One minute later, monsters started to drop dead, after another 30 seconds, all 16 monsters had died and dropped the first battle loot.

‘Ding! You have kill Centaur Royal Guard. Obtained 10,050 Experience Points (50 point party bonus!)!’

‘Ding! You have kill...’

Everyone heard the repetitive rings of the notification as their experience point rose up like the beanstalk. Everyone had obtained at least 160,000 experience points!

“Woah! My experience points rose up like a rocket!” Daffodil Daydream smiled from ear to ear. Her skills were good. She had been depending on the AoE skill <Rain of Fire> to kill monsters at a fast pace. However, she could only handle 7 to 8 normal tier monster at most! The experience point was not fast compared to this. No matter how fast she could skill, this method was much faster than her working alone! These were elite monsters! Their HP was at least 20 times the HP of a regular normal monsters. The experience points she had just obtained was at least 20 times more!

Fatty Han laughed. “Haha! When we had done with these monsters here! I can get myself into the Level Ranking Board again!”

So far, in White Jade Castle, the first place was held by Ashen Reborn at level 42, Puppy Soldier from at level 41 being the last. Do not underestimate them for the fact that they were only 2 levels

ahead of Fatty Han. Once players had reached the level 40 threshold, gaining another level from there was even harder and ever. Under normal circumstances, player would have to at least spend 5 days to gain just one level!

The fastest way to gain levels was to fight and kill monsters in groups! If those monsters were elite tier, the leveling speed will be much faster. That was why Fatty Han was so confident.

Zhang Yang grinned and cried out. “Fatty, do your thing again!”

Since the first wave of monster was rather smooth, Fatty Han tried a little better and aim <Barrage> at the center among the crowds of monsters. This would not only attract the monsters that are attacked, it would also trigger the nearby monsters. This time, he had pulled 21 monsters.

Zhang Yang turned to Endless Starlight and said, “Starlight, let’s compete. Let’s see who could pull more monsters this time?” Professionals are all a little egoistical. If you want to convince them, you’ll have to display a better performance than they could.

Zhang Yang had a few seconds head start at the first waves of monsters, and inflicted a good amount of aggro. This time, Starlight was confident. He strafed along with Zhang Yang side by side. Even if he could not be as good as Zhang Yang, he could still hold on to several monster’s aggro firmly.

He immediately replied, “Ok! But neither of us can use <Provoke>!”

He then raised his shield in his hand and tossed the shield before he was anywhere near the monsters.

Zhang Yang nodded and activated <Blood Rage>. He gained 30 Rage and used <Charge> after a few steps forward to get into range. The range of <Charge> was shorter than <Shield Toss>.

<Horizontal Sweep>!

With a single stroke, his damage output was instantly spiked! A Guardian's <Shield Oath> could provide additional 20% aggro value. Even if his attack were not aggro-inducing type, he had cause 1,000 over damage, his aggro value would be the same as other classes' 1,200 worth of damage aggro value!

Every monster around turned their heads to Zhang Yang instantly.

<Thunder Strike>! Slow!

Another chain of attacks was unleashed, all crowded and concentration like fireworks in the sky! Zhang Yang lead the monsters around circling.

Starlight was frustrated at his failure. No matter how many skills he threw out, not a single monster would even turn their head to look at him! As if he was reliving a psychological nightmare that he experienced in his past, Starlight turned solemn.

Zhang Yang smiled warmly and said, “Starlight, do you know why all the monsters attack me instead?”

“ ... ”

“That’s because a tank efficiency depends not only on skills and technique. You’ll also need strong equipment to back you up! Even two of your attacks couldn’t compare to one of mine! How do you expect the monsters to be lured towards you?!” Zhang Yang laughed.

Wei Yan Er laughed as well. “Hehe! You must have that kind of perverted face as well! That’s why the monster won’t even want to look at you! Unless you have the looks of a beauty lady like me, my cousin sister, Sister Sun, and this beautiful Daffodil lady here!”

Zhang Yang turned around and raised an eye brow. “Little brat! The rest are fine, but you’re way too far from being a lady!”

Wei Yan Er could not help but to lower her head and stare at her own flat chest. She then got angry and bared her teeth at Zhang Yang.

“Yan Er, don’t mind him! He is just a little boy! Only a little boy would pick a fight with little girls!” Han Ying Xue consoled her.

Wei Yan Er nodded but twitched her eyes when she felt that something was wrong with her cousin sister’s statement. “Hey!

Why'd you call me a little girl!?"

Everyone laughed happily and the tension in the air was dispersed and replaced with warm comradeship. After a while, the second wave of monsters were killed. This time, they were lucky. There were many Level 40 Black-Steel equipment. Even though the equipment were weak but they were at level 40! They could fetch a few gold coins in the Little Merchandize Shop!

Endless Starlight was not a numbskull. He understood what was Zhang Yang trying to explain to him. Yet, he sighed heavily. "My equipment is bad and I can't find a way to upgrade them. Even time I joined a dungeon, I would find a random party. Let's not even mention a field boss!"

He would have been safe if he had not mention field boss. But when he did, Daffodil twitched and almost blasted him away with a <Fire Blast>.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Our guild, Lone Desert Smoke had recently decided to build a secondary dungeon raiding team. You could try and be the main tank for that team!"

The moment Zhang Yang had said that, the rest of his gang raised an eyebrow. Since when we were building a second team?

Zhang Yang noticed them but remained quiet.

I had that thought when I saw Endless Starlight!

Endless Starlight was stunned and expressed a face that was both happy and suspicious.

Lone Desert Smoke was now at big hit in the community. They had successfully obtained 4 First Clear Achievement. Even though their standard operating procedure was not as strong and efficient as a super guild, they could still outperform their own expectations and raise on to the top and beyond! There were sayings among the players around that anyone who could join Lone Desert Smoke would be leaping in a huge gap of performance. There were even players from other major cities had sent their request for an interview to join the guild. As long as the guild would accept them into the guild, anyone would be willing to run from anywhere around the globe just to be in White Jade Castle.

However, under Zhang Yang's strict "Only Elites" rule, Lone Desert Smoke showed a slower expansion rate. Because of that, many players were proud to be in the guild. To them, it was a display of both power and capability!

However, a true professional would not just walk up to your door step and volunteer themselves to the guild. A diamond would shine bright on its own, as long as them could perform better than the rest of the players around, other guild would naturally send their invitation instead! So far, Lone Desert Smoke had recruited close to 2,000 players of high-level players, but neither of them were players that was one of the professionals Zhang Yang could recognized in his previous life.

However, at that moment, Endless Starlight was touched! Zhang

Yang had expressed his sincerity! Even though the secondary dungeon raid party is not the best team, he was still offered a position as the second team main tank in the guild! This was an achievement better than he could ever have!

“Join us! Join our guild!” Striking the metal while it’s hot, Zhang Yang sent a guild invitation over with a warm smile.

Endless Starlight was already wavering; and when Zhang Yang had offered him a place among his side, he accepted it grudgingly.

Just like that, Zhang Yang had effortlessly obtained a strong future tank.

Next...

Zhang Yang turned around and faced Daffodil Daydream and smiled kindly.

“Daffodil, since you do not have a guild, why don’t you join us as well? We are playing a game, might as well get along together!”

Wei Yan Er had goosebumps the moment she saw Zhang Yang’s weird smile. “Noob tank, that kind of face are you wearing...You look like those weird uncles who goes around in their vans to kidnap little girls.”

“Nah...I think that he looked more like one of those pimps who kidnap young girls for their own business!” said Han Ying Xue.

Daffodil scoffed. “I do not wish to be in the same guild as that freak!”

Zhang Yang laughed lightly and desisted. Since he had the time of his life, he could slowly lure her in later.

Fatty Han continued to fire <Barrage> and the party slowly proceed in deeper. Sun Xin Yu had gone off alone in stealth to search for the second-floor entrance. She came back after quite some time and reveal the location at the end of this floor! There was even a level 40 boss guarding it!

Everyone got excited when they know that there was a boss waiting for them! Level 40 boss means level 40 equipment!

The team killed and killed their way in. Every one put their backs into proceeding further down the floor but the monsters here was just too many for them to handle. They had fought until 12 midnight and had only cleared one third of the entire monsters around.

Zhang Yang had been hearing some sneezes from behind and found out that the girls, especially Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue, and Daffodil Daydream had been sneezing. He then sighed worriedly and announced. “Alright, let’s call it a day! Let’s find a safe spot and log off then. We’ll continue this tomorrow!”

“Ok!” Even the men were shaking their heads, trying their best to stay awake this whole time. They would have skipped their bed

time if they knew that the Castle had only one floor. It's better to rest properly if they wanted to clear the entire Castle properly since there were 5 floors to go! Normally, there would be a mini-boss on every floor, and the last one on the 5th floor would be the last boss! If the rest of the floors were as jam packed as the first floor, the party would need to spend at least 3 to 4 days if they were to clear the entire Castle!

Zhang Yang had decided that it would be better for the party to have their proper rest. Tomorrow, they shall fight with all their might!

Chapter 145: Continuous Grinding

The next morning, Zhang Yang did his daily training and had his breakfast soon after. He visited the official site to read updates and news and the forums.

In the dungeon fight topic discussion, many guilds had posted their own battle results there to promote themselves and attract the attention of players and possible future alliances. Popularity is the main factor that would directly impact the revenue of a sponsored guild!

So far, everyone had started raiding the level 40 dungeon, Shadowmoon Castle: Castle Interior. Most of the post here in this discussion forum were about the bosses in the Castle Interior. About 5 days back, there were guilds that had started to gather level 40 players to raid the Hard mode of the Castle Interior dungeon to gather information and experience to facilitate the Hardcore mode.

So far, majority of the guilds around had already defeated the first 2 bosses of the Hardcore mode, and in the progress of defeating the third boss. Furthermore, the guild that have the first kill of the two bosses of the dungeon was Crimson Rage.

It looked like after Crimson Rage had successfully defeated Chavos the Mountain Giant, their ability and strength had rose to a higher level. It enabled them to forcefully stand on top of other guild in the entire China server.

There was another discussion in the forum that had reports on each super guild's progress in the game. The report was rather in-depth; there was news on which guild has the last boss's first kill, news about which guild had the potential to claim the dungeon First Clear! The post was rather long and detailed; it contained a long discussion and explanation and summarized a prediction.

A player named "Martian Homeland" had predicted that the guild that will obtain the Castle Interior dungeon First Clear Achievement was Radiance. His reasons explained that the guild master, Sword of Light was the main tank of the guild, and had strong skills and capabilities. A strong tank is the main factor to win the 5-man dungeon.

The next in line was Crimson Rage. This all-female guild has performed extraordinary in the first two bosses of the dungeon. They had the leading advantage and could raid the dungeon successfully if they could maintain their performance.

Next in line was The Glory, Yellow Flame, Sky High and so on. Lone Desert Smoke had only appeared after the 10th position.

According to Martian Homeland, he had high hopes for Lone Desert Smoke and had them placed at the third place. However, he explained that the recent quiet behavior of Lone Desert Smoke depicts that they had no intention to fight for the latest dungeon's First Clear Achievement! That was the reason why he had place Lone Desert Smoke down the ranking list. It even went even lower when Lone Desert Smoke did not perform any other significant actions!

His discussion had led to many players to take part in his discussion. There were many players who agreed to his explanation, and some others who presented a counter argument. In the argument, those players brought up the Marzerway's Lair. Initially, many other guilds were leading in advance and even managed to fight all the way into the last boss. Lone Desert Smoke were a little slower than the rest of the guild. However, when they started the dungeon, they had successfully conquered the entire dungeon in a day!

The argument example that the opposition side had triggered another argument from the government side, saying that Marzerway's Lair was a special case. The 5th stage of the final boss could only be beaten with the help of the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. Without it, no one could survive the stage. Lone Desert Smoke party had defeated the boss with the help of the potion instead of their own strength!

Lone Desert Smoke supporters started to counter back with their arguments. To begin with, did the Hardcore mode require any special item to successfully raid it? It is would, almost every guild that had reported their progress would had reported about it! There was no new battle information about the dungeon for a few days now!

Both sides continued with their heated arguments. Neither of them showed any signs of backing down from their stance. The post got larger and had already exceeded 4,000 comments and posts!

Zhang Yang smiled a little. He checked the time and logged into

the game at 9am sharp. Once he was in the game, he saw Fatty Han and Endless Starlight was at a corner talking about something. A fat guy and a skinny dude was an odd combination but both of their faces showed the same pervert grin. Looks like both of them were getting along just fine. Zhang Yang thought that they might work together perfectly when they start leading the secondary party.

Zhang Yang walked close and could hear a glimpse of their conversation.

“...and that is why a rotten carrot and a pregnant woman is the same of a kind. Both of them were the result of delayed pull outs!”

That was what Zhang Yang had heard, coming out from Endless Starlight mouth.

Fatty Han was stunned was clearly impressed. “Deep! That’s deep bro!” He exclaimed, impressed.

“I know right!? Oh by the way, what were we talking about before we stray off topic?”

“...Good morning guys!”

“Erhm...Oh! Morning!” Both of them grinned sheepishly.

“...I’m not going to ask what you were talking about.”

After a while, Hundred Shots logged into the game. All four of the dudes gathered together at a corner of the field. After a night, all monsters that were killed yesterday had respawned, filling back the empty space around and causing the field to be as crowded as ever. If they were to walk a few steps forward, they would ultimately cause an uproar.

The girls were a little late. Zhang Yang had already asked them to gather here at 9am sharp. The earliest one to logged in was Daffodil Daydream at 9.09am. Sun Xin Yu was the second, at 9.11 am. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er logged in together at 9.15am.

Zhang Yang could not help but asked the ladies, “What happened? Didn’t I say 9am? What took you so long?”

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang. “I need time for make-up. Duh!”

Zhang Yang was stunned, infuriated at her reply. “You are playing ‘God’s Miracle’. A VRMMOPRG! Why would you need to have make-up for?! What are you expecting? An audience watching you wearing the gaming helmet, lying on the bed doing nothing?!”

The moment he said that, all the girls were angered immediately. Zhang Yang instantly understood that everyone here was doing their make-up.

Sigh...Man and woman’s thinking were so different that they

might start a war with each other like Alien Vs Predator!

“Argh...Forget about it, let’s go clear the monsters, shall we?”

If this place was not for a quest, it was still an excellent place to grind. The experience points here were really abundant! However, to properly utilize this field of experience points, one must have a strong team! You’ll need a strong tank to handle the monsters aggro and also a strong healer to support the tank!

After a series of attacks, monsters had dropped uncountable amounts of [Cotton Cloth], useless items, and coins. Naturally, tasked to pick items were Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue. Whoever dares to take the job away from them would be public enemy number 1! However, the number of monsters around were overwhelming both their inventories! Items besides equipment could be stacked up to 200 count a stack, however, equipment on one hand took up one slot each.

Unable to continue on, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue had to let someone else to loot the items.

The collected goods were above average. There were many Black-Steel tier equipment but there were also a number of Level 40 Green-Copper! Both Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream were players who have never seen such a luxurious loot were drooling endlessly. Zhang Yang had the equipment distributed to them but since neither of them had reached level 40, they had to keep their equipment in their inventory instead.

However, that was only a matter of time. Since the party had killed many monsters and gain a sum of experience points yesterday, even though it was not enough to level up, they were close to it. Daffodil would level up in just another hour while Endless Starlight would take a little longer. Once the party had cleared every monster in this floor, level 40 was just a few steps ahead.

After last night's experience, Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream were able to match with the party of Zhang Yang and gang. Another hour passed, and Zhang Yang, Daffodil, Starlight, and Hundred Shots had leveled up.

Zhang Yang invested his SP on <Block> and maximized the skill to level 10. Even though the skill had been nerfed exponentially, it was still a Guardian's bread and butter. It had to be the first skill to maxed before any other skill.

[Player: Zhan Yu] (Guardian)

Level: 40

HP: 6320

Defense: 360

Strength: 285

Melee damage: (729 – 781) x 110%

He had equipped the [Heart of Fallen Warrior]. Even though it did not have any bonus attributes, it possesses a skill that could temporarily add 2000 Defense! Any boss below Gray-Silver tier would definitely deal nullified damage!

As the team fought with increasing synchronicity, Zhang Yang started to pulled more and more monsters. He started at 10 a time and rose to 20 and even 30 monsters in one breath!

However, once the monsters started to increase to 20 counts and more, Zhang Yang had to depend on a long cool down skill or an equipment skill to survive. Still, Zhang Yang had more skills hiding under his sleeves. If <Shield Wall> had been used, he could use <Berserker's Heal>. There were still other skills such as the Lover's Sword <Lifesteal>, <Merlina's Shadow>, [Servant]'s <Substitute>, <Heart of Fallen Warrior>, and when everything had been used, <Shield Wall> would have already finished its cool down and its ready to use!

Be it his damage or his skills, Zhang Yang's outstanding performance left Endless Starlight breathless. He truly believed that Zhang Yang alone could have kill every monster here with all his skills. He had never known that a tank's potential could be raise to such a level! Zhang Yang's display of power had left him a burning passion! The little boy was too excited that, he imagine that he could be as strong, and as prominent as Zhang Yang, he could imagine his life being surrounded by beautiful girls slobbering all over him! Endless Starlight was not the only one, even those who were closer to Zhang Yang were left speechless.

“Noob tank! You’re just unbelievable!” said Wei Yan Er with a straight face. “Ah! Don’t misunderstand, I’m praising you!”

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and said, “In that case, let me return the favor. You are unbelievable! Your entire family is unbelievable!”

Han Ying Xue immediately interjected with both her hands on her waist. “Hey! Stupid Yu! Who’s unbelievable now?”

Oh crap! He had forgot that this b*tch was in the same family as Wei Yan Er!

Zhang Yang quickly swung his sword around and cried, “L-Let’s go! OOOOO!”

The team had started the floor at 9am and had only managed to clear half of the first floor at 12 noon. Zhang Yang called for the team to log out and take 1 hour off to have their lunch and come back at 1pm sharp.

He quickly added a sentence before they disappeared. “Those of you that need to do your make-up thing. Please come 5 minutes earlier!”

Han Ying Xue snickered. “Dummy. One look and I know that you are completely oblivious to how a woman behave!”

Daffodil added. “Actually, I had started at 8.30am and I could not make it in time!”

Zhang Yang dripped cold sweat.

...

The team gathered back at 1pm sharp. Luckily the girls were punctual this time since neither of them needed to redo their make-up.

With the uncountable number of monsters killed and the luxurious amount of experience points to everyone, those who were already at level 40 had rose by a level while Endless Starlight and Hundred Shot who were the lowest levels among the party members had reached level 40.

The time was already 7pm and the team had only a certain distance to reach the end of the floor. They would probably need to clear a few more monsters to reach the first floor’s mini boss.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, “Everyone! Let’s have a break and eat dinner! Don’t come back with an empty stomach! The body is the most important asset! You’re not you when you’re hungry! Eat a snicker or something! I don’t want the team to make a mistake!”

After Zhang Yang had ordered the team to gathered back after one hour, everyone logged out and took a break.

Chapter 146: First Boss Of The Castle

Right after dinner, the team gathered to clear the floors; all the way until they have met the first boss.

[Captain Guard Gail Baghdad, Legendary Centaur Hero]
(Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 41

HP: 820,000

The male centaur was huge, with his white horse body, along with a muscular human half. With just one look, you would know that he was a formidable one, having emitting strong hostility and strength that even his attackers would doubt their capabilities. He wielded a long spear on his right hand, with a long bow hanging from his back.

His face stoic and rigid, with eyes glowing emerald flames burning evilly as the only noticeable movement around his complexion! Rather than feeling fear, Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream were both excited as they had never encountered a Gray-Silver boss before.

Looking at the boss, Fatty Han asked, “Am I seeing things, or is that a spear AND a bow? I’m pretty sure players could only use only one type of weapon, no?”

Zhang Yang scratched his chin and replied, “That boss is a legendary hero. He could be the combination of both Warrior and Hunter classed!”

Fatty immediately became envious. “F*ck! How could that be? Damn! I wish players could have double classes as well!”

Zhang Yang laughed a little and said, “If players could have more than one class, then what’s the use of having class specializations in the first place?”

“How do we fight it?” Sun Xin Yu interjected abruptly. The Ice Queen did not like to waste time.

Only now, had Zhang Yang realized that the world of ‘God’s Miracle’ was just too large for him. Taking the Underground Tower as an example, Zhang Yang had never heard nor took part in the raid before in his previous life!

As to Sun Xin Yu’s sudden interjection, Zhang Yang had to think for a moment before he could say anything. “As we can clearly see the boss possibly having weapons of two classes, I can only conclude that he should have both the Warrior and Hunter’s skills!”

“There’s no battle plan to formulate now. Let’s give it a shot and have a better understanding after.” Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and moved forward. The surrounding coast was clear; no more monsters around to interrupt the battle. As according to

game mechanics, elite-tier monsters should have a 5-hour respawn time. They would not have to worry about monsters being around for the time being.

Gail Baghdad's effective aggro trigger range was rather large, and he smiled evilly at Zhang Yang even when they were 20 meters apart from each other. He stomped his hooves and thrust his spear at Zhang Yang.

“You dare to enter the domains of the Castle? Your living essence will pollute this land for the slumbering death! Begone!”

Zhang Yang used <Charge>.

<Block>!

‘-702!’

‘-1,504!’

Gail Baghdad growled loudly as he effortlessly spun his spear in the air, as if it was weightless. With the speed of lightning, the spear burst forward. Zhang Yang could barely move away, but fortunately with his skills, he managed to dodge with his face only an inch away from the tip of the spear.

KIIIIInnnng!

The sound of sharp metal connecting to its target, accompanied with the sparks that were generated from his armor scraping.

‘-2,912!’

He was hit! Gail Baghdad’s physical attack was more than 4,000, and Zhang Yang still received approximately 3,000 damage even after accumulating the damage reductions.

Endless Starlight jumped in shock. “Damn! I always knew that a Gray-Silver boss was strong, but I never knew that it could be THIS strong! If I were to take that damage... I could die in just two seconds!”

Endless Starlight wore a full set of Level 30 Green-Copper equipment. Even with a shield, his HP was only at around 4,000.

Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the attacking team had begun their assault. Arrows, Fire Balls, all sorts of flashy skills were in the air, making what was once an empty sky into utter chaos in just a matter of seconds.

Wei Yan Er had a full Gray-Silver tier equipment on her, coupled with the ultra-slow two-handed weapon with 3.8 seconds attack interval, which made her one time normal attack devastatingly powerful. With Zhang Yang’s <Cripple Defense> fully stacked on the boss, her damage could reach around 1,200! Excited with her all-time strength, she spammed her skills repeatedly while crying “OH YEA OH YEA” all the way.

Zhang Yang could not help but to be amused by her childish acts and said, “Little brat, it’s about time you’re returning to school now right? What a shame! Even though you still have holidays left, you’ll have return to school the day after tomorrow! You might not even make it to the last boss!”

“You villain!” cried the little girl as she rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang. She wielded her weapon tighter in her hand and used <Tornado Cleave>, dealing 1,825 damage to the boss. In retrospect to a single attack damage count (skills or attack that attacks 1 instant of damage), her damage was much stronger than Zhang Yang’s <Destructive Smash> and <Horizontal Sweep> collectively. She had been following Zhang Yang all these time and obtained many “First Clear” Achievements that awarded her with plenty of skill points. She had invested them all to <Tornado Cleave>.

[Tornado Cleave] (Level 9): Waves the weapon in your hands like a tornado. Causes 160% melee damage to surrounding targets within 3 x 3 meters range.

Cost: 20 Rage.

Cooldown time: 6 Seconds.

Requirement: Melee Weapon.

When the skill is maxed out, the cooldown time will be reduced to 5.5 seconds and the damage will be increased to 170%. This was a

Beserker's main attacking skill.

Daffodil was a Spellcaster; a Pyromancer to be precise. She always had the pride of having better attack damage as compared to others. They say that grass was always greener on the other side, but when she compared her own damage to Sun Xin Yu, she was considered as a puny little noob player! As a woman of pride, she could never express her dissatisfaction. She only focused harder and fought faster with an unrelenting heart.

99%, 97%, 95%... the boss HP dropped down faster than ever with everyone trying their best to have the highest damage.

“Bunch of pests! I'll show you my true power!” Gail lifted his spear and spun it around, creating a circular radiance.

‘Ding! Gail Baghdad has used <Tornado Cleave>!’

‘-3,712!’

‘-4,123!’

‘-4,940!’

‘-4,963!’

Everyone around the boss' melee range received instant damage. Aside from Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Endless Starlight, and Wei

Yan Er were killed instantly!

“What a strong <Tornado Cleave>!” Zhang Yang had already guessed that Gail would have several Warrior skills, but he could never have guessed that the boss’ skill damage would be any higher than 5,000!

Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er were both having full set of Gray-Silver equipment, yet their maximum HP were only around 4,600 HP. Since neither of them had any damage reduction skills, they were killed in just one single stroke of the spear.

That skill did not have any progress bar; so the team thought that the boss was only taunting them instead of casting anything! Wei Yan Er’s death was as expected, but Endless Starlight and Sun Xin Yu both had skills to protect them, they were just not able to anticipate the boss’ skill.

Aside from the strong attacking power, the boss’ skill also contained a knockback effect, pushing Zhang Yang back 3 to 4 feet away from him.

“Wuu... Cousin! I died!” cried Wei Yan Er.

“Sigh... I told you to be a Spellcaster instead of a Berserker! You’re the one who insisted to be a Warrior!” Han Ying Xue sighed.

With the loss of two strong attackers, the party’s attacking power

dropped by a huge gap, slowing down the boss' HP loss.

Gail laughed happily and said, "Ahh! Souls! What wonderful souls! I can feel my strength growing!"

'Ding! Gail Baghdad has absorbed the power of the soul. All attacks increase by 50% for 10 seconds!'

'Ding! Gail Baghdad has absorbed the power of the soul. All attacks increase by 100% for 10 seconds!'

'Ding! Gail Baghdad has absorbed the power of the soul. All attacks increase by 150% for 10 seconds!'

Gail Baghdad's body glowed in a bloodied red color! Frightening and disgusting! Laughing maniacally, the boss' spear flew across the air and thrust towards Zhang Yang.

'<Block>!'

Without hesitation, Zhang Yang activated <Shield Wall>.

Another attack struck through, tearing the air around it.

'-1,928!'

Even under the <Shield Wall>, the boss could still inflict close to

2,000 damage to Zhang Yang. Obviously, after obtaining the buff, the boss' attack was now close to 10,000 damage!

Han Ying Xue quickly cast a <Holy Shield> and healed his HP back.

10 seconds later, <Shield Wall> ended and the red hue on the boss' body faded away, returning its attack back to normal.

“Crap! If there was any more melee fighters around, they will be killed off by that <Tornado Cleave>. I don't even dare to think how strong the boss would be!” said Fatty Han.

“That is why I had once said, the number of party members doesn't determine certain victory with a field boss!” said Zhang Yang.

If he had recruited several more people, and have them die off, the boss' increased damage would surely break through the defenses, and none of them would even survive even if Zhang Yang used <Shield Wall>. If the tanks and melee attackers perish, the next one who would suffer the same fate would be the ranged attackers. With the boss devastating attacks, everyone will surely die as well. It would only end with a complete wipe.

After a while, Gail Baghdad used another <Tornado Cleave>. Zhang Yang calculated the time and figured that the boss will use the skill after every 20 seconds.

For then on, Zhang Yang did not dare to use <Block>. If the boss made a combo with normal attack and the <Tornado Cleave>, the instance itself would deal more than 6,600 damage which exceeded his current maximum HP! If he wanted to survive the boss fight, he had to keep the skill ready to use anytime he needed it.

90%, 80%, 70%...

Once Zhang Yang solved the <Tornado Cleave> conundrum, Gail was really not a tough enemy to defeat. After all, he was just a mini-boss, the weakest among the 5 bosses!

50%!

Gail Baghdad stopped attacking suddenly. He then switched his weapon to the bow that was behind his back. He holstered the spear horizontally on the side of his horse body.

“Weak little beings, I have underestimated you all! You have forced me, the great Gail Baghdad to this end!”

Pew!

The boss shot an arrow towards Zhang Yang at melee range and immediately <Dazed> him! He then quickly galloped away from Zhang Yang and attacked from the maximum ranged distance.

‘-2,112!’

Another arrow landed, causing significant yet lowered damage.

So, he has finally switched from a Warrior to a Hunter.

Zhang Yang had a sudden thought and quickly kicked his feet to chase the boss.

‘-2,112!’

‘-2,112!’

Even though it was lowered, the attack interval was shortened! Before the change, the attack interval was 3 seconds once; now it was faster at 2 seconds an arrow! The accumulated damage would still be higher! To make things worse, ranged attack could not be negated with <Block>, ultimately putting a stress on Han Ying Xue’s healing load.

<Merlinda’s Shadow>

Zhang Yang had to cast the special ring skill to temporary ease the burden of Han Ying Xue.

Hunter-type monster’s weakness was that once any player got close to it, it could no longer attack!

However, Zhang Yang was worried that the boss might have the

<Tumble> skill. He did not dare to use <Charge> to get closer to the monster, instead, he had to only rely on his own regular movement speed. This 4-legged boss' speed proved to be something else. He could attack and run at the same time! As his speed was no slower than Zhang Yang himself, coupled with the vast area of the floor, Zhang Yang could be kited to death!

Zhang Yang could no longer let things run like this any longer. If he did not use <Charge> now, he would not even need to wait for the boss to use <Tumble> and just die before that!

Once Zhang Yang was close to him, the boss did not use any other Hunter skills on him, aside from <Breaking Shot> and a fist to his face.

‘<Block>!’

Zhang Yang raised his shield to block the incoming fist.

“Split up! As long as you can attack and can be healed, spread out as far as you can!” said Zhang Yang in the party channel.

If the boss could use <Tornado Cleave> in his Warrior state, that meant that he could use <Barrage> in his Hunter state to counter overwhelming odds.

His party obliged immediately and spread out into a half moon shape to surround the boss. Han Ying Xue was behind them to make sure none of her team mate lost too much HP! She made sure

that she could heal anyone the moment they received damage!

“Feeble little beings! Let the rain of arrow crush your souls!” Gail Baghdad shot an arrow into the sky suddenly, a progress bar appeared on his head. Rain of arrows suddenly started to appear towards Hundred Shots.

‘Ding! Gail Baghdad is channeling <Barrage>. Every target in 5 x 5-meter range will receive 3,000 natural every 2 seconds for 10 seconds!’

Hundred Shots’ reaction was rather fast; once he saw an arrow head coming towards him, he ran to the side to evade. However still, he was still not as fast as the arrow that was raining down on him. He had only received 3,000 damage. Luckily, the second wave of arrow would only attack after 2 seconds. Hundred Shots had already left the effective area.

Han Ying Xue cast <Regeneration> on him instead of casting a long casting healing spell. Since the boss would rarely attack a non-tank player in the field, she estimated that she could save some time instead to allow the <Regeneration> slowly heal Hundred Shots over time.

Zhang Yang summoned [Servant: Clear Lotus] now since he had used <Barrage>. While the boss was still in Warrior state, Zhang Yang did not want to waste Clear Lotus as she would die from <Tornado Cleave> too.

10 seconds later, <Barrage> ended. Gail Baghdad immediately

shot a <Breaking Shot> and caused Zhang Yang to enter <Dazed> state once again.

Zhang Yang came up with a quick idea and commanded Clear Lotus to attack him.

‘-1!’

Clear Lotus attacked Zhang Yang from the front, causing a nullified damage value. Zhang Yang did not mind the damage. The importance of the attack was to quickly dispel <Dazed>!

<Charge>!

<Thunder Smash>!

Zhang Yang slid through the field and slowed the boss down.

Unable to get away from Zhang Yang even after running left and right, Gail could only fight him with his fist.

<Block>!

Zhang Yang finally laughed. Comparing Gail when was in his Warrior state to now, it was easier to fight Gail in his pitiful Hunter state.

Everyone was gaping when they saw Zhang Yang's series of impressive maneuver. Even Daffodil Daydream was impressed.

“As expected from a legend. Zhan Yu really lives up to his name!”

40%, 30%... Gail Baghdad's HP was dropping even faster!

In that period, the boss had used several <Barrage>, but everyone was quick enough to react, taking only 1 instance of the attack each! Excluding Fatty Han, the rest of the party were all future professional players. Their reaction speed and intuition were strong. Moving around while avoiding attacks was just a walk in the park!

Though, on one hand, Fatty Han had been with Zhang Yang and received indirect training, therefore his reaction speed was also commendable.

20%... 10%... Gail Baghdad HP was almost dropping to zero!

Finally!

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Gail Baghdad. Obtained 163,050 Experience Points. (50 points party bonus)!’

THUD!

Gail Baghdad's humongous horse body fell, slamming heavily onto the ground.

Chapter 147: Harmonious And Loving Party

“We did it!”

The party channel was suddenly filled with cheers and laughter, but Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream were even more excited than the others could be. After all, they had never seen a Gray-Silver boss, much more participate in a party to kill one! This first achievement meant more to them than to Zhang Yang’s gang.

Hmph. This future-to-be superstar is now considered to be in my hands! Zhang Yang took notice that Daffodil was always wearing a smile on her face, which made Wei Yan Er look a little more annoyed. It somehow reminded her about a cartoon she watched when she was a kid, about a weird older gentleman and a young girl.

“Little brat! Get our prize!” Zhang Yang quickly gave her something to do when he noticed that Wei Yan Er was itching around after the battle ended.

“Aye aye, captain!” Wei Yan Er jumped with joy and hopped to the boss.

[Lunar Sol Magic Staff] (Gray-Silver, Staff)

Magic Attack: 690 – 750

<Unbound>

Level Requirement: 40

“Little Snow! Daffodil! Both of you roll for it!” said Zhang Yang grinning widely.

Daffodil’s expression changed instantly when Zhang Yang addressed her. She crossed her hands and said, “No, no, no, no! It’s okay! I’m already very happy with defeating a Gray-Silver boss! I even leveled up! I can’t ask for more!”

Han Ying Xue smiled warmly and replied her. “Girl, you’ve worked your way here! You deserve to get the equipment as well! Come, don’t be shy!”

Fatty Han and Wei Yan Er persuaded her as well. Daffodil only rolled for the equipment while being so abashed that her face was turning into a round peach fruit, and felt like if she did not accept the role, she would betray the nation and everything she stood for. In the end, Han Ying Xue rolled 74 points while Daffodil had only rolled 16 points.

Now that she lost her chance, she breathed a sigh of relief and smiled sincerely.

Han Yin Xue crossed her arms trying to think of a better way. She equipped the [Lunar Sol Magic Staff] and gave her Level 30 Silver-

Gray staff to Daffodil. Even though the new staff was still <Unbound>, the magic attack alone was 180 points higher than her previous staff. It was an obvious upgrade.

Daffodil wanted to reject the gift but in the end, she could not reject the sincerity of Han Ying Xue and accepted the second-hand equipment with red cheeks. Her original weapon was a Level 30 Green-Copper staff, when she switched to the new equipment, she gained 270 magic attack! That was an obvious upgrade!

It was a Gray-Silver tier Level 30 equipment after all! You could not buy it even if you had the money! Daffodil could not express her immense gratitude to Han Ying Xue, but only to hold on to her hands, shaking them endlessly. Han Ying Xue then moved closer and the two of them were whispering. Zhang Yang was wondering what they were talking about...

Han Ying Xue suddenly turned around and Zhang Yang saw a warm and charming eye. She then sent a private message to Zhang Yang saying, “Hmph! Dummy! You should think of a way to thank me!”

“Huh? What should I thank you for?”

“Haha! Dummy! I saw your wavering heart! The heart that reeks of romance! I’ve helped you to set things up now! Now, how do you plan to repay my generosity?”

Huh?! Romance? Me?!

Zhang Yang was bewildered. He then pieced the puzzle together and finally understood. Han Ying Xue misunderstood the entire situation! She thought that Zhang Yang had a thing for Daffodil Daydream!

“You misleading sow! Don’t stir things up when everything was fine! Yes! I was interested in her! But not sexually! I had an eye for her skills and capabilities! That was why I wanted to recruit her into the guild! What the hell have you done now? Don’t point things out that are not even there! You might make things awkward for me!” Zhang Yang quickly warned her.

“Hehehe! She’s quite cute though.”

What are you still doing?! Sigh!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. “Please, you’re pretty cute yourself!”

Zhang Yang had to resort to attack instead of playing safe. Fight fire with fire!

“Haha! Dummy! You’re 1,000 years too early if you want to try your luck on me!”

Phew! Even though he was not sure of the result, at least the topic was no longer about Daffodil.

While they were talking privately, Wei Yan Er opened another loot.

[Devotion of the Soul] (Silver-Gray, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +20

Vitality: +96

Strength: +48

Intelligence: +16

<Unbound>

Level Requirement: 40

Zhang Yang cried out, “Hah! Look at that! Starlight, you’re quite lucky to have a Knight class equipment!”

Even though it was a Heavy Armor, but the additional 16 Intelligence attribute automatically made it an armor that was suitable for Knights.

Knights were a special class. To make things clear, Guardians and Berserkers fell under the Warrior main class. Defenders, Sacred Knights, and Templars were under the Knight’s main class. Even though both Defenders and Templars use melee weapons to attack,

most of their attacks were Holy damage which was affected by the Intelligence attribute.

Endless Starlight was an outgoing man, with a slightly higher ego than the rest. Even though he only joined Lone Desert Smoke for just a day, he made it as his own home and helped himself to the armor, laughing all the way cheerfully!

[Skill Book: Breaking Shot]

Use: Teaches you <Breaking Shot>.

Class Requirement: Hunter.

Level Requirement: 30

“Good stuff!” Praised Zhang Yang. Even though the skill did not provide much damage after leveling it up, it was extremely useful in PK. A Hunter has the pet tanking for them in the front line, and along with their own <Fake Death> aggro clearing skill, a Hunter would not need to worry about having a monster coming to close to him. But in PK, a player would not behave as stupid as a monster! A player would automatically ignore the pet and aim directly at the player himself. Once a monster got close to a Hunter, 90% of his skill and damage would be rendered useless. To forcefully create a gap between the Hunter and the target, he or she could use either <Tumble> or use <Breaking Shot>.

Fatty Han denied the item immediately. “This thing is useless for me! I don’t even PK to begin with! Give this to Hundred Shots!”

Zhang Yang had a conversation with Fatty Han a few days back. Knowing that Zhang Yang wanted to build a PK party, Fatty Han would naturally support his brother without even knowing what it meant. To put it bluntly, Fatty Han could fight monsters all day long without flinching but PK was his kryptonite. He would be a sitting duck in the battle arena! Furthermore, Fatty Han’s main purpose in playing this game was to earn a fortune. He achieved that goal with Zhang Yang’s personal help now, earning at least 2,000,000 dollars a month! What more could he ask for?

<Breaking Shot> was considered to be a PK type skill, and naturally Hundred Shots got the priority over it. Before he could negotiate with Fatty Han, Zhang Yang gestured him to just accept the book. Hundred Shots obeyed Zhang Yang and learned the skill when he got it.

After witnessing the event that happened in front of his eyes, Endless Starlight was truly moved. “Looks like I’ve made the right choice to join you guys! What harmonious and loving team mates I have! Honestly, I have never seen such a team in my entire gaming life! To express my feeling, I want to dedicate a song to all of you called ‘D*ck in a box’ by Lonely Island. Ready? ARGH!”

Before he could start singing, he was brutally smacked in the head with a shoe and behaved himself.

The boss had several more items but the rest were only Green-Copper tier. None of them were interested in the equipment. They

kept it and decided to sell it off at Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop.

The team moved on to the next floor. After walking up a long flight of stairs, they encountered a mixture of monsters along the way. Aside from the Royal Guards, there was a new monster.

[Centaur Maid] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 42

HP: 60,000

MP: 40,000

When there was MP, there was bound to be a magic spell. If you only paid attention to the top half of these Centaur Maids, those that had not decayed were quite pleasing in the eye. Most of them were rather beautiful; having magnificent chests and all. Looking at the lower half, however, shaking their huge horse bodies as they walked around, you might just be turned off.

Fatty Han sighed and shook his head disappointingly. However, Endless Starlight started to stroke his chin and observed the female Centaurs like a wise old philosopher. "Honestly, a horse ass is quite plump and well formed!" Fatty Han immediately bowed down in respect to him.

Killing Royal Guards was fine, but killing Centaur Maids were a little troublesome. Their main attack was <Frost Arrow> which could deal 2,400 damage an instant. If they gathered a bunch of it in a go, even Zhang Yang would be killed instantly.

As the team proceed further up, the magic type monsters began to dominate the numbers. When the party was in the second floor, the huge space was completely filled with Centaur Maids. Luckily, they were not all that crowded as the first floor. They could lure in a maximum of two to three monsters at a time.

Endless Starlight was finally given a chance to shine. After provoking the monster, Starlight would mainly hold on to one monster while Zhang Yang would take care of the other two. Since Centaur Maids were the magic attack type, they would not need to chase around to attack Zhang Yang. The problem was that when there was more than one monster, having them standing apart would be efficient since they would not need to move around to attack. Luckily, the team had many “Interrupters”. Once the Centaur Maid started to cast a spell, the player would interrupt the spell. The Centaur Maid would have no choice but to rely on its physical attack to damage Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang took the chance to move around and kite the monsters. That way, he could gather the monsters into one spot to utilize <Thunder Strike>, <Tornado Cleave>, <Horizontal Sweep> and other AoE skills to properly attack.

Sun Xin Yu entered <Stealth> and began to search around the floor for the 3rd floor entrance. Once she was sure of the direction, the team moved on towards it. As they could not properly multi-kill the monsters around, the pushing speed was very much

reduced down to a snail's pace. They could only cover 10% of the entire place by midnight.

Zhang Yang then ordered the party to disband and have a good night rest before they continued the floor tomorrow morning at 9:00. Those who needed to make up were reminded to wake up half an hour earlier!

The extra reminder had Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil laughing their butts off.

The next day, every one gathered around 9:00 in the morning. The ladies were slightly earlier than yesterday but were still late by around five minutes or so. Daffodil Daydream was rather shy for her lateness and immediately apologized when she logged in. "I'm so sorry for my tardiness! I was so absorbed in doing my makeup and totally forgot about the time!"

Once everyone arrived, the party then moved forward.

Fatty Han suddenly got angry and cried out.

"Little Yang! There are so many guilds that have already taken down the first two bosses in the Castle Interior! I've picked up another disturbing news in the forums this morning! There were many players around that had been saying that we, the Lone Desert Smoke had been sucking on luck! Now that we have not made any progress, they said that they finally exposed our real trick! We were scared to fight the other guilds now! Damn! I'm so freaking pissed off!"

Seeing Fatty Han puffing with angry steam, Zhang Yang could only smile. “I think that those people who mocked us were all under super guilds. They are purposely trying to slander us! However, keep your cool, Fatty. Let’s deal with this quest quickly and raid the Castle dungeon!”

“Ok. The early bird gets the worm. We will take the “First Clear” Achievement! That will teach them a lesson!”

Wei Yan Er giggled playfully and said, “Pervy Fatty! I’d never knew that you could use idiom!”

Fatty Han stared back at her wide-eye and said, “I’ve been reading so many philosopher books that I can even read it back to you! Erhm... for example, “Sun Tzu Art of War” or “100 ways to Improve Your Sex Life”, or “What a Woman Wants”!”

“Fatty...you’ve revealed all your secrets again...”

Chapter 148: The Prince

Any magic type monster was weak and could be easily defeated as compared to a physical attack type monster, but when fighting with multitude of them, it did not matter how strong you were, the blast from the arcane magic was enough to send you to the grave!

The party did not dare to pull too many monsters in at one go and only took two or three at a time. Even though the killing speed was faster than killing one at a time, the efficiency was much lower than killing a large bunch like in the first floor. Thus, the progress was obviously slower, and the accumulation of experience points was slow as well. Still, this was just between the first and second floor, and the progress was better than grinding alone.

In just one day, the party had already made it through half of the floor. By then, almost everyone had their inventory packed with items. They had to discard some of the items to make room for more valuable ones. The two misers in the party, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were troubled and disturbed. If only they could just use the [Teleportation Scroll] and head back to town to sell them... But, if they did, they would have to start from the beginning, which was just a waste of time and effort!

Zhang Yang could not help but sighed heavily. “If only Hundred Shots could learn to make the [Portable Bank]...”

[Portable Bank]

Use: Summons a mobile bank, allowing players to deposit and withdraw items from their personal storage. The Portable Bank will disappear after 10 minutes.

Cooldown time: 1 hour.

Requirement: Master Engineering.

Zhang Yang then explained the description of the [Portable Bank]. Everyone was impressed by its use and one by one, they all encouraged Hundred Shots to quickly increase his Engineering mastery.

The difficulty of raising one's mastery to Master-tier was tough, but the recipe for the [Portable Bank] was so rare that no one had owned it by then! Everyone was excited but eventually accepted the harsh reality that it was still an impossible feat for them.

After clearing the floor for the entire day, the team finally managed to push a little towards the center. Zhang Yang called it a day and disbanded the party. Everyone logged off and had their rest for tomorrow.

At the brink of dawn, Zhang Yang started his training and went on to buy breakfast with the remaining 40 dollars in his wallet. Zhang Yang was so preoccupied with the Centaur Palace that he did not have time to visit the bank to withdraw cash! By the time he was done with the quest, the first thing he would do was to withdraw some cash. Any more delay and he would have literally

no money left to buy food!

The team logged in and gathered together at 9:00 in the morning and proceeded as normal.

The team and cleared the pathway to the boss at 10:00 at night and arrived at the second floor's boss.

[Prince Chateau Turk] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 44

HP: 880,000

The Centaur prince was standing majestically at the entrance to the 3rd floor. He was wielding a long spear with his right arm. As Zhang Yang approached him, he noticed a certain glimmer on his body with the shape of a sharp sword. When the glimmer appeared, Chateau Turk's head had a buff icon.

[Reflect Sword]: Counter any attack inflicted at 300% damage.

The buff was rather complicated and frequent. It was estimated to appear once every 30 seconds and would last for at least 10 seconds.

“Remember to stop your attacks when the [Reflect Sword] appears!”

Zhang Yang took the lead.

“The boss seems to be a Warrior class. Melee attackers stay away for now! You might get killed by the <Tornado Cleave>! I don’t want to see any of you lying dead on the floor the whole time!”

Inching closer to the boss, Chateau Turk’s appearance changed from a handsome majestic complexion to a nasty, irritated, and angry appearance.

“Why have you entered this land of the dead? The sinner should remain buried with their sins! Why must you exhume their hatred?!”

He picked up his spear and kicked off his hooves, charging towards Zhang Yang.

<Charge>!

Zhang Yang slid across the floor with his sword aiming directly at the prince.

‘-702!’

<Cripple Defense>!

‘-1,504!’ <Destructive Smash>.

‘-1,618!’ <Horizontal Sweep>.

<Charge> gave him 10 Rage, followed by a normal attack with 37 Rage, and <Block> that granted him 30 Rage. Zhang Yang spent it all on <Cripple Defense>, <Horizontal Sweep>, and <Destructive Smash>, generating a bigger aggro.

Zhang Yang was the only one attacking the boss so far. The rest of the melee attackers were still waiting behind for the <Tornado Cleave> to proc, to guess and estimate the frequency of the skill.

Among them, Wei Yan Er, a fighter to be at least, was always the one who could not wait to attack. Gripping the weapon in her hand firmly, she could not help but mutter alone on the side.

“Damn! Damn you all! Why did you came here! Why! Why did you wake me?!” 15 seconds into the fight, Chateau Turk bellowed angrily. “Die! Just die!”

Shuush!

He took up the spear in the air and spun it around, creating a shadowy image of a spear in the air.

‘Ding! Chateau Turk has used <Tornado Cleave>. All targets within 5 x 5 range will receive 6,000 physical attack!’

‘-4,512!’

Wham! Zhang Yang took a hit.

<Block>!

Zhang Yang frantically activated <Block> to block off the next incoming damage and made room for Han Ying Xue to heal him.

“Hold on! Wait for the next <Tornado Cleave>! Make sure to know the skill interval duration before you can start fighting!” Zhang Yang warned Wei Yan Er when he noticed she was fidgeting to swing her weapon. Wei Yan Er heard his call and behaved. Before he looked away, Wei Yan Er quickly bared her teeth at Zhang Yang.

“Heh. Little brat.”

10 seconds later, the bright glow suddenly radiated on the boss and formed sword like objects.

‘Ding! Chateau Turk has gained <Reflect Sword>!’

Zhang Yang immediately pulled back. He then relied on <Block> and physically moving around to evade attack. If he continued to

attack, he would be damaged from the reflect skill. Zhang Yang would be facing the boss and 3 additional Zhang Yang fighting against himself. Unless Han Ying Xue could triple her healing speed, she could not save him in time.

10 seconds passed and the buff expired. The boss cast another <Tornado Cleave> after 3 seconds.

With that, the party had obtained their battle plan and understood the boss' mechanics. Both <Tornado Cleave> and <Reflect Sword> would trigger every 30 seconds.

“Go! Melee attacker go! Remember to stop your attack in time!”

Wei Yan Er let out a loud battle cry and rushed into the fight with <Charge>.

10 seconds into the fight, Chateau Turk gained the reflect damage buff. Many of them were a little slow in stopping their attack and had to “eat” triple the amount of damage that they had inflicted on the boss. Han Ying Xue was suddenly pushed to her limit.

“Melee fighters back down now! When <Reflect Sword> ends, don't rush in back! A <Tornado Cleave> will be activated shortly after! Whoever is still in its range will surely die!” Zhang Yang cried in the party channel.

All melee attackers obliged and withdrew from the front line. Ranged attackers had only needed to stop attacking and wait until

<Reflect Sword> ended. Now that the attacking cycle had to pause now and then, it reduced their attacking period down to only 2/3, especially since the melee attackers needed to move away to avoid the <Tornado Cleave> and to wait for <Reflect Sword> to end, severely affecting their attacking speed. The boss' HP dropping rate was even slower than Zhang Yang had ever experienced.

Chateau Turk's attack were strong to begin with, and now that the entire party had to slow down and drag the fight longer than they had initially expected, Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang was pushed beyond their limit! It was lucky that Zhang Yang had many life preserving skills like <Berserker's Heal>, Lover's Sword <Lifesteal>, <Merlinda's Shadow>, and the +2,000 Defense accessory skill! He was too far from death to claim him!

Once the battle had stabilized, and everyone was doing what they could do without a problem, Zhang Yang summoned [Clear Lotus] and controlled her to fight along with the party.

90%, 80%, 70%...

It was tough and excruciatingly long, but the party managed to slowly drag down the boss' HP.

"You pest! Wretched beings! Monsters! Die! Just die and rot in hell!" The majestic Centaur cried out. His tone was so enraged that you could feel the tremor of destructive intent from his voice.

"The boss is being a little too dramatic, don't you think?" said Endless Starlight.

Fatty Han pout his lips. “We must have come in the wrong time! Perhaps he was in the middle of having a good time with his maids! Blowing of his steam, leaving him hanging, of course he’d be crazy!”

“Direct hit Fatty bro! Genius!” said Endless Starlight with admiration.

“Starlight, direct is what I am good at! You know, there was a folktale describing the first night of the maid and the prince, they say...”

“SHUT THE F*CK UP! BOTH OF YOU!”

Everyone else cried out in unison.

Fatty Han and Starlight exchanged and look and was baffled at their scream.

“...I had become the laughing stock of the Centaurs, and you... the other races would even want to make fun of me?” Chateau Turk growled and thrust his spear to the ground and unleashed massive 2-meter-tall blast waves that discharged everywhere.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

4 melee attackers were knocked back and was stunned for as long

as 10 seconds!

‘Ding! Chateau Turk has used <Earth Crash>.’

The boss moved a step forward and attacked Zhang Yang with his spear.

Unable to activate <Block> in stun status, Zhang Yang could only take everything the boss had to give. Han Ying Xue was unable to heal Zhang Yang in time! Furthermore, <Tornado Cleave> was about to activate soon, if he were to stand there motionless, the rest of the melee attackers would definitely be killed!

Zhang Yang immediately came to a decision and used <Substitute>.

At the same time, Endless Starlight activated <Sacred Protection> to remove all negative status ailments and cast <Justice Bash> and <Provoke> he then immediately ran far away! He knew that the boss was about to cast <Tornado Cleave>, which was why he has to keep his distance from the boss.

Impressive sense of judgement! Zhang Yang’s eyes gleamed with hope and admiration. Only under the unexpected situation would a player’s talent and capability be demonstrated.

Being provoked by Endless Starlight, Chateau Turk turned around and galloped toward him.

Zhang Yang quickly chased after him and said, “Starlight, continue running! Don’t drag the boss! Let me! You can’t tank the <Tornado Cleave>!”

“Ok!” Endless Starlight did not want to compete with Zhang Yang in the first place. He only wanted to help when Zhang Yang was rendered powerless under stun. He had to do something until Zhang Yang could return to normal!

Similarly, Zhang Yang used <Provoke> and lur the boss to him.

‘Ding! Chateau Turk has used <Tornado Cleave>. All targets within 5 x 5 range will receive 6,000 physical attack!’

<Block>!

After <Tornado Cleave>, Zhang Yang was prepared for the next incoming attack and deflected it with <Block>.

Shriiing! Han Ying Xue healed Zhang Yang back to full health and they managed to survive this sudden turn of event.

Chapter 149: Family Vengeance

“This guy must be suffering from a massive trauma! He’s been acting all crazy!” muttered Endless Starlight.

The boss had been constantly screaming “Bastard!”, “Pathetic!”, “Dreadful!”, “Wretched!” along with other kind of insults.

“Perhaps he was in love with a handsome young centaur like himself and the society stopped them from being together! However, in search for true love, the young prince went through hell and back to be together with his lover! Once the king knew about this, he had the prince’s lover killed to maintain his status! Thus, the angered prince cast a curse and sunk the entire castle down to ruins in order to be together with his lover forever!” said Daffodil Daydream with a yearning face.

Zhang Yang and everyone else exchanged a look and came to a conclusion. “[Fujoshi!](#)”

Fighting this boss would undoubtedly require a whole lot of patience and stamina, no matter what class you were! The attacking classes must always pay attention to the boss’ <Reflect Sword> status while Thieves and Berserkers would have to run away from the boss to evade the <Tornado Cleave>! The tank would have to always be ready to cast his life preserving skills to prevent them from wasting their hard work if he were to die! The healer was the worst; having to constantly maintain the tank’s HP! If the spell was slower, even by a micro second, the tank would die and would end up in a team wipe.

40%, 30%, 20%...

It was luck that the boss did not have any other skills aside from <Reflect Sword> and <Tornado Cleave>, and the multi target blast wave he used when he was at 50% HP! However, just with two skills alone, Zhang Yang and the team had their hands full! Neither one of them dared to relax for even a second!

15%, 10%, 5%!

Finally, after what seemed to be a whole lifetime of attacking, the boss' HP was approaching to its end. The party got lively and cheered all the way.

“Don't let your guard down just yet! A dead boss is the safest boss!” said Zhang Yang.

3%, 2%, 1%, 0%!

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Chateau Turk. Obtained 110,050 Experience Points. (50 points party bonus)!’

Phew!

Everyone breathed a sigh of relief and plopped down on their butts! They were completely worn out!

Shush! A white light flashed by and a figure stood at the top of

the boss' body. It was Chateau Turk!

Everyone was shock onto their feet!

“Z-z-z-z-z-zombie!” cried Wei Yan Er.

“Crap! A dead boss is still not safe, yo!”

“Calm down!” Zhang Yang cried out. “Look at him properly. Don’t you see that he is now just a Level 1 ghost?”

Everyone selected on him and was relieved when they had checked on his properties.

[Soul of Chateau Turk] (Normal)

Level: 1

HP: 0/50

Zhang Yang once faced a similar event in the Underground Tower, which was why he remained calm upon encountering Chateau Turk’s soul.

There was a yellow exclamation mark on top of his head,

indicating a quest ready to be received.

“...It seems that you have defeated me, foreigners!” This time, his tone was completely different than before. A majestic look and royalty aura emitted all over him even when he was just a ghostly figure.

Zhang Yang asked. “My lord prince, what had happened here? What caused this castle to fall?”

Chateau Turk’s ghost remained silent for a while before he began to move his lips. “I thought that I could have ended it all with the destruction of the castle. Never had I thought that I would be reincarnated by a Necromancer and had my soul trapped in a body full of anger, despair, and vengeance!”

He wavered a little before he spoke again. “I have a request for you! I want you to kill two people!”

Was it the two people that caused this prince to turn into a mindless and raging spectre?

Zhang Yang nodded and said, “My lord prince, who do you need us to kill?”

Chateau Turk went silent again for some time before talking again. “My father, Kinglose Turk and...the princess, Annie Balrum!”

WTF!? Internal affair?

The “fujoshi” inside Daffodil Daydream burned with a raging passion. She quickly asked, “My prince, they are both your close family! Why would you do so?”

Chateau Turk’s face turned sour, expressing anger and menace. He angrily waved his arms out and replied. “They are not worthy! That lowly b*itch! I treated her as my treasure! I provided her with anything that she could ask for! No matter what or how ridiculous her requests were, I tried my very best to satisfy her! But... but... she would dare to cheat on me! With my father!”

“The moment I had caught them in the act, my heart was broken into smithereens! How could it have happened?! How could she betray me? My father, of all people in the world! Why would he...! GRAHHH!!! Ha... Ha.... hahaha. In the end, I activated the Castle’s restricted magic. This magic was to be used when all else have failed during an enemy invasion. To bring down the enemy along with the centaurs! The castle was then sunk deep into the earth, killing... everyone!”

“I will not become the laughing stock of the Centaur race! This shame! This humiliation shall be cleansed only through death!”

Everyone stared with a blank look in their eyes when they found out that it was just a family dispute! Daffodil was the most disappointed among all. She actually hoped for the forbidden love drama to appear here!

Chateau Turk looked to the crowd and said, “Now that both of them have been reincarnated by the Necromancer, they even have the shame to live together! Adventurer! I ask for your help! Kill them for me!”

‘Ding! Chateau Turk has a quest for you: Kill Them Both! Will you accept it?’

Since they would need to kill them either way, might as well take a quest for it!

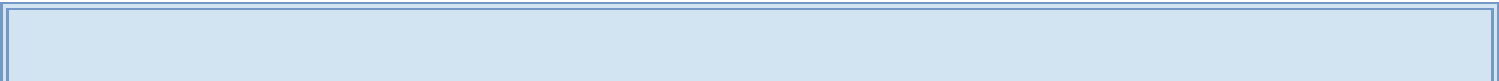
[Kill Them Both!] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: Kill the King Kinglose Turk and the Princess Annie Balrum! These shameless creatures should not be alive! Send them down to hell!

Progress: Kill King Kinglose Turk 0/1 Princess Annie Balrum 0/1

“Take this spear with you! In it, remains a fragment of my soul. I want to see them die right in front of my very eyes!” said Chateau Turk menacingly.

‘Ding! You have obtained the item “Chateau Turk’s Spear”’



[Chateau Turk's Spear] (Quest Item)

Use: Summons Chateau Turk vengeance spirit to witness the death of The King Kinglose Turk and the Princess Annie Balrum! Who knows what would happen? He might lend a hand!

Cool down time: 30 minutes.

After accepting the quest and the item, Chateau Turk's ghostly figure disappeared.

"Little brat! Time for our loots!" said Zhang Yang as he gestured towards the boss.

Wei Yan Er quickly ran around and reached out her timid hands.

[Sharp Rotten Tooth] (Gray-Silver, Dagger)

Weapon Attack: 274 – 334

Attack Interval: 1.9 seconds.

DPS: 160

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 40

“Woah! 1.9 seconds attack interval! This is a good item! If you use this to attack from behind, I think you might deal more than 1,000 damage, no?” Zhang Yang praised.

There was only one Thief class player in the party, and that was Sun Xin Yu. The Ice Queen took the dagger and equipped it. She then applied poison on the blade and it gave off a greenish hue glimmer.

“I have some thought in my head for a while now that I could never understand.” Fatty Han had been quiet for some time now. He opened his fat lips after he could no longer hold it in.

Everyone turned around to look at him, expecting some sort of rubbish topic.

“...The Centaur are all 4 legged, aren't they? So how could they... do it? No matter how hard I could think, it just doesn't make sense!”

“...”

[Genuine Love] (Gray-Silver, Ring)

Vitality: -20

Intelligence: +60

<Unidentified>

Note: Friend, you've been blinded by the power of love! It's time for you to replenish your intelligence for a change!

“How strange! It reduces your vitality and HP?” asked Hundred Shots.

Zhang Yang scratched his chin a while and explained. “It actually a worth trade off. Rings usually have 2 attribute bonus. For example, Vitality +15 and Strength +15. A Level 40 Gray-Silver ring should have +20 both attribute. If you look closely at the attribute arrangement of the ring, it was an even trade! You must know that Vitality is the “cheapest” attribute among all. To trade off 40 Vitality for 40 Intelligence is worth double its value!”

Everyone understood the significance of the ring once Zhang Yang explained it. Still, if you could make sure you won't receive any damage, having 100 HP and 10,000, HP would make a difference! However, having extra 40 Intelligence points was worth 400 MP and 40 magic attack damage! This was definitely a strong damage and healing endurance upgrade!

This magic type ring was rolled by Han Ying Xue and Daffodil. This time, Daffodil had a change of luck and obtained the ring at 89 points while Han Ying Xue had only rolled 67 points.

[Skill Book: Crash Magic]

Use: Teaches you <Crash Magic>.

Class Requirement: Guardian, Defender

Level Requirement: 30

Before Zhang Yang could say anything, Endless Starlight gave up his roll for the item, saying, “I would have rolled for the item if it was an equipment, since we’re fighting a Level 40 boss that will drop a Gray-Silver Level 40 equipment. Based on the party strength, I’m sure it would be a walk in the park! But a skill book is a whole different matter, it would only appear once in a lifetime. There’s even a chance that it will not appear again!”

What Endless Starlight said was the cold bitter truth. Equipment were easily discarded after obtaining a stronger one. But a skill could be used from Level 1 to Level 300! A skill may seem to be useless at first but in certain situations, it could be used to obtain certain victory!

Zhang Yang laughed. “Thank you, Starlight!” Zhang Yang rolled

and obtained the skill book. Zhang Yang immediately learned the skill.

[Crash Magic]: Use your shield to strike the target. If the target was casting a spell, the spell will be interrupted and the target would not be able to cast any skill for the next 3 seconds!

Requirement: Shield

Cost: 10 Rage.

Cool down time: 10 seconds.

He had finally learned an interruption skill! Zhang Yang was happy. He would not have to fight as hard the next time he faced a magic type; especially elite magic type monsters!

The team kept 10 or more Green-Copper equipment and moved on.

After a long flight of stairs, the team fought many more Centaur Maids and arrived at the 3rd floor.

Compared to the 1st and 2nd floor, the 3rd floor had fewer monster count. Zhang Yang scanned the area and had only observed many Spectre Saber Tooth Tigers patrolling around. Some of them had their skins impaired, while some other had

exposed rotten, dried innards and white bones. All of their eyes were the same; glowing in green emerald color flame!

[Saber-Tooth Skeleton Tiger] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 43

HP: 86,000

Majority of wild beast had the skill called <Mangle>. This skill was a form of DoT skill which would cause high damage per second if they were stacked. Zhang Yang did not know whether or not these zombie-like tigers had that skill. So, instead of going commando and taking on a bunch of these monsters, Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight went on and took one monster each to test it out.

‘Ding! You have received <Mangle> (stack 1). Receiving 100 <Bleeding> damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds!’

‘Ding! You have received <Mangle> (stack 2). Receiving 200 <Bleeding> damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds!’

‘Ding! You have received <Mangle> (stack 3). Receiving 300 <Bleeding> damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds!’

‘Ding...’

As expected, even after turning into a spectre, the tiger still retained the <Mangle> skill. To make matters worse, the skill did not have a stack limit! The initial damage was small but once the skill stacked to about 10 layers or so, any player could definitely feel its pain.

If that was the case, the party could not lure a bunch of monsters to kill them all in one go! If they did, who was going to kill who?

The party targeted the monsters that Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had attack and killed it quickly, turning it into a pillar of light. The monster dropped a few pieces of [Tiger's Fang] and [Tiger's Bone].

“Hundred Shots, take this Tiger's Bone and take it with whiskey! I hear that it can cure “flabbiness”!” said Fatty Han as he handed over a large bone to Hundred Shots.

Hundred Shot did not say anything but rolled his eyes at Fatty Han.

Endless Starlight quickly interjected. “Hundred Shots bro is probably already a “man”! If he took anymore supplements, who knows, he might really be a father tomorrow!”

“Alright, break it up guys! Or else, I'll ask Hundred Shots to shoot your ass inward!” Zhang Yang gestured the team to move forward with him as the lead.

Even though they could not multi-kill the monsters on this floor, they were making a rather quick progress since the number of monsters around here was just a few. By the time they had defeated the prince, it was already 10:00 at night. Now that they had progressed further into the floor, and covered approximately a quarter of the area, the time was already reaching past midnight.

Zhang Yang then quickly disbanded the party and ordered the team to continue tomorrow morning.

Zhang Yang recalled that it was almost time for students to return to school. And since, tomorrow was a Monday, Zhang Yang had to ask Wei Yan Er. “Little brat, looks like you really can’t make it tomorrow huh?”

Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue and blew a raspberry. “Just wait and see!”

After the night, everyone logged in and gathered together at 9:00 in the morning. Surprisingly, Wei Yan Er was there.

Zhang Yang asked suspiciously. “Little brat! Did you skip school?!”

“Skip school?” Wei Yan Er patted her flat chest and said proudly: “I took leave like an honest person!”

Han Ying Xue quickly interjected her. “Yan Er, lighter! Not so

hard! If you pat any harder it might concave in!”

“HAN YING XUE!” The little brat was triggered ever so easily. Like a cat’s tail being stepped on suddenly.

“How did you even manage to apply a leave? Did you really say you wanted to play some games?” Zhang Yang asked while resisting his laughter.

Wei Yan Er looked at Zhang Yang with a hidden message “You’re an idiot” and said, “My cousin called the school principle and said that I had a fever! That settled it!”

Zhang Yang turned over and stared at Han Ying Xue, who was still wearing a smug on her face. “What kind of cousin are you? Are you purposely trying to destroy the budding flower of the country? You’d know that this little brat is already stupid! Why did you stop her from actually learning?”

“Hey! Noob tank! Who says I’m stupid!” Wei Yan Er stomped the ground, throwing a fit.

Han Ying Xue pout her lips and said, “Tch. What can you learn in school anyway? It’s not like you’re actually going to apply everything you’ve learnt in school! Tell me, when have you ever used the triangular formulae, or even the force or acceleration... that kinda thing... something about periodic graph or table... Widely taught but not of any importance! So tell me what’s the use of learning it in the first place? Yan Er will one day take over her father’s business! She only needs to learn what she needs to learn!

To be frank, she went to school to learn about people and business relationship! That's the important lesson that could only be learned on the job!"

Wei Yan Er was grinning all the way and scoffed Zhang Yang provocatively.

Fujoshi is a self-mockingly pejorative Japanese term for female fans of novels that feature romantic relationships between men (Yaoi).

Chapter 150: 3rd Floor

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. “Only second generation youngsters from wealthy families could do such things at no consequence! You have your entire future laid out for you! All you have to do is to simply follow the yellow brick road, and your life will as comfortable as you can ever imagine!”

“Don’t be jealous dummy! You are also considered a millionaire right now! First generation millionaires like you have so much more impact than second generations!” Han Ying Xue shot back without pause.

As Endless Starlight listened to their conversation, a nagging instinct tugged at his heart. With a sudden jump, he was completely flat on the ground, hugging Zhang Yang’s feet. “Big bro Zhan Yu! Please take care of me!”

“Scram! If Little Yang ever wants to take care of anyone, they better be someone as pretty as Little Snow or the perfect sister Yu here! As for you? Just stay here with me and be my underling!” said Fatty Han as he reached out with his flabby arms and patted Endless Starlight’s shoulders.

Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu were furious

“Dirty minded pig! Don’t expect me to heal you again!”

The other woman disappeared with a “poof!” and entered <Stealth>. She reappeared a few seconds later behind Fatty Han,

stunning him as star circled around his head. The blade in her hands gleamed brightly as light reflected off the blade like a disco ball as she danced around. After <Ambush> and <Kidney Shot> ended, Fatty Han was left with a tiny bit of HP. Sun Xin Yu's gears were at their best yet. A single complete combo of <Ambush> and <Kidney Shot> could instantly kill off any non-tank class player! There's no need to start a new combo at all!

At the current stage of the player's progress, cases of instant kills were very common. A Gray-Silver equipment could provide more damage than it could provide Vitality. That was why the overwhelming damage could easily kill anyone off.

Once players around had started to put on Yellow-Golden tier equipment, the situation will change. Since Yellow-Gold tier equipment could provide much more Vitality, similarly leveled players could fight and not have duels end in seconds. It was still not impossible to instantly kill someone, but it would be more dependent on luck. A Lucky Strike dealing 6 times the normal amount of damage was an example!

When Fatty Han had only around 100 HP left, Sun Xin Yu stopped her blade and slid it back into the sheathe at her waist. A pair of annoyed, furious eyes stared into him and she said, "If I ever hear you speak of such things again, I will make sure that you permanently remain at level 41!"

If they were to have a real fight, in the real world, with Fatty Han's body and fist, he could have been more than a match to Sun Xin Yu! But if they were to battle in the game, with the rules and mechanics of the game, Fatty Han could only bow down to her.

Any pro player could easily toy with him till his death! Fatty Han knew this, and he treasured his current level the most as he still had the ambition to be in the Level Ranking board again, even if it was just to brag in front of the Message Parlor girls.

Like a cat getting his tongue, Fatty Han was rendered as silent as a mouse by Sun Xin Yu.

The party went forward with the force of a thousand-man army to the 4th floor.

As they made their way through about one third of the castle area, the monsters had gradually changed into multiple variations of wolves.

[Berserk Skeleton Wolf] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 44

HP: 88,000

MP: 44,000

“I guess Berserk Skeleton Wolves and Berserk Wolves have about the same skills!” Zhang Yang guessed.

Shuush!

He slid across the floor and stunned one of the wolf monsters with <Charge>. He chained his attack with a normal attack.

“-921!”

“-1200!”

The wolf recovered from the stun and immediately counterattacked with a bite, causing visible physical damage to Zhang Yang. Following closely was a <Fire Ball> that came blasting out from its mouth, dealing magical damage.

Zhang Yang nodded and call out to Endless Starlight. “Starlight, take on one monster as well. I see that the damage is not that powerful. Continue to kite more of them to increase our speed.”

The two tanks began working together, resulting in a faster raiding pace. It helped that this floor had significantly lesser monsters than the two previous floors. They only took about 3 hours to slay every Berserk Skeleton Wolf in their path. After a while, they entered a new area with a new type of monster.

[Blazing Skeleton Bird] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 45

HP: 60,000

MP: 50,000

This is a huge bird-like creature. Everyone was staring in awe at the bird monster that somehow remained in the air by flapping its boney wings.

“Eh...How is that bird able to fly? I mean...look at it! Those wings are just bones! It doesn’t make sense!” asked Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang frowned so hard that wrinkles started to appear on his forehead. “Little brat, it’s just a game. I bet that even pigs could fly. What’s so strange about that?”

“Boo...” Wei Yan Er crossed her arms and pouted her lips.

Zhang Yang went up to the monster to start the fight while the remaining party members followed a moment after.

The monster responded with a loud shriek and spewed a very long beam of flame out from its mouth. It aimed at Zhang Yang first and quickly spun around by 360 degrees, hitting every melee attacker with strong damage. Everyone received at least 1000 damage.

“This attack is about the same as the 3rd boss in the Bangar Crypt. It’s called Dragon Breath or something like that...If only players could learn the same skill. That would be sick!” said Fatty Han.

Zhang Yang replied him after a moment of silent. “If I remember correctly, there’s a similar skill for Spellcasters. It could even stun a player for 3 seconds! However, the flame’s duration is rather short. You would need excellent control if you wanted to hit every target in the area!”

Daffodil Daydream got excited and cried. “Is it obtainable from the Class Instructor or from a skill book?”

“I think it comes from a skill book.” Zhang Yang was not as well-versed in other classes besides Guardians.

The party made quick progress. No matter how strong the Blazing Skeleton Bird was, it could not withstand the party’s overwhelming attack for long. The team went on hacking and slashing away and made it to the end of the 3rd floor and the entrance of the 4th floor.

In front of the entrance was a female centaur seated like horse; with her legs folded beneath her body. Surrounding her were 3 beasts, a Saber-tooth Skeleton Tiger, a Berserk Skeleton Wolf, and a Blazing Skeleton Bird. The fierce beasts that they encountered before this were wild and ferocious, but the beasts close to the Centaur were surprisingly tame. The Skeleton Tiger and Wolf were lying on their backs, submissively revealing their bellies to their owner. From the looks of it, appearances aside, they behaved

exactly like domesticated cats and dogs.

[The Queen, Shimalue Gutan] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 46

HP: 920,000

MP: 500,000

The tiger, wolf, and bird were respectively called Tai Tai, Wu Wu, and Gu Gu, with 10,000 HP each.

“What’s the plan?”

Everyone turned their heads to face Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang stepped back, raising his hands. “What are you looking at me for? You guys think that I know everything?!”

Everyone exchanged a look and nodded their heads repeatedly.

“F*ck!” Zhang Yang was so annoyed by that fact, he nearly broke his teeth from gnashing them together. He sighed heavily and said, “The tiger has the stackable <Mangle> skill, so he has to be the first

to go! We cannot target the others yet since the skill could take out any tank if we let it stack too many times.”

He paused to think for a while and said, “Starlight, you’re to pull the bird out of the...”

“BLEH...”

Zhang Yang was suddenly interrupted by Fatty Han and Hundred Shots. Fatty Han was a little overdramatic. Grabbing his tummy and laughed, he said. “Starlight, [pull your bird out!](#)”

Endless Starlight immediately picked up his hammer and wanted to smash Fatty Han’s face when Zhang Yang quickly tugged Starlight back.

“Stop! Stop! Stop!”

“Sigh... can you guys at least let me finish my explanation? The Blazing Skeleton Bird is a magic type, therefore Starlight would be more suitable to handle it! You’ll need to get the monster alone to one side before we can attack it. Our targets will start with the tiger, the wolf and lastly, the bird. We will fight the boss only when all other 3 beasts are taken out!”

“Okay!” Everyone nodded their heads

“Starlight! I will start the fight, you’ll come in after a bit and use <Provoke> to pull the monster away!”

“Roger that!” said Endless Starlight.

“Let’s get started then!” said Zhang Yang as he ran towards the monsters with the sword gleaming in his hand,

“Foreigners!? How dare you invade this grand castle of the Centaurs!?” Shimalue Gutan stood up on her hooves immediately. “Guards! Kill the invaders!”

After a silent respond, Shimalue Gutan cried out in anger when there as no one appeared to her aid. “Tai Tai, Wu Wu, Gu Gu! The Queen orders you to kill these invaders!”

All 3 beasts roared and shrieked in their own manners, charging towards Zhang Yang.

<Charge>!

Zhang Yang slammed into the Saber-Tooth Skeleton Tiger and quickly used <Blood Rage> to bring up his Rage and followed up with a <Horizontal Sweep>.

“-702!”

“-759!”

“-738!”

Damage texts popped up from all 3 beasts. Endless Starlight quickly cast <Taunting Fist> on the bird monster and dragged the miniboss away.

<Taunting Fist> is a Defender's skill unlocked at level 30. It is a provoking type of skill that forces the target to forcefully engage the caster for 2 seconds, and deals an additional 100% Holy damage based on Strength.

After Endless Starlight had successfully lured the bird away, Zhang Yang immediately cast <Thunder Strike>, slowing two beasts down, and headed straight for the boss herself.

The boss was a magic attack type monster. While commanding the beasts to attack, the boss concurrently started a chant for a spell and cast <Punishment Ray>.

“-1613!”

Zhang Yang immediately received damage. The damage value was not low, but considering the fact that Shimalue Gutan was a boss, it was low by boss standards!

“+1984!”

Han Ying Xue used <Brilliant Light> to heal a huge amount of HP. This skill was found by Han Ying Xue herself during one of her window shopping sprees. After she had asked Zhang Yang about

the skill's effect, she bought the skill book for 100,000 gold coins and learned the skill soon after.

In the end, after she bought the skill book, Han Ying Xue tried to beat around the bush to avoid returning Zhang Yang's 90,000 gold coins. Her reason being, "This girl here learned this skill for your sake! I was already nice enough to pay for a portion of it! Besides, that money was for my wedding dress!"

Sigh...All in all, the skill was a very powerful healing spell alright.

[Brilliant Light] (Level 1): Invokes the blessing of the light. Heals a target by 200% magic attack.

Cool down time: 15 seconds.

Casting Time: 2 seconds

Once the skill is maxed out, it would reduce the cool down time to only 6 seconds. Truly an OP skill.

"-744!"

Zhang Yang dashed towards the main boss and slashed his sword across her body, sending a stream of fresh blood gushing out.

“How dare you attack the Queen!? Only death could cleanse your sins!” bellowed Shimalue Gutan furiously.

Boom!

“-1603!”

Another <Punishment Ray> struck him.

Huh! This boss’ attack sure was not as strong as he had thought.

No sooner after that thought, the tiger and the wolf came charging towards Zhang Yang and attacked him simultaneously.

<Cripple Defense>! <Cripple Defense>! <Cripple Defense>!

Zhang Yang first targeted the Saber-Tooth Skeleton Tiger and stacked 5 layers of <Cripple Defense>. He then cast <Thunder Strike> to slow the monsters down and tried his best to reduce the total damage he would receive by kiting them around, so that only one of the monster would be able attack him at a time. As for the boss, slowed down or not, she would not need to move around to attack him, it would not make any difference.

Bird – The Chinese tend to refer to the male reproductive organ as bird in their native language.

Chapter 151: The Queen Of Centaurs

Fuush!

The Saber-Tooth Skeleton Tiger leaped up, vanishing into thin air, before reappearing behind Zhang Yang. With a massive slash of its sharp claws, the tiger dealt huge damage on Zhang Yang's back.

“-1552!”

‘Ding! You have received <Mangle> (5 stacks). Receive 1500 HP damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds!’

Zhang Yang could not help but flick his middle finger at lady luck. The current 4 stacks of <Mangle> was just about to expire but he had received a fresh, new <Mangle> that could refresh the skill's effect! He never had thought that the tiger would have a skill similar to a Thief's <Shadow Step> to immediately teleport behind someone's back. Not only had the <Mangle> been refreshed to 15 seconds, he now had 5 stacks of <Mangle>! He now had to take additional, unnecessary damage for the next 15 seconds!

Even though the Saber-Tooth Skeleton Tiger was strong, it was vastly outclassed by the party's DPS! So far, Fatty Han and the gang had each exceeded 1000 DPS. Daffodil Daydream was slightly behind at around 800 DPS. The overall DPS strength was enough to kill the tiger with 100,000 HP in just 20 seconds!

“Don't worry! Tai Tai! I will heal your wounds!” Shimalue Gutan

cried out all of a sudden and chanted a healing spell and healed the tiger by 25,000 HP.

The spell casting duration was so fast that it only took half a second for her to finish the spell. Those that had interruption skills could not even react in time. Before they even realized it, the spell was already complete and they could only stare at the boss healing the monster that was already at the brink of death.

Fortunately, the tiger was inflicted with the <Destructive Smash> debuff that would reduce healing effect by 75%. If that wasn't the case, the healing spell would have completely healed the tiger back to full health.

“Noob tank! You're too slow! Why didn't you stop her spell when you have an interruption skill! Hmph! You've lost my respect!” said Wei Yan Er. She always did try her best to poke fun at him.

Zhang Yang laughed and shot back, “I wasn't the only one here who was unable to interrupt her spell. Why aren't you scolding the others?”

“Because you're the only one that has a stupid face!” said Wei Yan Er with full honesty.

“Don't die! Tai Tai!” Even when the boss attempted to heal the tiger again, the team's combined attack simply overruled her efforts. It was like tossing the contents of a cup of water into a raging inferno. The tiger's HP was drained down in almost no time at all. Shimalue Gutan could only shriek at the top of her lungs.

“Somehow, I pity this queen. Her husband was cheating with her son’s wife and she only has her pets to accompany her!” said Daffodil mournfully, her eyes already showing signs of tears.

Zhang Yang scoffed. “In that case, let’s spare her.”

“...No. We kill. Living is much more painful for her!” said Daffodil as she made up her mind. “We are giving her a mercy killing, not just for equipment and whimsical desires!”

Everyone laughed instantly.

“Tai Tai...” Shimalue Gutan cried and chanted another healing spell.

<Crash Magic>!

Zhang Yang was ready for it this time. He quickly bashed her with his shield.

The spell was instantly interrupted and she had received <Silent> for 3 seconds. <Silent> had rendered her unable to cast any spells for 3 seconds.

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Tai Tai! Obtained 12,550 Experience Points. (50 points party bonus)!’

“NOOOO....!” cried Shimalue Gutan.

The boss suddenly glowed red. She had gone berserk.

“Damned intruders! I will crush your skull with my bare hands and throw your mangled corpses into the abyss! May you forever burn in the raging flames of hell! Wu Wu! Gu Gu! Kill them! Avenge Tai Tai!”

‘Ding! Shimalue Gutan has gained <Enraged> (1 stack). All attacks and healing effects will be increase by 33%!’

‘Ding! Wu Wu has gained <Enraged> (1 stack). All attacks and healing effects will be increase by 33%!’

‘Ding! Gu Gu has gained <Enraged> (1 stack). All attacks and healing effects will be increase by 33%!’

An increment by 33% in damage had made the boss stronger by a noticeable amount. The <Punishment Ray> had its damage increased to 2600 or more, with Zhang Yang’s damage reduction lowering that amount down to 2000.

“Pick up the pace!” Zhang Yang screamed.

The boss was not the only one that had suddenly ingested an overdose of steroids and went all crazy! Han Ying Xue had to take care of two tanks, which made her roll her sleeves up, taking things seriously.

The party then shifted their targets to the bird monster Gu Gu and managed to bring it down to critical health in a short time.

“Gu Gu!” Shimalue Gutan cried in anguish as she started to chant a healing spell. However, Zhang Yang was quicker and bashed her with <Crash Magic>, stopping her healing.

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Gu Gu! Obtained 12,550 Experience Points. (50 points party bonus)!’

“ARGHH...!” The boss screeched in such a high pitch that everyone had to cover their ears. She stood with her hind hooves and screamed at no one in particular, dramatically rearing her head about like the tragic heroine of an opera.

“I WILL KILL YOU ALL! I WILL KILL! KILL!” Bellowed the boss.

‘Ding! Shimalue Gutan has gained <Enraged> (2 stack). All attacks and healing will be increase by 67%!’

‘Ding! Wu Wu has gained <Enraged> (2 stack). All attacks and healing will be increase by 67%!’

“-2672!”

“-2004!”

The boss fired a <Punishment Ray>, while the wolf concurrently spat out a <Fire Ball>. Both attacks struck Zhang Yang at the same time, causing him to have only around 1000 HP left!

What power!

Zhang Yang frantically cried, “Starlight! Provoke Wu Wu and get him off me!”

“OK!”

Endless Starlight quickly complied and cast <Taunting Fist>, dragging Wu Wu away from Zhang Yang.

Half a minute later, Wu Wu turned into a pillar of light and falls defeated.

“WU WU!!!” Shimalue Gutan was enraged beyond compare. Her dark, charcoal hair started to spread out and floated up mystically. Her eyes glowed with intense green, emerald flames.

‘Ding! Shimalue Gutan has gained <Enraged> (3 stack). All attacks and healing will be increased by 100%!’

“Damn! We’re cruel!” Fatty Han cried crocodile tears. “When her husband had found a new toy to play with, she had managed to find herself a few loyal companions! Yet, we just killed them! Aiyaya...Looks like this poor woman had to depend on cucumbers to accompany her during the dark, lonesome nights!”

“Fatty...You know...If you don’t speak up, no one would think that you’re a mute.”

“Ah...”

Fatty Han turned around and saw the 4 ladies staring at him with eyes that could swallow him whole. Fatty Han turned his gaze away sheepishly. “Eh...ladies, I know that you have the hots for the big Fatty. But please, control your passion! You have to know that you’re all Little Yang’s main dishes, and that there’s a saying: “a brother wife is off limit...”

The ladies were furious enough as it is, but when Fatty Han added fuel to the fire, it brought their fury round by a full circle, dissuading them as they felt that there was no point directing their wrath at Fatty Han.

“-3212!”

The boss cast <Punishment Ray> and blasted Zhang Yang with powerful, enhanced damage. Even though he could stop the boss from healing, but he still had to take the <Punishment Ray> head on!”

“+2015!”

“+402!”

Han Ying Xue's <Brilliant Light> and <Regeneration> ticked at the same time and healed almost half of his HP. However, it was still insufficient in coping with the loss of his HP!

Only half a minute passed, and Zhang Yang had to depend on <Berserker's Heal> to recover from his dangerously low HP back to full health. The boss' damage had exceeded the healing that Han Ying Xue could provide, therefore Zhang Yang had to depend on himself to deal with the excessive damage he received.

Health potion, <Berserker's Heal>, Lover's Sword <Lifesteal>, <Merlinda's Shadow>, <Shield Wall>, <Substitute>, he had to use everything he had to survive! Zhang Yang had planned the skill cycle out and prioritized the ones with the lowest cool down times to maximize the effect.

The good thing was that even if Shimalue Gutan's attack was strong, her HP did not match up to the strength of her attacks. She did not have any large AoE multi-target skill as well. After lasting for another 2 minutes or so, she shrieked and fell defeated.

Haaa! Phew...

Everyone drew in a deep breath and let out a long breath of relief. The fight with this boss did not take long, but the boss' attack was so strong that many of them had held their breaths, witnessing Zhang Yang being close to death for many times. They could only relax and let down their guard only when the boss was down.

"It's finally over. Man! I was freaking out there!" said Endless

Starlight as he wiped his forehead; even when there was no sweat.

Zhang Yang could not help but sigh. The period of the Gray-Silver equipment was once known as the weak period. It was even applicable to the boss as well! Shimalue Gutan was one such example, her strong attack could easily kill a tank with one or two hits! However, she was a glass cannon who lacked durability! When players started to put on Yellow-Gold gears with damage reduction set skills, there would be lesser cases of instant kills.

Han Ying Xue was so completely worn out that she laid her head on Wei Yan Er lap. While stroking her cousin sister's silky hair, she stared angrily at Zhang Yang and cried. "Noob tank! Look at what you've done! You've completely drained my cousin sister out!"

"WOOOOAHHH!" Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, and Endless Starlight broke out in surprised laughter.

"Little brat! Don't say something like that..." Even a person as flirtatious as Han Ying Xue would feel some shame when Wei Yan Er said something that could be interpreted very differently in such manner.

Turning around, Wei Yan Er was confused, but when no one cared to explain her fault she snapped, "You guys are bullies! Hmph! I'm not talking to you guys anymore!" She got up to her feet and went to the boss for the loots.

[Blaze War Hammer] (Gray-Silver, One handed Hammer)

Weapon Attack: 403 – 461

Attack Interval: 2.7 seconds.

DPS: 160

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 40

“Oh yeah! This is good sh*t!” Endless Starlight cried as he inspected the item. His current weapon was still a level 30 Green-Copper tier with only 60 DPS. He would definitely experience a huge difference if he were to equip this item!

Zhang Yang saw his reaction and smiled gently. “Take it!” Zhang Yang gave up his roll.

Endless Starlight wavered a little and said, “H-How could I...I mean...your weapon is just a level 30 Gray-Silver tier. The hammer is much better!”

Zhang Yang shook his head sadly. “When you reached level 40, you were still here. What you didn’t know was that you could get a level 40 skill from the Class Instructor. At level 40, a Defender could learn a skill called <Hammer Mastery>. It could increase all

damage by 5% only when a hammer-type equipment is worn! That is why a Hammer is a specialized weapon for Defenders!”

Wei Yan Er nodded her head and said, “That right! I have already learned the skill <Axe Mastery>. All attacks are increased by 5% when I’m equipping an axe weapon! That is why, no one is to take away my axe! Any two-handed axes that ever appear in the boss loots are all mine!”

Endless Starlight smiled gratefully and accepted the hammer. With this, his attack and ability to pull aggro would be greatly increased. All of this was thanks to Zhang Yang! His respect for him has only grown stronger! He knew that the original party members did not need him to join. He knew that he would make little difference to them!

Chapter 152: An Incestophile And Cinderella

Zhang Yang noticed a look of gratitude flashed across Endless Starlight’s face. Zhang Yang smiled secretly and thought in his heart, looks like this future icon of a tank has already started to feel indebted to Lone Desert Smoke. As long as they do more raids together, then Zhang Yang would not need to doubt Endless Starlight’s loyalty to Lone Desert Smoke.

Wei Yan Er was preoccupied with digging about for further loots since the first item was already distributed. She kept an eye out for the valuable white gleam. Green-Copper items have longed been ignored by her.

[Feather Skirt] (Gray-Silver, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +96

Intelligence: +48

Spirit: +16

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 40

Han Ying Xue smiled and said, “Give this to Daffodil Daydream first, I’m wearing a full set of equipment and I do not want to ruin the set equipment effect just yet!”

She gave up her roll, so Daffodil Daydream embarrassingly received the skirt and equipped it.

Zhang Yang said: “In fact, Level 30 Gray-Silver equipment cannot replace set equipment, but 3 pieces of Level 40 Gray-Silver equipment can replace the 5-piece set equipment’s 10% damage increment! Most importantly, Level 20 equipment simply gives too little HP, and to clear future Hardcore Mode Castle dungeons, your HP needs to be up to at least 5,000!”

“5,000...” Fatty Han rolled both of his eyes and said, “My HP is only 4,300!”

“Didn’t I tell you to keep one set of equipment from the Garden? Have you sold it already?” Zhang Yang glanced at him.

“No, it is still in the Bank!” Fatty Han laughed as he replied.

Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief after hearing Fatty Han’s reply. After clearing here, they would need to explore the dungeon of the Castle. Everyone was strictly required at least 5,000 HP to fight the fourth boss. If any single person did not make it, the party would be annihilated!

[Skill Book: Beast Rage]

Use: Grants the skill <Beast Rage>

Class Requirement: Hunter

Level Requirement: 30

Zhang Yang could help but laugh in joy and said, “Fatty and Hundred Shots, this skill is really good! It can increase the damage dealt by your pet temporarily like Shimalue Gutan’s pets just now!”

Hundred Shots said: “Fatty, let’s roll the dice!”

Both of them rolled the dice and Fatty Han obtained the skill book.

<Beast Rage>: Increases the damage dealt by your pet by 50%. Last for 15 seconds. Cool time down: 2 minutes.

“This skill is really useful for Beastmaster!” Hundred Shots could not help but exclaim when he saw the skill description posted by Fatty Han.

Fatty Han said delightedly, “With this skill, my damage output

going to increase once again! Who else in the world could defeat me?!”

‘Shing’, Sun Xing Yu pulled out both of her daggers, the sound crystal clear in the silent atmosphere, and she glanced at Fatty Han coldly.

Fatty Han could not help but feel intimidated, he trembled in fear of this lady.

The gang was not interested in the remaining eight Green-Copper items so they just simply threw it into their inventories and continued moving forward.

They arrived at the fourth level after clearing a few skeletal tiger and skeletal wolf monsters at another long stone stairway.

It was empty within the resplendent palace, except for the huge pillars, which needed to be held up together by three men, set up a distance from each other.

“No monsters?” Daffodil Daydream could not help but feel delighted.

It was already 11 P.M. at night. The gang was thought of having a look at the fourth level before logging off and retiring for the night before continuing with the following two levels tomorrow. But if there were no monsters, they could fight the boss directly which would save up a lot of time!

“Wait!”

Zhang Yang and Sun Xing Yu yelled at the same time.

Han Ying Xue could not help but laughed and said: “Both of you really have an unspoken bond!”

“Like husband like wife!” Wei Yan Er also laughed.

“F*ck” Zhang Yang rolled his eyes at that two gloating ladies and said, “It might be stealth monster! Starlight, you’ll have to take one for the team, go in front!”

Endless Starlight looked as if he was about to cry, and plaintively said, “Why me?”

“Nonsense, you have a solid defense!”

“Then why don’t you go in front?”

“I need to pull the monsters!”

Poor Endless Starlight, who was sold to the monster by the gang, held on his shield and walked in front. After he walked for seven to eight steps, he stopped suddenly and rotating stars appeared above his head which represented a <stun> status.

A person in black appeared from the back of Endless Starlight and he raised his two swords and stabbed Endless Starlight's back, each stab took about 1,000 of Endless Starlight HP.

[Shadow Assassin] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 46

HP: 92,000

Unexpectedly, it was not a centaur but an elf... a dead one.

Endless Starlight was about 8 meters away from the gang, which was also the range of <Charge> so Zhang Yang immediately rushed towards him with <Charge>.

‘-752!’

‘-1554!’

After Shadow Assassin recovered from being stunned, Shadow Assassin immediately changed his target and attacked Zhang Yang with his two gleaming swords.

‘<Block>!’

‘-212!’

‘-80!’

Due to the monster having double physical attacks, even if Zhang Yang used <Block>, he still received an attack. But this attack was caused by off-hand weapon which also inflicted 80 points of poison damage.

In ‘God’s Miracle’, off-hand attacks are reduced by 50% and its damage was much lesser compared to one handed attacks. In general, weapons with long attack intervals would be equipped in one hand slot to increase damage of single hit skills. While weapons with shorter attack intervals would be equipped in off-hand slots, in order to trigger some passive skills or poison effects.

“Why is there an elf in centaur’s palace? Could it be...” Daffodil Daydream was psyched. Daffodil Daydream was a “Fujoshi”, and she started to fantasize about a boys’ love scenario.

“You’ll find all manner of evil sorcerers in this dungeon, it won’t be surprising to have a few elf thieves!” Zhang Yang laughed and said.

Daffodil Daydream was disappointed, she pursed her lip and stopped talking.

With the strong ability of team’s damage dealing, this Shadow

Assassin could only live for 10 seconds and died, dropping a few pieces of clothes and a Black-Steel item.

Poor Endless Starlight continued walking in front of the gang, acting as bait to attract the attacks of stealth monsters and reveal themselves.

This level was full of thief type monsters with stealth abilities. These undead were members of several races such as humans, beasts, dwarves, elf and even goblins and trolls! The team moved on for a while before Zhang Yang announced that today's activity would end here and that they would continue tomorrow.

Zhang Yang logged on the game the next morning, and Yan Wei Er showed up in the team as expected.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Little brat, were you planning to apply for leave continuously until we done with this main quest?"

"En!" Yan Wei Er nodded her head determinedly.

"Don't the kids nowadays wish to go the school and play with their friends?" Zhang Yang thought that it was odd. When he was studying, he also wished for holidays but after a long holiday, he would also wish to go back to the school, as it was more lively and fun!

Yan Wei Er pursed her lip with a disdainful expression and said, "What is fun in playing with those childish little brats?"

Zhang Yang was suddenly taken aback and looked at Han Ying Xue, he determined that Yan Wei Er had to have been influenced by this devilish woman.

Han Ying Xue noticed Zhang Yang looking at her so she looked back Zhang Yang with her seductive eyes and said, “Silly Yu, please just say so that you like me, don’t steal glances at me like that, otherwise, you’re going to develop a cross-eye!”

Yan Wei Er asked, “Sis, what is a cross-eye?”

Han Ying Xue squinted, briefly crossing her eyes and made Yan Wei Er laugh out loudly.

All members of the gang soon showed up and the gang continued moving forward.

The higher the level, the lesser the monsters spawned. So the gang only used five hours to clear the fourth level. The first level took two days to clear, the second and third level which took more than a day each to clear. So, these five hours were considered a very short period!

Halfway through the passage, Zhang Yang and Daffodil Daydream gained a level once again and both of them were now Level 41. The rest of the members were not far from achieving Level 42 as well.

There were two bosses.

[King Kinglose Turk] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 48

HP: 960,000

[Princess Annie Balrum] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 47

HP: 940,000

MP: 470,000

This incestuous couple was snuggled together and passionately kissed like a loving husband and wife from time to time.

“F*ck, these incestuous b*stards!” Fatty Han scolded.

“It just so happens that we have two tanks, so each tank for each boss!” Zhang Yang thought of it and said, “Princess is a magic-type

monster, so Starlight, you tank the princess and I will tank the king!”

“We have only one healer. Will she be able to heal the two of you together?” Yan Wei Er said.

“Quest item!” Sun Xing Yu interrupted suddenly.

The gang recalled that they had received a quest spear from a quest of killing the king and princess which would be needed to use when fighting the king and princess.

Yan Wei Er impatiently took out the spear from her inventory immediately and chose to use the spear. Instantly, an illusory centaur figure appeared in front of everyone, it was the Prince Chateau Turk of centaur race!

[Shadow of Revenge] (Elite, Soul)

Level: 44

HP: 100,000

Once this Chateau Turk’s [Shadow of Revenge] had appeared, he stared at that incestuous couple in anger and roared then stomped his hoofs and rushed towards them.

Zhang Yang selected the quest spear in his inventory but the system showed that one [Shadow of Revenge] already existed, invalid to use temporarily. He pulled out his sword and said, “Don’t worry about the strategy, let’s try them out first, at least we’ll find out what the skills of these bosses are!”

“B*tch, I want to kill you!” [Shadow of Revenge] rushed towards Princess Annie Balrum angrily.

“Chateau, you dickless trash! Even in death you persist to bother us!” Annie Balrum said with contemptuous laughter. She waved her right hand and a wand appeared, which she directed towards the [Shadow of Revenge] and a flash of flaming fire burst from the wand.

“B*tch, if it was not for me marry you, you would still be a commoner, is this how you repay me?!” [Shadow of Revenge] roared again and started fighting with Annie Balrum.

“So it is the Prince and Cinderella! Unfortunately, their marriage has changed!” Endless Starlight muttered.

Zhang Yang saw that they were fighting and said immediately, “Starlight, don’t pull the princess yet, let [Shadow of Revenge] pester her!”

Slash!

‘<Charge>!’

Zhang Yang dashed towards Kinglose Turk and smashed on him immediately.

‘653!’

After a normal attack, a low-valued damage text appeared above Kinglose Turk’s head. Zhang Yang frowned as Kinglose Turk’s Defense value was about 300, which was very high! But he was not in fear as he had <Eagle Eye> and the rest of the members could rely on <Cripple Defense> which reduced 150 Defense value on Kinglose Turk, it would greatly aid the damage output.

Kinglose Turk yelled angrily, pulled out a spear and struck Zhang Yang: “Little human, how dare you provoke the great king of centaur, I’ll hack you into pieces!”

“Incestophile, go to hell!” Yan Wei Er yelled, dashed forward by using <Charge> and whirled her weapon.

“Little brat, you learned a new word in no time, huh!” Zhang Yang laughed.

Yan Wei Er answered arrogantly, “I hate trash like this guy who uses people and throws them aside for anything new. I’ll kill this shameless fellow!”

At the other side, [Shadow of Revenge] fought with Annie

Balrum.

[Shadow of Revenge] pierced Annie Balrum by using his spear but it did not cause any damage to Annie Balrum. Yet, [Shadow of Revenge] was still the first who held the aggro. So, even if Han Ying Xue healed continuously, the HP recovery would not exceed [Shadow of Revenge]'s aggro.

Annie Balrum was a Spellcaster, she used a chain of DOT first, then damage reduction debuff, followed by <Soul Burst> and <Shadow Whip> which assaulted [Shadow of Revenge]'s HP. Luckily [Shadow of Revenge] had 100,000 HP, and with Annie Balrum's damage output, she would need to attack for quite some time before she could kill [Shadow of Revenge].

Back at Zhang Yang's side, Sun Xing Yu and the rest already started to deal damage in full force towards the incestuous king, causing the king's HP to drop dramatically.

“Guards! Guards! Kill all the intruders!” Kinglose Turk shouted loudly.

Fatty Han laughed loudly and said, “Keep shouting, nobody is going to help you even if you cough your throat out!”

“Ding! Kinglose Turk has released [Summoned Guard]!”

Eight strong centaurs appeared in formation at the back of Kinglose Turk.

“Pervert Fatty, you have such a bad mouth!” Yan Wei Er said angrily.

“Coincidence! This must be a coincidence!” Fatty Han quickly claimed that he was innocent.

[Summoned Guard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 45

HP: 90,000

“I will kite them all, you guys use AoE skills to kill them all quickly!” Zhang Yang used <Horizontal Sweep> followed by <Thunder Strike> to reduce the monsters’ movement speed, before leading them in circles.

However, Kinglose Turk movement speed was still faster than Zhang Yang, even if his movement speed was reduced by 50%, Zhang Yang unable to flee from him! Luckily, Zhang Yang’s plan was to reduce the elite monsters movement speed only, thus, it did not matter if Kinglose Turk was unhindered.

They killed all the eight monsters within a minute and the field was back to normal after the chaos.

But Kinglose Turk's HP dropping became slower, Kinglose Turk's HP dropped only by about 100,000. The guards had reduced the party's damage output by 67%!

“Guards! Guards! Kill all the intruders!” Kinglose Turk deserved to be called a king indeed, as he continuously summoned guards and stabbed repeatedly with his spear.

Eight strong centaurs appeared at the back of Kinglose Turk once again.

Based on Zhang Yang's speculation, Kinglose Turk would summon the number of guards according to the number of people who held the aggro! Thus, this was actually beneficial to an elite team like them as if there was a 100-man team, Kinglose Turk would instantly summon 100 elite guards which will quickly wipe them out.

The gang continued using AoE skills and they killed the second round of summoned guards instantly. However, AoE skills drained a huge amount of MP from Spellcasters. After killing two rounds of summoned guards, Daffodil Daydream's MP had depleted. Bandits and Hunters would recover their energy and Focus point in a fixed time. Warriors had it even easier, they functioned on Rage, where it did not matter whether they were attacking or being attacked by others, they would regain their Rage.

After another round of guards, Daffodil Daydream's MP dried out once again, so she could only stand aside and spectate.

Chapter 153: Kill Them Both

The battle went back and forth with Kinglose Turk continuously summoning the guards and the gang repeatedly slaying them all. Because Kinglose Turk summoned the guards so frequently, the gang had no time to focus fire on Kinglose Turk alone.

The overall damage for AoE skill was high but still weaker than a single hit damage, thus, Kinglose Turk's HP dropped at a snail's pace. The gang had to drag the battle without realizing it!

Luckily, Han Ying Xue had a great talent for healing and she was already an expert in MP before she reached Level 30. After she had gained <Divine Soul>, her healing power was further improved, which almost made her MP inexhaustible.

On the other side, [Shadow of Revenge]'s HP was high but Annie Balrum did decent damage, so [Shadow of Revenge]'s HP depleted rapidly. Han Ying Xue wanted to heal [Shadow of Revenge] but the system showed that it was invalid to cast spell towards the target, so she could only helplessly gaze at [Shadow of Revenge]'s HP dropping.

“Ha ha, Chateau, you useless crap, you were useless when you was living, you are also as useless in death!” Annie Balrum fired <Soul Burst> at [Shadow of Revenge] to destroy its last drop of HP and she wore a contemptuous expression.

After losing [Shadow of Revenge] who held the highest aggro, Annie immediately turned her target to Han Ying Xue because

nobody had attacked her before and certainly Han Ying Xue, who performed mass healing would become her target as she held the highest aggro.

Zhang Yang had been keeping an eye on the other battle, so he hurriedly took out the quest spear from his inventory and selected it.

Suddenly, Chateau Turk's soul appeared once again with full HP. The centaur prince immediately dashed towards Annie Balrum, raised his spear and roared, "B*tch, I'll kill you!" It was the same action with the same dialogue as before.

Annie Balrum was stunned, and stopped attacking Han Ying Xue after she fired a single <Soul Burst> at Han Ying Xue. Annie Balrum turned around to deal [Shadow of Revenge], crying out, "Impossible! You are already dead! I just killed you, you are already dead!"

"B*tch, you betrayed me, you betrayed love and you even want to kill me now!" [Shadow of Revenge] roared with anger, "Go to hell!"

This pair of nominally couple started to fight once again.

90%, 80%, 70%... Kinglose Turk's HP dropped slowly. He summoned the guards continuously and the gang cleared the summoned guards repeatedly in a cycle.

Poor Kinglose Turk had the esteemed title of being a boss, but

was subjected to repeated AoE skills as if he was just another minion.

20%, 10%... 3%, 2%, 1%!

“No! No!” Kinglose Turk howled loudly in anguish and rage, clinging on to his life, “I’m the King of centaurs, I will dominate the world, the land is all mine! All the beauties are also mine! I’m immortal, I’m imm...”

Pa, the huge and tall body crashed down. This King had died hundreds of years ago but the evil sorcerer had used undead magic to resurrect him. Now, he faced death again.

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Kinglose Turk. Obtained 120,050 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

“It was really exhausting killing this old fellow, if not for him summoning so many minions, I suppose we would have killed him earlier!” Now only did Endless Starlight dare to discuss the strategy after killing Kinglose Turk.

“Kinglose...” Annie Balrum howled shrilly, countless black light surged from her body and eight dark stripes appeared on her beautiful face. It was another kind of sexy.

“Pa!” She threw another <Soul Burst> towards [Shadow of Revenge], instantly killing him, even when he still had about 40,000 HP!

“F*ck, after her father-in-law died, she releases her anger on her husband. This woman is really cruel!” Fatty Han shouted.

Another [Shadow of Revenge] was summoned again, shouting something among the lines of, “B*tch, I’ll kill you!” and dashed towards Annie Balrum. Before he could reach her, he was already slashed to pieces by Annie Balrum’s <Shadow Whip>!

“No need to summon anymore!” Zhang Yang rushed forward Annie Balrum, “Kinglose Turk has died and [Shadow of Revenge] is not useful anymore. The developer won’t let us defeat Annie Balrum so easily!”

If [Shadow of Revenge] could be used, then there would be no healing stress for the team because they could defeat Annie Balrum easily.

“What if we had hit Annie Balrum first?” Yan Wei Er blinked her eyes and asked.

“She may have been immune to damage probably had a full HP recovery ability before death, who knows?! Doesn’t matter anymore!” Zhang Yang continued rushing towards Annie Balrum and threw a chain of skills at her.

Han Ying Xue still held the highest aggro, so Annie Balrum totally ignored Zhang Yang. Annie Balrum cast <Dark Anguish>, <Touch of Weakness> and <Soul Decay>, three debuffs on Han Ying Xue, followed by <Soul Burst> and <Shadow Whip>. Many

texts and debuffs floated above Han Ying Xue's head.

‘-2,000!’

‘-1,000!’

‘-1,000!’

‘+1,802!’

‘-300!’

‘-1,000!’

‘+363!’

‘-500!’

Han Ying Xue had only about 4,300 HP so only had about 600 HP after being struck by Annie Balrum. She was petrified in fear and hurriedly cast <Holy Shield> while yelled at the same time, “Silly Yu, help me!”

Zhang Yang couldn't help but laugh in his heart, looking at her somewhat comical predicament. He threw a <Vanguard's Aggression> at Han Ying Xue and her received damage was reduced by 90% immediately!

As a result, Annie Balrum's attacks towards Han Ying Xue were not harmful anymore and Han Ying Xue immediately casted healing spells, recovering her own HP to full!

Zhang Yang dared not take any chances and hurriedly summoned [Servant: Clear Lotus] to cause high damage output in order to hold the highest aggro! Otherwise, the effect of <Vanguard's Aggression> would end after 10 seconds, and without any immunity and lifesaving skill, Han Ying Xue would not survive much longer.

8, 7, 6... 2, 1!

Ten seconds of <Vanguard's Aggression> effect ended and the barrier shielded around Han Ying Xue disappeared immediately!

Han Ying Xue still held the highest aggro. Annie Balrum threw another <Soul Burst> towards Han Ying Xue and took out half of Han Ying Xue's HP.

‘-2,000!’

“Ah! Silly Yu, faster get your aggro, I'm going to die!” Han Ying Xue screamed.

Yan Wei Er rarely ever saw Han Ying Xue with such an embarrassing expression, she could not help but laughed along with Zhang Yang.

‘-3,440!’

‘<Destructive Smash> Critical Strike!’

After a high damage output, Annie Balrum had finally turned around and stared at Zhang Yang with her eyes full of grudge and anger: “Foreigners, you killed my beloved man, I want all of you buried together with my beloved man!”

“Damn, this shameless woman still dares to talk like that! How did the previous Prince and Queen deal with such a character?!” Endless Starlight muttered.

“Ding! You have received the effect of <Dark Anguish>. Receiving 500 Shadow Damage every 3 seconds for 18 seconds!”

“Ding! You have received the effect of <Touch of Weakness>. All your attacks and healing effect will be reduced by 5% for 1 minute!”

“Ding! You have received the effect of <Soul Decay>. Receiving 300 Shadow Damage every 2 seconds for 24 seconds!”

A chain of system alerts flooded his log, and a row of debuffs appeared above Zhang Yang’s head. His body was surrounded by black colour air which was the same as Han Ying Xue.

Luckily Zhang Yang had regained the aggro in time!

“Ding! Annie Balrum has released <Soul Burst>!”

‘-1,600!’

Another damage text floated across Zhang Yang’s head once again. Annie Balrum’s <Soul Burst> was instantaneous and had high damage value. Luckily it needed 6 seconds of cool down time. Otherwise, Zhang Yang would not withstand a <Soul Burst> coming at him every second!

“Ding! Annie Balrum is channeling <Shadow Whip>. Dealing 1,000 Shadow Damage every second for 3 seconds!”

Annie Balrum wielded her wand, a ray of black light instantly twined around Zhang Yang’s body and ‘-640’ damage text floated across his head every second.

‘<Crash Magic>!’

Immune!

Zhang Yang was unable to interrupt Annie Balrum’s casting and took its damage!

“Sis, let me avenge you!” Yan Wei Er shouted and whirled her weapon, stabbing the back of Annie Balrum which caused a chain of attacks, thus, many damage texts appeared across Annie

Balrum's head.

“Little brat, weren't you laughing happily just now?” Han Ying Xue said angrily.

Yan Wei Er smiled and said, “No, that must have been your imagination!”

The gang started to deal damage forcefully and hacked away at Annie Balrum.

Although Annie Balrum had cast many skills, the damage value was not horrible. Her DPS was just about 1,200, but it was still higher than Han Ying Xue's healing value. However, Zhang Yang could use lifesaving skills! These were the differences between a tank and a healer!

If they dragged the battling time any longer then Zhang Yang's skills' cool down time would not be enough. Annie Balrum's HP was only about 900,000, with the team's DPS at above 5,000 and Annie Balrum could not last for more than 3 minutes! Zhang Yang started a chain of attack with <Berserker's Heal> followed by the Lover's Sword life steal effect, [Shadow of Merlinda], and <Shield Wall> which outlasted Annie Balrum.

“No... No!” Annie Balrum yelled madly before dying, “I cannot die! I'm the prettiest centaur, the Queen of centaurs, I cannot die...”

0%!

Annie Balrum crashed down.

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Annie Balrum. Obtained 117,550 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

“Ding! You have completed the quest: Kill Them Both. Gained 100,000 EXP!”

“Yes, we did it!” Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream got excited and jumped up.

Hang Ying Xue and the usual party members showed dull expression as they already killed a lot of Gray-Silver bosses so they were not excited at all.

“Sigh, they are all Gray-Silvers, why don’t they release a few Yellow-Gold bosses for us to kill?!” Fatty Han sighed.

“Yes, yes, yes, I want Yellow-Gold items!” Yan Wei Er eyes shone.

Thanks to the Yellow-Gold ring that Zhang Yang had obtained, the gang was drooling and looked forward to Yellow-Gold items!

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said: “Yellow-Gold bosses will appear when we are above Level 50. Based on the assumption that higher leveled Castle dungeons equals higher leveled bosses,

the final level's boss is probably a Yellow-Gold boss as Kinglose Turk is already Level 48!"

Chapter 154: Centaur Guard

“Yellow-Gold boss?”

The gang spluttered out in unison, hardly able to mask their excited expressions.

Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, “Kinglose Turk is already Level 48, so the final boss could be above Level 50! In general, the final boss is stronger so it is likely to be a Yellow-Gold boss!”

Han Ying Xue thought about it and said, “Like Cave of Bones, wasn’t there a few bosses at the front of the dungeon that were Green-Copper followed by the Gray-Silver boss appearing at the end?”

“Yes, it is!”

Yan Wei Er excitedly said, “Then will that boss drop a skeletal war horse?”

When players reach Level 40, they could buy mounts from the Mount Shop at the Capital. The mounts were just the normal generic mount where they could choose between white, brown or black colour horses. They could buy the mount at 10 gold coins only, so it was common that every player had a normal horse as a mount!

Besides, the horses sold in Mount Shop only increased movement

speeds by 200%, unlike [Skeletal War Horse]'s 300% riding speed!

Although they had been killing Shurian many times, it still never dropped any [The Leash of Skeletal War Horse]. So, Yan Wei Er had been in great anticipation of the [Skeletal War Horse] since long ago!

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "I don't know about that but if the final boss is Yellow-Gold boss, then it will be the first Yellow-Gold boss in China server, even for the global eight servers. So, it definitely will drop best items!"

"Let's go, let's kill ourselves a Yellow-Gold boss!" Yan Wei Er shouted with excitement.

Zhang Yang saw Yan Wei Er started stepping forward, he shook his head and sighed, "Evil Snow, is this little brat really suitable for trading in businesses? Aren't you afraid that she will give the whole company to others on a whim?"

Han Ying Xue didn't take offense at the nickname "Evil Snow". On the contrary, she quite liked it. When she saw Yan Wei Er putting out such behaviour, she also sighed and said, "Yan Er, don't you want to loot boss' corpses?"

"Ah!" Yan Wei Er only recalled she had not yet looted the two boss' corpses, she hurriedly turned back and ran towards the boss' corpses and said, "Don't fight! Don't fight! The boss' corpses are mine!"

Daffodil Daydream laughed and said, “Yan Er is really funny!”

Yan Wei Er ignored the comment but looted Annie Balrum’s corpse first.

[Circlet of Sacrificial Abyss] (Gray-Silver, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +96

Intelligence: +48

Spirit: +16

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 40

“Amazing, so many Vitality points from this equipment!” Daffodil Daydream muttered. [Circlet of Sacrificial Abyss] was terrifying compared to her Level 30 Green-Copper helmet which added only 36 Vitality points!

Two people with Spellcaster classes demanded the loot together,

this time it was Han Ying Xue’s turn to be luckier, and she won the roll.

[Ring of Honesty] (Gray-Silver, Ring)

Vitality: +20

Intelligence: +20

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 40

Note: Treasure of centaur race, gifted by Chateau Turk.

“Poor Chateau, you must find a good lover in your next lifetime!” Fatty Han pretended to be emphatic, when he read the note showed on the post of [Ring of Honesty]’s description.

“He had bad luck in finding women!” Endless Starlight started to response.

Daffodil Daydream immediately refuted, “As a woman, of course, we have the power to pursuit happiness!”

“Damn, Annie Balrum had an affair and she is still in the right?”
Endless Starlight said immediately.

Daffodil Daydream stated drearily with a far-away look in her face, “Perhaps the evil Prince liked Annie due to her beauty and forced her to marry him!”

“Then what about her getting entwined with the King?”
Hundred Shots also joined the discussion.

“Why should women have to submit to humiliation, do they deserve to be held down under your body?” Daffodil Daydream spoke loudly, “If any guy dares to force me and I could not fight against him, maybe I would also seduce another guy and make him a cuckold!”

Daffodil Daydream deserved to be called as “Fujoshi” as she dared to speak anything.

Instantly, the discussion reached a heated peak.

Yan Wei Er didn’t pay much attention to it and continued to loot Annie Balrum’s corpse.

[Recipe: Limitless Cape]

Use: You learn how to craft [Limitless Cape].

Requirement: Advance Tailoring

Again it's Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream. Both of them had Advanced Tailoring. Finally, Daffodil Daydream won the roll this time. After she had learnt the recipe, she posted [Limitless Cape]'s attributes.

[Limitless Cape] (Gray-Silver, Cape)

Vitality: +30

Strength: +20

Equipment: Absorbs 50 Damage value for every attack dealt.

Level Requirement: 50

True Justice set equipment for tanks had made an appearance!

Endless Starlight's eyes shone immediately and said, "Sister Daffodil, you must craft one for me!"

Daffodil Daydream pursed her lip and said, "I will craft for anyone but not you!"

Zhang Yang also said, “If you could craft this cape, it could be sold at a good price at Auction House!”

“Really?” Daffodil Daydream asked dubiously, as absorbing 50 Damage value for every attack dealt did not seem much to her.

Zhang Yang laughed, “It is pretty mediocre for just one piece of equipment, but what if you gather into set equipment?”

Set equipment? Then it could actually absorb... 500 to 1000 Damage value already!

Hundred Shots said, “That’s mean, there will be a huge damage reduction set equipment in the future?”

“Yes!” Zhang Yang nodded and said, “After Level 50, True Justice set equipment for tanks will appear with additional high damage absorption attribute. Berserkers and Templars finally do not need to compete for the equipment against Guardians and Defenders anymore!”

“Hais, finally I can relax a little bit!” Han Ying Xue said with a feeling of relief.

Zhang Yang smiled secretly and said in his mind, if the tank equipped more damage reduction equipment, the stress from healer to heal tank would be lesser. But the bosses in the future would mostly use AoE skills, so healers would still have to work

harder for the party!

He left the evil Snow to her happiness for a while and kept that information to himself.

They already picked up the good loots from Annie Balrum's corpse and now Yan Wei Er went to loot Kinglose Turk's corpse.

[Seal of the Empire] (Gray-Silver, Shield)

Defense: +400

Vitality: +160

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 40

“Wow, they actually used the seal to make as shield, it is so creative!” Fatty Han said happily.

Zhang Yang glanced at Endless Starlight who was looking at [Seal of the Empire] with a most hungry expression, smiled and said, “Starlight, take the shield!”

Endless Starlight immediately showed a grateful but in fearful expression and said: “How can that be the case, you are still using a Level 30 shield! Why don’t you take this [Seal of the Empire] and give the [Bones of the Chimera] to me!”

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “Your current equipment is too rudimentary and shield is the best to increase defense and HP! With the hammer you looted earlier and this shield, you can stand alone in the future! I would not have to worry and I will be confidently able to leave the second team to you!”

Having said that, Zhang Yang gave up his roll.

Endless Starlight was touched and almost cried in tears, he sniffled and accepted the request. Endless Starlight equipped the shield solemnly and swore secretly that he would lead his own “second team” with distinction, in order to repay Zhang Yang’s trust!

“Silly Yu, not bad huh, wheedling people in that way to be loyal to you!” Han Ying Xue sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

This evil Snow had really seen through Zhang Yang’s mind and knew that he was trying to capture people loyalty! Zhang Yang replied her private message, “When did I wheedle you and make you loyal to me? According to my conscience, there is nothing between you and me!”

“Bastard!” Now only Han Ying Xue realized the sentence she used just now could have left much to the imagination. It could have

been referring to others or even herself so Zhang Yang won this war of words.

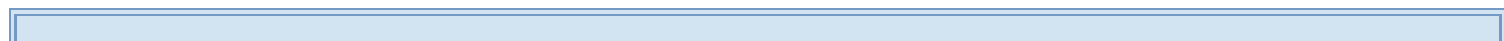
After Endless Starlight equipped [Seal of the Empire], his Defense value increased to 430 which exceeded Zhang Yang's Defense value! Besides, his HP also spiked up to more than 5,800, but it was still slightly lesser than Zhang Yang's HP a little bit! His aggro ability had substantially gone up as well, as he had a Level 40 Gray-Silver weapon!

It was easy to beef up a tank before Level 50 as long as the tank had a good weapon and a good shield like now, he was just a step towards being a beefed up tank! After Level 50, tanks needed to search around for damage reduction equipment which would be a tiring process.

Zhang Yang nodded his head in satisfaction. The next time when they explore 5-man and 10-man dungeons, they could call out two teams at the same time! They could also go for 20-man, and even 50-man dungeon raids by combining two teams into one! However, to become a strong guild, two fast progressing teams were still not enough, they needed at least three to four fast progress teams before they could surpass the same level of hardcore mode dungeon teams.

We should develop slowly and surely, it is impossible that we would achieve that in the blink of an eye!

“Wa, I loot a good item!” Yan Wei Er yelled excitedly.



[Servant: Centaur Guard] (Copper-Tier Servant)

Use: Summons a Centaur Guard to fight for you and lasts for 5 minutes. Cool down time: 1 hour. You can only summon a servant at the same time. If you summon any servant then other servants will share the same cool down time.

Level Requirement: 40

“Little brat, it’s just a Copper-Tier Servant and you’re celebrating like that?” Zhang Yang laughed and said

“Tch, you won’t understand us because you already have a Silver-Tier Servant!” Yan Wei Er rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang, before she politely bowed to the gang and said, “Brothers, sisters, uncles and aunts, please give me this servant, thank you!”

Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream were the new members of the gang and they also obtained many good items from them, and were greatly satisfied, so they would not fight with Yan Wei Er for that servant. Yan Wei Er had always been highly favoured by the gang, so Sun Xing Yu, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots also gave up on their rolls.

Zhang Yang already had Silver-Tier Servant, so he would not fight for a Copper-Tier Servant as well. He gave up his roll as well.

But Han Ying Xue put up one of her fingers, showing it to Yan

Wei Er and said, “One week worth of housework!”

Yan Wei Er immediately jumped up and said, “Han Ying Xue, you are fishing in dangerous waters, I’ll cut off ties with you!”

“Two weeks of housework!” Han Ying Xue put up two of her fingers.

“... One week!” Yan Wei Er gritted her teeth in silent fury.

“Deal!” Han Ying Xue gave up her roll.

This Copper-Tier Servant finally belonged to Yan Wei Er.

Chapter 155: Gigantic Skeleton

Although she betrayed herself of her one week effort, but the joy of acquiring a servant put a great smile on Wei Yan Er's face, and with a swoop, she summoned her servant out.

[Centaur Guard Antola] (Copper grade servant)

Level: 48

HP: 3,100

Under comparison, this servant was so much taller than Clear Lotus, with a long spear in his right arm, constantly having his upper body turning around, looking at the surroundings, appearing desperate for a fight.

“Little girl, what's the damage output for this servant? What particular skill sets does he have?” Zhang Yang asked. The details of the servant's attributes were only shown to their masters.

Wei Yan Er paused for a moment and said, “Melee damage range is in between 524-584. Attack interval is 3.6 seconds, damage per second is 154, and only one skill called <Force Strike>, effects similar to the Warrior's!”

Zhang Yang nodded. The average attack of this servant was the

same as a Level 48 player wearing a Level 40 Black-Steel tier equipment, it was still not as good as his Level 36 silver grade servant. Besides, it was much more inferior when in comparison to their skills, especially the <Substitute> skill; that was among the best!

As Wei Yan Er was busy with her new servant, Han Ying Xue took her place in touching the remaining loots from the boss.

[Sol Brave Chest Plate] (Gray-Silver armor)

Armor: +20

Vitality: +96

Strength: +48

Agility: +16

<Unidentified>

Required level: 40

This piece of equipment should be given to Wei Yan Er, to increase her maximum HP, stepping up every member of the main party to exceed the maximum HP of 5,000.

After salvaging the remaining seven to eight pieces of Green-Copper equipment, the party went through the long stone steps to the fifth floor, which was the final palace floor as well. Thinking that the final boss might be a Yellow-Gold boss, everyone was a little thrilled.

“If we can take out a Yellow-Gold rank boss, will it be announced in the system announcement?” Fatty Han spoke with his face showing that he had been longing for it. Ever since the “First Clear” in the Garden interior, it had been so long since his name was published on the system announcement. No wonder this swagger could not endure that loneliness inside him.

Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, “It should be, after all, no team has defeated any Yellow-Gold rank boss before, ever!”

Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream instantly had a shine in their eyes. For the two of them, at where they were right now, having their names well-known on the server was like a far-fetched dream to be fulfilled. But it seemed that in this one moment, that dream could be fulfilled, which led their hearts to jump very violently.

There were no monsters along the way, and the gang had arrived at the fifth floor of the palace in no time.

Compared to the fourth floor, the last floor looked more like an attic that was a 50 meters long square structure. In the middle of the attic, there was a gigantic skeleton structure, with a huge

scythe in its right hand. In front of it was a very short person in a black robe, waving a wand, channeling some sort of pitch-black light into the body of that giant skeleton.

The person in the black robe was no taller than a meter, with the magic staff in his hand being way taller than he was, making it very uncomfortable to look at.

[Evil Necromacer Zac] (Yellow-Gold, undead)

Level: 50

HP: 2,000,000

Mana: 1,000,000

“It... It’s real.... A Yellow-Gold-tier boss!” the gang spoke in unity.

Endless Starlight was filled with tears all over his face, and said, “Not only have I defeated a Gray-Silver boss, but to also see a Yellow-Gold boss with my own eyes... No regrets! No regrets even to death!”

“Look at your unworthy face!” Fatty Han spoke with his scorned face, “Do not forget, how many beauties and pretty faces in the world are waiting for us to comfort them!”

“Hey, so what is the deal with that skeleton structure?” Wei Yan Er asked while pointing her fingers at the gigantic skeleton structure.

[Gigantic Experimental Skeleton] (Elite, undead)

Level: 50

HP: 0/1,000,000

“The game company will never place something useless like that in the game!” Zhang Yang frowned and said, “Something’s fishy about this! The skeleton might get up during battle!”

“How do we fight, then?”

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, “Starlight and I will draw the boss together, if the skeleton ever gets up, I will block that skeleton monster. Whichever monster has a higher attack, we kill it first! Starlight currently has the aggro ability and has his HP up high, dealing with a boss won’t be any issue for him!”

Endless Starlight instantly blushed, with endless excitement. Before meeting them, he had never seen a Gray-Silver boss before, what more a Yellow-Gold boss! Now that he actually had a chance to tank against a Yellow-Gold boss, it was naturally hard for him

conceal his excitement.

“Little Snow, give Starlight a shield and let’s get a move on!” Zhang Yang said.

Han Ying Xue lifted her arm to instantly cast <Holy Shield> on Starlight.

Endless Starlight drew out his mace and shield, kept his emotion in check and said, “Let’s begin!” After saying it, he ran straight to the boss.

“Eh? The breath of a lively soul!” Zac had a vast aggro range, as he already noticed Starlight approaching from afar. He suddenly turned around, revealing a face full of wrinkles and pimples. Although the face looked dry and deflated, but it was still distinguishable that he was a human rather than a dwarf when he was still alive.

Chiang chiang chiang! The sound of the clashing metals rung, and an iron fence descended on the entrance, blocking the way out. It was pretty obvious that no player could leave the fifth floor now before the battle ended.

“Die you piece of dwarf!” Getting the rare chance to be the protagonist, Endless Starlight was caught in his moment of excitement, and with a wave, he threw his shield straight out.

What a high defense, <Shield Toss> could not do the trick in breaking the defenses!

Although Endless Starlight had an increasingly large amount of melee damage with a Level 40 weapon, the strength value only provided a fixed damage, which required accumulation of equipment pieces to enhance the damage output. Having approximately 190 strength, he could only stare and do nothing when encountering a boss with super high armor.

“Zhan Yu, what a high armor this boss has!” Endless Starlight exclaimed in shock.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, “200 at the least!”

“Oh, oh, oh, just so it happens, I still need some souls to complete my darling!” Zac pointed his staff towards the ground, as he instantly floated into the air and landed onto the shoulder side of that skeleton structure. “My darling, open your eyes, it is time for a massacre!”

Boom!

A kindle of greenish flame appeared within the gloomy eye sockets of the gigantic skeleton almost immediately. Klak klak klak, every bon of the structure was making the sound of bursting cracks! “+100,000” “+100,000”, with the continuous appearance of green healing numerical value appearing above its head, the HP bar of the monster was recovering very swiftly!

The whole process did not even take a second, just half a second! Just in a blink of an eye, the gigantic skeleton was already in the state of full health. Even if Zhang Yang wanted to charge forward to use <Destructive Smash>, it was already too late!

“Owh...” the gigantic skeleton suddenly probed its skull forward and let out a burst of deafening roar.

‘Oh oh oh, come and get a taste of my darling’s power!’ Zac smiled viciously on the shoulder side of the skeleton and continued to say, “Darling, kill them! Kill all of the lively souls!”

Searching out with its arm, the gigantic skeleton picked up the scythe by the ground, with the front edge of the blade charging up with a bright red glow, emitting a horrifying breath of blood! It abruptly waved its scythe and gave a heavy slash at Endless Starlight who was charging at the front.

<Divine Shield>!

Endless Starlight immediately activated his skill. This was a similar skill as the Warrior’s <Block>, with the effect of increasing 50% rate to absorb one hit and deflect a holy damage equal to the strength value. Although it was not a 100% rate, it could be effective against all assault types. This was also why Defenders were more familiar in drawing magic type monsters.

‘-192!’

Endless Starlight was lucky, that attack was successfully absorbed and caused a deflective damage of 192 to the gigantic skeleton.

However, the momentum of the attack from the gigantic skeleton was immense. Although it was successfully absorbed by Endless Starlight, but the remaining shock waves drove all melee combatants such as Zhang Yang and Sun Xiang Yu upside down.

<Strong Hammer>! <Justice Bash>! <Judgment>!

Endless Starlight entered the attack range, instantly unleashing a series of attacks onto the monster.

This was the advantage of Knights being a tank; the skills were fueled by the mana points rather than rage points, so as long as the skills were not on a cool down period, the player could create a huge aggro value in just an instant.

The gigantic skeleton stormed the stage with its incredible roar again, waving its scythe at Endless Starlight and sliced him.

‘-3,026!’

A huge damage text appeared on Endless Starlight.

You would never know if you have never experienced it yourself.

Without being a tank yourself, you would never know how strong the monster is! Endless Starlight was instantly shocked, and he said, “What a ferocious monster, the basic attack should be above 4,000 already!”

Zhang Yang regained his stance right after he fell, and he charged into the front line and clashed into the monster. Although the gigantic skeleton was just an elite, but it was equipped with immunity to control skills, therefore it was not affected by the stun effect of <Charge>.

‘-653!’

With a swing of his sword, Zhang Yang estimated silently in his heart that the armor of the monster was about 300 or so, so he instantly prioritized to throw 5 stacks of <Cripple Defense> onto the monster. To avoid dispersing Endless Starlight’s aggro value, Zhang Yang had to keep his shield into his backpack. In this way, the passive skill <Shield Oath> immediately lost its role, so that his attack no longer gave him an additional 20% extra hatred.

“Head to the rear of the monster and unleash your damage, monster’s attacks have split and knock down effect!”

“Oh oh oh, puny souls, die!” Zac was shouting from above, from time to time, he would throw a <Shadow Arrow> down towards the gang, without any specific target, it was totally random. Every arrow brought about 1,000 damage, though the rate of the attack was not that high.

The gigantic skeleton suddenly issued a roar full of rage, storming its right foot onto the ground, and a radius of about five meters of black circle appeared beneath its leg, with countless skulls vaguely seen constantly emerging from the beneath ground.

‘Ding! You have received <Decaying Abyss>, deals 1,000 shadow damage every 3 seconds, the effect will last until you leave the effective area of the Decaying Abyss!’

Endless Starlight was smart. He had already drew the gigantic skeleton towards the side even before Zhang Yang had to speak, so he left the effective area of the <Decaying Abyss> in time. But inevitably, all melee combatants that were still in the effective area had to suffer one time of 1,000 damage after 3 seconds had passed.

Han Ying Xue immediately cast <Healing> to every member, and she quickly threw any healing skills available at the moment onto Endless Starlight.

In just a few seconds, the gigantic skeleton stormed its foot onto the ground, once again unleashing <Decaying Abyss>, forcing Endless Starlight to corner of the sides.

The skill was activated on an extremely frequent rate, with the interval of not more than 10 seconds, which basically only gave the gang just a few short seconds to unleash their damage onto the monster in peace before they were forced to shift around.

Without much effort, the small area was almost occupied by circles of <Decaying Abyss>.

Zhang Yang became cautious, and said, “Starlight, don’t stray too far while dodging the <Decaying Abyss>, because they won’t disappear and if the battle is prolonged, there will not be a spot to dodge anymore!”

Endless Starlight immediately read the situation and said, “Understood!”

Pang, pang, pang! The gigantic skeleton gave the ground a consecutive storm, leaving one circle of abyss after another, in just a short moment, one third of the fifth floor area was occupied with circles of <Decaying Abyss>!

“The key to victory in this battle will be based on the damage output of each sides, we must take out the monster before it covers the whole area with <Decaying Abyss>, or it would be us who will suffer the horror of the abyss and die a horrible death!” Zhang Yang shouted, while summoning [Servant Clear Lotus] to increase their damage output. His initial intention was to reserve her until the boss battle, but her <Substitute> was just so convenient for him!

Wei Yan Er can only stare blankly as her servant had already exceed its time and vanished. To summon it again, player was required to wait for another 50 minutes!

Every single one of them had unleashed their skills with long cooldowns, trying their very best to take out the gigantic skeleton as swiftly as possible after hearing Zhang Yang. “Oh oh oh, Puny

souls, I sense your fear! Wonderful, it is just wonderful, I just love preys with desperate helpless eyes, that's the sensation that is limited only to killing!" Zac laughed continuously in a weird manner, without forgetting his role to throw a <Shadow Arrow> at the players in every few seconds.

90%, 80%, 70%!

The damaging output of the gang was not disappointing at all, but the skeleton monster had a very thick armor, even with five stacks of <Cripple Defense> that lowered 50% of its armor, there was still 150 points of armor left. It would largely affect the damage output of a dual-wielding profession class, especially [Servant Clear Lotus] who only caused 1 physical damage with her secondary weapon. She could only cause some descent damaging output with her primary weapon attack and her skills.

60%, 50%!

The breathing space of the fifth floor was getting smaller by the second, and the <Decaying Abyss> had shrouded more than half of the area, with the first abyss that was placed on the ground showing no sign of disappearing!

40%, 30%!

The breathing space for the gang continued to be reduced into the size of one to six of the original size of the fifth floor.

“Speed! Speed! Hit harder!” Zhang Yang cried out intensely.

20%!

10%!

The gang had to retreat for two or three more round!

7%! The gigantic skeleton had only 72,841 HP left.

There was no way to pull back anymore! Every one of them had been circled up around the foot of the monster as that was the only area that was not shrouded by the Decaying Abyss.

“Come together! I am activating <Vanguard's Aggression>! Within this 10-second gap, it's either him or us!” Zhang Yang shouted.

Pang! With another storm from the foot of the gigantic skeleton, another decaying abyss appeared!

Zhang Yang reequipped his shield, activated <Vanguard's Aggression> covering the whole gang. At the same instant, he activated <Substitute>.

‘-100!’

‘-100!’

‘-100!’

‘...’

Although he used <Vanguard’s Aggression> which left him to receive double damage, his <Substitute> gave him a 5-second invincibility, making Zhang Yang able to hold up strong. The moment his invincibility faded, he was damaged with ‘-1,600’, ‘-1,600’ overtime. With a few skills in play, Han Ying Xue brought his HP back up.

60,000! 50,000! 40,000! 30,000!

The effect of <Vanguard’s Aggression> faded, leaving the team vulnerable to begin losing 1,000 HP as every second passed. However, the HP of the gigantic skeleton was emptied out, leaving it to shriek and turn into a bunch of bones, crumbling down to the ground!

At the same instant, all of the <Decaying Abyss> vanished without leaving a sign on their own!

Chapter 156: Engaging Zac

“Oh oh oh, what a bunch of puny souls! To be able to take out my darling, it seems that I have underestimated you!” Zac descended straight from the air, with only a wave of his staff, he landed softly on the ground.

He grinned and revealed two rows of yellowish teeth and said: "Since you murdered my darling, then I shall pull out all your bones and make a new darling!"

While he was all having the conversation, Han Ying Xue has seized the opportunity to heal everyone with recovery skills, activating <Holy Prayers> and <Healing Bond>, trying her best to fill up every single one of their HP bars.

Zhang Yang did not charge forward immediately, because that was most probably the introductory remark made by the boss, which provided the gang some precious gap of time to recover their stance for the coming battle. Charging blindly into hitting the boss would only result in provoking the boss to instantly initiate his attacks!

However, this introductory remark was just too short for them, after a few arrogant words coming from Zac, he aimed his staff right at Endless Starlight. In his aggro list, although everyone was having the same value that was zero, but because they were affected by the gigantic skeleton monster, his primary target that he locked on at the moment was Endless Starlight.

Shoof! Zhang Yang used <Charge> to tackle himself into the boss.

‘-553!’

Slashing through with his sword, Zhang Yang was left breathless wondering how thick of a skin does the boss have!

‘-1,356!’

‘-1,421!’

Clashing with a <Destructive Smash> followed with a <Horizontal Sweep>, he swiftly completed accumulating his first round of the aggro value.

Zac suddenly went raging, switching his target onto Zhang Yang and started chanting his spell.

Naturally, Sun Xin Yu and the others rounded up on the boss and unleashed their attacks as their first move.

‘-89!’

‘-1!’

Although Sun Xin Yu scratched deep with her dual daggers, but the two hits could only do insignificant damage value! Bear in

mind that Sun Xin Yu was equipped with a Level 40 dagger, and her main weapon could deal an average damage of 600, give or take. But she could only deal an insignificant damage of 89, and her secondary weapon attack could even barely scratch the surface of the armor!

So how thick of a skin does the boss actually have?

Although the skills of most of the thieves had the attribute to ignore defenses, and the attack value was also much higher than ordinary attacks leaving the effect of the armor to minimal, the mana value was still limited! The ratio of normal attack indicated in white texts occupied a very large portion of the damage output of thieves!

Sun Xin Yu immediately made a demand on Zhang Yang, “Quickly, use <Cripple Defense>!”

Zhang Yang could not help himself but chuckle, to think that the cold icy queen would even beg him for a moment! Although Sun Xin Yu's tone voice had a huge difference from what he had in mind, but Zhang Yang still treated it as her begging him, having his vanity greatly satisfied.

<Cripple Defense>! <Cripple Defense>! <Cripple Defense>!
<Cripple Defense>! <Cripple Defense>!

Truth to be told, even if Sun Xin Yu did not request for it, Zhang Yang would have still smashed 5 stacks of <Cripple Defense> onto the boss with the goal to boost the damage output of the whole

gang!

‘337!’

‘-1!’

With 5 stacks of <Cripple Defense> in play, the damage output of the main weapon of Sun Xin Yu had soared so much higher than before, but the damage output of her secondary weapon was still not ideal. For an agile thief, the damage output of secondary weapons is not important, its main purpose was to be used for poisoning!

But it was still not enough for Sun Xin Yu, who was constantly craving to be the best! The secondary had also contributed a damage of 135 for every second that passed; a portion of damage that should not be taken lightly as well!

<Eagle Eye>! Sun Xin Yu silently thought about it, thinking that she must acquire that skill!

The higher the armor a monster had, the more it affected a weapon that attacks swiftly, especially to those agile Thieves. Equipped with two of the swiftest daggers in the whole of ‘God’s Miracles’, the damage per second was not low at all, but the single attack was down to the definition of very low. Therefore, this profession class really needed a skill that could decrease the monster’s armor!

“Puny souls, give up on avoiding the inevitable, return yourself to womb of death! Only death is eternity, then there is immortality!” With a touch of his staff, he completed his <Shadow Arrow> spell and threw it straight onto Zhang Yang.

‘-3,212!’

The attack damage of Zac was totally different from phase 1, with the damage output increasing by threefold!

“Oh oh oh, puny souls, can you feel death?” Zac could be categorized as a garbage-talk kind of a boss, going on with such nonsense!

“Argh!” Wei Yan Er wildly swung her weapon around and said, “I cannot take it anymore, let’s just slay this stupid boss and be done with this, or else we are going to be dead by his annoying words!”

“Oh oh oh, slay me you say? You puny bunch of people, trying to slay Zac the great? Dream on with your pathetic daydream! Let me, Zac the great tell you about greatness!” the boss waved his staff around and, bam, bam, bam, shooting one <Shadow Arrow> after another.

Zhang Yang could not help but smile, then he said, “This is indeed a Yellow-Gold boss, its AI is somewhat sketchy, and it reacts to players’ emotion accordingly!”

A regular NPC would only react according to the script when it

was triggered by events. If a player did not speak the keywords that triggered them, the NPC would just repeat, saying irrelevant words. Only NPCs with higher AI would react accordingly to any words from the players.

Fatty Han was pumped at the moment, so he said, “Hey shorty, ugly ass, come and get me!”

“An elf as fat as a pig? Oh oh oh, how could there be such a vulgar creature from the aristocratic tribe of the elves!” Zac rolled both of his eyes around, revealing a contempt look on his face, “Is it a boar pig that raped a female elf and gave birth to a half-bred bastard? Or some male elf forced himself down with a few hundred pounds of aphrodisiac to rape a female boar?”

This... is just outrageous!

The gang could not help themselves but to give a moment of silence for Fatty Han.

Fatty Han was surprised for a moment, with his face flushed into red soon, he shouted with rage, “You retarded f*ck face! You’re the bastard, you and all our family members are!”

Even a wretched person like Fatty Han himself suffered losses from the mouth of the boss, so the gang kept silent to avoid being cursed by this garbage-talk kind of boss. Channeling their rage into strength, they made haste on bringing down the HP bar of the boss.

98%, 96%, 94%... Due to the high armor of the boss, the total damage output of the gang which mostly consisted of physical damage was being brought down by a level of effectiveness!

Coupled with the boss's bloody high HP, the percentage of the HP was decreased in a very slow manner.

“Puny souls, the time for games is over!” Zac pointed his staff at Zhang Yang and instantly shot a dark light that later shrouded him whole.

‘Ding! You have received <Darkness Amplifying> effect, increase all damage by 100%, increase damage received by 50%, last for 10 seconds!’

‘-1,533!’

‘-3,281!’

‘-9,506!’

Satisfying! Normal attacks exceeded a thousand, with <Horizontal Sweep> reaching about 3,000+ damage, and <Destructive Smash> was a lucky strike, dealing a critical damage that went beyond 9,000!

Staring at the damage he did, the gang was left without words.

Wei Yan Er quickly shouted, “Hey dwarf boss, hurry up and give me a <Darkness Amplifying> as well!”

‘-4,813!’ A swift land of a <Shadow Arrow> inflicted a very high damage value on Zhang Yang.

While having his damage multiplied many times over, the damaged received was also multiplied over many times. Although it could not take out Zhang Yang in one hit, but it was enough to make him suffer a lot!

But Han Ying Xue suffered a fate far worse, seizing the time of three seconds where the boss was chanting to cast shields and heal, maintaining Zhang Yang’s HP up above the safety line of 5,000.

‘+2,039!’

‘+402!’

Bam! The boss threw another <Shadow Arrow> at him.

‘-2,801!’

The <Holy Shield> took precedence to absorb a damage of 20,00, but the attack still took Zhang Yang’s HP right off to less than 2,000.

The boss used a <Shadow Arrow> once in every 3 seconds, so only

3 shots could be released within the 10 seconds duration of the <Darkness Amplifying> effect! Zhang Yang made a decisive decision, activating his <Berserker's Heal>.

‘+6,380!’

A large green numerical value appeared right above his head, instantly gaining back his full health!

“Noob tank, you know you can consider to change your role to healer!” Wei Yan Er giggled.

‘-4,891!’

During the duration of the <Darkness Amplifying> effect, the last <Shadow Arrow> hit right onto Zhang Yang.

Han Ying Xue healed in time, shoof shoof shoof, raising Zhang Yang's HP and they finally made their way through a tough time.

“That almost had my heart out!” Han Ying Xue patted her plumping chest, sending her dual peaks constantly changing shapes and then restoring back to their initial shape, showing a surprising flexibility.

The waves of shaking boobs instantly sent the four men in the gang into a shock for a moment there.

Wei Yan Er looked at Han Ying Xue's marvelous boobs with admiration, she did a duck face and said, "Be careful not to spoil them with your patting, sis!"

"Yan Er, are you trying to repeat your mistakes again? Please watch out as there might not be any dinner for you!"

Wei Yan Er showed no fear, so she said, "If you dare to starve me, I will call that Mr. Luo, I am sure he is very eager to treat us with dinner!"

Han Ying Xue lost her breath for a second, revealing her disgusted face, and she said, "Do not ever bring up that disgusting name of his in front of me!"

Zhang Yang recalled that he had heard the name before from the 2 ladies, so he asked, "Little sister, so what's the deal with this Mr. Luo?"

"Cousin's admirer! He started going after my cousin since high school, and then until the university time, my cousin has grown scared of him and hid in UK to study!" Wei Yan Er did not even blink or look at Han Ying Xue, and without the slightest hesitation, she betrayed her cousin's secret to the public, "That Mr. Luo Yang Ming intended to pursue her to Cambridge, but luckily enough, the university refused to accept him because of his results. So he tried to solve his problem with money like he always does. So he ended up being expelled from the university, being blacklisted by Cambridge University! So he finally sneaked back to the country. That really had me laughing!"

“You b*tch, you’re so dead!” Han Ying Xue could not shut Wei Yan Er’s mouth, all she could do was threaten her with some nasty words from aside.

Wei Yan Er giggled, and she said, “Sister Sun, it seems like I will need to beg for dinner at your place tonight!”

“No problem!” Sun Xin Yu was always this straightforward.

As they were talking, the HP of the boss was decreasing. Zac had been using only <Shadow Arrow> and <Darkness Amplifying> all the time. The threat was great, but the pressure was only felt by the tanker and the healer, while the damage output gang was totally like chopping piles of woods, having no pressure on them!

90%, 80%, 70%... 40%, 30%, 20%!

“You damn souls, how can you all be still alive?! I am mad, I am really mad!” Zac spoke fiercely, revealing his impatient look on his face, “Then it is time for me to do this the serious way!”

Chapter 157: Killing A Yellow-Gold boss

Zac raised his long staff up above his head, and a magic array immediately emerged from just beneath his head.

<Crash Magic>!

‘Immune’!

Zhang Yang shook his head a couple times as the chanting could not be interrupted. What kind of devilish <Crash Magic> is this?!

The chanting time for that skill was really short, as it only took 2 seconds before a dark light instantly burst out from the staff, radiating towards all directions.

‘-2,000!’

For the first time in the attack, a numerical value appeared right on top of Zhang Yang’s head.

‘-2,500!’

‘-2,500!’

‘-2,500!’

As the dark light emitted through, the other gang members also received a damage of up to 2,500 points! Only Endless Starlight, a Knight tank, received the least damage, taking only 1,875 points.

‘Ding! Zac has unleashed <Shadow Burst>!’

Zac had already begun his chanting for <Shadow Burst> while the voice announcement was made in the system.

“Stupid boss, this is god damn tiring!” Han Ying Xue was provoked to the point that she was shouting; it was totally causing her lots of trouble! <Holy Prayers> could only heal Zhang Yang for 2,000 HP, while healing others for 500 HP. It was so insignificant to even look at!

‘-2,000!’ ‘-2,500!’ ‘-2,500!’

Zac used another <Shadow Burst> to cause a massive area of splash attack, and then... another <Shadow Burst>. It seemed that the boss would not stop until everyone is dead!

Wei Yan Er started to cry very loudly, “This stupid boss is shamelessly strong, how are we going to fight this?”

Actually, a boss with this amount of HP such as Zac that only triggered their AOE (Area Of Effect) skills indefinitely was considered easy already! The upcoming bosses in the field would be equipped with aura skills. Once the players were within the effective radius of the skills, they will lose their HP like wild

gooses! It will also mean that they will lose a lot of firepower! It will become a battle that required thousands of players, having one wave after another of the players to sacrifice themselves in exchange for a few thousands of damage dealt on the boss, using the advantage of numbers and time to wear the bosses down to their demise!

It was just like in his previous life when Zhang Yang was battling a big boss to compete an Inheritance quest. It came with a <Flame Aura>, scorching all players who were within 30 meter radius of the area with 5,000 damage per second! Normal players would just die burning within 10 seconds within the effective area, and the boss did not have to activate any other skills!

What should I do? Zhang Yang quietly asked himself.

“Snow, give up on the others and use your <Healing Bond> on me!” Zhang Yang had finally made a decisive call.

[Healing Bond]: Heal both the caster and the target at the same time. Recover 100% HP based on magic attack. Cast time: 1 second, Cool down time: 1 second.

Priests were known to be good in group healing. With the appearance of healing skills such as <Healing Shower> and <Fountain of Light> in the near future, the healing capability of a Priest could reach their healing up to 10 or 20 players at a time, but a Level 40 priest only had <Healing Bond> to stick with.

Han Ying Xue's magic output was around 1,000, with a continuous spam of <Healing Bond> onto Zhang Yang and some healing skill, while casting a <Holy Shield> on herself, she should never die. And Zhang Yang had a passive skill of 20% of damage reduction, so they might just hold on long enough till the end as long as <Healing Bond> and some <Heal> were in play!

The only disadvantage was the incredible consumption of Mana Points of <Healing Bond>, can they really last until finishing the boss?

This was the spirit of the Warriors breaking their wrist! It was not that they did not care for their own hands, but they cherished their own lives even more! To keep everyone alive would only end up dying together, but maintaining Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue alive in the battle still provided them a glimpse of hope in defeating the boss!

It was really easy for Han Ying Xue to understand with her level of intelligence, so she immediately gave up healing the others and focused only on healing Zhang Yang and herself, then she would cast the <Healing Bond> afterwards.

“Hey sis! Give me a <Heal> please!” Wei Yan Er was already at the bottom of her HP bar. With both of her teary eyes, she tried for Han Ying Xue's sympathy, “Sis, you are flesh and bones to me, you can't leave me to die!”

“It's cousin!” Han Ying Xue quickly corrected.

“Wow, Han Ying Xue, you dates-before-sisterhood b*tch! I want to unfriend you!” Wei Yan Er went raging about.

Others had also understood that the armor of the boss was just too high. Under the impression of damage output, it should be Zhang Yang who had <Cripple Defense> and <Eagle Eye> at the same time that was without a doubt, the strongest attacker among them! Furthermore, he also possessed many live-saving skills that made him the strongest survivor among the others!

Everyone was trying their best to deal as much damage as possible before they met their demise, with only one goal, to ease the stress for Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue!

‘Ding! Player Daffodil Daydream has deceased!’

It did not take long for Daffodil Daydream to pass out, followed by Wei Yan Er, Hundered Shots, and Fatty Han, all to fall short of the battle. Sun Xin Yu managed to perform a well-timed <Vanish>, buying her an extra 3-second to deal a little more damage before she fell. The last one to fall was Endless Starlight, after using up his <Sacred Protection> and <Sacred Heal>, he fell down to the ground, lying dead.

“Little Yang, pretty Snow, we are counting on you guys!”

“Do your best!”

“The first clear of Yellow-Gold boss is within our grasp!”

The gang were pumped to encourage Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue.

“Hmph! You treacherous pair of paramours!” Wei Yan Er pursed her lips in displeasure.

The boss was left with 400,000 HP, and Zhang Yang could deal about 1,000 damage in every second. If nothing would go wrong, they only needed to maintain the same pace for another 400 seconds to secure their final victory! But the problem was, could Han Ying Xue’s mana hold on for that long?

With Han Ying Xue having <Heart of Light>, the mana consumption for all healing skills were reduced by 75%, but casting group magic consumed quite a large amount of mana. There might not be a problem for her to hold for 4 to 5 minutes, but 400 seconds was about nearly seven minutes!

"Reserve the shield for your own use, and heal yourself later, I will activate every single one of my life-saving skills once, that way I can strive to activate them later for more than a few times!" Zhang Yang said to Han Ying Xue. The more frequent he could activate his skills, the more Han Ying Xue could save up on her Mana Points for later use.

<Berserker’s Heal>, shoof, recovering to full health, bought a six-second gap. Activating the special effect of the [Lover’s Sword] recovered another 4,000 HP, prolonging another 4 seconds. Activating <Shadow of Merlinda> gave another 10 seconds!

Activating <Shield Wall>, another buff of 10 seconds!

And there was also red potions and the ring's <Lifesteal> effect, adding up to a sum of 5,600 HP recovery within 2 minutes, which was not much lesser than what <Berserker's Heal> could offer!

18%, 15%, 11%... The boss' HP bar was depleting, and the Han Ying Xue's mana was too!

The outcome of this battle will be based on whether Zhang Yang could kill the boss first, or Han Ying Xue finishes her last drop of mana, leaving both of them vulnerable die by the boss!

8%, 6%, 3%!

Han Ying Xue had used up all her mana about 2 seconds ago, but luckily the cooldown for blue potion had been refreshed! She consumed a grade 1 Mana Potion, swezz, gaining 1,000 mana points as a bonus!

It was the key to ensure their victory!

‘+1,012!’

‘+1,012!’

With a <Healing Bond> in play again, both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue received an abundance of green healing values over their

heads.

2%!

“You’re almost there!”

“Noob tank, why haven’t you killed the boss yet? I despise you!”

“Zhan Yu, just a little more!”

“Little Snow, hold on!”

Victory was upon them, everyone could not resist their urge to scream and shout.

1%!

“Slash! With your full might! Forget about me, just get rid of him!”

“We’re about to win!”

“The first clear of Yellow-Gold boss, here we come!”

“Hahaha, we are the best!”

41,734!

25,923!

9,134!

4,121!

812!

o!

“We did it!”

‘Ding! You and your party have slain the Evil Necromacer Zac, acquired 1,000,050 Experience Points (50 reward points for team effort)’

‘Ding! You and your party have completed the “First Clear” of the Yellow-Gold boss, this result will be recorded in the Glorious Achievement List! As the party leader, please key in your team name, for the world to praise!’

‘Ding, you have competed the main quest: Final Blow! Automatically redirect to new quest: Report back to Grand Magus Anthony Faylon. Hustle back to White Jade City to claim your reward!’

Pak! The midget body of Zac made a turn around and fell onto the icy-cold ground facing up to the sky. The fiery red staff on his hands fell off afar.

Phew! Zhang Yang took breath of relief, they managed to pull this off because of his high damage output and Han Ying Xue's large healing capability. If it was up to others, they would not have held on for such a long period of time! Even if they could have held on for so long, they would not have enough fire power (damage output) to put down the boss for good!

Zhang Yang conveniently entered the name 'Lone Desert Smoke' into the entry box and selected the confirm button, allowing the server to begin making the announcement.

'Server Announcement: The Lonely Desert Smoke has succeeded in acquiring "First Clear" for killing Yellow-Gold boss Zac. This great deed will be registered onto the Glorious-deed list (China Region).'

'Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Leader) has succeeded in acquiring "First Clear" for killing Yellow-Gold boss Zac, acquired server reward 10 gold coins, luck attribute +1, All alliance reputation increased by 500 points!'

'Server Announcement: Player Endless Starlight (member) has succeeded.....'

Every corner of the global channel was full of server announcements in red, and once again that shook every single player in the China region!

“So what’s the situation now? A Yellow-Gold boss?”

“You must be joking!”

“No wonder the Lone Desert Smoke had not been exploiting the Death Mode of the dungeons lately, so this is what they have been up to, killing a Yellow-Gold boss!”

“That’s right! The castle interior is full of only Gray-Silver bosses, if it’s up to me, I would have went straight for the Yellow-Gold boss as well!”

“I’m so envious now! I wonder what kind of equipment will a Yellow-Gold boss drop out?”

“Brother Zhan Yu, I am currently 28, as beautiful as the flowers, with an exotic body, pure as a virgin, please take me!”

“Pure as a virgin? That means no more a virgin then?”

“Didn’t you hear I am currently 28? It is really super hard to find a virgin nowadays, you can find one in the nursery school!”

“F*ck, this is totally out of topic!”

“ ... ”

Han Ying Xue started to revive the gang one after another. The gang were so agitated after their revival!

This was the first clear for killing a Yellow-Gold boss!

Noticing Sun Xin Yu staring at him by a quick glance, Zhang Yang smiled, “If you are very excited to the point that you are thinking of giving me a hug, just come at me!”

The moment he finished his words, a shadow instantly flew into his arms, clinging to him very tightly.

Zhang Yang quickly said, “I was not talking to you! Argh!”

It was Endless Starlight, with tears streaming down his face, crying, “Zhan Yu, I’m so excited right now!”

“... I can see that!”

“Am I becoming famous now?”

“... Most probably!”

“Then my dream of creating a harem environment is finally

becoming possible now!” Endless Starlight was sobbing too much to speak.

“... F*ck off!”

“The loot, the loot!” Wei Yan Er did not care so much whether she would become famous or not, but what she loved the most was the looting.

Chapter 158: Quest Complete

As a Yellow-Gold boss, the equipment drop would not be any lesser. Moreover, it was the first clear for killing the boss, which in fact, was genuinely a big bang (news) for everyone!

There were already four pieces of Gold grade equipment, seven pieces of Silver grade equipment, seventeen pieces of Bronze grade equipment, and several Red and Green-ish skill books. Everyone was drooling just by looking at them!

“Golden fortune! Although the midget has grown out to be crooked, but the loots he left behind match the status of the Yellow-Golden boss!” Fatty Han was beamed with delight.

As the natural habit of Wei Yan Er, she always picked up the coins carefully from the floor first, before checking out the equipment drop.

Although Zac was a Yellow-Golden boss, there was no sign of any golden coins, only 92 pieces of silver coins, which after were equally dividing, gives each player only 11 pieces of silver coins, or maybe a little more for some of them.

[Harbinger Staff] (Yellow-Gold, Staff)

Magic damage: 1,340-1,540

<Unidentified>

Level required: 50

Looking at the terrifying magic damage value, everyone lost their cool, having smiles on their faces and took a breath in. This Level 50 equipment was worthy of the title of Yellow-Gold grade!

Han Ying Xue smiled and said, “Daffodil Daydream, you should keep the staff!”

Daffodil Daydream quickly shook her hands and said, “Honestly, I am eager to have the staff, but to challenge a Yellow-Gold boss side by side with you, that was way more than I can ask for! Besides, I have already taken a few pieces of fine equipment, I would feel sorry if I had it! Sister Snow, please have it!”

Han Ying Xue smiled again and said, “The staff requires Level 50 players to be eligible to equip it, according to a normal level up speed, it will take about 40 days to reach that level! In these days, it will be enough time to farm on this midget boss for a few rounds already!”

Daffodil Daydream insisted and shook her head, then she said, “The equipment might not drop every time as this was also a first clear reward; there might not even be a staff among the next time around!”

Zhang Yang interrupted and said, “How about this, the staff will belong to Little Snow for now! After the boss has respawned, we shall be back to repeat this, then the second staff will belong to Daffodil Daydream!”

Daffodil Daydream immediately nodded.

Zhang Yang was grinning deep down his heart, as long as this chick stayed with the gang, there would be no doubt about her becoming a member of his gang!

[Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] (Yellow-Gold, one-handed axe)

Attack: 796-996

Attack interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS (Damage per second): 320

<Unidentified>

Level required: 50

In comparison, the 310-362 damage output of the [Lover's Sword] was overwhelmingly out of the picture!

“Axe! Axe!” Wei Yan Er shouted in her own excitement.

“Little sis, what are you so excited about? This is a one-handed weapon!” Zhang Yang laughed.

“Ah.....” Wei Yen Er instantly dulled down.

Both Defenders and Guardians could use an axe, but Warriors had the <Axe Mastery> while Knights had the <Mace Mastery>. So long as the difference was not that bad, a player would generally choose their weapon of mastery.

There was no doubt that the [Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] would belong to Zhang Yang. But it was such a shame, he would need to get 9 more levels before he could equip it.

[Magician's Brooch] (Yellow-Gold, accessory)

Use: Increase 700 magic damage, last for 10 seconds. Cool down: 3 minutes

Level required: 50

“Accessory!” The gang widened their eyes for a bit there.

The accessory with +2,000 armor that Zhang Yang had right now

was categorized as a defensive type of equipment, and this [Magician's Brooch] was an offensive type!

Daffodil Daydream insisted not to make any demand, and Han Ying Xue could only smile.

[Helm of Eternal Darkness] (Yellow-Golden, leather armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +240

Strength: +96

Agility: +96

<Unidentified>

Level required: 50

“Holy molly! It actually increases 240 points of vitality! With just one equipment, it could give 2,400 HP points! The defense value is also higher than the armor value!” Endless Starlight grew a pair of green eyes. As a tank, seeing a high vitality and high defense equipment triggered him to extend his arm towards the equipment!

“Starlight, do not taint Fatty Han’s helmet! Take your hands back to where they belong!” Fatty Han laughed.

Leather armors were naturally highly demanded among thieves and hunters. But in the end, with her 97 point strength, Sun Xin Yu pressed the two man down without saying a word and succeeded in securing the first Yellow-Gold leather armor in the China region server.

“A dog that bites does not bark!” Zhang Yang said it in a very low voice.

‘Chiang!’ with an incredible sense of hearing, Sun Xin Yu pulled half of her dagger out, coldly glanced at Zhang Yang, giving him a full warning through her eyes.

After seeing a bunch of Yellow-Gold equipment, the gang could not bring their spirit up anymore while looking at the Gray-Silver equipment, even when they were all top-tier equipment in the game at the moment!

“If we could have known earlier, we should have started with the Gray-Silver equipment!” Wei Yan Er spoke with a bitterly face.

Among the 7 Gray-Silver equipment, Zhang Yang took a piece of [Snake King's Chest Plate], a heavy armor piece. As he could only equip it at Level 50, he simply threw the armor piece into his backpack, identifying it only after he returned.

There were 3 skill books, one being a <Poison Blade> for Thief profession, another one was a <Flame Chaser> for Spellcaster profession, and last but not least, was a <Mending Prayers> for Priest profession. After Han Ying Xue and the gang had divided the loots, they immediately tapped themselves to learn their respective skills.

Of course, Zhang Yang valued the skill <Mending Prayers> the most.

[Mending Prayers]: Cast a <Blessing> onto the target, when the target is being attacked, the target will instantly restore HP value equivalent to 200% of the magic damage of the caster. While the <Mending Prayers> is in effect, it will automatically switch its effect to the nearest teammate around the target. <Mending Prayers> can switch for 5 times, last for 30 seconds for every switch. Cooldown: 15 seconds.

This was a very powerful group spell, the instantaneous and fast cooling time made it a very commendatory skill!

Killing the boss would mean that they had completed the quest. After several consecutive days of high intensive grinding, the gang was both physically and mentally tired. Before that, there were still bosses and equipment around as their incentives, but now, they became too lazy, with the mentality of not wanting to clear monsters. So they just tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and headed back to White Jade Castle. First they had to turn over to the main

quest for the reward, and then went back to the centaur camp for another quest reward. In that way, they could polish their centaur reputation and make some fine purchases from the Reputation Shopkeeper.

Although Daffodil Daydream and Endless Starlight did not have any quest on them at the moment, they planned to return to the city to repair their equipment and tidy up their backpacks before they tagged along with Han Ying Xue and the gang to get their reputation up as well.

Watching his gang leave one after another, Zhang Yang could not help but to curse them in silence for their lack of generosity. He was still carrying the 'Dwarf's warning' on him, which forbade him in using teleportation scrolls!

Helplessly, he could only charge into the monster crowd to kill himself, to be revived straight back at the cemetery.

'Ding! You are affected with the weak resurrection effect, all equipment durability received 50% additional damage, all attributes decreased by 90% , last for 10 minutes!'

Zhang Yang did not care much about it, there would not be any battle along the journey back to the centaur camp to purchase the [Fountain of the Souls] and rescue the dwarf back in Hammer Heart Castle. Summoning his [Skeletal War Horse], Zhang Yang saddled up and the high profile horse went out with a boom, heading straight to the centaur camp.

“Haha, noob tank, guess what I got for the reward?” Wei Yan Er suddenly screamed in excitement.

“...You turned over the main quest for its reward?”

“Yea, so quickly, take a guess!”

Zhang Yang had never completed the main quest, how would he know? So he spoke out of randomness, “A Yellow-Gold equipment?”

“Cheh, what a crappy equipment, with just a simple use and it will be gone, how is that worthy to be a reward for a main quest?” Wei Yan Er snorted a few times and said, “You’re such an idiot, noob tank, what kind of a beta testing player are you -”

“Say it now, and don’t have a long winded-tongue like Snow Witch!”

“Silly Yu, what did you just say!?” Han Ying Xue was enraged. Because Wei Yan Er and Zhang Yang were using the party channel, of course Han Ying Xue would overhear the conversation between two of them.

Wei Yan Er smiled for a while, and then she said, “Alright, I will tell you then. The quest reward is 100 gold coins, 1 skill point, and a skill book <Strength Aura>! This is so annoying! When have I ever become barbarous?!”

“Aura?” Zhang Yang repeated and said, “You learned an aura skill?”

“Yea! Activating it will increase 2% strength of the target teammates that are within a radius of 30 meters area! But it feels weird, the aura skill level is just Level 1, but I cannot increase it with my skill point!”

Holy cow, the reward for the main quest is actually awesome, they actually gave a skill book that teaches aura skills! Zhang Yang smiled with joy, “The level of Aura skill cannot be increased with skill points, but with [Aura Stone]! And please don’t ask me where can you buy it from, an [Aura Stone] can only be dropped from a boss, so take it slow!”

Wei Yan Er shorted again, and then she kept silent after that. Then, Han Ying Xue, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han had also turned over for their quest reward, and they received an aura skill book as reward as well!

However, this reward was obviously correlated with professions of the players, as both Hundred Shots and Fatty Han received <Companion Aura> while Han Ying Xue received <Life Aura>.

[Companion Aura]: Affects the teammates within the aura’s effective range to increase their pet’s attack by 3%. Aura range: 30 meters radius round from the caster. The effect lasts until the death of the caster or until it automatically vanishes. You can only activate one aura at a time.

[Life Aura]: Affects the teammates within the aura effective range to increase recovery of HP by 3% when they heal. Aura range: 30 meters radius round from the caster. The effect lasts until the death of the caster or until it automatically vanishes. You can only activate one aura at a time.

According to these occurrence, will he also get <Strength Aura>? But, the difference in the professions might affect him in getting a different Aura skill as the reward.

While Zhang Yang was deep in his thoughts, he hustled his horse to go faster as he wanted to conclude his quest as soon as possible so that he could return back to the main city to turn in for the main quest. He was very eager to see what kind of Aura skill he would get as the reward.

Dashing wildly on his horse, Zhang Yang reached the settlement of the centaur. He rushed straight into the wooden house of Maya Kukulo.

“Human, you are too brave, too powerful! You have kept your promise to slay the Evil Sorcerer Zac! Hahaha, we will never have to be concerned with the invasion by the undead! Human, the centaur tribe of the Kukulo will forever be your friend!” Maya Kukulo thanked him with excitement.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Protect the Sacred Ground, acquired 100,000 experience points, centaur reputation +1,000!’

‘Ding! Congratulation, you have reached Worship in centaur reputation!’

‘Ding! You have acquired an achievement: Warrior of the Centaur! You have acquired the title: Warrior of the Centaur!’

No reward?

It was probably because the quest is linked with the ‘Rescue the Dwarf’ quest, so the reward should come from the dwarves!

Zhang Yang visited the reputation shop and purchased a [Blast Wave] skill book and a bottle of the sacred water.

[Blast Wave]: Unleash a shock wave out front in a conical area, all targets within range will receive a damage equivalent to 100% of the strength value, and stun all the targets for 4 seconds! Required: Melee weapon. Consume: 20 rage points. Cooldown: 20 seconds.

Although the damage based on strength value was a little lower, but this skill was very effective in crowd control! Stun the crowd for 4 seconds was actually very terrifying!

After sorting out every items he wanted to purchase, there was nothing left for him to stay here. So Zhang Yang summoned his

[Skeletal War Horse] and rode out for Hammer Heart Castle.

Another 20 minutes had passed, and Zhang Yang arrived at the Hammer Heart Castle.

“Human, you have finally returned!” Markan looked at Zhang Yang, and straight into business, he asked, “Have you obtained the sacred water from the [Fountain of the Souls]?”

“Yes, I did!” Zhang Yang took out the bottle of sacred water and passed it to Markan.

“Good, very good indeed! I can sense the pure energy hidden within the sacred water!” Markan drew out a breath of relief, “Human, if you return just a little later, Sith would not have made it! Thank the God of Titans!”

F*ck, even if it was 10 days later, the outcome would still be the same. The quest did not specify a fixed duration of time, a delay of one full year would not be a problem either! It was just that in S-rank quests, there would be a quest score. A delay of 1 year would definitely leave a ‘very bad’ comment; the lowest of the lowest score of all!

Zhang Yang followed Markan to the 3rd floor and entered Sith’s room. A priest of the dwarves was standing right beside the bed, continuously channeling exorcism spells into Sith’s body to resist the erosion of the spirit of Terpot Ryhar.

“Sir Markan!” The priest stopped his chanting and gave Markan a sign of respect.

Markan slightly nodded and said, “Palatine, you have had a long day!” He then took out the bottle of the sacred water and poured it into Sith’s mouth.

“Argh!” a scream full of misery and suffering suddenly came right out from Sith’s body, followed by a dark skeleton floating out of the dwarf’s body, it turned out to be a reflection of Terpot Ryhar, “No! No! This is impossible! Argh!”

A stream of green lively light gushed out from Sith’s body, instantly erasing the dark skeleton out of its existence, clean and clear.

“Phew!” Sith sat up suddenly, and he looked around, left and right, having a confused expression on his face, “Sir Markan, Palatine, why are you here?”

“Sith, you are well again?”

“I... I remember now! When I took up the sacred relic [Bow of the Fallen Moon], I felt an evil force entering itself into my body! Now... I am fully well!” Sith got off the bed.

“Sith, you should thank him, our respectful human friend! He did not just bring back our sacred relic, but he also saved your live!” Markan pointed at Zhang Yang while he was speaking.

Sith immediately bowed down to Zhang Yang and said, “Thank you, my friend!”

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Fountain of the Souls, acquired 10,000 experience points! Duration of the quest: 21 days. Quest Score: Perfect!’

‘Ding! You have acquired the reward <Shadow of the Void>!’

‘Ding! ‘Dwarf’s Warning’ has been lifted from you!’

At last! Zhang Yang drew a long breath, it was this piece of junk that caused him to not be able to return to the main cities for 21 days!

Ignoring what <Shadow of the Void> was and casting it aside into the backpack, Zhang Yang immediately tore a [Teleportation Scroll]; never again would he want to strike any deal with this bunch of dwarves, ever again!

10 seconds later, with a blur in front of his eyes, he found himself appearing at the teleportation site of White Jade City.

Back! Back at last!

Zhang Yang summoned his [Skeletal War Horse] and hastily rushed all the way to the middle of the city searching for Grand

Magus Anthony Faylon to turn over to his main quest for his long awaited reward.

Chapter 159: Every Cook Praises His Own Broth

“Undead! Undead!” The White Jade City's most powerful mage, who also happened to be the only god-class leader, Grand Magus Anthony Faylon had constantly been pacing back and forth ever since he received the report from Zhang Yang. With his two white eyebrows furrowed, he paced to and fro, for quite a while before he spoke again, "Warrior, thank you for bringing the news back to us! The alliance is now aware ahead of time that the undead have been planning something in the dark. Now, the alliance will not be caught by surprise! "

‘Ding! You have completed the main quest: Report to Grand Magus Anthony Faylon!’

‘Ding! You have acquired a system reward of 100 gold coins!’

‘Ding! You have acquired a skill point!’

‘Ding! You have acquired a reward, <Vitality Aura>!’

<Vitality Aura>! Not bad, it is different from Wei Yan Er's <Strength Aura>. Because Aura skills cannot be stacked together, a higher level Aura will override a lower level Aura. If they are of the same level, only one aura will be effective!

“Warrior, I will see the Emperor immediately and expose the undead's treacherous scheme to invade to the Empire! You ... must

carry on your effort, I'm counting on you, young warrior!" Anthony Faylon praised Zhang Yang with nothing fancy but words, and departed from the Tower of the Mage.

Zhang Yang used his new skill point on his <Shield Wall>, decreasing the cool down of the skill from 7 minutes to 6.5 minutes. Then he took out the red-jacketed skill book for <Vitality Aura> from his backpack, pressed it against his body and learned the skill.

[Vitality Aura] (Level 1): Increases the vitality of team mates within the effective range by 4%. Aura range: 30 meters radius round from the caster. The effect last until the death of the caster or until it automatically vanishes. You can only activate one aura at a time.

Zhang Yang immediately activated his aura skill, and it spread out in golden light, forming a radius of about 30 meters circle. As the effect was gradually disappearing, he could see that above his head, there was a new sign of <Vitality Aura> beneficial effect, and the value of his HP was instantly increased from 6380 to 6630.

This is awesome! With a full level 10 aura skill, the vitality enhancement will surely be multiplied several times over!

While Zhang Yang was leaving the Tower of the Mage, he took out the <Shadow of the Void> from his backpack. Since he had been rushing back from the dwarf's castle, he did not care to look

at the specification of the skill book, until now.

[Skill Book: Shadow of the Void]

Use: Teaches you the <Shadow of the Void>.

Required profession: Warrior, Knight, Thief, Hunter, Spellcaster, Priest

Required Level: 30

Locked.

All 6 professions can learn the skill, so what use is putting this 'Profession Required' list in the description then? Zhang Yang was laughing to himself while staring at the 'locked' word with both of his sparkling eyes, knowing that only a very precious skill book would be locked or bound to the owner upon contact!

Zhang Yang immediately tap the skill book of <Shadow of the Void> onto his body and had the skill learned.

[Shadow of the Void]: You have disengaged from battle mode and entered a different realm! Since you're in a different realm, you cannot see any living being; others cannot see or attack you! Your movement speed is increased by 100%! The

performing of any actions or casting of any skills while under this effect will dispel this effect immediately. Last for 20 seconds. Cool down time: 10 minutes.

Another version of <Vanish> perhaps? Instantly, Zhang Yang had his mind picturing the use of the skill in multiple situations, such as: Dodging powerful skills of the boss, silently passing through a crowd of monsters without anyone's notice, cutting off the head of an army's leader in a chaotic situation, and also when participating an alliance battle, getting close to far away healers with minimal effort!

His face streamed with tears. Going through a difficult time of 21 days, he finally got a generous reward in exchange for his hardship!

Zhang Yang went to visit his warrior profession mentor, and from his exotic and charming instructor, he picked up 2 skills that were only eligible to a level 40 warrior: <Axe Mastery> and <Sacrifice>.

[Axe Mastery] (Passive): All attack is increased by 5% when an Axe-type weapon is equipped. Increases critical strike by 5%.

[Sacrifice]: Protects an ally, taking all damage done to the ally instead. Cool down time: 1 minute. Distance: 30 meters.

Riding his horse on these familiar roads, Zhang Yang had located the whereabouts of the identifier. Ever since the update of the latest version, the identifying shop has become one of the most gold consuming places in the game.

‘Pak’, the identifier placed the [Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] and the magnifying glass onto the table and said, “100 pieces of gold coins!”

“Sun of the beach, why don’t you just go rob someone!” Zhang Yang spoke very softly, but he still obediently handed out his 100 pieces of gold coins over to the identifier.

Rony revealed a sinister smile on his face, touching the [Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] here and there somewhat perversely. Suddenly, a dazzling stream of golden light flashed by, and the smooth intrinsic [Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] burst into a blinding light as if it belonged to an ancient god warrior, it was exceptionally divine!

There were also several players doing some identifying on their own equipment in the shop as well. They also tend to loiter around the area without bothering anyone ----- players do not have to worry about having their equipment being taken by others as the the system has been programmed to protect all items within the shop.

“Wow, was that a Yellow-Gold equipment?”

“You idiot or what, the only gang that actually defeated a Yellow-Gold boss and possesses Yellow-Gold equipment is the bunch of

crazy-strong people from the Lone Desert Smoke! Does he look like a Zhan Yu to you? Or Hundred Shots, Slim and Handsome, or Endless Starlight?”

“F*ck me, how would I know when he does not have his name shown to the public!”

Zhang Yang could only smile gently, and took his [Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] back to check its attribute.

[Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] (Yellow-Golden, one handed axe)

Attack: 796-996

Attack interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 320

<Level 2 Socket 1>

<Level 2 Socket 2>

Equip: Increases your melee damage by 100 points.

Level required: 50

It was indeed a Yellow-Golden equipment, the additional special effect is very incredible!

Seeing Zhang Yang place the Dragon Tooth Battle Axe into his backpack, the players around were quite disappointed, everyone was trying to ask, “Brother, please publish the attributes of the weapon to the public!”

Zhang Yang took out a [Snake King's Chest Plate] and handed it over to the NPC to identify, and he smiled, “That was nothing special, the color was just a little brighter than the others!”

“50 pieces of gold coins!” once again the identifier voiced out the cost.

This time around, the players around had heard it very clearly. Although they were different from Zhang Yang who has lived 2 lives, with the game being updated so many times, they had already caught on the the fact that the higher the grade of the item, the higher the cost will be to identify the item!

“Holy cow, that requires 50 pieces of gold coins! To identify a level 20 gray-silver equipment already cost me 20 pieces of gold! Could this be.... A level 50 gray-silver equipment?”

“Brother, could you be the boss of Lone Desert Smoke, Zhan Yu himself?”

“You look similar to him, a shield-bearing warrior!”

Zhang Yang paid the 50 pieces of gold coins made the deal to identify his [Snake King’s Chest Plate], then he smiled and said, “It was just my lucky day, I bought it from the Little Merchandize Shop!”

Speaking of which, he published the attributes of the [Snake King’s Chest Plate] to everyone around him.

[Snake King’s Chest Plate] (Gray-silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +20

Vitality: +120

Strength: +60

Agility: +60

<Level 2 Socket 1>

<Level 2 Socket 2>

Equip: Absorbs 200 damage in every hit received.

“This is just too awesome!” The players around were shouting in excitement.

“The Little Merchandize Shop is sells such equipment?” one of the players asked.

Zhang Yang nodded, and he said, “I heard that the Little Merchandize Shop is being operated by Lone Desert Smoke?”

“Then it’s right!” another player clapped his hands once and said, “Not long ago the land lease was dominated by Zhan Yu, wasn’t it? This Little Merchandize Shop must be a shop that he bought with the land lease!”

“Let’s go, I’m definitely going to check it out, let’s see if I am lucky enough to grab some gray-silver equipment to show off in the guild!”

“I’m going too!”

So, the players around quickly kept their identified equipment and all of them hastily headed to the Little Merchandize Shop.

Zhang Yang grinned widely, it was a small act on his part, he was merely obeying the saying that every cook praises his own broth!

Only Gray-Silver equipment or higher will require to be identified, furthermore, only a handful of guilds can forge a Gray-Silver equipment at the moment! Therefore, those players who possess a Gray-Silver equipment are either elites in bigger guilds or they are just filthy rich!

The few players he met just now were obviously not from any bigger guilds around, because the guild names that were displayed above their head were in total mess. But these players are rich, they didn't seem to have any shortage of money! Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop not only required a stream of small sales, but also required the support of rich players who were willing to spend extravagantly in his shop!

These rich players usually had friends around, so they would definitely share the news among each other. There was a saying that birds of a feather flock together, so basically a friend of a rich person would also be rich, and virtually, they would be doing free advertising for the Little Merchandize Shop!

Zhang Yang walked out of the identifying shop and summoned his [Skeleton War Horse]. Then he headed towards the Little Merchandize Shop. It had been days since he was last there, so he wondered what would have happened to his little shop!

His horse travels very fast, and in no time at all, he had reached the entrance of his little shop. Putting his horse back into his backpack, Zhang Yang walked up to the entrance of his shop. Natalia went up to him and bowed, greeting him, "Master, welcome back!"

With her upper body bent over, a great deal of her fair, soft breasts were revealed to the point where there was no way her garments would be permitted to drop a centimeter lower, instantly sending a few otakus around into nosebleed. The very edges of circles, slightly darker than the skin of her chest, were just beginning to show.

Zhang Yang walked into his shop to look at the accounts and the remaining stocks of his shop.

Initially he had deposited 100,000 gold coins for Natalia to perform some acquisition activities. It turned out that the start-up capital had not fallen or even remained where it was, but had increased by up to a total of 2,410,000 gold coins! It could be said that the average daily profit of the shop was about to 110,000! The situation amazed Zhang Yang beyond words!

The items that he sold were merely player-forged items that were usually auctioned. The idea was to take advantage of the people who were unwilling to commit too much to the game system, in order to earn about 5%-20% the value of the items in their hands when they sell it to the shop! But the inventory of the shop is limited, there is no way that this little shop could compete with the auction community. In comparison to the auction community, the earning of the Little Merchandize is just like a scrap to them!

But this scrap is about 110,000 pieces of gold coins and the daily profit, this... This game company is really earning like a bull on adrenaline!

Zhang Yang was somewhat puzzled as he looked through the inventory of his warehouse in the shop.

By the looks of it, he finally understood where this Little Merchandize Shop had been earning those gold coins from! Just when he was looking through the records, there were a dozen sets of herbs and ores sold, and then came a dozen sets of similar materials to replace the emptied slots.

But the sales for the first 10 days were obviously much higher than the sales for the last 10 days. The reason was simple: In the beginning, the shop had a few pieces of Gray-Silver equipment and a lot of bronze equipment to support the scene, and with these good things bought off, the number of customers visiting the shop had naturally declined. Players bought ores and herbs if they happened to pass by, because the price in the auction house and the price elsewhere would all be the same, so it didn't matter where they bought it from.

Now that the good pieces of equipment had been sold out, the players who sought for equipment would naturally decline in numbers, and the side sales of herbs and ores would also decline.

It was a lucky thing that Zhang Yang had just returned with his backpack full of level 40 green-copper equipment!

Chapter 160: Robbery

Zhang Yang quickly took every piece of Green-Copper equipment in his inventory and shoved them all into the shop's storage. He also made a few more stacks of [Beginner's Anti-Shadow Potion] and place them in the shop's storage as well. Do not underestimate the low sale quantity of the potion, even though he was only selling a few stacks a day, the business is consistent. Eventually, it will pile up to a large fortune. However, with potions or not, the main reason he keeps the low valued sales up was to draw in more customers.

Zhang Yang opened the "Upgrade Shop" menu and deposited 100,000 gold coins before selecting "proceed".

'Ding! You are about to upgrade "Little Merchandize Shop" to level 2. This upgrade will cost you 100,000 gold coins.'

"Yes!"

'Ding! "Little Merchandize Shop" has been upgraded to level 2 Shop. Shop inventory has been increased to 2000! One additional floor has been added! The next upgrade would increase Shop Inventory to 3000 and an additional floor. The next upgrade would cost 500,000 gold coins!'

Again!

Ding! "Little Merchandize Shop" has been upgraded to level 3 Shop. Shop inventory has been increased to 3000! One additional

floor has been added! The next upgrade would increase Shop Inventory to 4000 and an additional floor. The next upgrade would cost 1,000,000 gold coins!’

Again! Nah...just kidding. This would suffice for now. He only needed the space for [Solid Iron Bar]s. Zhang Yang will try his best to spend all his gold coins before he reaches level 50!

Before Zhang Yang left, he adjusted Natalia the shop keeper’s settings to only buy [Solid Iron Bar]s instead of [Iron Bar]s or [Iron Ore]s and increased the buying price from 0.85 gold coins each to 0.9 gold coins each. The small difference of 5 silver coins was enough to let many Mining profession players turn their ores to bars and sell them all to this little shop

[Solid Iron Bar]s were not for sale just yet. The demand in the market for [Iron Bar] itself was low. Most of the player would sell them in the auction house for only 2 gold coins per stack. Even so, these entries would go unsold and be promptly returned to their owners. The supplies for [Iron Bar] had far exceeded the market demands!

Along the rise of the average player’s level, ingredients and materials for [Beginner Iron Skin Potion] and [Beginner Power Potion] were beginning to surface. However, their quantity was only a handful. Still, it was enough for Zhang Yang to make 2 stacks each, totaling up to 800 bottles. Half of them were placed in the shop for sales, while the rest were stored in his inventory for the exploration of the Castle Interior Hardcore mode dungeon.

“Little Yang! Big new! BIG NEWS!” Fatty Han suddenly yelled

through the private messaging service.

“What’s up? Did you get dumped again?”

“F*ck you! I saw the news this morning! The guild called Imperial Sky were the first to kill the 3rd boss in the castle interior Hardcore mode!”

“Oh.” said Zhang Yang. His eye brows twitched a little.

Imperial Sky...One Sword Stroke! The number one tank in the entirety of the China server in his past life!

He has finally showed up!

“Damn! Little Yang! Why are you so calm about this? We have yet to even set foot in the dungeon, and someone else is already on the brink of getting the First Clear!” Fatty Han screamed.

Zhang Yang had only known One Sword Stroke when he was around level 50. Only then did One Sword Stroke had built up his fame from a small province to the entire China! His skill as a tank was on a professional level! His PK skills were as formidable! He had brought a battle team call “Sky Ocean Electronics” to the S-level Professional League and became the best S-level battle team in the entire China!

“It’s good to have some sort of a competition now and then. It’s not wise to have all the spotlights on us the whole time!” Zhang

Yang laughed it off.

Fatty Han grumbled before he spoke coherently again. “So, when are we going to raid the Castle Interior?”

“These past few days have been really tiresome. Rest earlier tonight, we’ll raid the dungeon tomorrow night!”

“...Fine!”

Zhang Yang glanced at the system clock and saw that it was close to 6pm. Zhang Yang then logged out and went out to buy his dinner. Zhang Yang grabbed his wallet and found a single, lonely piece of 5-dollar bill inside. Other than the dust falling out, there was nothing else. Zhang Yang could not help but shake his head. “How ironic for a millionaire to only have a piece of 5 in his wallet!”

After Zhang Yang bought himself a packet rice, he was completely broke! He did not even have money for tomorrow’s breakfast!

“Looks like...I might have to wake up a little later than usual. Take it as marathon training! I shall run to the bank and withdraw money!” Zhang Yang thought of his solution while eating his dinner. After dinner, Zhang Yang logged into the game and met with everyone. They all did a run at the Garden area Hardcore mode dungeon and obtained a few Gray-Silver tier equipment, submitting them all at the Little Merchandize Shop. He even called up Daffodil Daydream and Endless Starlight to polish up their

teamwork.

Zhang Yang offered invitations to the party to the both of them in raiding the Castle Interior Hardcore mode. Daffodil was a little hesitant, however, she accepted it eventually.

These days had put a toll on Zhang Yang, and since he had to wake up at 9am the next day, Zhang Yang retired earlier and went to bed.

Zhang Yang woke up the next day, turning around on his bed before he got up at around 7am.

He trained in his room for a little while and went out at 8am, heading for the bank. The little area where he lived did not have any banks or an A.T.M.s. To reach the nearest bank would take at least an hour of walking. Instead, Zhang Yang jogged a little and arrived at the bank in only 20 minutes. The bank only opens at 8.30am, and Zhang Yang had not realized that. When he entered the bank, he was surprised to see a whole crowd queuing up. The majority of them were there to pay their water bills, electric fees, gas, and etc. The whole lot was lined up like a long river.

Sigh...it couldn't be helped. He had to line up as well.

Stomach grumbling

He had not eaten anything in the morning. With the extra mile of running and exercising, his stomach was beginning to growl in

hunger.

Tick tock the time went, before he finally managed to get his turn at the operator window aisle.

“Withdrawal? Or Deposit?” asked the female operator. The girl looked like she was only in her twenties. She was wearing a white formal top that was so tight, her purplish bra that held her breasts up was completely plastered to the fabric. Her short mini-skirt was coffee brown in color and revealed her long, exquisite legs, wrapped in half-transparent leggings, ending with high heels that covered her delicate feet. No matter how you looked at it, she was the most popular of all the office ladies there. It was a very seductive uniform.

“Withdrawal!”

The beautiful girl raised her chin up and studied Zhang Yang’s face. After noticing his extreme common appearance, he lost her interest and asked nonchalantly. “How much?”

“I’ll take 10,000 dollars please.” Zhang Yang did not want to take much out, but 10,000 dollars could last him for a very long time.

The girl then took out a piece of equipment and handed it over to Zhang Yang. “Please key in your PIN.”

Zhang Yang pulled the machine a little closer and keyed in his PIN. After the confirmation, Zhang Yang pushed the machine back

and the girl took it. After a few seconds of processing, a screen flashed on her computer, revealing his details. The girl's eyes bulged out like ping pong balls! She was surprised to see the numbers displayed on the screen!

350,000? 3,530,000!? What the hell!? She must be seeing things! The figure before her eyes was 35,300,000!

Impossible! No matter how she looked back at Zhang Yang, he only had the face of a commoner! How could he even have such a massive fortune!? No wonder they always said that it was silly to judge a book by its cover! Even some one as rich as Mark Zuckerberg only dressed plainly in public! The richer one became, the humbler he'll be!

“Sir, please mind your cash, please check your change!” the girl immediately changed her tone from a nonchalant, devil-may-care attitude, and into a kind, caring, descended angel kind of tone. She then pushed a receipt and the cash out through the glass opening.

Zhang Yang picked the stack up and flipped it over to count. He then found a piece of small paper behind the receipt that wrote “137-123456-78, Yan Fei Fei”

This was obviously her name and phone number. Zhang Yang was stunned and he gazed up and looked at the operator. He thought that perhaps his face had turned a lot more appealing ever since he was reborn again, was that why he could pick up any random chicks with just his looks?

Yan Fei Fei met his gaze and smiled softly, revealing only a hint of her pearl white teeth in between her soft supple lips. Even though her smile could not be compared to Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu's charm, Yan Fei Fei's charm was enough to send any unguarded man head over heels.

Zhang Yang had no intention to "start a bush fire in the amazon". He only returned her smile and left the counter with the money in his pocket. He had wanted to throw away the note immediately, but that would crush her heart into billions of pieces. Instead, to avoid devastating a maiden's heart, he kept the note only to throw it away later. He was not interested in further developing a random encounter.

BAM!

The piercing sound of a gunshot could be heard. Zhang Yang ears were ringing with the sudden loud blast. He lifted his head, only to see 3 huge men wearing black ski-masks that covered their entire faces, with only their eyes and mouth exposed. All three of them were armed; two of them were holding revolvers and one of them was wielding a double barreled shotgun!

Zhang Yang wheeled around to the exit and was shocked to see the security guard leaning against the door, with a pool of blood on the floor where he stood, and a huge gunshot wound in his chest. Blood was still oozing out from the wound but the man had already bite the dust with his eyes all rolled up.

"KYAAAAA" After a frozen moment of shocked silence, the people inside the bank had finally realized the horror that they

were involved in and screamed from the top of their lungs.

BAM!

Another shot was fired and everyone fell silent.

One of them robber went to the entrance and pulled down the shutters. Another one was holding his gun and aimed at the crowd. The last one screamed, “Silent! BE QUIET! We are here for money! Not your lives! If you’re not in our way, we’ll let you go off without a scratch! We are taking the bank’s money! The government’s money! So listen closely to what I’m saying now. Do not try to be a hero! Guns don’t kill people, this man will!” said the robber while pointing his thumb at his chest. “Don’t try to do anything funny or I will break my promise, eh!”

“Everyone! Hands over your heads! Sit at the benches there! Hah! See how nice I am? I know that you’re tired! Go on! Get a move on!”

The same guy shouted, “Heart Q! Take the manager to the bank’s vault!”

“Roger that!” replied one of the robbers. He then took out a few match box sized cubes and paste them against the door.

BOOM!

A loud bang was heard and iron plated shield door that was there

to prevent robbers was blasted open, leaving a huge hole!

Behind the door was another layer of security, though it was only a wall of glass between the operator and the other side.

“Diamond J! Break that glass!”

“Yes boss!” said the robber that was called Diamond J with the shotgun in his hands.

“Stupid! I told you to use codenames!”

“Ahh right. Sorry! Spade K boss!”

The robber called Spade K must be the leader of these 3 robbers. He then shook his head and said, “Hurry up! We don’t have much time!”

“Understood! Spade K boss!” Diamond J then took out a clay-like lump of material, about the size of a match box and pasted them on the glass windows. Everyone behind the glass was screaming over as if they understood what was soon to follow. They scrambled further behind to escape.

BOOM! Ding...ding...

The bullet proof glass was then blasted into tiny fragments. Diamond J then took out a leather duffle bag and threw it inside

the counter, pointing his gun at the staff. “Fill the bag with money!”

With their lives at point black range, the operators behind the counter did not dare to disobey the robbers. They frantically pulled out the drawers and threw the cash into the bag.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. To think that he would be involved in a robbery...what luck. The rate of him getting into a robbery was at least much much lower than him actually winning a million dollar lottery! Even though he was good at martial arts, however, he could not do anything! The opponents...had guns!

“Ehhh! This girl is super cute!” Diamond J cried out as he grab onto her hair and yanked it up. Yan Fei Fei immediately stood up in pain. The shotgun muzzle was pointed directly at her throat.

“Young lady...If you don’t want two brand new holes in your face, you better stop resisting!”

Chapter 161: Double Homicide

The robber called Spade K was furious. “Diamond J! What the hell are you doing?! Can you stop thinking about woman for minutes?! How can you even think of having s*x right in the middle of an operation? If we can get away with this, I’ll let you f*ck 10 girls a day!”

“Boss! You know me! Once I get into the mood, I won’t be able to control myself anymore! How else would I be in jail the first place?”

“What the actual f*ck!” Spade K cried. He flipped up his left wrist and check his watch. “Quick! The cops will arrive after 11 minutes!”

“Enough! I can f*ck real fast! 5 minutes is all I need!” The robber called Diamond J was delighted that his leader had given him the green light. He then lounged forward and carried Yan Fei Fei up.

“NOOO!! HELP!!! NOOOOOO!” Struggling as much as she could, she cried for help.

“Hahahaha” the robber laughed. He then placed Yan Fei Fei on top of the bank counter, facing her inward. He then pushed Fei Fei firmly against the counter, face down with one hand and tore off her skirt with his other hand. His strength was so immense that he ripped the skirt off in one pull.

SKIRRT!

The sound of the skirt ripping off could be heard among the anguished tone of Yan Fei Fei's helpless cries. She continued to struggle, wiggling her legs as hard as she could. There were only a few pieces of fabric covering her lower part.

The masked robber laughed maniacally. "You b*tch*s love to wear these kinds of short skirts! I almost thought that you weren't wearing anything underneath! Haha! I would have snapped my d*ck if I were to just poke it in!"

Yan Fei Fei continued to struggle and scream, her efforts to free herself were not only in vain, but had also angered him so.

"Argh! Stop struggling!"

BAM!

He slammed her head on to the counter and the struggling stopped. Yan Fei Fei was still conscious. Tears were rolling down her cheeks, smudging all over her makeup. Her sobs echoed through the deafening silence of the crowd who could not do anything to stop her violation.

Diamond J reached for what remained of her skirt and yanked something out so quickly that Yan Fei Fei was screaming in pain. In his hands was a snapped purple colored T-back undergarment. He then pushed the panties against his own face and took a deep breath.

“GRAHHA AH AH AH! THE SMELL OF A B*ITCH ALRIGHT!”

With one hand still on her back, pressing her against the counter, he reached out with his other hand to undress his pants.

Yan Fei Fei gazed down and saw what he was doing and finally realized that she was about to lose her chastity. Her eyes widened and her mouth gaped open in horror. She cried out as loud as she could. “NO! NO!!!! HELP!!! PLEASE STOP!!!!” More tears rolled down. The counter was almost filled with her tears and blood, mixed into a recipe of absolute horror for a common, ordinary little office lady. It was just too much for her to take in.

As her cries grew louder and louder, the rest of the victims went even quieter. There was nothing but the raging heart beats and terrified breaths. No one else dared to stand up and fight back under the threat of the guns facing them.

Zhang Yang could not help himself. His knuckles were clenched so tightly that he could have sworn that his nails have already pierced his palms. He was angry. Angry at his own disability to do anything at all. In a money or life situation, he would gladly choose his life over millions of dollars. However, there was an innocent girl, about to be raped right in front of his eyes! How could he just ignore that! But! The opponent had guns! He could not just dash out and unleash his martial arts without a plan. He might get shot before he could even save the girl!

Zhang Yang scanned the entire room for anything that he could

use. He spotted an ashtray on a table in in front of him. He then kept close watch at the closest gunman, Spade K! He would have to wait for the perfect moment to strike!

“Aww come on baby! Let me f*ck you good!” Diamond J snickered evilly. He already had his pants down. He then turned her over and ripped off her shirt. Before he could do it...

“ARGH!” He screamed in pain and quickly withdrew his hands. They were bleeding from a deep bite wound.

“You b*tch! You dare bite me!” Diamond J yanked her hair, raising her head up. He then slammed her head directly at the counter top. With a loud thud, Yan Fei Fei went completely silent. Blood started to ooze out of her head. She was completed out of it, her eyes unfocused.

Dazed and immobile, the girl was barely conscious. “Hmph! I’ll f*ck you till you come begging for more!” Diamond J then smacked her bare, exposed butt and lifted one of her legs, trying to find a perfect position to slide it in.

Just then, Zhang Yang had leaped to his feet. He quickly grabbed the ashtray on the table and flung it across the room. He set his eyes fixed on his target’s head, Spade K!

WHACK!

The strike was so strong that the robber Spade K was completed

spun around and fell onto the ground!

In a flash, Zhang Yang quickly leaped forward and threw a strong punch, knocking him out cold instantly. Zhang Yang twisted Spade K's hands and locked them at his side. He had even managed to wrestle the revolver in his hands.

Quick as lighting, Diamond J dove for the short gun on the counter next to him as Zhang Yang grabbed the revolver at the same time.

The masked robber Diamond J quickly pulled Yan Fei Fei up and hid behind her, using her as a human shield. He screamed for his accomplices. "Spade K! Spade K! Where are you!? Hey! Boss! Boss!"

Zhang Yang aimed the gun at Diamond J and used his other free hand to grab hold on the other robber. "Your boss is tired. He's taking a nap!"

"Nap my ass!" Diamond J pointed the shotgun at Zhang Yang's direction and screamed. "Let my boss go!"

"Let her go first!" said Zhang Yang bravely without any trace of fear in his voice.

"F*ck you! Let him go! I'll shoot her brains out!" said Diamond J. His eyes radiated with killing intent.

Zhang Yang remained calm and cool. He said, "Go ahead then.

Try and shoot! By the time she's dead, you're dead too!"

"Sh*t! Sh*t!!!" Diamond J cursed and cursed. He was not a brilliant man to think of a way out. He could only stand right there and battle with his wits.

They were in a standoff. The atmosphere got even more intense.

Tick...tick...The sound of the wall clock echoed through the room. The masked robber Diamond J was sweating intensely. His mask turned a little dark as the cotton absorb his perspiration.

Tch! The longer it dragged on, the worse the situation would get! They had calculated precisely that the entire process would take roughly 13 minutes for the bank to send a silent alarm to the police station, and for the police to arrive! In that 13 minutes, they would need to escape! If the police arrives they could do nothing but surrender without condition. They would then be sent off to jail for at least 20 to 30 years! If he refused to cooperate, he would be shot on the spot!

No matter which path he took, neither of it was what he wanted!

The killing intent in his eyes grew stronger and stronger. Right now, the only thing he could consider was his own life! He wants to kill Zhang Yang, and if he does that he could also kill off his boss! That was fine, fewer portions to share later!

"Yo! Spade K! I have already..." Heart Q had just only came out of

the vault, carrying a huge bag that was obviously filled with bundles of cash! He quickly noticed that something was wrong and raised his gun up.

BAM!

Zhang Yang reacted first. A shot was fired before the robber could shoot.

The masked robber Heart Q staggered a little before falling down on his back! There was a deep gunshot wound on his forehead.

Zhang Yang quickly turned the gun and aimed at Diamond J!

His marksmanship was not weak! When he entered the university's military training, his skills with the gun was the institute's number 1! His performance had even shocked one of the military captains! The captain had even encouraged Zhang Yang to join the military school! His marksmanship could be nurtured and could be the best sharpshooter in the military!

The masked robber Diamond J had never thought that Zhang Yang would resort to killing just like that. He even killed the other robber without any hesitation! Diamond J had just wasted his one in a lifetime chance of attacking!

The two of them were back to a Mexican standoff!

1 minute...2 minutes!...3 minutes!

“Wee...woo...wee...woo” In the midst of complete silence, the echoed sound of the police sirens could be heard approaching!

Panic started to tear at Cubick K’s thoughts. He began to frantically looked left and right for a way out! If he does not act now, death would be the only way out!

ARGH!

He raised his gun and pulled the trigger!

BAM!

BAM!

Two gun shots was heard in the same time! Thud! Thud! Both Zhang Yang and Diamond J had fall back, taking along the hostages they had been clinging to!

Did they kill each other?!

Amidst the eerie silence, no one in the bank dared to stand up, fearing that either one of the robber might get up and shot them!

“Fu...” the sound came from the body of Spade K! Everyone jumped in surprised and shrunk backwards.

Thud. “Spade K” stirred and rolled away. Zhang Yang pushed the corpse off him and got up as quickly as he could. He then dashed quickly toward the counter and looked through the window.

Behind the counter, laid the remains of the masked robber Diamond J. There was a small 9mm hole right at the left side of the skull. White fluid that seemed to be brain matter had oozed out from the hole, mixed together with the fresh blood. He was dead before he could even hit the floor. Yan Fei Fei was right on top of the body. Half of her top was already torn off with only a few buttons holding the clothes intact, revealing her purple undergarment. Her lower half was practically naked, completely revealing her entire bushy forest!

Her eyes were dilated, her body was trembling. She was suffering from shock. It was a traumatic aftereffect from experiencing such an ordeal. She had still not recovered from it.

In the gunfire, Zhang Yang had moved Spade K into the path of the bullet and used him to block the shotgun’s shot. The unfortunate robber was killed by Diamond J. Since the gunfire was from a shotgun, the impact had knocked him back, sending him and Spade K flying backward.

Zhang Yang breathed a sigh of relief. He threw the revolver in his hand aside and took off his top. He squatted down closely to the still catatonic Yan Fei Fei and covered her lower half with his shirt. He whispered gently, “It’s alright. The bad guys are all dead. Everything is going to be just fine. I promise.”

Yan Fei Fei was still in a daze. For a long moment, she shed tears and cried out loud like a baby. She quickly realized that Zhang Yang was right beside her and hugged him tightly.

“Waa...Waa...” her cries filled the entire room.

Blood that had drained away from her face had not yet returned. Her cheeks were so pale that she looked like she was completely petrified. After such horrific experience, she felt that the only safe place she could be was in Zhang Yang’s embrace.

Everyone on the bank stood up only after they were certain that the danger was over.

Chattering of police offers could be heard from outside of the bank and another loud muffled voice that was amplified with a loudspeaker could be heard. “You’re surrounded! Give up! There is no way you could leave here safely now!”

One by one the victims inside the bank started to screamed back. “Don’t shoot! The robbers are dead! They are all dead!” They then left the premise.

No sooner, a team of 20 fully armed special forces rushed into the bank only to be shocked when they witness 3 dead bodies lying on the ground. A simple bank robbery had turned into a multiple homicide case. Every single victim that was involved in the case had been sent to the police station for debriefing. Yan Fei Fei had only released Zhang Yang embrace and looked into his eyes with her own teary gaze. She cried out with gratitude, “Thank you!

Thank you so much!” Without Zhang Yang bravery assault, she would definitely have been raped on the spot! Who knew what kind of person this man would be? He was a prison inmate, he would be carrying all sort of S.T.D (Sexual Transmitted Diseases) and would have ruined her life!

WeeWooWeeWoo...

The sound of the police siren echoed throughout the entire block. Many cars took off at once, carrying victims of the bank robbery to the Public Security Bureau of the Ping Jiang District.

The debriefing of the robbery was done rather smoothly. Since the robbers did not destroy any security cameras in the bank, the officer only needed to extract related information from the recordings and the testimonies from all the victims in the bank robbery case. Once they had collected all information, the officers had confirmed that Zhang Yang’s act of “bravery” and saved the hostages.

After a while, Zhang Yang was sent to a questioning room used by the police to interview suspects.

“Mr. Zhang Yang, am I correct?” A policeman with stripes and stars attached to his sleeve sat opposite Zhang Yang. He was rather calm and had impartial look on his face. He smiled and said, “What a coincidence! I am also a Zhang. Zhang He Yuan. Captain of a small task force, I might say.”

Zhang Yang smiled back and greet him. “Nice to meet you,

Captain Zhang.”

Zhang Yang himself was barely focusing. He had just ended two human lives. When things had just settled down, it was safe to say that he wasn't emotional about it since he had no time to think about it. Yet, now here, sitting calmly and having the time to think about the matter seriously, Zhang Yang was not at all disturbed by the fact that he just killed two humans! It must have been the effect of dying once before. He must have understood the meaning of life. Afterall, the two robbers were evil and deserved what that was coming to them. Zhang Yang had neither the stress nor the guilt to bear in his heart.

“I've seen the recordings Mr. Zhang and I have to say that I'm deeply impressed by your bravery! Your strength and will are both quite impressive!” laughed Zhang He Yuan.

Zhang Yang knew something was off when he had dragged him into this room alone. Hmph! There's no need to put on airs or spout bullsh*t.

Zhang Yang replied. “Every citizen has the responsibility to stand against crime! It was only a coincidence that I was there!”

“Yes...yes...However...” Zhang He Yuan frowned and put on a worrisome expression. “Mr. Zhang. 2 out of the 3 robbers died due to your actions! They were killed by you. Even if you stated that it was only in self-defense, technically, it's more on the lines of murder!”

Murder your ass! If he had not acted then and there, Zhang Yang would be the one dead and the criminals would have gotten taway with it! In fact, during that standoff, Zhang Yang was nearly killed himself! The only way left for Zhang Yang was to shoot that bastard to hell!

However, the person sitting opposite him was saying things to frighten him. His motives were still unclear to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang could only wait for him to reveal his intentions, but until then, he could only put on a plastic smile and remain silent.

Zhang He Yuan was at the impression that he had successfully frightened Zhang Yang. “As a Public Security Officer, we have the obligation to take care of the citizen’s safety! What you have done was truly an admirable act of bravery that deserves to be praised. That is why, I have an idea to get you off the hook. You could change your testimony, that the police were the ones who killed the robbers instead! Policemen, opening fire to kill the criminals and protect the citizens! Isn’t that the righteous thing to do?!”

Zhang Yang finally understood what he wanted when he had blabbered everything out. He wanted to get all the reputation!

Zhang Yang had guessed correctly. Once the case had been handed over to the Public Security Bureau, this big shot here had come to a conclusion! With the rising crime rate and its effect on the society, he must take this chance to grab the opportunity to increase the reputation of the police force and gain the respect of the public!

Zhang He Yuan immediately understood. According to the truth,

this robbery case and the act of saving the hostages all feel on Zhang Yang shoulders. From the police's perspective, the case was already settled when they had just arrived. Even though the police forces had arrived directly on schedule without a single second to waste, they could not just brush it off without doing anything at all!

The chief wanted the credit to fall onto the police department, since the beloved son of the chief was in the Bureau, to get a quick promotion, to get credits. As such, this was the best contribution he could stand to receive!

Of course, this share of the cake would not be eaten alone by the Head of the Bureau. He would have shared this benefit with other high ranking officers in the bureau as well. Everyone would tell tales of how they had contributed in the act of completing the case and sharing together, the act of "foiling the robbery and saving the hostage".

Zhang Yang was not an Enforcer nor a member of the Public Security Bureau. If he received full credit for this case, he would only obtain some sort of reward like the "Excellent Citizen Award" and a few hundred thousand dollars as an additional reward. Zhang Yang had neither the need of money nor public fame. If this gentleman had started their conversation with full honesty, he would have handed over this matter for them to handle without a second thought. However, he could not stand by and watch this corrupted officer claiming credit for something that he had not done!

F*ck this sh*t! You want me to hand over my effort for naught?

And you want me to thank you for things that I had done?! You should be ashamed of yourself!

If he was someone else with a weaker wit, he or she might have been truly frightened!

Zhang Yang purposely acted guilty and said, “Captain Zhang. I was raised with an honest upbringing. I’m afraid I cannot lie!”

Zhang He Yuan was afraid that Zhang Yang was a person who craved for fame and glory, and that he would instantly reject his offer. That was why Zhang He Yuan had frightened him in the first place! He would then strike a deal with him after. Zhang He Yuan smiled gently and replied him, “Mr. Zhang, we are not asking you to commit a crime by lying! This is to protect yourself!”

Zhang Yang thought a while and shook his head, “No! No! I cannot ask you to take the blame! I have committed a crime! Therefore, I must accept the punishment!”

Chapter 162: The Violent Sun Xin Yu

How persistent could this bastard be?! Zhang He Yuan started to get a little agitated. An armed robbery is a huge case! They were right in the middle of the Bureau for god sake! Sooner or later, there would be more nosy officers sent here to interrogate the victims. By then, it would be too late to change the subject! And he would be caught red handed!

“Mr. Zhang! Please leave this to our hands! Officers of the Public Security Bureau could fire shots in public without a problem! We won’t face any trouble for doing so! But you’re a civilian!” Zhang He Yuan continued to persuade Zhang Yang.

“No! No! I cannot, in good conscience, bring trouble to you! You’re purposely trying to console me! I know that all policemen are good guys! I would never let this sin be laid upon to you all! How could I treat you in such manner, people who sacrifice their lives to protect the good and peaceful community!” No matter how Zhang He Yuan tried to convince him, Zhang Yang would only shake his head left and right.

Zhang He Yuan had completely wasted his breath talking to Zhang Yang. No matter how hard he tried to persuade him, Zhang Yang would only accept “the consequences of his sins”. He even reached out with both of his hands for him to cuff! Aiyoyo! Zhang He Yuan did not know whether to laugh or cry. If he had known that this young man had such a down-to-earth character, he would not have lied to him in the first place! Now that the situation had developed so far, how does he dragged this stubborn donkey back to reality?

He should have figured it out way earlier! Anyone who was so good at martial arts, and would put his life on the line to fight bad guys, and would definitely be a man of virtue! To trick a man of virtue is to bring calamity to oneself!

Zhang He Yuan felt regret pouring into him like it was judgment day itself! Time waits for no man, if he had explained everything clearly without the lies, he would have solved this matter in a jiffy. If any other officer would have taken over this case, everything would be lost! It could be worse than this. He could be marked as the person whom frightened the hero of the community! This was not a light matter that could be brushed off easily! Who knows, he might have to turn in his badge!

What do I do?

Kachak!

The door knob turned and opened. A female police officer in uniform entered the room. She was rather tall and extravagant in that somewhat tight uniform that had every fiber on the uniform stretched over her skin. Her chest was so large that it was impressive on how strong the buttons on her shirt were, to be able to even hold them in. She was not alone, behind her was a middle-aged man with bruises on his face. When she noticed that there were people in the interrogation room, she scoffed coldly and said, "How come Liu Ren Liang did not notify that the room was being used..."

When the bruised-face man noticed Zhang He Yuan, he quickly screamed out. “Help me! I want to make a police report! This crazy b*tch is insane! Look! Look! She did this!” said the man as he pointed his fingers to his face.

Zhang He Yuan could not voice out his true intention since everything inside the room was not on the record. He had to privately settle this case with Zhang Yang.

“Erhm. Perhaps Little Liu had forgot I was here.” Said Zhang He Yuan, ignoring the bruised-face man behind her.

The female officer turn around and did karate chop on the back of the poor fellow’s neck, knocking him out cold. The man eyes rolled upwards and fall onto the floor. The woman turned around and scoffed at Zhang Yang. “Why are you here?”

Zhang Yang smiled, revealing his shinny teeth and said, “Oh wow! What a coincidence, to be seeing you again!”

This female police officer was Sun Xin Yu. Everyone who knew her would had already recognize her with that violent chop. It was as expected of her extreme violent behavior, like a tigress!

Her face remained as cold as ice. “Stop smiling! Hmph! What happened? What did you do...”

Zhang Yang shrugged his shoulder nonchalantly and said, “Well, I killed someone!”

Sun Xin Yu widen her eyes suddenly. “Are you out of your mind?! Don’t think that just because you’re invincible in the game, you could also ignore the rules of society!”

Zhang He Yuan immediately coughed and said, “Little Sun, I’m sure you have other matters to tend to. I’ll take it from here.”

Ignoring him, Sun Xin Yu walked over to Zhang He Yuan side and sat beside him and opposite Zhang Yang. “Explain yourself!”

Zhang He Yuan was already tormented by Zhang Yang’s persistent behavior. He was already barely restraining himself. But when Sun Xin Yu had just walked into his interrogation room and sat down, he had it! Sun Xin Yu had only entered the Bureau 2 months back! How dare she ignore the Captain! He would not let this pass!

BAM!

Zhang He Yuan slammed the desk and cried. “Sun Xin Yu, I’m ordering you to leave this room!”

Sun Xin Yu only stared coldly at him, with a suspicious look. She then ignored him and turned back to Zhang Yang. “Why did you kill?”

“Sun Xin Yu...” Zhang He Yuan was greatly angered. In his thoughts, “You think that you’re so beautiful eh? I know that

you're indeed a pretty one, I might even take you in bed happily! But that doesn't mean that you could just do what you want with those looks! You would even go as far as ignoring me, as the captain!"

Zhang Yang smiled again and said, "There were a few robbers in the bank. I was agitated. I could not control myself and ended up killing them all!"

"Is that true?" She turned to Zhang He Yuan and asked for the truth.

What?!

Zhang He Yuan was already maddened with rage. She would even dare to turn to him and ask for a confirmation?! His face was as red as a fuji apple. He calmed himself down and said, "Sun Xin Yu, your actions have already broken the police code! Now, get out of here, I will have a little chat with you later!"

Kachak!

The door opened again!

This time, it was a young man who looked like he was in his twenties. He was in a police uniform and was rather handsome looking, though he was a little short in height. He turned around and saw Sun Xin Yu and smiled sweetly. "So there you are, Little Sun."

When Zhan He Yuan saw the young man, he too smiled as well. “Ah! It’s Ma Hang! Everything here has been settled, I assume?”

This young man was the beloved son of the Chief of the Bureau. That was why even a senior officer like Zhang He Yuan would not dare do anything to this “prince”.

Since the old man was an important person in the department, Ma Hang did not even consider Zhang He Yuan to be anything of importance. He only smiled back and place his attention on Sun Xin Yu. “Little Sun, I have booked a seat for us at La Venus. Shall we have lunch together later?”

“No.” Sun Xin Yu rejected coldly and turned to Zhang Yang. “What happened exactly?”

Zhang Yang explained everything from top and bottom about the case without any additional information.

Sun Xin Yu leaned back to her chair and sigh. “Is that so.”

Ma Hang expression had turned sour. 1 month back when he had spotted this beautiful jewel, his heart had been captured by her cool and cold complexion. But when he dug a little deeper, he found out that Sun Xin Yu had been introduced to the Bureau by the Executive Deputy Chief officer Gu Jun!

Even though Ma Hang’s father is the real Chief who had a certain

level of authority, he alone still could not rule over everything. 3 Executive Deputies had the same authority level as the Chief himself! If Sun Xin Yu was under Gu Jun, then Ma Hang could not act all high and mighty! He did not have the authority for it!

That was why Ma Hang had always been in the shadows, observing her every move. But for the next week or two, he had not found any connections between Sun Xin Yu and Gu Jun! Ma Hang then concluded that Sun Xin Yu must be a close relative and the daughter or an old friend of Gu Jun. That was how she could be in the force! With that, Ma Hang had decided. Since she had Gu Jun as her back up, he could not depend on any dirty tactics, such as promotions, salary increments, or even the threat of losing one's job as a method to get her. He had to rely on the old fashion way, to come up front and "tackle" her!

However, being the Sun Xin Yu that they all know, she had only treated him as coldly as the others, completely ignoring his efforts! Ma Hang had always held it in because of Gu Jun's existence, he could only silently swear to get the b*tch on his bed, and have his way with her!

To endure is like holding a double edge sword; Ma Hang was a man already intoxicated with the misuse of power! He was the only son of the Chief Ma Wu Shi! Sun Xin Yu was nothing compared to him! Even if she was a relative of Gu Jun, it did not matter if she was his cousin or his daughter, how could she compare her position with his own?

Having been rejected numerous time by Sun Xin Yu, Ma Hang could not take it anymore. As his own principles, to chase after a

woman, the one and only way is to use his power of “authority” to win her over!

After listening to Zhang Yang’s explanation, Ma Han interject. “Oh! So you’re the guy that shot the robbers! Hmph. You do know that it’s a crime to fire a weapon if you’re not an officer of the law?”

He was already informed of the situation by his father. He had pulled a few string with the robbery victims and had gotten them to agree to confess that he was the police officer, the hero who saved them all; the person who shot the villain and save the day!

After he had known that Sun Xin Yu had returned to the office, he had then came back hurriedly. Right now, he knew that Zhang Yang was the target to take over the role of hero, and he had to do the same thing Zhang He Yuan had done, to frighten him a little.

Before Zhang Yang could open his mouth, Sun Xin Yu had already exploded. “What did he do wrong?! If he had not acted then, an innocent lady would have been raped! Without him, we might be in a shootout with those robbers! How many innocent lives would have been lost then?!”

When Ma Hang saw that Sun Xin Yu was on Zhang Yang’s side, he could not help but feel jealous, and showed an even more bitter face. “What he did was more than self-defense!”

“Oh. So you’re asking me to defeat the armed robbers with my bare hands? Is that your definition of true self-defense?” Zhang

Yang looked at him in ire, he did not like the man one bit. His tone was rather provoking.

Ma Hang scoffed. “Anyone deserved the right to surrender! Did you ask them to give up? Did you ask them to surrender? Did you tell them the severe punishment of abiding a robbery? You didn’t did you? You just went ahead and shot all 3 of them!”

“Technically, I only shot 2 of them!” said Zhang Yang as he lifted two of his fingers. Zhang Yang obviously annoyed by this ridiculous man. Zhang Yang instinctively treated Ma Hang as a fool in the crowd.

Ma Hang got angry. “What kind of attitude is that?!”

“Huh?! What did you say? What kind of attitude do you want me to show you? Who you think I am? Your wife? Punk ass Btch!” Zhang Yang replied rudely.

“What the f*ck did you say?” The more arrogant you are, the faster it will explode in your face; Ma Hang unlocked the hatch and pulled out the sidearm and points it directing at Zhang Yang, trying to intimidate him.

The safety lock on the gun was still on, however, being the other side of the gun was a that feeling no one would like! Zhang Yang expression changed.

Sun Xin Yu was even colder. “Ma Hang, put the gun away!”

“Haha! Relax! I’m not going to pull the trigger!” said Ma Hang with a proud face. In the entire department, his father was the top of them all. The next successor would be him. Even if he pulled out a gun and aiming it at a civilian against protocol, who would dare to oppose him?

Sun Xin Yu stood up and stared angrily at Ma Hang. Her voice was filled with such intense anger that anyone could feel her rage. “PUT. THE. GUN. AWAY.”

“What’s with you? Is he your man? What got you so worked up for?” said Ma Hang.

BAM! PAK! GRAH!

Sun Xin Yu threw a direct punch and landed it firmly on Ma Hang’s face, knocking Ma hang back a few steps against the wall behind him. Blood started to ooze out from his nose. The pain was so intense that Ma Hang gurgled in agony. The punch was a punch thrown by none other than Sun Xin Yu. Even if Ma Hang was prepared to receive the punch, with his level of martial arts, the end result would still be the same!

Zhang He Yuan was staring at his end with his jaw hanging.

This woman...must be crazy! To compared what she did to Zhang He Yuan, a mere insubordination towards a senior officer, it was nothing compared to punching the son of the Chief!

Zhang Yang too, was surprised at her sudden action. Even though he hated Ma Hang's guts...but beating a police officer inside a police station was way out of this world! Sun Xin Yu...she was truly the woman of the year!

“What the hell are you doing Sun Xin Yu!?” With his eyes wide open as his jaw, Zhang He Yuan screamed at Sun Xin Yu. Being in the same room when the punch was thrown, Zhang He Yuan had done nothing to stop her! That was enough to leave a bad impression on the chief, if he did not do something soon, he might not be able to withstand the fiery rage of Ma Wu Shi!

Sun Xin Yu only stared coldly at Zhang He Yuan without saying a word. To be precise, he was not worth her time!

Ma Hang wiped the blood away and when he saw the blood in his hands, he got infuriated. He pointed at Sun Xin Yu with his trembling hands and scolded. “Y-You f*cking b*tch! You dared to hit me! No one has ever dared to hit me ever since I was born! Don't think you can get away with Gu Jun behind you back! Damn you! My father is the Chief! F*ck you! Today I will f*ck your brains out! Even if you sue me after, everyone would automatically say that you're the slut and stand at my side?!”

Sun Xin Yu reveal an even enraged look. Her killing intent was leaking out like a faucet!

“Ma Hang...” Zhang He Yuan was stunned when he heard the name Gu Jun. No wonder Sun Xin Yu could be that bold! She had

someone as prominent behind her back this whole time! He jumped up immediately and tried to sooth Ma Hang. After all, there were now two executive deputy chiefs that he could not afford to anger.

Ma Hang was already maddened with anger. He screamed at Zhang He Yuan, “You! Take these two out of this room! I will personal f*ck this b*tch up right now!” He pointed at Zhang Yang and the bruised-face man that Sun Xin Yu had brought in and knocked out.

Zhang He Yuan knew that he could not calm Ma Hang down when he was angered at that level. He quickly took out his mobile phone and called the Chief! When both Ma Hang and Sun Xin Yu had big shots taking care of them, he could not allow anything worse happening to either of them!

“F*cking b*tch!” Ma Hang’s anger grew by the second. He was the one and only Ma Hang, son of the Chief Public Security Bureau! If anyone had gotten hold of the news, that he was punched in the face by a woman, would that not make him the laughing stock of his lifetime?! With pure rage boiling inside him, he clenched his fists tightly and threw them towards Sun Xin Yu! He wanted to knock her out cold and drag her some place where no one could see him f*ck her brains out! This was the simplest plan brewing in his thoughts. As far as using his gun, Ma Hang was still sane enough to not use the gun inside a police office!

As a righteous man, Zhang Yang could not let himself sit by and allow Sun Xin Yu to take a beating, not when Sun Xin Yu had stuck out her neck for him. He jumped to his feet and acted quickly. But,

even though his reaction was fast, Sun Xin Yu reaction was not sloppy either. She had already prepared to counter Ma Hang's attack.

WHAM! BAM! BANG!

With Sun Xin Yu being able to fight on par with Zhang Yang, she could out maneuver this useless Ma Hang by a huge gap! This weak pawn could only block off a few hits before eventually falling down to her strikes. He was beaten down to his knees. If this was in the game, circling star would have already appeared on his head numerous times now. He was completely overpowered by Sun Xin Yu and was treated as a punching bag!

Good fight! Zhang Yang silently praised Sun Xin Yu. But when he had realize that the “punching bag” was the son of the Chief of the Public Security Bureau, he could not help but to think of the consequences. He could only silently hope that Sun Xin Yu could have a way out for them!

“Stop! Stop!” cried Zhang He Yuan. This woman is crazy! Out of her bloody mind!

Sun Xin Yu scoffed and pulled back. It's not that she was obeying Zhang He Yuan, in fact, she had enough of punching the man out of Ma Hang

“Ma Hang...” a voice was heard at the door entrance. A fat man was standing there. He was about 50 years old. When he saw Ma Hang was already on the floor, with his head lying on the ground,

bruises here and there, blood spilling from his face, and completely out cold, he could not help but feel both hurt and furious. He bellowed angrily, “ZHANG HE YUAN! WHAT HAPPENED HERE?!”

Chapter 163: Strong Support

Zhang He Yuan wished he could just faint right there and then. That way he would not have to face Ma Wu Shi's scary eyes that were about to fire lasers! Zhang He Yuan was an old veteran officer, his body and health have always been at tip-top condition; it was difficult for him to even get dizzy!

He put on a thick-face and first explained the matters with Sun Xin Yu and Ma Hang. He was smart enough to omit words that Ma Hang had used such as "b*tch" and "f*ck her brains out". He then told everything out about how Ma Hang wanted to make a move towards Sun Xin Yu but was in the end, rejected by her and led to the injury on his head.

Among the chattering, another high-ranking officer came by. It was Gu Jun. When Zhang He Yuan had contacted the Chief, he had also contacted Gu Jun to come over. Ma Wu Shi, the Chief of the Public Security Bureau of the Ping Jiang District, was not afraid of Gu Jun, but this little Captain could not handle the wrath of an executive deputy chief.

Gu Jun is a gentle, salt to the earth kind of middle aged man. At the age of 37, the man was already a deputy chief! His had a bright future ahead of him, with many more stairs to climb!

After both of them listened to Zhang He Yuan's explanation about the little incident, both of them remained as stoic as statues.

They had to have powerful mastery over their own emotions

before being able to stand at their current rank. If someone was hot tempered and emotionally unstable, he would have been discarded from the force as soon as he showed his bad side. Ma Wu Shi was the real Chief in charge of the entire Bureau, he would know everything that happens inside the department. Even if he had forgot about something, he had his secretary to help him handle minor things. That was why Ma Wu Shi was very clear about one fact, Sun Xin Yu was one of Gu Jun's!

If the situation was different, he would have gladly let things slide off. In a way, he would get Gu Jun to owe him a favor or to gain his trust. That way, he could also suppress the other two nosy executive deputies. However, today was different, the one who got hit was his son! His only son! If he had let this off, he could not have lived with the decision! He would also let the entire bureau start having assumptions that Ma Wu Shi was lower than Gu Jun! His authority would be compromised!

Ma Wu Shi immediately turn to Gu Jun and give him a death stare. What he meant was, "Don't you dare to interfere! Or else I will have your neck for this!"

Gu Jun sighed heavily.

Truthfully, Gu Jun was not at all familiar with Sun Xin Yu. He had only recommended Sun Xin Yu to enter the force as favor for an old friend. That old friend was also similarly rank as he was, an executive deputy in the Trade and Commerce Department. Since he shared a relationship with him, he had no qualms making an arrangement for her. Normally, Gu Jun and Sun Xin Yu would not have made any contact, he had never even seen her face before!

The last thing he was expecting was to receive a call from Zhang He Yuan, telling him that Sun Xin Yu had beat up Chief Ma's son! That gave him an unpleasant surprise.

Gu Jun understood Ma Wu Shi. He was ill-tempered and easily harbored grudges. For someone to strike his son, things would never end well! He did not want to offend Ma Wu Shi, but who asked Gu Jun to have a relationship with Sun Xin Yu?! In the end, he had to make an appearance at the scene to help settle things down. When he was at the receiving end of Ma Wu Shi's death stare, Gu Jun had come to an understanding. Unless he had to fight head to head with Ma Wu Shi, he could not protect Sun Xin Yu! Is it worthwhile for him to commit an offense just because of a distant relationship?

The answer was obviously no!

Eventually, Gu Jun had to nod his head bitterly. What he meant was, "Do what you want. I won't interfere!"

Once Ma Shi Wu had Gu Jun stand down, the next one was Sun Xin Yu herself. He reached his hand to his back and stood tall, posture like an outstanding leader and said. "Sun Xin Yu. As an officer of the law, your duty is to protect the public security! Not trampling around like a rampaging beast! Look at yourself! What have you become! You would even raise your fist against your fellow officer! With this kind of behavior, how could a leader let you go on protecting the citizen? People like you are the ones who would cause the bureau to lose its purpose! We would be looked down upon!"

As his speech went on, his hands went from his back and made frantic gestures at Sun Xin Yu, pointing at her agitatedly.

A few more people around had heard the commotion, but since the deputy chief and the chief himself was there, neither of them dared to move closer. They could only stand at a distance to listen and peek at the scene. Most of them did not know what was going on, but when they heard Chief Ma scolding Sun Xin Yu, one by one, they stared with pity and empathy.

Stomach grumbles

Zhang Yang's poor tummy had been grumbling all morning! He had not eaten anything since last night!

With a sudden turn of event, Zhang Yang had miraculously turn from a main character to only a side character. By the looks of it he was about to get his 3 strike out! Zhang Yang then quietly jerk Sun Xin Yu's sleeves and whispered. "I say, can you really survive this?" As cold as the polar ice caps, this woman was not stupid, she would not have struck the son of the Chief without some kind of trump card hiding somewhere.

Sun Xin Yu only looked at Zhang Yang coldly for a second before turning back to the Chief. The edge of her lips twitched a little. Zhang Yang knew by then, that she was not even taking this seriously.

As expected of the Chief of the Public Security Bureau. This man had used the law and the code of conduct to pressure Sun Xin Yu.

But the way he spoke, so angrily and antagonizing that if he had not drag Sun Xin Yu out to the street and have her shot dead, he would not have pacified the rage of the public.

“...Such a liability to the force, how could we still protect the public with her in the bureau! I strongly suggest that we remove her Sun Xin Yu from her duties! Remove this poison from the force! Mr. Gu, what say you?!” Ma Wu Shi turned to Gu Jun.

Gu Jun silently cursed. He had already expressed his intention to stay out of this mess, why would that dumb Chief Ma drag him back into the mess? Did he not know that Sun Xin Yu was his recommendation to the force? If Gu Jun had agreed to fire Sun Xin Yu, that it would be slapping himself in the face, admitting that he had failed to judge a person’s potential!

Gu Jun was not someone as soft as a peach; easily manipulate. But for this matter, Sun Xin Yu was indeed at the wrong side of the law. She was the one who had struck first. Gu Jun had nothing to say in this matter. He sighed and turned around.

Ma Wu Shi smiled sinisterly and turned his gaze onto Sun Xin Yu. “I hereby announce that Sun Xin Yu is to be relieved from all her duties and is to be stripped of her position as an officer of the Public Security Bureau!”

“Father...” After catching his breath for some time, Ma Hang jumped into the scene and said, “Don’t fire her just yet! Let her work under me! I will personally make her suffer!”

Ma Wu Shi was so angry that he nearly face palmed there and there! How could he have such a dumb son! You could not say something like that in the open! Did he think that the Public Security Bureau was his to play with? What a dumb block! He could just wait until he fired Sun Xin Yu, and then have her arrested for assault! By then you can have your own way with her.

“Keep quiet!” Ma Wu Shi stared at his son with a warning.

Ma Han quietly sat down and remain silent.

On one side, Gu Jun was snickering silently.

A silent jeer echoed louder than words.

Sun Xin Yu stared at Ma Wu Shi coldly and said, “Are you sure you want to fire me?”

Ma Wu Shi laughed. “You think that I can’t fire you now?”

“Are you certain that you want to fire me?” she asked again.

Ma Wu Shi was completely infuriated. He cried out, “Zhang He Yuan! Cuff her up! Hmph! I will charge you for intentional assault on a police officer! That’s a heavy crime!”

Sun Xin Yu laughed coldly. “You don’t have the authority to fire me!”

What is she saying?! Had she lost her mind?! Ma Wu Shi was already angered beyond words. Gu Jun was shaking his head on the other side of the room. He knew about Sun Xin Yu's trump card. But when someone was as prominent as Ma Wu Shi, he would not even have to worry about a Trade and Commerce deputy chief!

Sun Xin Yu took out her mobile phone and quickly search for a number, calling it.

Ma Wu Shi stared at Zhang He Yuan angrily and bellowed. "Why are you still standing there for?! Are you expecting me to personally arrest her?"

When titans clash, the mortals could only cower in fear. Zhang He Yuan turned around and turned his eyes onto Gu Jun. He could not disobey Ma Wu Shi's order but he did not want to offend Gu Jun as well. Being the middle man is not an easy task!

"Uncle Kuan! It's me! How are you?" While everyone eyeballs were directed towards her, Sun Xin Yu was on the phone, talking to a family member.

When Zhang He Yuan had finally notice Gu Jun would not look directly at him, he finally understood that Gu Jun had not want any of this to do with him! Zhang He Yuan gathered his courage and walked to Sun Xin Yu. "Little Sun. Please cooperate with me here. Hang up the phone and put your hands behind your back!"

Instead of complying, Sun Xin Yu took a few steps forward and handed over the phone in her hand to Ma Wu Shi. She quietly stared at him, indicating that there was someone on the other side of the phone wanting to speak with him.

Ma Wu Shi had never seen anyone as crazy and bold as Sun Xin Yu. He laughed a bit and said, “Who do you think I am? I am the Chief of the Public Security Bureau. Someone of a high rank. Not anyone can just simply talk to me!”

“MA WU SHI. PICK UP THE GOD DAMNED PHONE. YOU SON OF A B*TCH!” Even though it was only from the phone speaker, it was rather clear but not loud. Before Ma Wu Shi could continue bragging, he completely froze in place when he heard the voice.

That voice...he knows that voice! That was the Kuan Peng Fei! The Zhou Shu City Municipal Secretary! Other times, he would have smiled like a child obtaining a candy when he had pick a call from this man! But now! This is the Municipal Secretary, a man of an even higher-ranking position, who has been driven to the point to curse over the phone. It was then made clear to him, this woman, Sun Xin Yu was a woman of a certain caliber!

Ma Wu Shi strongly believed that even if the situation had changed from Sun Xin Yu to Kuan Peng Fei's own son, Kuan Peng Fei would not get so agitated! At most, he would only silently apologize to the respective department.

But now, even the dignified Kuan Peng Fei had lost his composure! That could only mean that Sun Xin Yu was someone of even higher importance! Just how far did this woman's influence

go? It must be as high as state level authority!

In an instant, Ma Wu Shi was completely stunned. His hands trembled as he reached for the phone in Sun Xin Yu's hands. He almost dropped the phone when he tried to place it at his left ear.

“H-Hello? This is Secretary Kuan? Ah ha ha...Yes. This is Ma Wu Shi...What!? No. No. No! I never meant it that way! Yes...yes...yes...We at the Ping Jiang District Bureau will cooperate with the Secretary...”

Anyone with an average level on intelligence could understand that the person on the other side of the phone was someone of a higher rank than Ma Wu Shi. It must be a leader of a city level rank! Secretary Kuan? There are only very few leaders by the name of Kuan in Su Tong City. However, there would only one person in the city level rank, that is Kuan Peng Fei Municipal Secretary.

Holy crap! Anyone who understood the situation sucked in a sharp breath. To think that she could just simply pick up the phone and call the Municipal Secretary to aid her...just how powerful is this woman was? Everyone changed the way they looked at Sun Xin Yu. Before, it was in a rather patronizing and pitiful manner, but now...they were completely awed by her.

Gu Jun was rather devastated with regret! If only he had stood up and defended Sun Xin Yu, he would have gotten on the good side of the Municipal Secretary! Oh lord! He was just a small seated little officer...if only he could just latch onto the Municipal Secretary and get along with him...

Deputy Chief Gu was so jealous that word could not describe how he had felt! He turned his sight over at Sun Xin Yu and observed her. This ever-cold woman was still calm and cool. Even after such a commotion with the chief, she had not lost her composure and remained completely stoic and emotionless. It was as if she had just deflected bullets off her massive chest like the dust on her shirt.

Based on more than 10 years of his experience in the force, Gu Jun had concluded that this woman...was not to be trifled with. But when he swept around and spotted Zhang Yang, he smiled. This young lad looked like he was rather close to Sun Xin Yu. Perhaps he could make use of the young man!

Chapter 164: Girl Friend

Ma Wu Shi carefully and respectfully handed over the phone back to Su Xin Yu, with the kind of gesture that you would see from a cashier at the supermarket while giving the customer's change. But it was more than that; it was as if the person in front of Ma Wu Shi was not his subordinate, but his mother. That kind of nervousness and respect would totally add up!

Sun Xin Yu took the phone and slid it into her pocket and nonchalantly said, "So, am I still fired?"

URGH! That speech was like a direct slap to the face! A salt to the wound!

Ma Wu Shi took her sharp words like a knife to the chest, but still smiled bitterly back at her. "What are you saying!? Little Sun is an officer of the law, the officer of the people! Everyone had always looked up to you! Remember your merits!"

On the other side of the room, Ma Hang was already devastated by greed and anger; his face was twisted ugly. He thought that he could get his hands on that b*tch! Lock her up for a few days and play with her with how he saw fit. Never would he have thought that he would be cut short! His father was literally got c*ck blocked so bad he might be able to make it stand anymore!

Even though he full of himself, he was not a fool. He knew when to back down when even someone as his father had his head bowed down to Sun Xin Yu! How could Ma Hang expect to even stand up

to her now?!

Sun Xin Yu had enough with the father and son drama, and she went towards Zhang Yang and gestured her fingers. “Follow me!”

Zhang Yang had been watching the “movie” that was laid in front of him for a whole day. If he was not famished, he would not have let it end that quick! He stood up and went towards Sun Xin Yu, with a little unsatisfied kind of feeling.

Everyone was at the other end of the story was staring at Zhang Yang enviously! This woman was the “goddess” of the law! The powerful being that had the support of the Municipal Secretary! Anyone that could have any kind of relationship with her would be the luckiest bastard around!

Don’t tell me that you would not want to have her as a friend?

Sun Xin Yu walked for a distance before turning quickly to face Ma Hang. Ma Hang raised his face menacingly.

WHAM!

Sun Xin Yu threw another punch in his sorry face!

“ARGH...” Ma Hang wailed. The bleeding that had stopped from the earlier punch was leaking once more!

She just punched the man's son right in his face! However, Ma Wu Shi had no choice; it was blatantly obvious. His face was all smile with no sign of pain nor anger, as if Ma Hang was no longer his son and Sun Xin Yu was his own daughter!

Following closely behind Sun Xin Yu, Zhang Yang's heart and mind were surging! He truly believed that when he had a mass fortune of 20,000,000,000 or even 200,000,000,000, Ma Wu Shi would still not surrender to him. He would not even stand still when Zhang Yang would beat son like how Sun Xin Yu punch Ma Hang right in front of Ma Wu Shi!

That was the true power of authority!

Truthfully, it was Sun Xin Yu who threw the first punch! If Ma Wu Shi steeled his decision to charge her, no one could have stopped him! But, subsequently, he would have to face the wrath of the municipal secretary, a man of a higher ranking that could easily "take care" of him, a mere section officer.

Could Ma Wu Shi make it all discreet? Could he really silence everyone who was involved? Once an investigation was issued, any hidden matter would be unfold! And once Ma Wu Shi was down, it was time for Sun Xin Yu to take his place! By then, Ma Wu Shi could not only exact his revenge, he would have lost his career and position! He could even be thrown into prison for god knows what kind of misused law!

It has been said that once a man had the taste of power, he could not live a day without it. Having tasted the power of his authority, would you expect the man to drop everything, and start over? If

that day really came, the gods must have tried to take his life as a game!

That was why Ma Wu Shi chose to endure it, even if he could not stomach it all!

Zhang Yang only always had a rough idea of the power of authority. But today was the day that he truly understood what it meant to be a man with authority!

It did not matter if Liu Wei would want to choose Zhang Yang as his foe in this current life; Zhang Yang would be the first to pick up the hammer of justice and smite down upon the man who ruined his previous life! To do that, it would have to have a proper, thorough preparation. A man such as Liu Wei was not just any man from a random rich household. He was the kingpin, the crime lord, the real master with a multibillionaire fortune! If Zhang Yang would want to wage a war with him, money alone was not effective; others would have done the same thing. Nothing in this world was fair! History was written with the blood of the loser! Only the strong will survive!

To have someone as a connection to the office by his side, he could be at an advantage when Liu Wei decides to use some dirty tricks to sabotage Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang's thoughts were rather calm but when he turned his head to look at the beautiful Sun Xin Yu, he could not help but smiled.

Sun Xin Yu noticed his sweet, warm smile and reacted rather coldly. “Stop smiling like a pervert! Come with me! To the practice hall, we’ll fight one more time! I won’t lose to you this time!”

Zhang Yang immediately held his steps and gestured her to stop. “Hold up! A kingdom cannot fight with a hungry soldier! At least let me eat something!”

Sun Xin Yu turned around and saw the clock showing 11am. She then sighed and exclaimed. “Ok, let’s have lunch together! Don’t even think about running away!”

The two of them exited the station and dined at a nearby restaurant. Being a heavy eater, and even missing a meal, Zhang Yang ordered five plates of rice scarfed it down like a hungry lion! The other customers in the restaurant were in shock with his appetite!

What the... Just right beside this glutton is a beautiful girl with style and manners. How could she just sit right beside him without even trying to stop him? Is she trying to be funny? What’s she trying to do?!

Zhang Yang noticed the nosy glances of other customers but chose to ignore them. All he cared about was to fill his empty stomach to the point of satisfaction.

“You’re done? Then let’s go!” Sun Xin Yu was rather clod and let Zhang Yang pay for the meal. Both of them returned to the station and headed straight to the gym.

They changed into their training outfit, the kind that was almost similar to that of a taekwondo or karate, which made it easy to grab because it was loose. They were to not wear any shoes in the gym and sparring. You must know that during a kick, having a shoe would make a huge difference! However, they were just sparing, and not fighting till the death.

WHAM! WHAM! PAK! PAK!

Their fight began with strong ferociousness.

During the spar, most of the officers in the station went off to have their lunch. The only people in the gym room was just Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu. Aside the thundering sound of kicks and punch, the rest of the station was completely silent, further amplifying the noise from the blows.

Sun Xin Yu's level of skill was rather high, but Zhang Yang's daily training had proven to make him even stronger. They both were almost at each other's necks during the start of the spar. But as the spar dragged on longer, a man's natural built and strength started to show greater advantage. Sun Xin Yu's breathing was getting louder as her punches were beginning to lose their destructive power. Even her speed was getting slower!

WHAM!

Zhang Yang leaped at her like a tiger's pounce, throwing her down to the ground! Sun Xin Yu was getting tired. She lost most of

her strength! She wanted to dodge the pounce but her body would not listen. She was forcefully pushed down to the ground!

Zhang Yang was rather close to her at this point. Both of them were only inches apart from each other, and then he laughed. “Ice Queen! Admit your defeat! Be it real life or in the game, you would never ever be able to defeat me!”

Her cheeks were flushed in red with anger. Her eyes narrowed with the glint of a killing intent!

Zhang Yang was rather shocked. Perhaps he said too much... But then he realized, both of his hands were grabbing her voluptuous breast!

Woah!

This body of this queen is really the real deal. Zhang Yang knew that his hand was wide enough to hold up a basketball, but he could not even properly hold on to those super XL sized watermelons! That unrivalled softness and perkiness was truly extravagant! The feeling was truly blissful!

Zhang Yang’s body went hot and had triggered a certain “flag”. Ever since he was reborn, he had never done it before; not even by himself! The amount of excitement caused Zhang Yang to react in the manliest way possible!

He quickly took his hands off and smiled innocently. “I’m so

sorry! It was a mistake! I did not do it on purpose!”

Sun Xin Yu turned away from him, got up to her feet and dashed to the changing room.

Pak Pak Pak! The sound of her heavy footsteps could be heard as her two slender and fair feet were running through the room.

Zhang Yang turned back and looked at his palms. He recalled the times whenever he traded blows with Sun Xin Yu, and having inevitably “taking advantage” of her...

About 30 seconds later, Sun Xin Yu walked out of the room and approached Zhang Yang with a gun in her hand! He could feel the strong killing intent emitting from all around her!

The gun was still in its holster, locked. But the woman was trying her best to unlock the hatch to pull out the gun. You could see that the woman was not thinking straight. Her breath was rather ragged and unstable. Her pupils were contracting and expanding uncontrollably. Sweat dripping down her silky skin. Her hands and feet were trembling furiously! She had only managed to unlock the hatch of the holster after numerous attempts, and she pulled out the revolver and cocked it!

Kachack! The safety was off!

Seeing the muzzle pointing towards him, Zhang Yang could not help but to think that she might actually pull the trigger! This

woman was brave enough to punch a man's son right in his face, she would not think twice to shoot the man who had molested her! At her breast! TWICE!

ARGH! What luck! This was the 3rd time he was at the other end of the gun!

Zhang Yang did not care about Sun Xin Yu being arrested for murder. He had to think for himself this time! If he died, everything that he prepared to do would be for nought!

A million solutions were running through his mind! Should he beg for mercy? From the looks of it, this cold woman would not care about his pleas. In fact, she might be even more aggressive and shoot him nonetheless! She might even shoot him one shot at a time and slowly kill him while he had to suffer the slow and agonizing pain before dying!

Should he snatch the gun away? But that was Sun Xin Yu there! The woman could fight at the same speed as him! By the time Zhang Yang could even get close, he would have gained new holes in his chest or even in between his eyes!

HMMM?!

Zhang Yang had a sudden thought! He remembered watching a very old movie before, and he remembered a scene that he could re-enact to save him!

Zhang Yang put down his hands, stared intensely at Sun Xin Yu, and then screamed from the top of his lungs.

“I LOVE YOU!”

Sun Xin Yu was stunned. The first time in his life, Zhang Yang witnessed the ever so cold Sun Xin Yu expressing an emotion! Her fingers were nowhere close to the trigger!

Alright! This might work!

Zhang Yang forced himself to calm down and treat Sun Xin Yu as a boss in the game to defeat.

First! To lower her defense! 5 stacks of <Cripple Defense>!

“I can no longer lie to myself anymore! Ever since I laid eyes on you, I’ve fallen deeply in love with you!” Zhang Yang said it slowly. He tried his best to construct the sentences properly. He was not good at coaxing a woman to begin with!

Sun Xin Yu remained motionless. But she was still listening.

That’s good! She intends to listen!

If he had heard the sound of a gunshot, even in his ghost form, he would have nowhere to hide!

Alright! Her defense was lowered. Now to implement super skills! Here comes <Horizontal Sweep> and <Destructive Smash>!

“Shoot me, if that is what you want! I will not hold a grudge against you! To die in your hands, would be my greatest honor!” Zhang Yang continued to distract her.

Sun Xin Yu remained silent and ever so stoic. She was only staring at Zhang Yang with her beautiful eyes.

1 minute...2 minutes...8 minutes...9 minutes!?

Zhang Yang was still standing there staring at her motionless. Inside his heart however, he was literally screaming. “Oh my god! Could you please hurry up and make your decision?! Do you want me to die?! Just say the word! God! I’m right here waiting for you making a decision for like forever!”

Finally! Sun Xin Yu lowered the gun and slid the weapon of destruction back into her holster.

She turned and looked back up at Zhang Yang and said, “Alright. From now on, you’re my boyfriend!”

Zhang Yang stunned.

What? Was that all? He still had a few more tricks up his sleeves! Could it be that he has become a novel’s main character? To become the center of a mass harem with a thousand woman

groveling beneath his feet wearing a full western suit, after just showing off some awesome move or something?

Sun Xin Yu was still as cool and emotionless even after declaring Zhang Yang as her boyfriend. She said, “There are only very few men that could defeat me! After all, I would need to get married someday! If you think you could stand a chance to prove your worth, I don’t mind giving you a chance!”

Oh, please! You don’t mind? I would mind! Zhang Yang sighed heavily in his heart. “Ahhh! Please forgive me Lin Yu! If I had not lied against her, I would not have the chance to meet you in the future!”

Hmmm...Should he be the first to ask for a “break up”? That would be impossible! Knowing her, Sun Xin Yu would go berserk! It would not be a surprise if she picked up the gun and really shot him this time!

Looked like he would have to wait for Sun Xin Yu to be the one to ask for the break up then! He needed to show that he was no husband material; only a good friend! That way, he could save his own butt and maintain this friendly, super-beneficial relationship with her.

“I’m going to clock out now! Head home by yourself!” Sun Xin Yu said as she turned and headed to the changing room.

Zhang Yang breathed a sigh of relief and went to his own changing room. Only then had he found out that he was

completely drenched in sweat, with his uniform plastered to his back! He thought back to how Sun Xin Yu looked like when she was all Wonder Woman style, ready to kill him anytime. A cold shiver ran down his spine! Damn! That Ice Queen is just too crazy!

After changing back into his own clothes, Zhang Yang walked home. Along the way, he was lost in his thoughts. No matter how long he thought about it, he could not think straight. He just did not know what to do next!

“Argh. F*ck it. I’ll cross that bridge when I come to it. That ice head couldn’t come over to my house and point a gun at my head to force me have sex with her!” Zhang Yang then lied down on his sofa and put on the gaming helmet, logging into the game.

“Little Yang! What took you so long?” Fatty Han immediately sent a private message. “Did you have a “fun” night? Hehehehe...”

“Fun, my ass!” Zhang Yang replied.

“Oh right! I have bad news!” Fatty Han cried. “Imperial Sky has already defeated the 4th boss in the Castle Interior dungeon!”

Zhang Yang narrowed his eyebrows. “That quick?!”

“Yeah!” said Fatty Han worriedly. “I’m afraid that they might conquer the entire dungeon before we could even start! They might get their hands on the ‘First Clear’ Achievement!”

Zhang Yang laughed it off. “Keep calm! It’s alright! It’s alright!”

Even though he said that, after dinner, Zhang Yang logged on to the official forum to speculate other players’ responds.

This time, player “Martian Homeland” praised the guys from Imperial Sky. He had even said that the player, One Sword Stroke, might be by far, the only player that could rival the current highest popularity player, Zhan Yu! One Sword Stroke could even have the potential to exceed Zhan Yu!

So far, the other super guilds were still struggling at the 3rd boss, yet Imperial Sky had already defeated the 4th boss with One Sword Stroke’s leadership. Their guild firmly grasped the advantage in obtaining the “First Clear” Achievement!

The forum discussion gained the support and agreement from many players! The rest that were fans of Lone Desert Smoke did not join the discussion since Zhang Yang and his team had long since took part of the dungeon raiding. They only left a comment, saying things like, “Just wait and see.”

7:30pm, Zhang Yang logged into the game and gathered Han Ying Xue and the gang, and started to raid the Castle Interior.

Sun Xin Yu was still cold as ever. She did not even express any sign of being friendlier to Zhang Yang after the “declaration”. Sometimes, when Zhang Yang was not thinking straight, he thought about the events that transpired earlier this morning as if it was just a bad dream.

‘Ding! You have entered Shadowmoon Castle: Castle Interior (Hardcore)!’

The party entered the dungeon through the main gate and entered the castle of the werewolf.

As they went through the gates, they were greeted with a large hall. The setting was nightfall; hundreds of men and women were dressed extravagantly, happily dancing around to the romantic music that filled the air. There was a group of 10 in the room too, and standing at the corner of the stairs at the second floor was a slim, slender, and beautiful noble female. She had one slender fair hand grasping the railing of the stairs and one other holding a wine glass.

This noble was the same person that Zhang Yang fought in the Garden area of the dungeon. She was Jenny, Master Waller’s wife! This time, she was not some random monster, but Gray-Silver tier boss!

[Jenny, Master Waller’s Wife] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid Monster)

Level: 44

HP: 1,200,000

The party could not start the boss without clearing the minions first beforehand.

[Crazed Guests] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 41

HP: 82,000

“Those who have their aura skill, please activate them now! Every time you log in or log off, the system automatically switches it off. Make it a habit to always turn on your aura skill every time you log into the game!” said Zhang Yang.

“Oh crap! I really forgot to switch on my aura!” Wei Yan Er cried, turning her <Strength Aura> on only after Zhang Yang notified.

The party had a total of 5 different aura carriers. Since Hundred Shots and Fatty Han’s <Companion Aura> was the same, the effects would not stack up and would only be treated as one active aura effect.

<Strength Aura>, <Vitality Aura>, <Companion Aura>, and <Life Aura>. Everyone received 4 beneficial aura effects each.

“Starlight! Start the fight!” Zhang Yang called out.

Chapter 165: The First Boss, Jenny

Endless Starlight immediately casted <Shield Toss> and lured 3 elite monsters in a go. With a sudden roar, the bunch of 11 monsters all came running towards him while screaming things like, “Unwelcome guest! Begone!”

<Divide Shield>!

<Devotion>!

<Strong Hammer>!

He immediately pulled their aggro.

The rest of the team waited for a little while before they joined the fight as well, casting their AoE skills.

Zhang Yang did not join the fight. He went on forward and walked to the second group of monsters. They growled immediately when triggered and rushed towards him.

<Blood Rage>! +30 Rage!

Just as Zhang Yang was going to start fight, he withdrew immediately, but after managing to only take 4 paces back, the monsters already appeared right in front of him.

Swoosh!

<Horizontal Sweep>!

In an instant, most of the monsters received a huge damage of more than 1,500! The utilization of the AoE skill was maximized during this kind of situations!

Wham!

<Thunder Strike>!

Multiple damage texts popped out again! This time, Zhang Yang only inflicted around 200+ to each of them but more importantly, they were all inflicted with slow. Zhang Yang kited the monsters and fell back to join Endless Starlight. He kited the monsters to group them together with Endless Starlight's. With that many monsters around, everyone's AoE skill could damage the monsters as well, maximizing both the time and skill used.

By the system's logic, if there were many monsters in a dungeon, each monster's attack power must be weakened down. If it was not, no tank could take the amount of damage received after kiting them all together. These monsters here must only have around 800 attack power. Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had only received less than 300 damage so far; easy enough for Han Ying Xue to heal them back to full health in a short amount of time.

Right then, Zhang Yang had already possessed the skill called

<Blast Wave>, he could stun every monster in his vicinity for 4 seconds after every 20 seconds! OP as f*ck!

The party's attack power was already strong to begin with, and after adding the few more aura effects, the killing speed was raised to a whole new level. In just a minute, the first group of monsters was already taken down, and the second group of monsters had only one third of their original HP remaining!

“Starlight! Get the next group of monsters!” Zhang Yang ordered. As the second group of monsters locked their vision on Zhang Yang alone, Endless Starlight could easily end the fight without pulling any monster towards him.

When Endless Starlight brought in the third group of monsters, the second group had already fallen. Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the attackers did not even have time to rest. The next wave of monsters arrived and they continued slashing and blasting.

Zhang Yang only smiled lightly, feeling satisfied at the team's attacking progress. He then proceeded on to pull the fourth group of monsters.

“WOOHOO! This is awesome!” Wei Yan Er happily squealed as she blasted away the monsters with her <Tornado Cleave>. She could deal at least 1,900 damage to every monster around on each cast, with only 5.5 seconds of cooldown. Her attack had already long surpassed Zhang Yang's and was so strong, that Endless Starlight had difficulties properly holding on the aggro of every single monster. Some monsters were even OT and nearly got close to Wei Yan Er to attack her.

Luckily, Zhang Yang was fast enough to pull the monster back to his attention. After a few hits of <Horizontal Sweep> and <Thunder Strike>, almost every single monster turned their attention to him.

“What are you doing!? Are you trying to tire me to death?!” Han Ying Xue cried.

An attacker could stop to have a rest for a while to catch their breath, but a healer does not even have time to wipe the sweat from their brow. If the healer lags even by just a bit, the tanks could die! Both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had been taking turns in pulling more and more monsters that Han Ying Xue had no time to catch her breath; it felt that she could throw a fit at any time out of frustration!

Zhang Yang saw how frustrated she was and only laughed. “It’s not like your MP’s dropping. Why would you need to rest? It’s only a waste of time!”

“GRAAAH! Damn you!” It was not like she could just ignore her team mate and just rest on one side. She had to just suck it up and continue to heal!

Group by group, the monsters were being kited to the party by both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight. The party was progressing so fast that neither of them had the time to even pick up the spoils of war.

Daffodil Daydream did not receive the “75% mana reduction” passive skill, but instead obtaining a “15% increase in all flame attacks” passive skill from the Level 30 class quest reward after she cleared the A-level difficulty quest. If she had completed the S-level difficulty instead, she could have obtained 20% bonus passive.

It was all fun when a Pyromancer blasts away the monsters, waves after waves, until their mana runs out, that is. She could at most, last for 2 waves before running out from the battle and eating mana regenerating snacks to recover her MP!

The team was strong and fast, having taken only 10 minutes or so to clear hundreds of monsters in this majestic hall. The entire floor was filled with coins, random ETC1 items, and equipment. It took another 3 whole minutes just to sift through everything!

“How do we fight this boss?” asked Wei Yan Er. After looting all the items, the bodies of the monster disappeared from the hall, leaving it clear and barren.

“The boss has 3 skills!” Zhang Yang had already taken step to recall the battle strategy. He wrote them down in a little notebook. “Number 1, she would choose a random player and put them in some sort of a prison for around 5, or 6 seconds, I guess. In this period, the imprisoned would lose HP. That person can’t cast any skills or take any potions. Only a healer could heal the HP lost. That is why this dungeon is supposed to have 2 healers. If one is imprisoned, the one healer would help the tank while the other would heal the person being imprisoned!”

Han Ying Xue cried out. “Hey... dummy... please add one more

healer to the party! I can't endure this much healing alone! I'm so freaking tired!"

"Fine. As long as I can find one suitable for our party, I will add a healer in!" Zhang Yang replied, as if he did not mean it.

Wei Yan Er then pointed out a flaw of having just one healer in the party. "What if she was sent to prison? She can't heal herself!"

Zhang Yang laughed it off and said, "I have <Vanguard's Aggression> and <Sacrifice> to cover her. But if that sorry b*tch had to just be picked twice, then, I have nothing to say. We might just have plain bad luck!"

"Hmph! What else?" asked Wei Yan Er.

"The second skill is like the boss's sister; to randomly pick and control a player. I think the skill can't be purged. It would only expire after a fixed duration."

"The third?"

"The third skill is berserk! Well, technically is a kind of passive berserk. It will add 10% attack damage per second. It will stack endlessly and can only be dispelled by dragging the boss to an ice spot that will spawn when the battle starts!"

Zhang Yang concluded his explanation. "Well, all in all, it's pretty easy to fight!"

“Shall we start?” Zhang Yang signaled Hundred Shots. “Hundred Shots, attack the boss for a second. Drag her down here. The ice platform will not spawn up there!”

“Alright!” Hundred Shots aimed his arrow at the boss and let it fly towards her.

Pew!

“Huh! What sort of wild, uncivilized bastard dares to infiltrate my banquet!?” Jenny was furious and stomped down the stairs. She had Hundred Shots in her sight and took out a long black whip from god-knows-where and whipped him.

<Blood Rage>! <Charge>!

Zhang Yang raised his sword and slashed the boss.

‘-613!’

‘-1,540!’

‘-1,429!’

Zhang Yang quickly built up the aggro and inflicted <Cripple Defense> on the boss to reduce her defense by 50%.

Jenny then turned her sight at Zhang Yang and attacked him with her whip. “I’ve spent so much time and effort to decorate this hall for the banquet, and you just barged in here and killed all my guests? You ruined my banquet! I will kill you all! I will kill all you savages!”

<Block>! +30 Rage.

‘-321!’ <Block> Reflect damage.

‘-642!’ <Shield Bash>.

In just 2 seconds, the boss attacked Zhang Yang again. This time, he had no <Block> to use and had to receive the attack head on.

‘-2,112!’

“Hm. Not that bad. The boss only has around 3,000 attack damage!” Zhang Yang attacked the boss while talking to Han Ying Xue. “Hey! When the boss picks someone, I want you to only heal the person. I think I can hold on for at least 5 seconds!”

“Daffodil Daydream! Accept the lightning punishment!” The boss cried out and light slid through the floor. Daffodil was then immediately teleported to the entrance and was encased in a large light barrier. Inside the barrier, lightning struck her endlessly.

‘Ding! Jenny has casted <Lightning Prison>. Receive 2,000 Natural damage every 2 seconds for 6 seconds!’

‘-2,000!’

Zap!

With her naturally low HP of only 3,840, she would die by just under two strikes!

Han Ying Xue quickly casted <Holy Shield> first and then <Brilliant Light>, lastly following up with <Healing Bond>. After healing over 4,000 HP, she quickly cast <Regeneration> and left her there.

<Holy Shield> alone was enough to absorb at least 2,000 damage. Zhang Yang used <Block> once and within 6 seconds, he had only lost 2,000 damage. To him, that was a mere pinch when he had over 7,000 maximum HP.

90%!

“You defiled me! A noble! A true noble! For that, you will have to pay the price for your sins!”

Jenny growled loudly and her entire body started to expand, instantly turning from a beautiful noble woman into a beastly silver brown werewolf!

‘Ding! Jenny has cast <Werewolf Awake>. Increases 10% attack every second!’

Zhang Yang quickly scanned the hall room and found the ice platform. He then kited the big bad wolf towards it.

10%... 20%... 30%... as each second past, the boss gained increased attack. If Zhang Yang had not used <Block> against the attack, he would have received increased damage from 2,000, 3,000... to even 4,000!

Luckily, the ice platform was not far from he was. When the boss gained over 8 stacks of the buff, Zhang Yang managed to drag her hairy butt to the icy platform.

‘Ding! <Werewolf Awake> had ended and will disappear!’

The boss lost her werewolf form and slowly returned to her human form. Although she may have restored her human self, her clothes did not. Pieces of torn clothing were just dangling on her body, with only a tiny bit of cloth coincidentally covering the private parts of her body, exposing a large amount of skin to the public.

“WOOHOO!! SO BIG!”

“SO FAIR!”

Fatty Han and Endless Starlight eyes glinted with a perverted shine, drooling as they speak.

“This is the true <Cripple Defense!>”

“Fatty bro! That must at least a 34D no?!”

“You bet it is!”

“ARGHHH. I wanna touch them so bad!”

“...”

“Both of you...can just die off!” Han Ying Xue scoffed.

“Endless Starlight! You shall be my slave! Serve me as your one true master!” Jenny pulled out a long bow, again from god-knows-where, and shot an arrow towards Endless Starlight.

‘Ding! Player Endless Starlight had received the effect <Soul Temptation>!’

“For my master!” Starlight cried and dashed towards Fatty Han. He raised his hammer and slammed Fatty Han.

“F*ck you! Why would you choose me! There’s so many others for you to choose from! Bastard!” cried Fatty Han.

“HAHHAAHAHHAHA” Wei Yan Er had to rubbed her belly as she laughed uncontrollably.

“That’s what you get for being a perverted dog!”

Chapter 166: Frivolous Maid

<Breaking Shot>!

Hunter Shots aimed his bow and shot an arrow towards Endless Starlight, sending him into a <Dazed> state. Endless Starlight was sent spinning, turning his head around like he was completely drunk.

Fatty Han immediately created a distance between Endless Starlight and himself. When Endless Starlight recovered from the daze, Fatty Han fired a <Concussion Shot> and slowed him down for 4 seconds. Hundred Shots also fired a <Concussion Shot> after the slow duration ended. After 3 status impairing skills were fired, the “slave” effect on Endless Starlight expired and he regained control of his own character.

The party then refocused their efforts on taking down the boss.

As the first boss in the Castle Interior, Jenny was not hard to defeat. As long as that party could dispel the <Werewolf Awake> on her and properly tend to the player who got sent into the lightning prison, the team would do just fine! However, that was if everything panned out well. This is because Zhang Yang’s current team had one flaw; and that was the fact that they had only one healer!

The boss had finally caught Han Ying Xue when she cast the <Lightning Prison> for the fourth time.

Zhang Yang reacted promptly and cast <Sacrifice> to protect her. He also activated the [Servant] skill <Substitute>. When the lightning struck Han Ying Xue, both Zhang Yang and her had system notifications popping up all over their heads.

Averted! Averted! Averted!

Immune! Immune! Immune!

6 seconds passed by and Han Ying Xue returned to the party. They had literally averted a disaster.

80%, 70%, 60%...

Under the massive firepower of the party, the boss's HP was akin to tofu; brittle and fragile, easily crushable. The team defeated her in under 4 minutes.

“This seems easy!” Daffodil cried out as she stretched her hand upwards and relaxed. However, even though she said that, she understood that the team's victory lay in the core structure of the party, the members of the party! If they had a slightly weaker tank in place of Zhang Yang, who possibly could not kite the boss to the ice platform to dispel the <Werewolf Awake>, they would have been completely devoured by the boss!

That was why a strong tank represents the soul, the brains, and the power of the party! Zhang Yang's role as a core member of it signified a strong pillar that held the entire party together!

“Woohoo! Time for the loots!” Wei Yan Er bent over and picked up the boss drops. Everyone was rather unexcited about the loot since they had just defeated a Yellow-Gold tier boss not too long ago. This was merely a Gray-Silver tier one, and they now consider its drops to be trash.

[Blood-soaked Chest Plate] (Gray-Silver, Leather Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +96

Strength: +16

Dexterity: +48

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 40

Three people rolled for the leather armor but Hundred Shots beat his other two competitors to it.

Wei Yan Er picked two more items up but discovered that they were only of Green-Copper tier. She could not help but stuck her

tongue out and blow raspberries at the boss' dead corpse. "Bleh! Stingy prick!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Hey, you can't just accuse the boss of being stingy! I've told you before. All future dungeons would never contain anything valuable!"

"Huh? Why not?"

"Are you dumb?" Zhang Yang face-palmed, causing Wei Yan Er to be rather unhappy with his reaction. She pushed her fist up into the air and gestured it at Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang laughed it off and decided to explain to the little dumb brat. "Try and think about it for a second. If dungeons were always around for players to farm for strong equipment whenever they have reached the required levels and are ready to defeat the bosses in there, who would defeat a field boss then?"

"B-But! A Hardcore Mode dungeon is tough dude!" said Wei Yan Er as she tried to justify her words.

"According to the developers of the game, a Normal Mode dungeon will be easy enough to allow any random party to clear it. As for Hard Mode, only 10% of players around would be able to defeat it. Now, that was just a rough idea on the massive scale. For Hardcore Mode, only 1% of players in the game could try and attempt to defeat the dungeon!"

"With that in mind, stay with me for a while here. How many players do you think are playing this game? There are at least

50,000,000 players in the game right now! What is 1% of 50,000,000 players? 500,000 I reckon!”

“Now, put that in scale and think of what would happen if the Hardcore Mode was cleared by those players 500,000 times! Now, think of how many field bosses there are in the entire game? 50? 100?”

“Even if you flip the entire world over and searched the high heavens or the scorching hells, you could probably find no more than 200! A field boss’ drops are much more precious and valuable than the measly Hardcore dungeon bosses’ drops! Naturally, they would not be easy to defeat. Why do you think the developers would even bother creating those bosses out there for? Decoration?”

Wei Yan Er scratched her head and widened her eyes as she stared at Zhang Yang as if she was still confused about what Zhang Yang had just said. “So... erm... do we skip dungeons now?”

Zhang Yang cringed so hard until he was about to burst a vein in his forehead. He sighed heavily and cried out, “Which house is missing a stupid kid? Please take her home!”

Wei Yan Er was angered and drew her weapon. “Noob tank! Keep calling me stupid and I’ll really slam your face in!”

“Little brat! It was you who started complaining about how stingy the boss was didn’t you?!” Zhang Yang started to laughed instead. “A dungeon boss would only get stingier and stingier.

Furthermore, the equipment grade would always be one level lower than those you could farm from a field boss! That is the importance of a field boss! In the far future when we would need to fight a world boss, it would take an entire guild of thousands of players to fight for god-knows seven days and seven nights to defeat it. Do you think that a regular Hardcore boss could be that tough?”

“Nyeh!” Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue.

“You...” Zhang Yang face-palmed again.

“You still don’t understand, do you?”

“Nyehehehehe!” Wei Yan Er nodded her head honestly.

“Zhan Yu, now that you have explained it as such, then what meaning is there in us clearing the dungeon then?” Hundred Shots was not stupid but since Zhang Yang had explained something simple with such complexity, he too, began to feel confused.

“Hm... to fill in the blanks for the field boss.” Zhang Yang explained. “I had explained that earlier. A field boss of the same level would be extremely scarce. So scarce that if we were to share the boss to everyone in the game, it would be less than one boss for every 1,000,000 players! It’s even likely that I have made a rather relaxed estimation! According to that logic, players would not have bosses to kill and thus, would not have good equipment, would they? That is what the dungeons are for! With three different types of difficulties, there would eventually be one that is suitable for

you to raid!”

“That would only mean that the field bosses’ equipment is the best!” asked Daffodil Daydream.

“Oh my God! My sweet Lord! Baby Jesus! You must have hung out with the little dumb brat for far too long! Now you have contracted her dumb disease as well? I had literally explained twice! God! My saliva is about to dry out!” Zhang Yang was seriously vexed that he could burst his bulging nerve on his forehead!

“Noob tank!” Wei Yan Er jumped to her feet and stomped towards Zhang Yang. Being shorter than he was, she could only point her tiny finger to his chin. “You are not allowed to call me stupid! Hmph! I’m breaking up with you!”

“Breaking up? Who said we were friends to begin with!?”

“What!?”

“Hahaha!” Zhang Yang laughed. He had fun toying with the little girl and felt really comfortable with her.

“Let’s go! Move on! Move on!” Zhang Yang led them further in.

As the party marched towards the second floor, they reached a junction that split into two paths. These paths had monsters with a rather lustful and seductive posture. There were at least a pair of

these monsters at every ten meters or so. They were wearing colorful costumes and low cut tops which revealed luxuriously ample amounts of those mouthwatering watermelons! And those cleavages were so deep that they caused all women to feel envy.

Gulp Endless Starlight swallowed his saliva heartily. “Damn. I could not bear to swing my hammer at those babies!”

“Where to?”

“It’s the same. Both ways would lead straight to the opposite end of the castle where the second boss would be, standing guard to the entrance of the third floor!” Zhang Yang thought a little and commanded Endless Starlight to attack, “Starlight! Go and start the fight!”

Endless Starlight hummed and rushed towards the monster, wielding the hammer in his hand. From a distance, he threw his shield and struck only two monsters, since the third one was too far away for the shield to bounce to.

[Frivolous Maid] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 43

HP: 86,000

MP: 43,000

“Aiya! There’s a guest here!” Both of the maids smiled lustfully and locked onto Endless Starlight to cast <Fire Ball>.

“Ahh~ Respectful guest! You don’t have to reserve yourself. Please be rough on me! Ah~ Please use me to your liking!”

“F*ck!” Endless Starlight was so shocked at her opening speech that he nearly slipped and fell over.

“-1128!”

“-1243!”

Two <Fire Ball>s flew over and blasted Endless Starlight.

“Aiya~ The time for fun was just too short!” said one of the maid.

“Hmm~ After sleeping with my man last night, I had to slip out of bed to find 3 more guards to entertain me! Only then was I satisfied enough that I could finally sleep!”

“Holy sh*t! This is just too provoking!” Fatty Han was stunned as well.

“Shameless creatures!” Wei Yan Er mumbled.

“Ah~ What’s the hurry! Sigh... People come and go in a flash! How do I fill this empty hole!”

“Hmm~ Beloved guest! Why won’t you stop to have some fun with us!”

Both maids were repeatedly trying to ‘flirt’ with Endless Starlight.

When he could no longer hold it in, Endless Starlight finally burst. “F*ck! Don’t toy with me! My will is as strong as steel! There is no such thing as riding the tricycle! It’s fake, it not real, it can never happen!” said Endless Starlight as he wiped away his stream of drool.

This Frivolous Maid had the skill, <Mesmerize>, that could cause players to be <Dazed>. Once the player was rendered immobile, the monster would cast powerful <Fire Ball>s that could deal immense damage of around 3,000. If two of the monsters attacked simultaneously, they could instantly take out any non-tank class player.

The party then quickly killed one of the monsters first before taking on the other one with relative ease.

While attacking magic-type monsters without strong damage reduction armor, to kill a large group of them simultaneously would be impractical. The party could only proceed on by killing two at a time. After 20 minutes into the floor, the party arrived at

the second boss. Endless Starlight was pretty much flushed with embarrassment after being the target of ‘flirting’ by the monsters. After being interrogated by Fatty Han, he discovered that this ultimate pervert was still a cheery boy!

By the looks of his appearance, the second boss, Lanier was a middle-aged man with a graceful yet stoic appearance. He was rather handsome as he possessed a kind of mysterious attraction that was compelling like Korean pop stars. However, both of his legs were chained with heavy steel, limiting his position to center around the staircase.

[Lanier] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 45

HP: 1,300,000

Note: He belongs to the Vampire race. He was defeated by Master Waller and kept as a slave to serve him as a guard for the castle. Being enslaved caused him to burn with a raging hatred and desire to shred any intruder at will!

“Ooooh! Vampires are so handsome!” Daffodil Daydream had been enticed by his handsome complexion.

“Hm. Indeed!” Han Ying Xue took part as well. “Especially the

nose! It makes him look quite handsome!”

“Hey! Are you here to fight the boss or to participate in <China’s Next Top Male Model>?”

“Hey! At least let us savor the looks of a handsome man!”

Fatty Han scoffed, unsatisfied. “You have 4 handsome men here in the party! Why would you grasp for more lemons when you can’t hold any more?”

“Damn you, Fatty!”

Poor Fatty Han was bombarded with insults and scorn from the ladies.

Ahem Zhang Yang coughed loudly to get the party’s attention and begun to explain the battle plan.

“Listen up! This boss is practically a free service as well. The main skills are, number one, <Infection>. It will cause a player to temporary turn into a vampire that he could control. The way to counter this is extremely easy. Priests and Knights could use <Dispel> to remove the debuff!”

“The second skill! About every half a minute, the boss would use a kind of lifesteal skill to suck the blood of a random player. Before he activates the skill, he would place a mark on the target and will only activate the skill after five seconds! This skill would drain the

player's HP by 10% every second and recover the same amount of HP on the boss! It lasts for 5 seconds!"

"Next, it becomes a little complicated, so please bear with me for a while. If a player has around 40% HP left, the boss would only take away 4% of your HP and heal the same amount each instance. The second instance would only take away 3.6% HP. So, the lesser your HP, the lesser he heals!"

"So, to counter this skill, we must take away as much HP as we can before the boss can siphon from us!"

Chapter 167: Lanier The Vampire

“Here we go!”

Zhang Yang let out a battle cry and raised his sword to charge towards Lanier

“Huh?! Intruder! Hahaha! What a coincidence! With you guys around, I can kill some time!” cried Lanier. He stood up and dashed towards Zhang Yang.

<Charge>!

“-613!”

Zhang Yang slashed the boss and quickly activated <Block> to negate the incoming attack.

<Crippled Defense>! <Crippled Defense>! <Crippled Defense>!

Facing boss fights, Zhang Yang would always prioritize inflicting <Cripple Defense> for 5 layers before other skills.

Sun Xin Yu moved in the shadows and appeared behind the boss, slicing and dicing his back, inflicting incredible amount of damage.

Just then, Zhang Yang had recalled that he had no engaged in any conversation with his “girlfriend” from when he had logged

in. He thought about what to say to her for a while and sent a private message. “Hey...”

“Pull the monster properly!” Sun Xin Yu replied him instantly.

Without a gun pointing at him, Zhang Yang felt more relaxed talking to her. “Sigh...having a relationship an iceberg is quite stressful for me!”

“You don’t have to sugar coat everything you say, nor talking in metaphorical! I hate that kind of man! You don’t have to spend your time trying to make me fall in love with you! If I love you, I would love you! If I hate you! I would ignore you even if you would give me the moon!”

Bold!

Zhang Yang laughed, “In that case, should we just remain the same as ever?”

“What more do you want then?”

It’s not what I want, it’s what you would want!

Zhang Yang said to himself quietly. If she had heard him saying this to her, she might really go berserk again and might even break into his house and kill him!

“Daffodil Daydream! I present you the gift of my blood! Joined me as the majestic vampire!” Lanier pointed at Daffodil Daydream and her body gives off a bloody-red glow that dimmed back into her body.

Daffodil was frozen at her place and when she stood back upright, her eyes opened, revealing bloodshot eyes. A pair of sharp fangs appeared baring from her mouth. All ten of her fingers started to grow long and razor sharp nails. Her fair skin had turned into a pale-white color, morphing her into a beautiful monster.

‘Ding! Player Daffodil Daydream had received the effect <Blood Transformation>!’

“Woow! How cool!” Wei Yan Er cried with admiration. “Sister Daffodil, you looked so much better like that!”

However, being controlled by the boss, Daffodil Daydream could not respond to Wei Yan Er. After a loud and long howl to the sky, she jumped towards Endless Starlight with such speed that he could not even react in time.

Fatty Han laughed. “Hah! What a small world, Daffodil Daydream targeted Starlight first when she turned into a monster. Here, I wonder if she was intentionally trying to attack him!”

Endless Starlight quickly cast a purging skill and restore Daffodil back to normal.

88%!

Lanier turned around and pointed his fingers at Wei Yan Er.
“Weakling Humans! Surrender and be my nourishment!”

A glowing, circular red orb floated on top of Wei Yan Er.

‘Ding! Lanier has used <Preparation>!’

“Melee fighters! Hit the little brat! Stop when you’re about to reach 10%! Do not kill her off!” Zhang Yang screamed.

Sun Xin Yu and Endless Starlight immediately shifted their head and ran towards Wei Yan Er to attack.

“Hey! Lighter! A little lighter!” screamed Wei Yan Er as she could not do anything to stop them.

Sun Xin Yu did not reserved any Stamina and most of her skills were in cool down. In 5 seconds, she had only manage to deal around 2500 damage on Wei Yan Er. Endless Starlight on the other had could only deal over 1000 damage. Wei Yan Er had only 900 HP left which was 20% of her total HP.

Zhang Yang saw what had happened and immediately cast <Force Strike>.

“-1566!”

Crap. What luck, it was a critical strike that had completely killed the poor little girl.

“ARGGGGH!!” Wei Yan Er was infuriated. “Noob tank! Why would you do that for!?”

Zhang Yang grinned and said, “Sorry! Sorry! It’s not my fault you know! I can’t control a critical strike!”

“I don’t care! Hmph! Tonight, I’m going to write your name into the paper!” babbled the little girl angrily.

“Ow please. You’re still as young as a green horn. Romance is still something when only you’re mature enough!”

“Bleh!” Wei Yan Er stuck her tongue out.

“You think that I’m writing a love letter? Hell no! I’m writing your name on the paper and hang it on the origami paperman and curse you every day!”

Zhang Yang hold in his laughter and turned over to Han Ying Xue. “Did she pick something up from the television drama or something?”

“Yeah, she did. It was called “A date with a Magik”!”

“PFFTTT BUAHAHAHA” Zhang Yang laughed louder.

Killing Wei Yan Er was an accident, but Zhang Yang was able to stop the boss skill from activating in the end. It was considered to be an accidental skill stopping method!

Now that the team had lose a high attacking member, the team overall DPS was still strong as ever and quickly took away 11% of the boss HP.

“Endless Starlight! You shall be my nourishment!” Lanier pointed at Endless Starlight.

“Everyone hit Starlight! Stop when his HP is at 30%! Let Frost Night to deal the rest!” Zhang Yang changed his strategy.

Bam! Bam! Boom! Boom!

Even though Endless Starlight had a thick skin, he could not counter any of his team mates attack and had his HP dropped down quickly. His HP was dropped down to only 24% and everyone else stopped besides Sun Xin Yu continued to attack.

Since her class was using dagger, her attack specialty was fast attacking interval with low damage. She would not kill Endless Night in a blast even if one of her attack was a critical hit

8%, Endless Starlight had only 472 HP left when Sun Xin Yu had stopped attacking.

“Hahaha! Weak beings! Just you wait, when I had my nourishment and healed my vitality! I shall kill you all with my strength!” Lanier pounce towards Endless Starlight and sank his fangs into his neck.

‘Ding! Lanier has used <Feeding>!’

“Eww! That’s just too erotically violent!” Fatty Han mumbled.

“+2600!”

The boss had gained a recovery effect. Even though it seems rather much, but the boss had only recovered 0.2%! Since the boss had only drained 0.8% of Endless Starlight HP, along with Zhang Yang <Destructive Smash> effect, the boss healing was reduced by 75%!

“+2340!”

Another healing text ticked at the boss.

“+2106!”

“+1895!”

“+1705!”

Along the Endless Starlight HP reduction, the boss recovery rate was also reduced. The total HP that the boss had recovered was only more than 10,000! It was not even worth activating the skill!

After <Feeding> had ended, Lanier returned to Zhang Yang and attacked him. The battle rhythm was restored back to normal.

Controlled? Purge.

Blood sucking? Hit the team mate.

When the boss's HP was down to less than 50%, Lanier had not remained as stoic and dignified as how he would describe a vampire would be. Instead, the boss was starting to shriek aloud. His damage was gained a buff.

‘Ding! Lanier had gained <Vampirism Rage>. All Attack is increased by 20%!’

“Eh? Dummy! Why didn’t you say anything about this skill?!” said Han Ying Xue.

Damn you girl! It had been a few years since I last battle this boss! It’s already a miracle that I could recall 2 skills! If my memory was that good, I would not have just enrolled in Zhou Su University!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “I’d totally forgotten about that!”

Even though the boss had gained a buff in attack, it was only just a slight bump of 20%. That amount of damage increase was not even considered a threat to the team since Han Ying Xue's super support was by far the "biggest" in the entire of China! That little "bump" is nothing under Han Ying Xue huge bulking "support".

40%, 30%, 20%, 10%...

Lanier could only hit here and there before being defeated by the party.

Han Ying Xue revived her little cousin sister and the little girl pout her little pink lips and get the loots.

[Arcane Battle Axe] (Gray-Silver, Two handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 699 – 799

Attack Interval: 3.5 seconds

DPS: 208

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 40

“WOW! Mine! Mine!” Wei Yan Er was rather pissed off but her anger was quickly dissipated when she saw the shiny axe. She picked the axe up and rubbed the flat shiny surface on her puckish face.

“What a shame though. The attack interval was at 3.5! It’s slightly faster!” said Zhang Yang.

“Why don’t they standardize a fix attack interval” Wei Yan Er asked Zhang Yang as she had already forgot about being angry at him.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and answered. “I think...this kind attack interval weapon would be dropped by non-important bosses...I think that the strongest boss would drop the strongest weapon! You know? To make a difference! On the other hand, faster attack interval would only increase the trigger rate of the weapon effect! It’s one way to reimburse the lower attack damage of the weapon!”

Just like the first boss Jenny, Lanier had only dropped one piece of Gray-Silver tier equipment and 3 more Green-Copper tier equipment. The party did not even peek at the weapon properties and toss them all to Zhang Yang to sell it at his Little Merchandize Shop.

“Little Yang, the two boss that we had just defeated was very easy! Why would other guild would need to take 3 days to defeat them?” Fatty Han asked.

To be able to defeat the boss at such speed was not all because of Zhang Yang previous experience in his past life, it was also because of the proper battle tactics! With overwhelming team mates like Zhang Yang tank ability and Han Ying Xue supporting power, the battle was only then rendered to be easy!

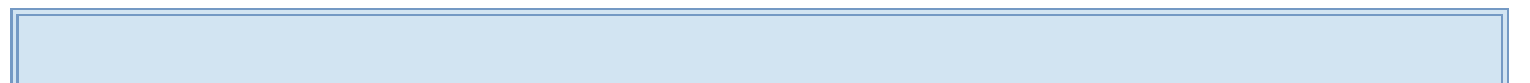
Zhang Yang shook his head and laughed. “Well. We have out super damager little brat in our party!”

Wei Yan Er immediately praised Zhang Yang while patting her chest proudly. “Hah! Noob tank! I always knew that you’re a bastard. But you’re a bastard with an exceptional eye to see my strength!”

Everyone laughed together.

Following the staircase upward, the party arrived to the 3rd floor. Based on the structure of the castle, every floor was about just the same, hallow in the middle with two pathways splitting the castle into two wings. Both wings were identical with rooms and sliding doors. The only different on every floor was the monster that occupied it.

This floor, there monsters were male human guard dressed in an elegant ceremonial costume. Their age differ from one another. Just like the second floor, there were group in pairs and they were standing in front of the room doors.



[Castle Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 44

HP: 88,000

Shush!

Zhang Yang slide across the floor with <Charge> and used <Horizontal Sweep> and deal more and 1500 damage to both of the guards.

“Disturbing guests!” Both of the guards cried out and thrust their fist at Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! You have been effected by <Uppercut>. Stunned for 5 seconds!’

When the guards had stunned Zhang Yang, they ignored him on one end and aimed at the other party member and attack.

Luckily, Endless Starlight had the skill <Justice Defense> and temporary take over the tank role for Zhang Yang.

Wei Yan Er laughed at Zhang Yang, “Tch. Tch. Tch. Noob tank, you’re so incompetent! You can’t even pull monster properly. Aiyoyo~~”

That little brat had just ridiculed Zhang Yang!

Not only the <Uppercut> had stunned Zhang Yang, it had also temporary cleared all aggro value on the target! It made group killing to be impossible for them. The party then proceed on forward step by step, one pair of monsters at a time. Luckily, there were two tanks in the party. When one was stunned and “ignored”, the other tank would take over. If Zhang Yang was alone, the rest of the party member would have to rely on status effect skills to survive until Zhang Yang could recover from the stun.

Very soon, the party made their way to the third boss. The boss was a rather well-built and sturdy man. He was the looks of a 30 years old man. A fine, formal, and rather exquisite clothing was worn, sitting on a magnificent chair, the man was drinking from a wine glass.

[Count Demison, Master Walter’s Brother] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 46

HP: 1,400,000

“This boss will be slightly harder!” said Zhang Yang as he cleared his throat.

Hundred Shots scratched his head and said, “I hear that many guilds were stuck here!”

“Little Yang, don’t beat around the bush! Just tell us straight!” said Fatty Han hurriedly. He was trying to pushed everyone to defeat the Castle Interior dungeon to prove that their guild was the strongest!

“The boss strategy is rather easy. He had two skill. One would be used on the tank, and the other will be a random pick! The one that will be used on the tank is straight forward. It’s just a rather strong damage skill that I will take care of it. As for the other skill, the boss will target two random players and cast some sort of explosive parasite. If the parasite is not killed off in time, then the player would...BOOM! Die. Explode. The damage is 100% percentage of HP so, even if you’re a level 300 player with Celestial tier equipment, you would still die by this skill!”

“Oh! Then it’s simple. When the bug comes out, we should just target the bugs!” said Daffodil confused.

Zhang Yang shook his head. “The bugs would be invisible to others. Only the players that are inflicted with the bugs would be able to see and attack the bugs for 20 seconds! Furthermore, because the bugs are implanted inside the body, the person cannot target and attack the bugs in their own body. Only the other party could attack the bugs on the other player. The explosive bug would incubate for 20 seconds, but HP is 10,000. If the targeted players are attacker class, it would post much problem. But if the targeted players were healer or tank, then it would be a little troublesome.”

Endless Starlight blinked his eyes rapidly and said, “You consider yourself a low attacking class?”

“Hm! Hm!” the rest of them nodded their head.

Zhang Yang shrugged. He had a few tricks up his sleeves like the <Eagle Eye> and the <Cripple Defense> that could ignore 50% defense value after 5 stacks. His damage was not at all low!

“Oh! Hold on to the <Beginner Power Potion>. Only use the potion to fight the bug! Remember! When the boss activates the parasite skill, be sure to find your partner and kill the bug on the other person’s body!” said Zhang Yang. “The only obstacle for this boss is the parasite. If we can overcome this problem, the boss would only be a piece of cake! If any of the bugs exploded, we would not be surviving this round then!”

“Shit! Hey! Kick Starlight out of the party! This guy is the weakest in DPS! Anyone who would be partnering with him would surely die! This guy is the enemy under our nose!” Fatty Han started to make fun of Endless Starlight.

Endless Starlight started to sobbed with tears flowing down his cheek. “Woo...Please Fatty bro! I don’t mean to be that weak!”

“Hey, don’t bully Starlight! He is an honest boy!” said Hundred Shots.

“If he is an honest boy, I am Brad Pit and Zhang Yang is Chuck Norris’s apprentice!”

“Alright! Calm your tits Fatty. I’m starting the fight now! Remember to kill the bugs!” Zhang Yang took out the sword and reminded the party again.

“Yeah! Grandma!” everyone said in unison.

Chapter 168: The Third Boss, Demison

“Look what the cat dragged in! Who are these worms that would intrude my brother’s castle!” said Demison loudly as he stood up. He glanced the party and threw the glass on the floor furiously. “Too bad you’re all just too weak! I would have sent you all to kill my brother! Then I could rule this castle! Oh my! I have slipped it out my little secret! Ho ho ho! Looks like I’ll have to silence you my own way!”

While the boss was giving his opening speech, everyone was stuck in place, unable to do anything until Demison’s speech had ended.

“DIE!” cried Demison as he charged towards the party.

When Zhang Yang regained control of his character, he immediately used <Charge> and met Demison’s attack head on.

“-613!” Normal attack.

<Cripple Defense>

“-161!” <Cripple Defense> damage.

Even though the damage Zhang Yang had just caused wasn’t much, it still angered Demison. As a noble race, how could he let anything land an attack on him! The higher a boss level, the better the A.I system control it would be. Demison growled and threw a

punch to retaliate.

“-2135!”

Zhang Yang had <Block>, but he did not use it to negate the boss' attack! He took the attack head on. This was because he knew that the boss would use a skill that was similar to his own <Destructive Smash>. Not only would the attack be stronger, it also carried a 50% healing reduction with it. The cool down of the boss' skill is 8 seconds! He must reserve <Block> just for that skill alone! If he mistakenly uses <Block> for other attacks instead, he would eventually be inflicted with the healing reduction debuff and Han Ying Xue would not be able to heal him in time!

“Weaklings! Give up already! Surrender to my ultimate power!” Demison's right hand glowed bloody-red and he tackled Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! Demison used <Destructive Claw>!’

<Block>!

Within a span of a millisecond, Zhang Yang had spontaneously activated <Block> and negated the skill. Still, Zhang Yang possessed many other life preserving skills, so in the case where he really took a direct hit or two from the <Destructive Claw> he would have survived. However, prevention is always better than cure.

Once Zhang Yang had attacked the monster, the party began to lay down hell from above. None of them were worried about getting OT! As long as Zhang Yang was the main tank, all would be well.

Before Demison unleashes the explosive bugs, he was but a sitting rock. Besides hurling “stones” at the tank, the rest of the party members was not majorly affected by the boss. Even Han Ying Xue had a relatively leisure role to play. She only needed to make sure that <Regeneration> was always ticking on and throw in the occasional <Brilliant Light>, <Higher Healing>, and other healing spells. She did not even need to use <Holy Shield> once!

95%, 93%, 90%...

Demison suddenly stopped attacking and raised his left and right hands to point at Hundred Shots and Wei Yan Er. “Ah! My children! Explosive Bugs! Time for your meal!”

Shush! Shush!

Two bloody-red hues beamed towards them and entered their bodies.

‘Ding! Player Drizzler had received the effect <Explosive Bug>!’

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots had received the effect <Explosive Bug>!’

To the other players, Hundred Shots and Wei Yan Er had not experienced any changes. But in their own eyes, they could see a red bug growing from their body! The bug had a tag reading <Incubating> and a 20 second countdown timer.

[Explosive Bug] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 46

HP: 10,000

Hundred Shots immediately switched his aim to the bug on Wei Yan Er. He took a [Beginner Power Potion] and activated <Beast Link>, gaining a massive surge of damage power for just a short duration. He shot an arrow and commanded his pet, Storm Wolf to attack together with him. Both the Hunter and his pet shared the same field of vision.

Hundred Shots had completed the level 30 class quest at A level difficulty. The rewards for the class quest was the skill <Beast Link>, which added 75% ranged damage. [Beginner Fire Potion] had provide an extra 20% damage. Both of the bonus damage buffs had turned Hundred Shots into a God Killer for the moment. In just a mere 4 seconds while Wei Yan Er had ran towards him, Hundred Shots had taken away close to 6400 HP of the bug! However, when Wei Yan Er entered beyond his minimum range, he was unable to attack anymore and switched his target back to the boss instead. He let the pet finish the job for him.

These were the perks of a Hunter, or rather, a Beastmaster class! Compared to the other sub class, the Sniper, a Beastmaster had the advantage of having a pet that added DPS. Its attacks were at least 40% of the original attack power of its master! With 16 seconds more for the bug to hatch and explode, Hundred Shots pet had around 400 DPS which was more than enough time to destroy the bug!

Wei Yan Er wielded her axe and continuously slashed at Hundred Shots' chest, dealing a continuous chain of attacks at 1,300+ each. She managed to kill the bug in just 11 seconds! Within that time, Hundred Shots pet had also managed to kill off the bug on Wei Yan Er.

First round's bug removal success.

Half a minute later, Demison HP had dropped by another 10% and triggered the second round of the explosive bugs.

'Ding! Player Endless Starlight had received the effect <Explosive Bug>!'

'Ding! Player Little Snow had received the effect <Explosive Bug>!'

This was just the worst of luck; the boss would actually pick the lowest DPS among the entire party!

Han Ying Xue quickly consumed a bottle of [Beginner Power

Potion].

[Punishment Ray]: Deals 150% Holy damage to a target.

Casting time: 2 seconds.

“-1815!”

Han Ying Xue originally had over then 1000 damage, but with a 20% damage boost from the potion, and the high attack damage from <Punishment Ray>, she could easily destroy the bug under 20 seconds.

After just two shots of <Punishment Ray>, Endless Starlight had reached Han Ying Xue. He knew that he had low damaging power, which was why he had reserved his long cooldown skills for situations like these, since his attacks would not cause any considerate damage to the boss.

“-223!” <Shield Toss>

“-721!” <Strong Hammer>.

“-216!” <Commanding Seal>.

“-725!” Normal attack.

“-216!” <Commanding Seal>.

“-446!” <Justice Bash>.

“-1081!” <Judgement>.

The defender's strongest advantage over the guardian was that all skills depended on MP; meaning that a Defender would be able to unleash all his skills as long as he had enough MP! However, once he has used up all his skills, there is the matter of the skill's cooldown! Just like any main character in any anime out there, once all skills have been thrown out, he would be in a weakened state soon after. A Defender would have to wait for his skill to finish its cool down!

Luckily, the Explosive Bug had 0 Defense and Magic Defense, which was why any job could deal damage at their maximum potential!

The most awkward situation for a Defender was MP problem. A Defender's equipment was mostly just had a little Intelligence bonus, causing their MP to be only just a little. Once all their skills were used, only just one round, all their MP would be drained completely!

This class could recover MP by depending on their skill <Divine Shield>. <Divine Shield> works by absorbing damage and recovers 10% MP. Defender had another skill called <Grace> to recover MP based on HP healed. This allows Defenders to continue their fight

in a battle.

However, since Explosive Bugs are just a sitting duck, it would only take attack without returning any damage! When facing an enemy that would not return attack Defender would not be able to recover their MP! Since the monster would not attack him, <Divine Shield> would not be in effect. And since he had not lost any HP, <Grace> would not be in effect since he would not be receiving any heals!

Once Endless Starlight had used all his skills, he was then faced with a huge problem. He had only left 1/3 of his MP left!

Luckily, he wielded a Level 40 Gray-Silver weapon, dishing out rather high normal attacks. Every time he attacked, he would inflict an additional 30% Holy damage! His DPS was at least around 340. However, to be able to kill of 10,000 HP in 16 seconds was another question!

In just 12 seconds, Han Ying Xue was able destroy the Explosive bug on Endless Starlight! However, the Explosive Bug on her own body was still alive! It had 3,500 HP left!

“Starlight! What are you doing! Kill it already!” Han Ying Xue cried out in concern.

“What’s the situation?! Have you managed to kill the bugs?” asked Zhang Yang. While Han Ying Xue was preoccupied with killing the bugs, Zhang Yang had summoned <Merlinda’s Shadow> to heal him instead.

“The bug on Endless Starlight has been destroyed! But the one on me is still here!” Han Ying Xue knew that it would not help if she got all worked up about it. In the meantime, she turned around and healed Zhang Yang, if Endless Starlight failed to destroy the bug on her, she could still contribute a little more to the party before she dies.

Endless Starlight was even more nervous than she was! The effect of the [Beginner Power Potion] was ending soon, by then, his attacks would be reduced drastically, which would make things even harder to kill!

Zhang Yang immediately noticed Endless Starlight’s MP status and barked out orders. “Hundred Shots, hit Starlight! Bitchy Snow, heal him as he goes!”

Hundred Shots had no idea what Zhang Yang was planning, but his faith towards him was enough to make him obey the order without hesitation. He immediately enabled “friendly fire” and attacked Endless Starlight.

Shiiing!

Han Ying Xue healed Endless Starlight back to full health after he was damaged by Hundred Shots. With <Grace> finally in effect, Endless Starlight had recovered more than 80 MP!

Just like a famished man who was given a warm meal, Endless Starlight smiled widely and cried, “Thanks guys! I really needed

the help!”

Wham!

He cast more skills on the bug. Hundred Shots continued to attack Endless Starlight while Han Ying Xue continued to heal him, giving him the opportunity to recover as much MP as he needed.

Wham! Bam!

Endless Starlight spent all his freshly regained MP into attacking the Explosive Bug!

16 seconds, 17 seconds, 18 seconds, 19 seconds!

3000! 2000! 1000! o!

Endless Starlight managed to kill the bug in the nick of time!

“Oh yeah! Oh yeah! I did it! Did you see that! I did it!” Jumping with immense excitement, Endless Starlight was screaming in celebration as he had “survived” the mental ordeal. The excitement was perhaps even more than actually defeating a boss!

“Haha! Good job!” Zhang Yang laughed. “Since the two lowest damage-dealers in our party could defeat the bugs, I would safely say that this boss is going to be a piece of cake!”

Chapter 169: Rather Spirited Momentum

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu has received the effect <Explosive Bug>!’

‘Ding! Player Frost Night has received the effect <Explosive Bug>!’

The 3rd wave of the Explosive Bugs landed on the two strongest DPS in the party!

Sun Xin Yu turned around immediately and brandishing her blades around, dealing explosive damage to the bug on Zhang Yang. However, her strongest damaging skill was <Rear Attack>. As the name of the skill implied, the skill would only activate when the user was attacking the target’s back! Since these Explosive Bugs did not have a “rear” to begin with, Sun Xin Yu was left with no choice but to rely on <Malign Attack>.

<Malign Attack> is a skill that would only cause instantaneous damage based on the primary weapon, with 100% melee attack. Its damage could not be compared to that of <Rear Attack>. What more, a single attack from a dagger weapon is severely low! Even if Sun Xin Yu’s current primary weapon is a level 40 Gray-Silver tier, her damage was a little over 600!

Luckily the Explosive Bug did not have any Defense value, which allowed even her secondary weapon to inflict substantial damage and to cover the loss of her original destructive power. Because of those reasons however, Sun Xin Yu’s damage power had lost to Zhang Yang. When she finally destroyed the bug, Zhang Yang had

already been attacking the boss for at least 4 seconds!

The prideful Sun Xin Yu could not help but feel helpless. Zhang Yang turned around and made a provoking face that read “I win! You lose!” which only angered her further. She continued her attack on the boss’ back and attacked him, unleashing the rage that had been bottled up inside her.

Demison would cast <Explosive Bug> at every 10% HP bracket. This was truthfully, the toughest part of the boss fight. Fortunately, the team’s weakest pair of DPS could destroy the bugs within the duration span. This would mean that the boss was a piece of cake for the entire party!

70%...40%...10%...

It was just a matter of time now!

“No! I cannot die just yet! I have not yet become the master of the Shadowmoon Castle. I cannot die! I c-can-not d-die...”

The boss fell defeated only after 6 minutes into the battle with the party.

Phew!

Everyone sighed a breath of relief. This was by far the boss that had gave the party a sense of challenge, a fight full of excitement!

Zhang Yang sighed loudly and called out to Wei Yan Er. “Little brat! Go and loot the droppings! I’m logging off to fix my biological problem!”

“Big boss Zhan Yu...you have a biological problem?” asked Endless Starlight quietly.

“HAHAHAHA!” Fatty Han laughed abruptly whilst patting Endless Starlight shoulder furiously with his flabby hands. “That’s right! Little Yang has a severe case of biological problem! What a tragedy! How sad!”

In a non-city non-safe zone area, an additional 20 seconds was required before anyone could log off. Zhang Yang could still hear what those two were talking about and replied furiously. “Hey! I had no problem with that part of my body! F*ck you Fatty! You’d better not say anything---”

Before he could finish his sentence, the 20 second time had completed and Zhang Yang was logged out of the game. He quickly went to the toilet and hastily made his way back into the game. When he entered the game, his character reappeared close to the boss’ dead body.

By then, everyone else was looking at him as if they were looking at a strange experimental product, with a hint of amusement in their face.

“Damn you Fatty! What did you say while I was gone!?” Zhang

Yang screamed at Fatty Han.

Fatty Han shrugged his shoulder off like nothing had happened and said, “Nothing much, if you had nothing to hide, what were you afraid of?”

Motherf*cker. When you say something like that, even the sun would rise from the sea and set in the sky!

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “F*ck it. I’m too lazy to deal with you. Little brat? Time for the loots!”

Wei Yan Er walked over to the body while shaking in fear. She turned her head towards Zhang Yang slowly and said, “H-hey... Noob t-tank. Y-you wouldn’t be a-asking me to...to follow you in your v-van for c-candies right?”

WTF!? What did that f*cked up fatty pig say to this girl?!

Zhang Yang stared angrily at Fatty Han and turned away. “Relax little girl. This handsome man does not have love for flat-chested-petite-lolis!”

“Damn! You actually called yourself handsome! Need I remind you that you have only a slightly above average look!” Wei Yan Er talked back while rolling her eyes at him. “I’m telling you. You better go Korea and have your face fixed a little! If not, you might randomly scare other flora and fauna alike!”

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “Since when could this little girl talk like that?”

Wei Yan Er snickered. “My cousin sister taught me that!”

Han Ying Xue expressed a rather contented expression while crossing her arms below her magnificent breasts, causing them to slightly bounce about.

Wei Yan Er continued joking and went over to the loots.

[Hellheim Boots] (Gray-Silver, Leather Armor)

Defense; +12

Vitality: +48

Strength: +8

Agility: +24

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 40

Everyone rolled for it and Sun Xin Yu won the item.

The next few items were all just Green-Copper grade equipment. The party chose to let Zhang Yang keep them all.

“Damn! We’re strong! We could just defeat the boss in one try! Haha!” said Fatty Han with a rather jubilant expression, self-praising shamelessly. “I really want to just log onto the forum and post our achievement! Let the world know that we, the Lone Desert Smoke could achieve anything, even the First Clear Achievement if we wanted to! Hmph! Let them come, be it One Sword Stroke, they are nothing to our Zhang Yang here!”

Zhang Yang quickly cut in, “That player, One Sword Stroke is really strong though!”

If Zhang Yang had not been reborn anew into this world, One Sword Stroke would undoubtedly be the best tank in the entire of China! His strength and that of his team had earned him the greatest honor and pride in china. Soon, all that stood against him would fall defeated under his achievement!

“I was slow last time...I didn’t had a chance to compete with you back then...but now...heh” Zhang Yang smiled and muttered by himself. “I will be at the peak of it all and wait for you to come challenge me this time!”

The party went up to the fourth floor and last floor of the castle. The structure of the castle remained the same as ever, the only different was the monsters. This time, the monsters were soldiers,

carrying long swords and shield.

[Wolfman Soldier] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 45

HP: 90,000

“A Warrior type monster would basically have <Tornado Cleave> and <Dividing Slash>. Try not to stand in front of the monster and fight, if you have low HP, please move to their backs or sides!”

Zhang Yang took out his sword and used <Charge> and stunned one of the monsters ahead.

The monsters on this floor were also in pairs. When one of them was stunned, the other growled furiously and slashed Zhang Yang.

“-492!”

Zhang Yang slashed the monster but only dealt small, petty damage on it. “Damn. This monster is just the same as I am! A Guardian! His defense is so strong! Perhaps even stronger than mine! It must be more than 400 points. With that passive 20% damage reduction and 90,000 HP, it would be a good bait if I could control this monster to tank a boss!”

When <Charge> stun effect wore off, Zhang Yang cast <Blast Wave> and stunned both the monsters with only “-97!” damage.

Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the party tried their best, using status ailment skills to stun the monster and prevent them from casting <Tornado Cleave>. As such, the party was stuck there for half an hour, advancing slowly. Only then did the party make their way to a large hall. At the far end of the hall, there was a man, fully clad in armor that covered his entire body. Even his face was completely covered in the silver-metal helmet, masking his appearance from the world. Wielding a large two-handed axe in his hands, the man was guarding a large entrance behind him. The only thing that revealed were his blood shot eyes. The red glint that expressed fierce killing intent was cold and frightening.

[Blood Guardian Angelo] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 47

HP: 1,500,000

Note: Master Waller’s loyal follower.

“What pride is there for a Boss to guard an entrance!” Wei Yan Er was frowning.

Zhang Yang laughed. “Once we kill him, the last boss beyond that door would be Master Waller!”

“How do we fight?” Everyone stared at Zhang Yang.

Every time they party would relied on him for the battle plan, Zhang Yang would always pretend to be humble. He faked a cough to get everyone’s attention and began to explain.

“This boss...is easy but not easy. It’s hard, but it’s not hard!”

“What the hell?” Almost everyone rolled their eyes.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “It’s true! I’m not lying! Remember the time I told you to collect some equipment with Vitality bonus? Now it’s the time to use them! The boss has one ulti,..well, technically it’s several skills put together..,”

“First, the boss will randomly pick a player and cast a skill called “Something something Demon”. I can’t remember the skill’s name but the effect of the skill is to create a mirror image of the selected player. The generated mirror image of the player will have around the same attack as the player himself! However, it’s HP was just 10,000 HP. Just like the Explosive Bug from earlier, only the selected player could see and attack the mirror image.”

“If you do not kill the summoned image, it will remain forever there. If the player was picked again the second time, it will generate another image and so on, so forth.”

“The image, or shadow must be killed off as soon as possible since it will disrupt the party attack. The defeated shadow will drop something like a blood fragment that would be used in the finale.”

“After the boss uses the shadow summon skill, it will cast a shield on himself, causing him to be immune to all attacks. He will also recover 3% HP every second for 33 seconds! That means that, unless we break the shield, the boss would recover full HP and we would have to start all over again!”

“The only way to defeat the boss is to kill the summoned image, get the fragment and break the shield on the boss!”

“However! We should not simply use the fragment as soon as we obtain any of them! Once the shield on the boss is broken, it will unleash a skill that would damage everyone in the room by 5000 Fire damage! That was why I had asked you to collect high Vitality equipment!”

Zhang Yang continued, “Now that you’ve listen to what I’ve said, I’ll summarize it all. Kill the shadow, heal everyone to full health, and finally break the shield!”

“Aiyaya...If Endless Starlight was picked, I’m afraid that we would only manage to break the boss’ shield when he has healed by more than 200%!” Fatty Han teased Endless Starlight.

Endless Starlight was rather down during the Explosive Bug

fight. But now that was over and all, Endless Starlight was confident that he could surpass this level as well. “Haha! Just you wait and see!”

“Woah! We got a badass cherry boy over here!” cried Fatty Han.

Everyone changed into their own high Vitality equipment and beefed up themselves. When everyone else was doing just fine, Daffodil Daydream was falling behind the “absolute safe line” Since she had joined the party rather late, the equipment that she had was rather inferior to the rest of the party member. Unlike Endless Starlight that could immediately gained extra 1600 HP just by equipping a new shield, Daffodil Daydream as nowhere near to the safe HP limit. She was so anxious about it that she could start crying.

Han Ying Xue laughed at her reaction and consoled her. “Relax Daffy! When we will break the boss’ shield, I will put a <Holy Shield> on you. The shield could absorb at least 2000 damage! It’s the same as having an extra 2000 HP in hand!”

After listening to Han Ying Xue’s explanation, Daffodil Daydream finally relaxed and wiped her tears away.

“Alright, alright. Prepare to fight! Once we defeat this boss, we would finally face Master Waller!” Zhang Yang unsheathe his sword and cried. “Same old style. Only use the power potion when you need it!”

Chapter 170: Blood Guardian Angelo

Angelo seemed to be a true warrior with a rather dignified look; when Zhang Yang entered his aggro zone, Angelo did not open his mouth to say anything unnecessary and only swung his huge axe at Zhang Yang. The silver, pale metal axe was coated in dried blood on the blade; one could only imagine exactly how many people he has killed, or perhaps drained their blood dry!

‘<Block>!’

Other than the protection of the shield, he had nothing special to offer. His attack power was nothing much, yet it was the only thing that he depended on whenever his shield breaks. He would try to keep his attackers at bay with sheer attacks, capable of pushing healers to heal until they were out of MP! The boss would only use normal attacks on Zhang Yang. There was no need for Zhang Yang to rely on <Block> to survive as he usually did, unless he was up against an ulti.

‘-2123!’

After the second attack only did he manage to damage Zhang Yang. However, the boss had already received 3 stacks of <Cripple Defense> and had his own defense value dropped significantly.

‘<Cripple Defense>!’

‘<Cripple Defense>!’

Completing the maximum 5 layers of <Cripple Defense>, Zhang Yang had rendered the boss to be completely “naked” as he fought him. Every attack was completely disregarding his defense!

Sun Xin Yu and everyone else had surrounded the boss and pushed themselves to attack as fast as they can. Since the boss had other self-defensive measures hidden up his sleeves, they could not afford to drag the battle for long!

99% 97%, 95%... Bit by bit the boss' HP dropped down like an old man walking down the stairs.

“Demon from the abyss! Heed my call and engulf Drizzler's soul!” 10 seconds into the battle, Angelo raised both his hands in the air and activated a skill.

‘Ding! Angelo has used <Demon's Call>!’

Right in front of her, a mirror image character of Drizzler appeared. With a dark hue and a translucent body, the summoned shadow character was a splitting image of her!

[Demonic Shadow] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 41

Once the shadow appeared, the aggro was automatically fixed to Wei Yan Er. However, as the timing would have it, Han Ying Xue had cast a healing spell on Zhang Yang, drawing the aggro away from Wei Yan Er to herself.

Wei Yan Er shouted angrily: “Bastard, don’t run away! Don’t you dare look down on me! I will chop you up into ground meat!” She quickly broke formation from her spot beside the boss and chased after the Demonic Shadow.

In the eyes of everyone, she was inexplicably talking to the air, murderously raising her axe and dashing towards Han Ying Xue.

‘Slash!’

She slashed in Han Ying Xue’s general direction with her axe.

‘-1,328!’

In the meantime, Han Ying Xue screamed and a damage text appeared above her head. She then stared at Wei Yan Er and said, “You little brat! You should hit the shadow, why are you hitting me?”

“No, it was the shadow that slashed you and I’m avenging you! You are my cousin, how could I possibly slash you?!” Wei Yan Er

quickly answered, feeling that she was wrongly blamed!

In the eyes of Wei Yan Er, Demonic Shadow turned around to face her instead of attacking Han Ying Xue. Similarly, Demonic Shadow also slashed towards Wei Yan Er with axe.

‘-1,334!’

2,296!’

One normal strike and one <Tornado Cleave> totaled up to a massive amount, taking off Wei Yan Er’s HP by 3,600!

“Sister, quickly help me!” Wei Yan Er was well aware of her own skills, and <Destructive Smash>, has not been used by Demonic Shadow yet! After she passed the quest at A difficulty, she had a 50% healing reduction effect along with the 150% melee damage of the skill, which was very powerful!

Han Ying Xue had cast <Regeneration> on Wei Yan Er, at the same time, she also cast <Healing Bond> so both of them healed about 1,000 HP, and finally she cast a <Holy Shield> on Wei Yan Er.

‘Damage absorb!’

Demonic Shadow slashed Wei Yan Er again but this time the damage was fully absorbed by <Holy Shield>. However, the 50% healing reduction effect from the attack, <Destructive Smash>, still appeared across Wei Yan Er’s head!

Wei Yan Er already summoned her [Servant: Centuar Guard] and attacked Demonic Shadow together. Hundred Shots and Fatty Han's <Companion Aura> was effective on the servant as well. Although it was only increased 3% damage, it was still worthwhile!

Even though the Demonic Shadow's HP was higher than Wei Yan Er's HP, a peerless healer was standing behind her, so how ever much damage she took from Demonic Shadow would be covered by healing. Ten seconds later, Demonic Shadow turned into a ray of white light and crashed down on the ground. Wei Yan Er quickly picked up a blood-red shiny thorn from Demonic Shadow's corpse.

[Evil Blood Thorn] (Consumable)

Use: Dispel Angelo's <Devil Shield>.

“Little brat, do not immediately use [Evil Blood Thorn] when Angelo is casting <Devil Shield>, wait for demonic Snow to cast a <Holy Shield> on Daffodil Daydream first!” Zhang Yang promptly reminded Wei Yan Er.

“You are such a nag, am I that stupid?” Wei Yan Er pursed her lips.

Another ten seconds later, right after another attack from Angelo, he shouted, “Demon from the abyss, heal me!”

‘Immune!’

A black colored light shield immediately encircled Angelo, and the debuffs from <Destructive Smash> and deadly poison effects appeared across his head were all dispelled. He even gained immunity to all the attacks from Zhang Yang and the gang. Still, Angelo never stopped attacking Zhang Yang and continued hacking away with his axe.

“Ding! Angelo has obtained <Devil Shield>’s effect. Recover 3% HP every second and immune to all damage. Lasts for 33 seconds!”

Han Ying Xue immediately cast a <Holy Shield> on Daffodil Daydream and yelled, “Yan Er, break the shield!”

Wei Yan Er had already taken out the [Evil Blood Thorn] from her inventory and was at the ready. Once after she heard Han Ying Xue giving the order, she promptly targeted Angelo and selected [Evil Blood Thorn].

“Ding! Angelo’s <Devil Shield>’s effect has dispelled!”

‘-4,000!’

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

...

Angelo's shield was broken and scattered into pieces of black colour flames which shot towards Zhang Yang and the gang and huge damage texts floated over all of their heads. Han Ying Xue quickly cast <Holy Prayer> and <Regeneration> on everyone. Fortunately Angelo's melee attacks were not any powerful. While healing the tank, Han Ying Xue also had enough time to recover everyone's HP to full.

Nevertheless, Angelo's HP recovered from 88% to 94% which wasted half their efforts.

Ten seconds later, Angelo used another <Demon's Call> and a mirror image character of Hundred Shots appeared.

Conversely, <Demon's Call> would only clone the shadow of player and not pets, therefore, the attack power from Hunter's shadow would definitely be much lower! Hundred Shots was a Beastmaster and almost half of his attacks came from his pet. So how could the Demonic Shadow defeat Hundred Shots if <Demon's Call> didn't clone Hundred Shots' pet?

Besides, Demonic Shadow's aggro was drawn by Hundred Shots' pet. So, Demonic Shadow was foolishly fighting against Hundred Shots' pet! On the other hand, how could a cornered melee Hunter produce high damage? Thus, Han Ying Xue did not need to be distracted and Hundred Shots defeated the Demonic Shadow easily.

A Beastmaster's pet could share its master's attributes, thus, the stronger its master, the stronger the pet it is! Currently, Hundred Shots had 5,240 HP while his pet, Wind Wolf, had 5,920 HP which was much higher HP than its master!

Han Ying Xue had the previous experience of Angelo's <Devil Shield>'s effect, she casted a <Holy Shield> on Daffodil Daydream five seconds in advance. So, when Angelo used his <Devil Shield>, Han Ying Xue immediately shouted, "Hundred Shots, break the shield!"

'Shoot!'

Angelo only got to recover his HP once before his shield was dispelled again. The shield which broke into pieces caused massive damage to the gang once again!

85%!

It was really hard to fight against Angelo as the gang had clearly reduced 22% of Angelo's HP but Angelo in turn, had abruptly recovered 9% of his HP!

Ten seconds later, right after <Devil Shield> was dispelled, the third <Demon's Call> was used by Angelo once again. This time, a mirror image character of Endless Starlight appeared.

Endless Starlight fought against Demonic Shadow confidently

this time as Demonic Shadow would fight back and he did not need to worry about running out of MP anymore! Luckily, this Demonic Shadow was a clone of Endless Starlight but obviously it did not know how to heal using <Sacred Protection> or <Sacred Heal>. Otherwise, the gang would need to surrender if any Defender, Guardian or healing classes were selected by <Demon's Call>!

In spite of Demonic Shadow's high defense value and most of Endless Starlight's damage being Holy Damage, the damage wasn't affected by defense value! Even so, when Endless Starlight was fighting against Demonic Shadow, Angelo had already used <Devil Shield> for three seconds!

"Starlight, hurry up and throw the thorn!" Han Ying Xue already cast a <Holy Shield> on Daffodil Daydream.

Endless Starlight hurriedly picked up [Evil Blood Thorn] and quickly threw it towards Angelo without aiming carefully.

'Shoot!'

Angelo's <Devil Shield> broken into pieces once again and causing huge damage to everyone. His HP recovered from 74% to 86% which was 1% higher than the second time the shield was broken!

Endless Starlight felt so sorry and guilty. He said, "I'm sorry!"

"If apologizing is so useful then it is pointless to have the police!"

Wei Yan Er gave a short laugh.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “It’s alright, we just need to fight a little bit longer!”

Everyone was clear about usual pattern of Angelo using his skills. Ten seconds after breaking <Devil Shield>, Angelo would use <Demon’s Call> and twenty seconds later, Angelo would use <Devil Shield> once again. Thus, players had only twenty seconds to kill Demonic Shadow and pick up the [Evil Blood Thorn]!

The fourth time of <Demon’s Call>, a mirror image character of Han Ying Yue appeared.

Zhang Yang immediately yelled, “Demon Snow focus and kill the Demonic Shadow, do not bother about me!”

“En!” Han Ying Xue answered Zhang Yang but she still cast <Regeneration> on Zhang Yang before casting a <Holy Shield> on herself. After that, she started to cast <Punishment Ray> on Demonic Shadow.

Demonic Shadow would not know how to use healing skills, so its only attack skill was <Punishment Ray>. Demonic Shadow immediately fought back against Han Ying Xue.

‘-1,812! -1,831! -1,819! -1,823!’

‘Damage absorb!’

‘-542! -1,523! -1,511!’

Although it was the same <Punishment Ray> attack, Han Ying Xue drank a [Beginner Power Potion] just now, so, her attack power had instantly increased by 20%!

However, the disadvantage of being healer class was shown, by the fourth time both of them had cast <Punishment Ray> on each other, Demonic Shadow had about 2,800 remaining HP while Han Ying Xue had only 1,700 HP. If both of them continued casting on each other like that, they would die at the same time!

Luckily, this was Han Ying Xue! She still had an instantaneous healing skill, which was <Mending Prayers>! Even if she never learned <Mending Prayers>, Zhang YanG still had two skills to aid teammates, which were <Sacrifice> and < Vanguard's Aggression>. So, it was unnecessary for Han Ying Xue to worry about being killed!

Han Ying Xue used only twelve seconds to defeat the Demonic Shadow. She immediately picked up [Evil Blood Thorn] and waited for Angelo to use <Devil Shield>.

“Demon from the abyss, heal me!” Angelo shouted loudly and activated <Devil Shield>!

Han Ying Xue cast a <Holy Shield> on Daffodil Daydream and threw the [Evil Blood Thorn] towards Angelo.

‘Shoot! <Demon Shield> had broken!’

Angelo recovered his HP once and back to 78% HP!

“It is really tiring killing this boss!” Fatty Han complained. Even though they successfully break the shield right after Angelo recovered his HP once, the HP recovery was 3% which was also equaled to 45,000 HP!

“Cut the bull sh*t and just fight the boss!” Sun Xin Yu coldly said.

Fatty Han suddenly had a cold sweat and dared not to voice out anymore. But he personally sent a private message to Zhang Yang, “Little Yang, I never thought that you would favor girls with strong personality. You dared keep such a tough girl! This is the first time I’m not envious of you having the luck to be adored by a pretty girl!”

Zhang Yang got speechless and replied, “Cut your bull crap and continue attacking the boss!”

“F*ck, you are really acting like her husband already! Sigh, somebody had hoes before bros, I despise you!”

Because Angelo had HP recovery skills, if the gang could break the shield once Angelo casted <Devil Shield>, then they could reduce about 15% of Angelo’s HP every minute. But if they were unsuccessful in breaking the <Devil Shield> in the beginning,

sometimes Angelo's HP reduction could be much lesser than his HP recovery!

They worked so hard and successfully reduced Angelo's HP to 6% in nine minutes!

They had used such a long time to fight Angelo, that even though Han Ying Xue had her skill costs reduced by 75%, she was at her limit! If it was not due to the fact that she was an expert in MP management, her MP would be totally running out! Still, she had only 7% of her MP remaining.

What was most unfortunate was that <Demon's Call> selected Han Ying Xue this time. After killing Demonic Shadow, her MP was almost depleted and she did not even have enough MP to heal her HP to full!

"Ranged positions stand behind melee and I will use <Vanguard's Aggression>!" Zhang Yang immediately made a decision without hesitation.

Five seconds later, Angelo used <Devil Shield>.

Zhang Yang hurriedly caged everyone into his <Vanguard's Aggression>'s protection barrier, at the same time, he also used <Shield Wall>.

Both Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang had an unspoken bond, and then she immediately threw the [Evil Blood Thorn].

Shoot!

Angelo's shield broken into pieces again, with the effect of <Vanguard's Aggression>, it almost nullified the damage on everyone!

“Demon Snow, don't need to heal anyone and use this few seconds to recover your MP!” Zhang Yang said. He also used the necklace [Heart of Fallen Warrior] and Angelo's damage was instantly reduced to about 500.

In ‘God's Miracle’, Spellcasters would recover their MP by relying on Spirit attribute during combat. But this had to follow the so-called “5 seconds principle” where the Spellcaster needs to stop casting any spells or skills for 5 seconds before the MP recovery that relied on the Spirit attribute would kick in!

Ten seconds later, Han Ying Xue's MP recovered to 7% while Angelo remained at 5% HP. Angelo used another <Demon's Call> and Endless Starlight was selected this time!

“Don't bother about Demonic Shadow, everyone focus and fight against Angelo. If we don't kill him this round, we are going to be annihilated! Drink your Power Potion if it is not in cool down and release all the damage you could to Angelo!” Zhang Yang shouted loudly.

Chapter 171: Fight Against Master Waller

Except for Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu, the rest of the party used their [Beginner Power Potion]s and frantically fought against Angelo!

4%!

3%!

They still left 12 seconds to go before Angelo uses his <Devil Shield>!

2%!

9 seconds!

1%!

6 seconds!

0%!

“Ah!” Angelo roared with anger, his helmet shattered into pieces, revealing a frighteningly ugly face as he crashed down.

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Blood Guardian Angelo.

Obtained 187,550 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

“Yes! We defeated Angelo!” The gang cheered and the atmosphere became lively. They were greatly relieved to escape from death.

“It was really thrilling but it was so exciting as well. Dungeons like these are really interesting!” Zhang Yang laughed and said.

Everyone agreed with what he said, when defeating new bosses of unknown difficulties and circumstances, wasn't that is the joy of playing the game? But only Fatty Han was uninspired and said, “I'd rather that Angelo be easy to defeat. Sigh, Angelo got me so incredibly nervous!”

Wei Yan Er walked over and looted Angelo's corpse. When she saw Angelo's ugly face, she could not help but said, “No wonder this sh*tty boss covered up his face, he's so, so ugly! Noob tank, Angelo knew that he was ugly so he covered up his face, why don't you find a cloth and cover up yours?”

Zhang Yang immediately glared at her and said, “Do I look so ugly to you?”

“Exactly! By looking at your face, I don't need to watch a horror film anytime soon!” Wei Yan Er laughed nonstop.

Zhang Yang felt helpless and sighed, “Little brat, go ahead and loot the corpse!”

Wei Yan Er skipped to the corpse proudly, as if she just won a war.

[Steel Helmet] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +20

Vitality: +96

Strength: +48

Dexterity: +16

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 40

Endless Starlight immediately said, “Heavy armor without Intelligence, I’m not getting involved!”

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “Little brat, let’s roll the dice!”

“I don’t want to roll the dice, you take it. You are still wearing Level 20 set equipment, it looks so lame! You would lose our guild’s

face with such set equipment!” Wei Yan Er shook her head and said.

This little brat! Before they were fighting the fourth boss, Angelo, none of them were willing to move on from their Level 20 Gray-Silver set equipment and now she even dares to sneer at Zhang Yang! Zhang Yang selected request and received the helmet. Since it was difficult to obtain the 5 set equipment effect, he immediately equipped the Level 30 equipment he received previously.

Zhang Yang kept his Level 20 [Brave Glove] and changed all the other pieces of armor and boots to Level 30 Gray-Silver equipment. His HP rocketed up to 7,760! His melee attack was now ranged from 816 – 868 which was slightly higher than previous melee attack which ranged from 813 – 870.

This showed that the 10% damage increase from 5 set equipment effect was actually powerful!

Everyone did not show any interest in the remaining four Green-Copper items, so they directly passed the items to Zhang Yang, knowing that they would share the money equally if the items were sold out! The others would not have minded much even if that wasn't the case. But Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were two money-grubbers, they would not stop bothering Zhang Yang if he didn't share the money.

“Little Yang, after killing the final boss, I'm going to post this on the forum immediately and show it to those who looked down on us!” Fatty Han said it in anger.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “Your dream may not come true today!”

“Is it that hard to defeat old Waller? Aren’t you going to tell me that he is the Yellow-Gold boss?” Fatty Han started to be agitated.

When the rest of the people heard the word “Yellow-Gold boss”, all of their eyes shone and looked at Zhang Yang. The previous four bosses were indeed slowly increasing in level. Angelo’s level was 47, so the level of the final boss, Master Waller, could be 50! Level 50 boss may be a Yellow-Gold boss!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud, shook his head and said, “Unfortunately, Master Waller is a Gray-Silver boss! But, don’t feel disappointed yet, for Master Waller’s value is still very high! This is because among all the bosses in ‘God’s Miracle’, only Master Waller would drop the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order]!”

“Guild Upgrade Order?”

“What is that?”

“Our Lone Desert Smoke is now a Level 1 guild, and if we wanted to expand our guild scale and obtain more functions and features, only by using the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] could we upgrade to Level 2 guild! There will be many advantages such as our current 10% extra EXP obtained will increase to 20%! We could also buy the special mount, Storm and Gale Direwolf, from guild shop. The Member slots of the guild could also hold up to 20,000

players!”

Zhang Yang thought in deep and continued saying, “If we get the first kill of Master Waller, then the chances of dropping the guild upgrade order would be even higher! We will use the first guild upgrade order. If we get additional guild upgrade orders from this boss, we could sell it to other guilds. It will be totally no problem if we sell it at around 300,000 to 400,000 gold coins in the beginning!”

300,000 to 400,000 gold coins! According to the current exchange rate, it would be about 1,000,000 dollars! Even if they divided it by eight, each of them would still obtain about 100,000 dollars!

Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream were not born with a silver spoon or a powerful background, so 100,000 dollars was not a small amount for them and their faces said it all. Although Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan er were rich, both of them were the standard money-grubbers, so both of their eyes shone even brighter. It was only Sun Xin Yu who was uninterested in the money and was indifferent as usual.

“Hurry up! Let’s go!” Wei Yan Er could not wait for it anymore and tugged at Zhang Yang’s arm.

Zhang Yang had wanted to tell them that it was not easy to defeat Master Waller, but now he that saw everyone being so enthusiastic, so he decided not to ruin the high morale.

The gang opened up the door that Angelo watched over and entered the final boss, Master Waller's room.

This is a spherical building, approximately 50 meters in diameter. However, the structure was empty, except for a humongous werewolf dead center. From the look on it, they could see that it had its eye shut tight! Beneath him was a huge hexagonal magic seal, with beams of light blasting out from six edges of the hexagon into his body. Occasionally, the beam of light would change mysteriously!

[Master Waller, The Master of Shadowmoon Castle] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 48

HP: 2,000,000

Master Waller was a [yellow named monster](#)! This meant that Master Waller would only attack a player when it gets attacked!

“... What is the strategy?” Everyone gazed at Zhang Yang once again.

Zhang Yang coughed a while and said: “Do you guys still remember the <Awaken Wolf> from the first boss, Jenny?”

“Yes, increase 10% damage every second which was very terrifying!” All of them agreed.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “Master Waller was a husband of Jenny, he is much stronger than Jenny! According to the official statement, werewolves were a race that disrespected the Wolf God and were abandoned by Wolf God! But this Master Waller is a genius among the werewolves, he could re-connect to Wolf God using magic circles and obtain similarly incredible strength like his ancestors obtained years ago!”

“F*ck, little Yang, this is not a story telling session now! Just tell us what the strategy to defeat the boss is!” Fatty Han could not wait anymore and kept worrying that the server would announce that Imperial Sky has obtained the first clear.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “The backstory and Master Waller’s skills are related, that’s why I need to explain this in detail! In short, Master Waller is blessed by Wolf God, so Master Waller is extremely powerful. Any players below Level 100 would be killed instantly if Master Waller struck anyone under normal conditions! Although Master Waller has obtained Wolf God’s recognition once again, Master Waller has not yet completely become the Wolf God’s representative, he is still in the progress of absorbing Wolf God’s strength! Those are the ray of lights going towards Master Waller!”

“Oh, I get it! We’ll have to interrupt Master Waller from absorbing Wolf God’s strength. We need to weaken him first and then only wipe him out!” Wei Yan Er had finally become smart this time.

Zhang Yang showed an exaggeratedly surprised expression and said, “Ah, little brat you finally figured out the trick? Is that really you?”

“Noob tank!” Wei Yan Er put her arm on her hips and shouted loudly.

Zhang Yang laughed happily and continued elaborating, “The hexagram magic circle appearing on the ground is the source of power for Master Waller. We need to send six persons to block each ray of lights, so that Master Waller’s damage will be reduced to 10%! Those who are blocking the lights, you do not need to stand on the pole where the light is emitted from, you guys just need to block the lights from him.”

“It sounds easy!”

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “The lights will be disconnected once every 20 seconds. 2 seconds later, the lights will re-connect, but the colour of the lights will be changed randomly. The yellow lights emitted previously may be changed into green lights; the green lights emitted previously may even change into red lights! Besides, when each person starts to block the lights, they will have a 30 minutes debuff, for those who block the yellow light at first, ‘yellow source’ debuff will appear across their head; while those who block the green light at first, ‘green source’ debuff will appear across their head and so on! Thus, when you guys going to block the light once again, those who have ‘yellow source’ debuff must block the yellow light and those who have ‘green source’ debuff must block the green light. If any lights are wrongly

paired, then the Wolf God will appear and all of us will be annihilated instantly!”

All of them frowned after listening to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang continued, “So, the six guys in charge of blocking the lights, when you realize that the lights behind you are not being emitted anymore, you must stay away from the path, where the lights emit, at the first instance. Otherwise, if we are unable to pair up with the correct colours of light with the debuff then we will be annihilated immediately. 2 Seconds later after the lights reconnect, we must pair the correct colours of light with the right debuff status and block the light as soon as you can! Master Waller’s strength will recover back to normal when any rays of the light irradiate him for 2 seconds, that would be our end!”

“So, with the six guys successfully blocking the lights by matching the correct colours of lights with debuffs, we would win! We could still fail if any rays of light irradiate the boss!”

“On the other hand, those who are blocking the lights will be dying immediately if they are not irradiating by the light for 5 seconds! Even if we make extra two persons to match the correct colours of light, it will be still pointless to help those who are blocking the lights!”

“Besides that, Master Waller will be in a fixed position, not moving around as he will need to absorb Wolf God’s strength! But guys, do not think that it will be easy to fight against him! If there is nobody within his melee range, he will then cast AoE spells, so the ending is still the same, complete annihilation!”

Yellow name monster will not attack a player. The monster will only attack when it received an attack.

Chapter 172: Practice And Collaborate

“Master Waller has only one skill which is <Shadow Slash>. He will use it once every 30 seconds towards the player who holds the highest aggro and the target next to that player. It can cause 12,000 of physical damage in total. It cannot be dodged or evaded, so Endless Starlight and I must stand next to Master Waller to deal the damage! It means that six of you will need to complete the task of blocking the lights. Then Endless Starlight and I will be responsible for dealing the damage from Master Waller!”

“Before starting this, six of you choose your positions and stand behind it. When the battle starts, you guys move forward and block the lights. Ranged attackers can attack the boss from their positions but for melee attackers like Frost Night and little brat; you guys need to move along the pathway where the lights are being emitted towards the boss! You guys must also keep your distance from me, if any of you stands any nearer to me compared to Endless Starlight, you guys will probably need to take the damage of <Shadow Slash> that was meant for Endless Starlight! 6,000 of physical damage would absolutely kill you guys.”

Zhang Yang had to explain everything in detail as a lot of teams were actually forced to surrender to this boss in his previous life as they failed to pull off such a perfectly coordinated strategy!

“It might just be a ray of light, but you guys must not crouch beneath those rays of light as that also can be considered as blocking the lights! So, when the lights stop emitting, those who are blocking the lights, must step backwards immediately and move around the outer circle to the new position!”

Zhang Yang spoke until his mouth was feeling dry and he asked, “Do you guys understand now?”

“It’s easy enough right, do not pass through the light and move around the outer layer to look for new positions!” Wei Yan Er clapped her hands and said.

“That’s right, this is what I meant just now!” Zhang Yang nodded and continued, “But, this has to be done by six persons not one person. After the lights re-connect, you guys have only 2 seconds to look for the new position and reach it!”

“There’s no point in explaining any further, it is better that we try to fight him once. Let’s start the battle first!” Zhang Yang pulled out his Lover's Sword, “Everyone, get into position! Choose a pole and step backwards. Master Waller is a yellow named monster and he will not attack us automatically! Starlight, we will approach Master Waller together. Remember, do not stand on any pathway of the light emissions. We must always remain in the same position from the beginning of the battle!”

“Roger that!” Endless Starlight exaggeratedly made a military salute.

Eight of them went into the positions respectively. Han Ying Xue and the rest chose each corner of hexagram magic circle, while Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight stood next to Master Waller. Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight also paid attention to avoid the direction where the lights were emitted from.

“Ready, we are going to start!” Zhang Yang said, “I will count to three, and those who are blocking the light will need to step forward together! Pay attention, Master Waller will start attacking if any of the are lights being blocked! So, you guys must step forward consistently and in tandem!”

“One!”

“Two!”

“Three!”

Han Ying Xue and the five of them stepped forward at the same time and each of them blocked a ray of light respectively.

“Hummm, who is blocking me from absorbing the strength?” Master Waller abruptly opened his eyes and a pair of yellow-green eyes glowing supernaturally were exposed, “Wretches, I will kill all of you who are disrupting the sacred ceremony!”

He raised his huge and rough wolf paws and struck Zhang Yang’s chest.

‘<Block>!’

Zhang Yang raised his shield and successfully blocked Master Waller’s attack.

‘-1,680!’

Master Waller continue attacked Zhang Yang with his other wolf paw.

Master Waller was similar to Thief monsters using two one-handed weapons. He attacked with both of his hands, thus, the frequency or rate of attack was extremely high. However, a single attack was not particularly damaging and basically, it was just about 2,500 points of basic damage. Master Waller swung his wolf paws once every 2.5 seconds, leading to 8 attacks within 10 seconds; and two of the attacks could be blocked. The remaining DPS would be 1,000 and because of this, Han Ying Xue could heal them easily.

“I will kill all of you, you despicable vermin!” Master Waller suddenly lifted up both of his wolf paws, a dazzling light surged out!

“Ding! Master Waller has used <Shadow Slash>!”

‘-4,480!’

‘-4,760!’

Damage texts appeared across both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight’s head.

Luckily, Zhang Yang had 7,760 HP currently, excluding the 1,682 points of HP that he lost from Master Waller's previous attacks, after receiving damage from <Shadow Slash>, he retained about 1,500 HP. After <Regeneration> was initiated once, Zhang Yang still could take another direct hit from Master Waller!

Han Ying Xue hurriedly cast a <Holy Shield> on Zhang Yang and then used <Regeneration> on Endless Starlight to let him heal slowly because Master Waller would use <Shadow Slash> again after 30 seconds, so two ticks of <Regeneration> could actually recover Endless Starlight's HP to full. Thus, Han Ying Xue put in all her effort to heal Zhang Yang as much as possible.

The combat had already carried on 20 seconds and the lights emitted from hexagram magic circle were disconnected!

Han Ying Xue, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han and Daffodil Daydream simply stepped a step backwards and continue attacking and healing. Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er needed to run backwards a few steps before they could reach the outer circle of hexagram magic circle.

2 Seconds later, the six rays of different colours of light emitted at the same time but the positions were totally different with previous emission. So, the six of them immediately started running for their new positions!

“Ah, Fatty, out of my way!”

“Cousin, you're running to the wrong direction!”

“Daffodil Daydream, let me go first!”

“ ... ”

A moment of noise and the scene was total chaos.

Two seconds passed.

Six rays of light emitted to Master Waller!

“Ding! Master Waller has restored his strength!”

‘-19,682!’

‘-20,914!’

Master Waller only used his paws and sent Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight directly back to the graveyard! Then, he started to cast a spell which only took 2 seconds to complete.

‘-50,000!’

‘-50,000!’

‘-50,000!’

...

Humongous damage texts appeared across everyone's heads, as Han Ying Xue and the rest were also sent to graveyard after Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight.

Complete annihilation!

"Cousin, you are so stupid! Pervert fatty, you are also dumb! Hundred Shots is even dumber! Sister Daffodil, sigh!" Wei Yan Er was in a foul mood, she shrugged and said, "Except for sister Sun and I, the rest of the four people were so stupid!"

"Little brat!" Han Ying Xue glared at Wei Yan Er, her temper at boiling point!

"It's the truth, you guys are really stupid!" Wei Yan Er continued despising them.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "No hurries, an initial period of running in is required for a perfect collaboration, it will slowly establish our unspoken form of teamwork!"

All of them ran back, entered dungeon, resurrected, recovered their conditions and entered Master Waller's room once again.

10-man dungeons renewed once every two days, so the monsters

and the other four bosses in the dungeon would re-spawn tomorrow night at 12.00 AM.

Eight of them returned to their positions and initiated the battle.

20 Seconds later, Master Waller showed his divine strength once again and the team annihilated instantly.

They ran back, resurrected and started the battle again.

20 seconds later, they were annihilated the third time.

After the team had been annihilated three times continuously, the team morale reduced dramatically.

After another resurrection, Zhang Yang smiled and said, “What’s wrong, you guys giving up so easily after three defeats?”

All of them remained silent.

“Okay, don’t initiate the battle first and just train on our position switching at the outer circle! The colours of the lights will still change every 20 seconds, the six of you, get into position first and remember the colours of the lights you guys block at the first round. You guys will need to look for the new position when the colours of the light change after 20 seconds, and when we manage this 20 times consecutively, then only will we initiate the battle! Otherwise, we simply don’t want to give away repair fees!”

In fact, Zhang Yang was already prepared for this, but everyone was so enthusiastic at the beginning, so he dared not ruin the team's morale. But now with everyone mellowed down, all of them understood why he made them practice.

Zhang Yang thought carefully, if they could learn well the position switching within three days, it would be considered pretty fast! As other team did not know Master Waller's skills, they might need about two to three days to discover a strategy to fight against Master Waller. Additionally, they needed to train for position switching. Therefore, they actually needed at least ten days or up to half a month to defeat the final boss!

They had killing the previous four bosses smoothly and they had also killed the Yellow-Gold boss in Centaur Palace, and thus, their confidence levels were way up high, and they thought they could defeat Master Waller without a hitch as well. But now, as they face a setback, they would be sober enough to obediently train in their position switching.

One hour, two hours and three hours!

Han Ying Xue and the rest slowly familiarized themselves with position switching, they were able to successfully switch the positions continuously for seven to eight times without mistakes. But this was still not enough to defeat the boss. According to team's dealing damage capability and position switching every 20 seconds, they needed at least 400 seconds to defeat Master Waller. This meant that they must successfully do position switching for 20 times continuously without mistakes!

It reached 12.00 AM midnight, and Zhang Yang stopped them from training and said, “Alright, everyone has put in a lot of effort, but there’s no point cramming for it! We’ll stop here for today, everyone should log out from the game and go to rest. We shall continue tomorrow night!”

“But, I’m so excited. I don’t wanna sleep yet!” Wei Yan Er still very energetic.

Zhang Yang smiled and said: “Little brat, you still want to play truant? If you can’t wake up tomorrow morning, are you going to apply for leave again? Besides, Hundred Shots and Starlight have work tomorrow, right?”

“Yes!” The two of them nodded their heads.

“Ah! So frustrating!” Wei Yan Er yawned, “Cousin, let’s go to bed! Wrinkles appear easily if we sleep late, that’ll be horrible!”

All of them tore [Teleportation Scroll]. Suddenly, they were surrounded by white lights and returned to White Jade Castle.

Fatty Han anxiously said, “Little Yang, I’m going to log out as well! I have to hurry up and post the screenshots of all the bosses that we defeated on the forum to show them our capabilities and see what they’ll have to say this time!”

Zhang Yang first went to the Little Merchandize Shop and stored

all the equipment in his inventory to warehouse. Then, he made a few stacks of [Beginner Power Potion] and stored them all in warehouse as well. He finally summoned his war horse and rode it, heading towards the Item Identifier to identify the [Steel Helmet] he was wearing.

After paying 40 gold coins, a ray of silver light flashed and [Steel Helmet] revealed its real attributes.

[Steel Helmet] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +20

Vitality: +96

Strength: +48

Dexterity: +16

<Level 1 Socket>

<Level 1 Socket>

Level Requirement: 40

Damn it, 40 gold coins for two Sockets! Besides, adding Gemstones also needed more money, this developer was really good at ripping players off!

Zhang Yang went to Gem Shop once again and bought two [Level 1 Vitality Gemstones] to insert them in his helmet. Under the boost of his Vitality Aura, Zhang Yang's HP reached 7,960.

Chapter 173: Forum War Of Words

The night passed uneventfully. Zhang Yang completed his training exercises early the next morning, before buying his take-away breakfast and logging on to the official forum. He was curious and had decided to observe the the war happening over the forum while eating his food.

Fatty Han had gone ahead and posted under the battle report category under his in-game nickname 'Slim and Handsome', boasting about how they conquered the first 4 bosses at the castle interior along with some screenshots. He then directed his sharpened tongue towards the 5th boss, Master Waller, bragging that Lone Desert Smoke would only require 2 days tops, to acquire the final dungeon's first clear title!

The rather bold declaration had provoked a number of players into accusing them of arrogance! However, it also roused up the cries of many other players who were in support of Lone Desert Smoke, and one after another, they posted their praises and encouragement on the comment section below. Many fans of Lone Desert Smoke were declaring war to the players who once belittled Lone Desert Smoke before, "Do you see it now? This is the Lone Desert Smoke that we supported, without the slightest effort, they had taken down 4 bosses in the castle interior, in just one night!

The current outcome was a big fat slap on the faces of those who underestimated the Lone Desert Smoke. Even the King of Prediction, Martian Homeland edited his post on the battle report category immediately, praising Zhang Yang and his gang as if he was trying to lift them above the moon, saying that they are the real deal, despite having started late, they were progressing like a

hot knife cutting through butter, demonstrating their pure, terrifying strength!

By comparison, even though the Imperial Sky guild which One Sword Stroke belonged to was also at the progress of 4/5, but they had spent around 5 days exploring the dungeon! At that instance, both parties were standing right before the final boss. According to the regular pattern of the dungeons, the final boss would certainly be the most difficult challenge there ever was. Although the stronger Lone Desert Smoke started out one day after Imperial Sky, their chances of winning instead were so much higher!

Because a simple boss required about 2 days to pass, Imperial Sky would be one day ahead, and they probably could instantly secure the first clear for Master Waller! But with the boss being so much more difficult to handle, it would require about 4 to 5 days, or maybe even 7 or 8 days to unlock new areas, therefore the advantage of being ahead no long mattered!

After praising Lone Desert Smoke enthusiastically, Martian Homeland exclaimed for that the competition for the First Clear of the dungeons would become more unpredictable compared to the previous times. Where uncertainties lie, the competition is bound to be fierce! It would definitely far be more glorious as the small party of the Lone Desert Smoke who appeared out of nowhere had crushed all doubts about them!

He also tried to butter up One Sword Stroke and Imperial Sky, encouraging them to keep up with their good efforts, even if they lose to the Lone Desert Smoke in this attempt of acquiring the first clear title, they would still have revealed to all players in the whole

of China that there were strong parties on equal standing as Lone Desert Smoke!

With this post out in the public, Martian Homeland had stirred up a fierce argument among the players, with part of them supporting Imperial Sky, while others supported Lone Desert Smoke, splitting them into half and starting a war of words on the forum!

Zhang Yang could not help himself but smile, this was probably because people would say, 'love well, whip well'! No matter the winner at the end of it, even if it did not concern the players at all, everyone had a team as their favourite, just like the Olympic games, who would not wish to see their own country winning over a few more gold medals than the others?

After bagging up his emotions, Zhang Yang went online again. However, it was just Fatty Han, Han Ying Xue and him logged in today. Wei Yan Er had to go to school while the rest of the four members had to go to work.

'Beep' the voice communication device suddenly beeped, but it was a call coming from Perfumed Water. She was a fair Priest from Crimson Rage, also happening to be one of the core players in the guild. Ever since Zhang Yang had assisted them in slaying Chalvos the King of the Mountain Giant, this damned sister had passionately pushed Zhang Yang into adding her as his favourite friend.

"Hey handsome Zhan Yu, do you have any idea about how long I waited for you? You must take responsibility!" As soon as the communication channel was connected, the soft and sweet voice of

Perfumed Water came right out from the device.

Zhang Yang felt a chill, as he replied, “Come on Sis Water, don’t talk like there’s something going on between us, alright? You and I are not an item! Spit it out, why were you looking for me?”

“Hmph, so cold, rejecting the old and craving for the new!”

Zhang Yang burst into laughter for a bit, and then he said “Silly girl, when did you ever become my girl before?”

“Alright, jokes aside!” Perfumed Water changed her tone and said, “By the order of milady Snow Seeker, I am hereby consulting you concerning strategies for clearing the bosses in area number 3 and area number 4!”

Are you kidding me? Zhang Yang wondered and asked, “Why didn’t she ask me that herself?” Although it was possible to predict the skills of the bosses in normal mode and hard mode, the damage output of the bosses differed in different modes, so sometimes it would be futile to use the same tactics on them. There was no doubt that seeking advise on the strategies for clearing dungeons from players who had completed the death mode was the simplest solution.

Perfumed Water giggled, and she said, “Milady Snow Seeker is a shy person, she cannot stand begging others. Come on, don’t be stingy. You guys have already cleared the boss stage, giving us a small piece of advice will not rob you of your first clear achievement!”

Zhang Yang gave it a thought, and said, “Fine, I can give you the strategy, 100,000 gold for a boss, cheap and fair!”

“Wuwuwu, Zhan Yu, how can you be so mean to talk about money? 100,000 gold.... That’s a solid 800,000 dollars for only 2 bosses! Fine! I am selling myself to you then!”

“I’m not taking you, money only!”

“Come on, don’t reject me just yet! I can cook and clean the house during the day, and warm your bed during the night for you! A gentle and caring girl like me is impossible to find out there!” Perfumed Water used her best effort to sell herself high.

As expected, this woman is dirty and bold, a little teasing from her will drag you down straight to hell when confronting her verbally!

So, Zhang Yang smiled and said, “If I am to take you in, my wife would force me to kneel on the washing board everyday!”

“What are you so afraid of then? I can be your mistress! You men are professionals in keeping ‘the red flag’ (wife) standing in the house, with ‘colorful flags’ (mistress(s)) fluttering outside!”

“..... Are you here to get some strategies or to sell yourself high?”

“Huh? The blame is on you! You made me forgot my main purpose!” without any pause, Perfumed Water remorselessly put the blame on Zhang Yang. “Come on, aren’t we all allies? Alliances are supposed to help each other out right? No money should be involved, money corrosive to relationships! It’s also no big deal for me to sell out some private information about Milady Snow Seeker to you!”

“No thanks, I am totally out of the league to get your ‘Milady Snow Seeker’, just get your notepad ready, I am going to brief you on the strategies in taking down the 2 bosses.”

“OH YEAH!” the cheering of Perfumed Water instantly came from the other side of the communication device. “Since you kept your word and all, I should be returning you the favor. Our Snow Seeker is currently divorced, left without child, and is definitely very lonely and empty at the moment. Now is the best time to thrust yourself into her life!”

“Oh yea, please don’t tell her that I told you this! That’s all, bye!” Perfumed Water ended the communication straight.

Zhang Yang was not bothered about giving the strategies to Crimson Rage, and what Perfumed Water mentioned earlier was true, the Crimson Rage did not pose any threat to them for them in acquiring the first clear title for the dungeon. Furthermore, since both of them were alliances, they did have the obligation to help out each other, so they had decided to start with the Lone Desert Smoke.

However, the idea of selling these strategies out for some money

had put Zhang Yang down a rather skewed mindset.

Being free all along the way, Zhang Yang regrouped with Han Ying Xue and Fatty Han, and together they departed for the 1st floor of the Centaur Palace to grind for a bit.

Although 3 of them were grinding a little bit slower than they would as a full party, fewer players also meant more experience points for each of them! Other players usually took about 5 days to level up once, but Zhang Yang and the gang only took one day to receive the flash of golden light across their body, a level up!

Zhang Yang was currently at level 42 while Fatty Han and Han Ying Xue were both at level 43!

For the current top 20 level in the White Jade City, the highest level achieved is level 44, and the lowest level achieved is level 42. As Zhang Yang had only stepped into level 42, he was not on the list yet, but Fatty Han and Han Ying Xue had fulfilled the requirement to be on the list, securing the 8th and the 10th place respectively.

Fatty Han was joyful at that instant, preparing himself to work harder to climb up to the 1st spot on the list. Just as he was preparing to challenge the list of the China Region, he was pulled back to the main city by Zhang Yang ----- it was almost 6:30pm, they should be prepared to explore the Waller Dungeon after dinner.

Just before logging into the game, Zhang Yang went to the

official forum again and found a surprising notice, a challenge issued by Imperial Sky!

This notice was published by one of the higher rank officer of the Imperial Sky, with the identity and ranking officially verified, under the in-game 'authentic name', Mountain Cleaver. He issued a challenge towards the Lone Desert Smoke on behalf of the Imperial Sky to see which guild would take down Waller and acquire the first clear of the castle interior dungeon before the other does!

Mountain Cleaver were full of confidence, he also placed a voting option for players to pick their side.

The debate on who was the stronger between the Lone Desert Smoke and the Imperial Sky on the forum had been incredibly intense, and now, with this challenge invitation sent by the Mountain Cleaver, the players are hyped to the limit! Countless players had replied and voted for the guilds that they supported.

Currently, Lone Desert Smoke held the lead, reaching a rate of 57%.

However, Zhang Yang responded with a sneer, knowing that no matter the outcome of the challenge, Imperial Sky would be earning enough popularity by stepping over the Lone Desert Smoke if they won! If they lose, there will be nothing to lose. They basically belong to the stronger category, plus, the first few titles of first clear had been taken by the Lone Desert Smoke, so it would not be unexpected for them to lose.

How about victory? It would be even better for them to be victorious, stepping over the dead body of Lone Desert Smoke to secure the throne of the strongest dungeon team in the whole China Region!

But the unstoppable train had already started, no matter what Zhang Yang does, the Imperial Sky had successfully shaped their own image as one being equivalent to Lone Desert Smoke, they had called dips on that claim!

If that's the case! Zhang Yang logged in the forum with his in-game name and sent a post with only one word on it, 'Accepted!'

Luckily the official forum did not have rules that required 15 words to issue a notice. This simple yet powerful post was instantly moved to the top and being highlighted by the forum administrator. Within just a few minutes, the post attracted tens of thousands of clicks and thousands of replies!

The fans of 'Zhan Yu' were hyped up, they all cheered for Zhang Yang on the post, it was like a complete detonation of words all over the forum.

It was 7:30pm, all gang members had arrived, so once again, the gang stepped into the Shadowmoon Castle : Castle Interior.

On their way straight to the boss stage, Zhang Yang informed the gang about the challenge notice from Imperial Sky. Han Ying Xue and the gang were all pumped with the will to fight, fiercely practicing their formation and moves, while Zhang Yang and

Endless Starlight were casually talking to each other.

But, a guy with a head full of women was obviously not on the same page as Zhang Yang, as he was bombarded with female bust, hip theory to the point that he rolled his eyes backwards entirely. He could not stand it anymore, so he rubbed the bandages at his side.

Another 2 hours had passed, Han Ying Er and the gang were almost done with the training at last. Zhang Yang had decided to challenge the dungeon once, because he knew, it will be futile with a lot of practices alone, actual combat was the best way to find out the results of their training.

“Huh? Who dares to interfere me while I am absorbing energy?”

Following by the boss's introductory saying, the battle had finally begun.

20 seconds later, the critical moment, of the boss using the <Shift of Light Rotation> formation has begun.

Han Ying Xue and the gang swiftly retreated back by the edge of the hexagram and when the lights were resurfacing, they instantly ran to their own positions.

1 second, 2 seconds!

All lights were blocked by them, and no one had made any

mistakes!

The battle continued, after 40 seconds, the second <Shift of Light Rotation> had began. It was alright, none of them made any mistake as well!

“Alright, everyone maintain your pace, the first clear title is about to be ours!” Zhang Yang encouraged the gang.

“Noob tank, that’s easy for you to say, why don’t you switch with me and have a taste of this!” Wei Yan Er grumbled.

Actually, the most relaxed players among them at the moment were Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight. Zhang Yang only needed to maintain the aggro values, and Endless Starlight was even more relaxed because all he had to do was to share the damages received from the boss!

“Hahaha!” Zhang Yang burst into laughter for a bit and said, “It was I who always had to keep the boss at bay, it’s always been tiring! Now every one of you will have a taste of what I had to go through those days back!”

“Piss off!” Wei Yan Er cried loudly.

60 seconds..... 120 seconds..... 180 seconds.....

The longer they were held in the battle, the more stressful they tend to get, and it would be more likely that they would make a

mistake!

During the 13th <Shift of Light Rotation>, finally, there was an error in the collaboration among Han Ying Xue and the gang. Fatty Han ran into a red light carrying a negative effect called <Blue Source>!

Instantly, a gigantic wolf head appeared out of the void right from the above of the boss stage, with indescribable dread, it swiped the stage with only it's eyes and boom! A damage output of '-1000000' appeared on everyone. The whole team was instantly wiped out!

“Ashes to ashes, dust to dust!” The wolf head then vanished into the void again immediately, disappearing and never to be seen again after that.

But the gang managed to put a lock it before it vanished, they wanted to see what exactly is this wolf god thing.

[God of Wolf] (Celestial, Beast)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Everyone felt that they had died for nothing, one by one they

released their souls and returned to the cemetery to report in.

“Brother Yang, hunters can tame beasts, so can they tame this God of Wolf?” both eyes of Fatty Han were shining brightly, having thoughts of capturing the Celestial boss as a pet, any bosses they encounter in the future, close to the gate of their territories, he can just release his.... wolf to settle everything!

“Wretched fatty, in your dreams, if you can get a Celestial boss as your pet, what about the other players? Do they still have anything left to play for?” Wei Yan Er shot a straight and sharp arrow at Fatty Han from her tongue.

Zhang Yang gave it a thought and asked, “Theoretically, a hunter can have the monster as a pet as long as the monster is under the beast category. But Fatty Han, what are the criteria for taming a pet?”

“One must be acquire the first aggro of the taming target, and guide the taming spell for 30 seconds. Any attack during this period of time will immediately interrupt the taming spell and put it to a stop. The higher the level of taming target, the lower the success rate of taming the target.” Fatty Han immediately dug out the description of the skill and read it out loud.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “So do you have any idea on how to be the first aggro of a Celestial boss and survive for 30 seconds long?”

“It seems impossible!”

“Furthermore, even if you succeeded in keeping a Celestial boss as your pet, the standard will decrease a lot when it reaches the hands of the players! Just like taming an elite beast as a pet, will the HP and attack of the pet be the same as it was before it was being tamed?”

“No it will not!” Fatty Han mellowed down a little bit.

Chapter 174: Take down

“Haiya -----” Fatty Han sighed dejectedly and said, “Excited over nothing!”

“Alright, let’s pick up our corpses and go!” Zhang Yang smiled and said, “I have issued a very clear notice with only one word - ‘Accepted’, so you guys won’t leave me alone to be embarrassed, right?”

“Serves you right!” Wei Yan Er turned towards Zhang Yang and stuck out her tongue at him.

The gang went back into the dungeon and revived. After replenishing their statuses, they activated their aura skills immediately. If this act did not become a habit for them, they will easily forget to activate their aura skills every time they are in combat. Although a boost of 2%, 4% of did not seem like much, when the players’ basic properties are higher, the boost will still be very significant.

In Zhang Yang’s case, without activating his <Vitality Aura>, he only has 7720HP, but after activating it, he will have 8030HP. That is a total boost of 310 HP to the players!

After everyone got in their assigned position, under the instruction of Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and the gang, all 6 of them, moved one step forward and triggered the boss battle.

“Huh? Who dares to interfere me while I am absorbing energy?”

Master Waller spoke a line that now sounded familiar. With both eyes opened and a roar full of rage, he instantly swung his big bad claw and slashed at Zhang Yang.

<Block!>

Zhang Yang immediately fought back, stacking 5 layers of <Cripple Defense> and unleashed a flurry of attacks, doing what he does best. The faster they struck, the lesser times they were required to move, undoubtedly decreasing the difficulty of the battle!

20 seconds had passed, the first <Shift of Light Rotation>.

40 seconds had passed, the second <Shift of Light Rotation>.

60 seconds had passed.....

95%, 90%, 85%..... the HP amount of Master Waller was depleting at a slow rate! Firstly, it must be due to his overly high HP amount. Secondly, the gang had to move multiple times after awhile, having no opportunity to comfortably unleash their damage output.

After countless hours practicing, Han Ying Xue and the others had mastered the movement quite well, and their cooperation was so much better. Hitting into each other, blocking each others' ways, those are phenomenon that will not happen again, ever!

60%, the entire team got wiped out.

Next attempt!

53%, the entire team got wiped out again.

Another attempt!

45%, the entire team got wiped out..... 34%, the entire team got wiped out..... 22%, the entire team

The gang had lost count of how many times, 6 or 7 times, have they been wiped out. But no one was frustrated by that, instead, they were burning with the will to fight! Because every time they were wiped out, bit by bit they progressed, and they were getting closer and closer to empty down the HP of the boss!

8%, the entire team got wiped out! 5%, the entire team got wiped out! 3%, the entire team got wiped out! 4%, the entire team got wiped out!

Having pushing themselves to deplete the HP of the boss down to only within 10%, the gang were starting to become impulsively greedy. After a few attempts of being wiped out when the HP of the boss were very low, they were getting frustrated!

So Zhang Yang immediately shouted to get their attention, “Let’s go back to the city to repair our equipment, and then we shall be back, and we shall prevail!”

Having been wiped out for almost a dozen times, their equipment were all in red letters, wearing those equipment on their body was basically useless as the equipment had no effect at all before repair.

So the gang quickly tore their own teleportation scrolls and headed back straight to the city, where they found themselves the blacksmith to repair their equipment. Afterwards, they headed straight back to to dungeon.

This trip took them about half an hour, Zhang Yang could not help himself but sympathized, them, saying, “It’s such a pity that Hundred Shots haven’t be able to learn <Repairment Robot>, if he did, we could have place a Repairment Robot in the dungeon and save us the trip of getting back and forth for our equipment repair.”

“Zhan Yu, where can I learn this <Repairment Robot>?” Hundred Shots asked.

“Level 50 Dungeon, the Poison Fireland. There is a possibility that the blueprint of the <Repairment Robot> will be dropped by slaying the final boss! But it requires a professional level of an engineer, can you learn it?”

“Not now, but I am still about half a month away from reaching level 50, and my current proficiency is at advanced level with 328 points. I will definitely reach full points before I reach level 50!”

Talking all the way through their journey, Zhang Yang and the

gang had reentered the dungeon and stood in front of Master Waller.

Looking at the time, Zhang Yang told the gang, “ This will be our final chance today! It’s about to be 12 am, the dungeon will be refreshed, by then, we will have to repeat the whole dungeon, battling the four bosses and clearing those annoying creeps and monsters! So, this time we -----”

“We must prevail!” The gang cried together, their morale soaring in desperation!

“Very well, in position!”

The gang went straight to their own positions and stood readily, as this would be their last attempt of the day, and if they failed, they will have to repeat everything on the next day! No one can accept that kind of outcome!

“Huh? Who dares to interfere me while I am absorbing energy?” the loathed dialogue spoken by Master Waller sparked the battle.

90%..... 60%..... 30%.....

With their proficient cooperation, movement between positions, and the consecutively successful blocks, Waller’s HP was decreasing gradually.

10%!

Again, it was the moment of life and death! Zhang Yang and the gang had failed at the very last moment multiple times!

“Keep it up, steady, steady!” Zhang Yang was not pressured at all, because he knew, all he had to do was to focus on slashing the boss with all his might, slashing away Waller’s large amount of HP with his sword, one swing after another!

8%..... 4%..... 2%!

The light around suddenly dimmed.

“Don’t rush yourselves, a 4-second of time is not enough to take down a 390000 HP. Fall back and keep your distance. We just need to do this one more round!” Zhang Yang quickly shouted, as he was worried that someone would really went over their head and go all out, leaving their own post.

Han Ying Xue and the others retreated backwards, everyone was nervous from head to toe, because this was their one attempt that was nearest to winning the battle!

2 seconds later, the 6 points of the lights on the hexagram started to flash up.

Moving position! Block!

Sun Xing Yu, in position! Wei Yan Er, in position! Hundred Shots, in position! Daffodil Daydream, in position! Han Ying Xue, in position! Fatty Han..... sun of the beach, he went to the wrong direction!

Zhang Yang immediately moved his body and blocked the last orange beam of light that shot out!

Made it!

1%!

0%!

“I am the son of the god of the wolf, the leader of the wolves, I should be the one who conquer the world! No! No! NO -----” Master Waller gave out a thunderous roar, raising his claws towards the sky and howled, then he unwillingly turned into a stream of white light. A stream of gold coins poured out like pillars of gold onto the ground, piling up into a mountain of gold!

“Ding! You and your team have slayed Master Waller, you have acquired 250050 experience points (50 points for team effort)!”

“Ding! You and your team has acquired the Shadowmoon Castle: Castle Interior (Death Mode) First Clear Title, as the leader of the party, please key in the name of your party. Your name will be published on the list of the First Clear title, allowing the world to praise you!”

“We made it!”

Everyone was cheering very hard. Even though Waller was not the highest level among the bosses they have slayed before, but it was undoubtedly the most difficult boss they had encounter in their whole gaming experience! Before this, none of them had ever put in so much time and effort in training!

Their emotions that were contained within them for the past 2 days had finally met their way out at that instant, the unspeakable joy! The men were hugging into each other, while Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were hugging each other as well! Only Sun Xing Yu seemed calm, but a even then, faint smile flickered across her lips.

Zhang Yang entered their name ‘Lone Desert Smoke’, and the server immediately congratulated them on the big screens with a lot of announcements!

“Server Announcement: Lone Desert Smoke has succeeded in acquiring the Shadowmoon Castle: Castle Interior (Death Mode)First Clear Title, their great deeds will be published on the list of the Death Mode First Clear title (China Region). Please cheer for them!”

“Server announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Leader) has acquired the Shadowmoon Castle: Castle Interior (Death Mode)First Clear Title, acquired server reward10 gold pieces, skill point 1,

all reputation points of the alliance 500 points!”

“Server announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Leader) has acquired
.....”

In just an instant, the players in the China Region were bombarded once again by the latest news!

On the forum, they were still going all out in the war of words, debating on which guild would win over the First Clear title of the dungeon, it was intense! It was believed that if the two sides were to meet in real life, they would have clashed and started a real-life PK! Just as their debate was on it’s peak, the sudden victory of the Lone Desert Smoke in acquiring the First Clear title had finally put an end to the contest between the two guilds!

The battle for the first clear of dungeon had concluded, however, the players on the forum had started a new trend of upsurging topic, making a lot of noise on the region channel.

“Brother Yang, I think I have dragged you guys down a little back there, again, I’m going to become a laughing stock, looked down by people.” Fatty Han secretly told Zhang Yang.

“..... don’t worry about it, no one ever had a high opinion of you!”

“Sun of the beach!” Fatty Han immediately spat the words out

from his mouth, then he said, “Haiyah, I’m not that kind of caliber, being so careless in many ways. You want me to fight, no problem! But playing games that requires considerations in so many aspects, that is definitely out of my habit!”

“Indeed!”

“Pui! And you claim to be my best buddy! Shouldn’t you be comforting me a bit?”

“Haha, you are normally shameless, ain’t I right?” Zhang Yang said.

“From now onward, I better not join you guys in exploring new dungeons! But, brother Yang, we are brothers, right? After clearing the new dungeons, remember to bring me some equipment or gears!”

“Fatty, are you seriously thinking about this? Actually, if you really want to stay in the party, I believe no one will have a opinion on this!”

“They aren’t saying anything, but I still need my face intact! It’s fine, brother Yang, let’s do it this way!”

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts, and then he did not try to convince Fatty Han anymore, since he had already planned to put Fatty Han and Endless Starlight to the second party in the lead. As they have experience in succeeding, he believes that the second

party will do well. Endless Starlight has so much potential in him, even though he has not achieved any high standards yet, but it is obvious that he is improving.

“Loot time! Loot time!” Wei Yan Er cheered with joy.

Knowing from the look of their faces, they were obviously looking forward to the loot. Checking up on the loots after defeating a high difficulty boss was definitely a very joyful thing to do.

Master Waller was a Gray-Silver boss, so naturally there would not be any Yellow-Gold equipment among the loot. However, as the boss for the final defense of the dungeon, he was generous enough to drop 3 pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, 7 pieces of Green-Copper equipment, with an addition of a glittering green plate.

Wei Yan Er has a pair of sharp eyes, immediately she picked that piece of plate up. Because everyone was very much looking forward to the boss dropping a [Guild Upgrade Order], and among all the items and equipment, that was the only item that looked similar to the [Guild Upgrade Order]!

Immediately, she selected the ‘show info’ box and the information popped up on the user interface of the gang.

[Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] (Gray-Silver, Consumable)‘

Use: Upgrades a level 1 guild into a level 2 guild.

Required: Guild master.

“It really came out!” the whole gang could not help themselves but muttered among each other.

With a smile revealing his satisfaction, Zhang Yang said, “This is the first piece of [Guild Upgrade Order] in the whole game, if we were to auction it out, it’s price might increase to the millions!”

Wei Yan Er immediate had her eyes filled with golds, and she said, “Then let’s auction it out first!”

“Silly girl, a [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] gives a 20% additional experience points of the experience points that the player earns, and it will also allow players to buy a battle wolf for mounting purposes. Do you not want those?” Zhang Yang smiled while saying it.

“Owh..... “ with money on the left hand, level and mount on the right, Wei Yan Er was conflicted by the choices at hand. She was flustered to the point that she was red in the face!

Chapter 175: The Second Piece Of [Guild Upgrade Order]

“Silly Yu, don’t always pick on my little Yan Er!” Han Ying Xue stood up for the unfair treatment.

Zhang Yang laughed, and then he said, “The first piece of [Guild Upgrade Order] will be used by ourselves, there’s no doubt about it. The 2nd, 3rd pieces and more to come shall be auctioned out for funds! The dungeon is about to be refreshed, let’s come again tomorrow to bust our luck again, there might be another drop of this!”

“Really?” Wei Yan Er had returned to her joyful state.

Zhang Yang nodded, and then he said, “I have some points of the luck attribute, which may slightly increase the rate of dropping additional items!”

“What do you mean?” everyone was confused.

“For example, this Master Waller will constantly drop 3 pieces of Gray-Silver equipment and 7 pieces of Green-Copper equipment. So, depending on which equipment pieces would he dropped out of the 3 pieces of Gray-Silver equipment and the 7 pieces of Green-Copper equipment, that all depends on luck! But, this piece of [Guild Upgrade Order] is an additional drop as reward. Whether it drops or not, it will not affect the number of the other loots dropped! The drop rate for this additional reward will be affected by the player who has the highest luck attribute points among the

party that slayed the boss!”

“Oh!” Everyone understood.

Following the event where everyone in the gang agreed upon it, the first piece of [Guild Upgrade Order] is now officially belonged to Zhang Yang, going straight into his backpack.

Zhang Yang immediately used his position as the Guildmaster to bring up the configuration of the guild, and he selected the ‘upgrade’ button in the menu of the upgrade option.

“Ding! Lone Desert Smoke is eligible for level 2 upgrade, proceed in upgrading Lone Desert Smoke to level 2 guild, this will consume the [Level 2 Guild Order Upgrade], continue?”

Continue of course!

“Upgrading.....”

A progress bar appeared on the configuration interface almost immediately, progressing in quite a slow manner, it required about 30 seconds to complete.

10%..... 30%..... 70%..... 100%!

“Ding! Congratulations, Lone Desert Smoke is now a Level 2 Guild!”

Instantly, all members of the Lone Desert Smoke heard the system voice notification over their ears.

“Server announcement: Congratulations to Lone Desert Smoke for being the first Level 2 Guild in the China region! All members of Lone Desert Smoke will receive additional 100% experience points as a bonus for the next 3 days, the cost for repairing equipment, inserting socket gemstones, identifying equipment will be reduced by 50% as reward!”

Boom! The members of the Lone Desert Smoke had not yet calmed themselves for their own guild achievement in acquiring the First Clear title, and immediately, they were boiled in excitement once again!

Pride! Glory!

Those were the emotions of the members of Lone Desert Smoke at the moment, especially those who were walking down the city paths, showing off their character information. Seeing other players passing by, they would purposely stopped, worried that others would not see the guild title above their heads!

What is honor? This is honor!

Zhang Yang sent a secret message to Han Ying Er, saying, “Witchy Snow, send a guild invitation to Daffodil Daydream.”

----- as his settings only allowed officers and above to invite people to their guild, only Han Ying Er, Wei Yan Er, Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, Sun Xing Yu and himself had the authority to do so.

“Why? Trying to win her heart over using your current victor’s mood?” Han Ying Er instantly replied.

“If that was what I really have in mind, I would have won your heart over first!”

“As expected, my looks are the prettiest of all and all men shall bow before me!”

“Cut the crap and start working!”

Within a short amount of time, the system sent him a notification, ‘Daffodil Daydream has joined the guild!’

Zhang Yang could not help himself but smile, and he said, “Can’t see that you have the potential to be a madame! Such great skills in tricking others to sell themselves over!” the successful recruit of a future superstar magic-caster had made his day.

Han Ying Xue, “.....”

Wei Yan Er picked up the 3 pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, one

after another.

[The Black Wolf's Armor] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +20

Vitality: +96

Strength: +48

Agility: +16

<Unidentified>

Required Level: 40

As Wei Yan Er had already possessed a similar level 40 [Sol Brave Chest Plate], and Endless Starlight had also possessed a [Sincere Soul's Chest Plate], so this piece of armor naturally went to Zhang Yang. The remaining 2 pieces of the Gray-Silver equipment were leather armor and cloth armor, which were divided among Han Ying Xue and the others. As for the 7 pieces of Green-Copper equipment, all that went straight into Zhang Yang's backpack.

“Alright, the dungeon has been completed, everyone can have a good night sleep tonight!” Zhang Yang smiled.

“That’s right!” Wei Yan Er nodded continuously, and then she said, “I had a dream yesterday night, it was about me taking down the boss all by myself! And this morning, when I was thinking how to block the light in class, I was called up by my teacher to answer some questions. My first reply was, I will block the yellow light, don’t bother about me! That made everyone else in the class laughed!”

“Hahaha!” the whole gang was laughing out loud.

Wei Yan Er was annoyed, and she said, “Hmph! Even you guys are laughing, you guys are so bad!”

Later, everyone tore off their teleportation scroll and shoof! Everyone was back in White Jade City. It was about to be 12am, so everyone said their goodbyes and went offline for a good night’s sleep.

One night passed, and when Zhang Yang went back on to check the official forum, what he found was that Lone Desert Smoke had conquered the whole forum by borrowing their leading party’s winning momentum, the forum pages were crawling with posts about how their leading party secured the First Clear title of the dungeon. Meanwhile, the Imperial Sky had crashed down into the ground, with nothing to defend themselves. The forceful Mountain Cleaver who came with confidence earlier on could not even make a fart’s worth of noise.

Zhang Yang received countless friend requests in his information

station, luckily, he did not have to reply one by one, he could just switch off the whole thing and be done with it.

After logging into the game, he went straight to the Identifying Shop and the Jewelry shop to be slaughtered with the high prices. Firstly, he passed the [Black Wolf's Amour] over to the Identifier for identification. And truth to be told, this piece of item did not even have any special effects, with only two extra empty sockets. This was a total bad luck!

But looking at the bright side, for the coming 3 days, all the cost for identification will be decreased by 50%, at least the system did not fully suck him dry.

The first clear of the castle interior had been taken down, plus there were no special quests or target to be achieved at the moment, so Zhang Yang started focusing on buying [Solid Iron Bar]s. He currently has 4400 available empty slots, but so far only 1100 slots were occupied!

But this kind of thing did not require him to do it himself, because the price that he offered is 0.9 gold for each iron bar. Although the price is a little lower than what the auction house had to offer, considering the 20% commission which will be taken away, it will be more profitable for players to sell them to the Little Merchandize which is owned by Zhang Yang!

So what Zhang Yang could do now was to build up his advertisement on this as much as possible so that more Miners would know his Little Merchandize shop was currently purchasing [Solid Iron Bar]. However, he could not make the deal too obvious,

because he was considered to be one of the famous stars in the game, having no idea of how many people watched him closely at his every move. If people were to discover this, they would also start purchasing the iron bars, and that would undoubtedly seize most of the market stocks! And when the number of goods are greater than the market demand, the price for the [Solid Iron Bar] will decline, and the profits will naturally be lower!

So Zhang Yang gave his thoughts about it for half a day, at last, he still decided to put the [Solid Iron Bar] onto the racks, selling them at the price of 1 gold for each, with the effort of trying to hide his true agenda. Anyway, no one knew exactly how many [Solid Iron Bar] has he received, because all sellers will deal with Natalia, the NPC with a pair of big boobs who was responsible for purchasing the iron bars from the sellers.

For these 3 days, there would also be an addition of 100% experience points added onto the experience points earned by the players. So it was the best time to grind up their levels. So, Zhang Yang picked up the pace and gathered Han Ying Xue and the others. Then they headed to the Centaur Palace's 1st floor to level up! Because of the rich amount of experience points to be offered through grinding during this period of time, Wei Yan Er skipped her classes, while Hundered Shots and the other skipped their work just to be there, every single one of them were present at the gathering!

The gang shot their levels up by a lot after a day of grinding, each of them rising by 2 levels at the least! Unfortunately, the effects of different additional experience points could not be stacked after one another. It only picked the greatest effect among them, limiting everyone to only have an increase of 100% additional

experience points based on the experience points they earned, including Sun Xing Yu who possesses the [Heaven's Pearl].

Among the 8 of them, 6 of them had made it to the top level list of the White Jade City! Currently, Han Ying Xue was listed as number 1 with level 45, Fatty Han was listed at number 2 with also level 45, Zhang Yang, Sun Xing Yu, and Wei Yan Er were listed at number 7, 8, and 9 respectively, with all 3 of them at level 44. Daffodil Daydream was at level 43, where she was listed at number 14. Hundred Shots and Endless Starlight were at level 42, it was just a little more before they can make it up on the list. However, if they continued to grind on the next day, they would definitely make it up onto the list!

Han Ying Xue and Fatty Han had made it up to the leveling list of the whole China region, being the 7th and the 9th respectively!

During the night, because the castle interior had been refreshed, Zhang Yang regrouped his gang and went straight into the area to grind.

With the confidence of clearing the dungeon once before, the gang went to the dungeon with a different attitude. Without the pressure of dying for a righteous cause if they failed, they repeated the dungeon easily and slayed Master Waller on their first attempt this time around!

God seemed to be taking care of them, and when Wei Yan Er was looting from the boss's dead body, another piece of [Guild Upgrade Order] was among the drop!

Everyone cheered instantly.

Back in the main city, Zhang Yang published an information under the name of his Little Merchandize Shop, saying that, ‘Extra! Extra! Tomorrow at 7pm, The Little Merchandize Shop will be auctioning a [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order], interested parties, please come with your money!’

The information was published just briefly, and Zhang Yang had already received numerous secret messages from Snow Seeker, Sky Shaman and the others, all trying to bargain with him, hopefully that he could sell it to them because of their previous engagements! Humbly Gentleman was also present in the lively situation, aggressively commanding Zhang Yang to sell the [Guild Upgrade Order] to him straight away with the price of 10,000 gold pieces!

Zhang Yang had already published the information, because he did not intend to go back on his own words, he had to decline the offers from Snow Seeker and the others, and of course, he replied Humbly Gentleman with only one word, idiot!

However, the number of people sending Zhang Yang secret messages had began to increase, all of them being Guildmasters! Some of the guilds might not be large, and their progress in exploring the dungeons were slow, but most of them are rich, and money was never a problem to them! Slamming an in-game item [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] on the table should be considered as a large-scale advertisement effect! It would be even better if the system could make a server announcement!

Therefore, every single one of them were polishing their fists and fangs, ready to put up a good bargain for the night by tomorrow! To progress by clearing dungeons, their were way out of their leagues, but to progress using cash money, every single one of them are professionals!

Therefore, Zhang Yang could not oversee that fact and sell the piece directly to Snow Seeker and the others!

Zhang Yang took a piece of glove that he acquired from the dungeon previously to be identified, before he replaced the last piece of level 20 equipment on him with this piece of equipment.

[Pale Gauntlet] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +20

Vitality: +48

Strength: +24

Agility: +8

<Level 1 Socket>

Level Required: 40

By inserting a [vitality gemstone] on the equipment, and by activating his <Vitality Aura>, Zhang Yang could reach a total HP of 8960, a strength of 347, and an attack between 816-868!

Although the guild had already been upgraded to level 2, getting all sorts of benefits of the level 2 guild required elevating the experience points of the guild to 100%! Fortunately, there were guild points as incentives, and members of the guild were very enthusiastic. Moreover, every member would be entitled to enjoy the welfare of the guild, there no reason for anyone to get lazy!

However, to fill up the guild experience points up to 100% required about 10 days more or so, they could only take it easy at the time being.

Chapter 176: Humbly Gentleman The Buffoon

The next morning, logging in to the game, Han Ying Xue and the rest were all present, waiting for him to regroup with them to depart for the Centaur Palace 1st floor, to grind their levels of course.

Needless to say, they were current having an extra 100% additional experience points, but even if they did not have such beneficial effect, the dense number of the melee monsters were also suitable for group sweeping, it was a sacred paradise for leveling up! Because the entrance of the valley was also very well hidden, unless you receive a quest navigation that is related to the place, normal players would not be able to locate the place.

Of course, if players fell down the cliff like how Daffodil Daydream and Endless Starlight did, then it would be a whole different story!

After a full day of grinding, everyone got a flash of golden light through their body, twice to be precise, they had progressed up by 2 levels, consecutively! And now, every single one of them are on the White Jade City's top level list! Among them, Han Ying Xue and Fatty Han had conquered the first and the second places respectively on the top level list of the whole China region, with both of them at level 47!

With such incredible speed in leveling up, it was natural for the players in China region to feel extremely surprised. But very soon, everyone understood, they had an additional of 100% additional

experience points upon the experience points they earned!

But for those clever ones, they would know something was not right, even with the addition of 100% additional experience, a player would still require one day to level up by 1 level. On the other hand, grinding through slaying monsters like there is no tomorrow, they themselves would still require 5 days just to level up!

It was certain, that the strong players on the list must have found some sacred paradise for them to grind!

All Guildmasters from all the guilds were not idiots themselves, and of course, instantly, they related Zhang Yang to the previous achievement of acquiring the First Clear title for the first Yellow-Gold Boss. So immediately, they planted spies into the Lone Desert Smoke with the goals to locate Zhang Yang and the others' whereabouts!

However, even though they could see clearly that Zhang Yang and his gang were located within the Land of the Red Cloud, their specific coordinates were yet to be known, they had to go and find out by themselves!

The map of the Land of the Red Cloud was incredibly vast, and the valley where the centaurs were located is extremely far-off. If they were to find them by then, Zhang Yang and the others would have reached level 50 or above, ready to remove themselves from that part of the map!

After dinner, Zhang Yang logged into the game around 6:30pm, saddled up and headed towards his Little Merchandize Shop to get ready for the auction.

The moment when he was arriving from afar to his shop, he saw a bunch of people gathering around his shop, wandering around the entrance trying to stick their necks in to peek around. Their movements and expressions revealed their anxiousness. Zhang Yang kept his battle horse and walked towards the door to take a look. Holy moly! His shop was also occupied from the inside, crowded with people!

The merrier the better! That would only means the competition would become even more intense, and the auction price of the item would become even higher! It was supposed to be good news, but when Zhang Yang saw that most of the people in the shop were actually members of The Dominators, the guild symbols above their heads showed it all! Rage filled his heart, it was outrageous!

At least 90% of the people within the shop are the members of The Dominators!

To purchase a [Guild Upgrade Order], it was sufficient for each guild to send only one member over to make the transaction. Sending tons of men over, they were obviously here not for the [Guild Upgrade Order], but they were actually here to stir things up!

As the game's setting prohibited players from walking through solid objects, as long as The Dominators fully occupied the space of the shop with their bodies, no other players can enter the shop!

Furthermore, main cities prohibited PK battle, everyone was invincible in their own existence, it would be impossible to kill other players and step over their dead bodies to get by!

With a face full of rage, Zhang Yang forcefully calmed himself down. Then he walked up to the people at the roadside and asked, “Brother, are you here for the auction of the [Guild Upgrade Order]?”

“Yea!” the person who replied was a human magic caster named Falling Maple, “But there is no way we are able to go in, how to participate in the auction! F*ck this sh*t! The Dominators are really domineering in their way! If I am the one who gets the upgrade order, I will level up my guild, summon 20,000 players and kill them everyday over and over again!”

There were more people at the side revealing their dissatisfaction, it seemed that the selfish act of The Dominators had gone so far that it triggered the rage of righteous of the public!

Zhang Yang grinned deep down his heart, thinking over about how despicable this Humbly Gentleman could be, to use this kind of lowly means to get to him? So he spoke with clear voice, “Everyone, everyone! I assure you, today, everyone gets to go in to the shop! As long as you provide the correct amount of money, you will have a chance to bid for the purchase of the guild upgrade order!”

The few dozens of people standing by the turned their attentions towards Zhang Yang, with their face full of questions.

Zhang Yang laughed and brought up his personal character information with a swipe of hand.

‘Zhan Yu, Crypt Slaughterer, Physician’s Friend, Hero of White Jade Castle, Warrior of the Centaur, Level 46, Human, Male, Guardian Warrior, <Lone Desert Smoke>.’

It’s such a long title! It’s awesome!

“Zhan Yu, it is really Zhan Yu!”

“That’s incredible! I’m shaking just reading that!”

“Anyone interested to join my guild? I shall grant you a the position of vice president, 100,000 cash as monthly reward!”

The people outdoor were agitated with excitement.

“Hahaha,” Humbly Gentleman put up a good man face and walked towards the crowd, and then he said, “So here comes the crowd, the auction for the [Guild Upgrade Order] shall be concluded with a high price, aiya, Guildmaster Zhan Yu is going to make big money this time! Congratulations!”

Falling Maple and the others saw him and revealed their anger on their faces, and shouted, “Humbly Gentleman, what is the meaning of this, bringing all your men to clog up the shop! How

are we going to enter the shop to participate in the auction?”

Humbly Gentleman smiled pridefully, saying, "Guys, you are blaming the wrong person! A shop is meant for selling things, and there are no rules about who can enter or who cannot enter the shop. And the saying goes, the shop welcomes the world! Are you saying that everyone needs your approval to enter the shop? I said, one cannot be too arrogant!”

Sun of the beach! Everyone who was present could only think of one sentence to express their feeling. This son of a b*tch was not only capable of blatant self-flattery, but went on to accuse others of being stepping over unseen boundaries! At such a level of hypocrisy, it was more apt to call him a b*tch, rather than the son of one!

Zhang Yang smiled, and he said, “Some people just like to be smarty-pants, but in truth, these people are just boneheads!”

Even though Zhang Yang did not point out the name of the person he was talking about, but Humbly Gentleman had already condemned himself to the topic, so he grinned and said, “ Zhan Yu, let me put this straight to your ears today! That piece of [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] of your can only be sold to me, and also, hmph hmph! If you refuse my toast, then you shall be forced to drink a forfeit!”

He put up his left hand and opened up to show his five fingers, and then he said, “500 pieces of gold! If you dare to give a price higher than this, from now onwards, hmph hmph, the customers that are in the shop right now shall come again everyday, and your

business shall be zero!”

Falling Maple and the others were furious beyond words even before Zhang Yang could speak. They stepped forward to curse Humbly Gentleman for being a shameless Guildmaster, such a waste!

The more they cursed him, the happier he became. He is born a masochistic b*tch, feeling an itch when nobody cursed him.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, “Gentleman, there is no need to bother yourself arguing with the likes of him, putting yourself to the same level as him!”

“Zhan Yu, let see how long more can you keep that smile of yours on your face! It’s about 7pm now, you better hurry up and get ready for the auction! You are not going back on your words and give up on the auction for today, are you? Tsk tsk tsk, then we shall have this as the front page news for tomorrow!” Humbly Gentleman laughed as he felt prouder and prouder as the moment passed.

Previously, he was tricked of tens thousands of gold pieces by Zhang Yang, and it had bothered him since then, making his life miserable until now. If he could return the ‘favor’ as ruthlessly as possible, how could he rest peacefully in his sleeps for the rest of his days?

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “Hypocrite, what a shame, how much can a frog know while staying in the bottom of the well

all the time? One cannot talk to summer insects about the ice!”

Humbly Gentleman was provoked, so he spoke, “Bastard! What’s with all the freaking idioms!” As he was low in his cultural level, he hated people who loved to use idioms and poems the most.

Zhang Yang gave another smile and said, “When you have your own land properties in the future, you shall understand how idiotic you were today! Just like a buffoon putting up a great and entertaining performance for me to enjoy!”

“Hmph hmph, then laugh all you want now while you still can! Because later, you can only cry as much as you want!” Humbly Gentleman spoke out of his rage.

Zhang Yang shook his head, immediately he pulled up his land property setting and went into the configuration screen of his Little Merchandize shop. He can operate his shop at any point as long as he wanted to, only accessing the storage, checking the store’s warehouse and monitoring the shop’s marketing situation required him to be in the shop himself!

Entering the Little Merchandize’s blacklist setting, Zhang Yang selected to blacklist a guild. After he entered the name ‘The Dominators’ into the entry box, he smiled and spoke to Humbly Gentleman, “Witness the great magic that I am about to show you!”

“What -----” Humbly Gentleman had just begun to speak, but in a sudden, he realized that the men he arranged to stand guard

within the shop had been respawned to a location 10 meters away from the entrance of the shop!

The members of The Dominators were at loss from the looks of their faces, having no idea on how did they miraculously been teleported out from the shop! Some of them attempted to rush back into the shop, but the moment they put their first steps into the shop, they were instantly repulsed, as if there was an invisible wall in front of them.

“Boss -----” The members of The Dominators immediately sent Humbly Gentleman secret messages, saying that “I cannot get into the shop anymore! The system said that I am being refused to be accepted as the guest of the Little Merchandize shop!”

“Boss!”

“Boss -----”

“Boss”

Similar secret messages were received and shown in front of Humbly Gentleman.

In just an instant, Humbly Gentleman’s face turned ghastly pale, it was not a wonder that Zhang Yang was fearless towards all his actions and words. So, the owner of the land property had the power to expel the guests! Humbly Gentleman had not possessed any land properties before, and he thought that what he was doing

can become a major hindrance to Zhang Yang. But now, his actions were completely wasted and he became a buffoon that had put up a great and entertaining performance! He had lost his face all the way down to the ground!

Zhang Yang did a gesture of welcome at Falling Maple and the others, “Gentlemen, the space is vast, welcome in!”

Falling Maple and the others were laughing out loud, one by one they passed by Humbly Gentleman before entering the Little Merchandize shop. They did not forget to show him their contented faces, provoking Humbly Gentleman to the point that he was having metal meltdown, it was marvelous!

“Zhan Yu, you -----” Humbly Gentleman had finally exploded with anger.

But Zhang Yang replied with a “Aiya” and said, “It is almost showtime, I have to get ready for the auction, sorry that I cannot accompany you, Mr.Hypocrite!”

“Stay there!” Humbly Gentleman went into rage, and just when he was trying to move his legs to pursue Zhang Yang, he crashed into an invisible wall and instantly, he was bounced back!

‘Ding! You have been listed as the rejected customer of the Little Merchandize shop, you cannot enter!’

The system announcement gently informed Humbly Gentleman

by his ear, making him even more angry to the point that he almost puked blood!

After the humiliation he had sentenced upon Humbly Gentleman, Zhang Yang's mood had improved a lot, so he whistled along while waiting for the clock to strike 7. Awhile later, other than Sun Xing Yu, Han Ying Xue and the gang had arrived at the scene to witness the fiery scene of the auction that yet to happen.

The number of people were increasing, although the Little Merchandize shop currently was a 4-story shop, but the crowds were very tight, making the situation so much merrier.

Zhang Yang immediately issued a notice under the name of Little Merchandize, saying, "Ladies and gentlemen, as it is too crowded at the moment, so we shall only entertain the customers who are here for the auction for the Guild Upgrade Order from 7 pm to 7:30 only! So, for those who does not wish to participate in the auction activity, please leave the premises for the time being, we appreciate your understanding. In addition, each guild just needs to send a representative on the line. If more than 2 members from a guild is present, I will have to use my right as the owner of the shop to kick players out! Your understanding will be greatly appreciated!"

After 3 consecutive times of publishing the notice, the crowd finally dispersed, the people left the shop premises one after another. But there were still some players without guild names wandering around in the shop.

Zhang Yang could not help himself but smile, secretly he told

himself, so that Mr.Hypocrite has not given up on him yet? Making his members to quit the guild and come forth to stir things up again?

Once again, he pulled up his blacklist option in his land property setting, and by the name of the owner of the shop, he specifically put certain players' names into the blacklist list. He did not even have to identify the message of the players, as long as he confirmed, the system will record automatically.

Shoof shoof shoof, a lot more players had been kicked out of the shop.

Finally, it was 7pm, Zhang Yang officially began the auction for the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order].

“This is the moment that we have been waiting for, now, let's begin the auction for the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order]! You can bring up the item search page and enter ‘Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order’ or ‘Guild Upgrade Order’ or ‘Upgrade’ as the keywords to search and locate the item. Then you can view the current price of that item through the refresh button!”

“The base price for the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] is 50000 pieces of gold, each increment of the price must not be less than 1000 pieces of gold, and you can increase it as much as you want, to infinity! Everyone can freely increase the price, and when the price does not increase for 20 seconds, I will announce the price of the item and count 3 times. If no one is there to increase the price after the count of 3, the item will be sold!”

Zhang Yang smiled for a bit and said, “Then, let’s begin!”

50000!

100000!

150000!

In front of Zhang Yang, there was a display, the above shows the changing price of the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] at all times, at the side of the price is the bidder’s ID. The price will not be scrambled, because once a player has placed a bid, the player’s money will immediately be deducted by the system, when the amount of his or her bid is overtaken by other’s bid, the deducted money will be returned back to them to prevent anyone from bidding with malicious intent.

Han Ying Xue and the others surrounded around Zhang Yang, they were all pleased to see the drastic rise of the price. Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were not short in money, so they just loved to enjoy the process of making money, but it was different for Fatty Han and the others. For them, tens of thousands of dollars is considered as an incredibly huge income!

“It’s still rising, it’s still rising!” Daffodil Daydream was screaming with excitement.

200000! 400000! 500000!

The price had increased to where the public can manage within such a short time frame. The second piece of [Guild Upgrade Order] is not as precious as the first piece, but still was one of a kind by it's own. It did not matter it is a large guild or a small guild, everyone has the urge to own it, and take the opportunity to strongly promote their own guild!

Therefore, the price has not reached the bottom line of acceptance of these particular players. The price was still increasing, just not as swiftly as before.

600000! 700000!

The price seemed to have frozen at 700000, and it stayed the same for quite awhile. Zhang Yang waited for a full 20 seconds before he started to speak, "The current price is at 700000 pieces of gold! 700000 going once..... 700000 going twice..... 70 going thrice...."

1000000!

The price on the display screen suddenly changed, increasing by almost 50% margin!

Zhang Yang was stunned, not because of the unexpected change in price, but because of the person's ID who placed the bid ----- Snow Seeker!

What a rich woman!

Chapter 177: High Price

In his previous life, the rumor that went around was that the Guild master of the Crimson Rage was a very rich person possessing a high profit earning cosmetic company. The company happened to have the name 'Crimson', founded by Snow Seeker herself.

In his previous life, Snow Seeker might not have made it into the list of top 10 players in the China region, but she was definitely one of the top 10 when it comes to fame! On the official website of the game company, there were always special interviews with One Sword Stroke, Snow Seeker, and other superstar players that were widely-known in the China region!

The current in-game gold piece had dropped to the ratio of 1:3, but 1,000,000 pieces of gold was also the equivalent to 3,000,000 dollars. Snow Seeker must have been a big-budget player, that was a total gamble at a very high stake!

The biggest difference between Crimson Rage and the other guilds such as The Dominators and the Imperial Sky was that their guild master is the direct sponsor of their guild's capital. With Snow Seeker taking the lead and directing the guild, the whole guild will obey unanimously! Moreover, a guild purely consisted of only female players had a specialized recruitment drive, once a lady player joins Crimson Rage, she will never jump to another guild ever again.

That was also the main reason the Crimson Rage will dominate the other guilds like Imperial Sky, The Dominators, in becoming

the Number 1 guild in the White Jade City!

Seeing her risk a million gold for a bet just like that, could Sky Shaman and Humbly Gentleman possibly follow? Investment that involves millions would require them to consult their sponsors, the decision must not lie on them alone!

Zhang Yang brought up the voice communication device with Snow Seeker, before saying with a smile, “Guild master snow is really something, to show such a big hand, gambling at such high stakes without even a slightest flinch!”

Snow Seeker gave a light smile and said, “You have not seen me yet, how would you know that I did not flinch at all when I did it? I’m putting everything I have on the line, including my pension and funeral funds, and you believe that I didn’t lose a drop of sweat doing it?”

If he did not know about the background of Snow Seeker from his past life, Zhang Yang would have difficulty imagining a beauty who soaks herself in the game everyday would possess assets that’s worth billions! 300 million dollars may be an amount that is impossible to earn for a person’s whole life, but for a rich player like Snow Seeker, it was like a hair pulled off a bull's back to her! The question lay on whether they were willing to pay so much for a virtual guild upgrade order!”

Other rich players like Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er simply play to enjoy the fun of playing the game, even casually relinquishing their positions as guild masters. To let them pay a large sum of money for a piece of guild upgrade order... absolutely impossible!

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “Alright, if guild master Snow says so, I shall finalize the deal, and when I make the announcement, I will definitely speed it up a little by half a second!”

1,100,000!

15 seconds later, a new price immediately popped up on the the display screen, and the player who placed the bid was from the Falling Maple who were standing at the front of the entrance of the shop not long ago!

So many rich players! Zhang Yang could not help himself but to sigh for Snow Seeker, and he said, “Guild master Snow, it’s not that I don’t want to help you, it’s just that there are too many rich people!”

Snow Seeker smiled lightly and said, “It’s alright then, I guess I shall wait for the 3rd or the 4th piece of guild upgrade order then!”

Even though she was rich, she was not an idiot. If this is the 1st piece of the guild upgrade order, there would still be higher bids to come, but the 2nd piece... It’s how it went for winners, every players will remember the party that took down the First Clear Title of the dungeon, but no one will even bother about the party who gets the 2nd clear, or the 3rd clear of the dungeon!

20 seconds later, the price of 1,100,000 pieces of gold remained. So Zhang Yang said, “The current bid is fixed at 1,100,000 pieces of gold, no one is willing to bid higher? 1,100,000 going once...

1,100,000 going twice... 1,100,000 going thrice! Sold!”

Pak! He pressed on the button to confirm the transaction, instantly concluding the deal.

“Wow, 1,100,000! That is actually 3,300,000 dollars, and 8 persons... each person can get 300,000!” Endless Starlight got too excited that he counted it wrongly!

Wei Yan Er giggled and said, “Silly Star-Star is stupid! 3,300,000 divided by 8, that should be 500,000!”

Oh my god... another mathematics idiot had self-destructed!

Zhang Yang burst into laughter, and he said, “Actually little silly is the brightest of all! Even thought she also counted it wrongly, she was overselling it, not only she did not suffer any loss, she had something to gain!”

The words were out and the gang were all laughing.

The auction of the [Guild Upgrade Order] had been a success, so the auction activity this time around had came to an end. But since they were already there, they casually continued looking at the other goods in the shop. Many did not rush to leave the shop with the intention to check for any good stuff left in the shop.

That was the effect Zhang Yang was hoping for. Even if a piece of guild upgrade order can be auctioned out for a price of 1,100,000

gold, but it will only be tens of thousands after dividing among themselves, and that amount is only enough to be equivalent to the Little Merchandize shop's one day profit. Therefore, he did not value it much. However, the popularity of the Little Merchandize shop had been increased thanks to the auction this time around. Although the profit of the shop still could not be compared to the system's auction house, the daily profit is definitely going to hit a new high!

The gold coins had reached the accounts, that was a solid 1,100,000 pieces of gold, without any deduction from the system! Zhang Yang immediately divided the gold coins and sent each share to the accounts of Han Ying Xue and the others, each of them received 137500 pieces of gold. He mailed over Sun Xing Yu's share.

“Everyone, hurry and trade the gold coins for cash, because the gold coins are depreciating as we speak, the longer we wait, the more we lose!” Zhang Yang told the gang.

Fatty Han and the others immediately ran out from the Little Merchandize shop as the bank is located not far away from the auction site, they could reach it by taking just a few steps out. On contrary, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were lazily hanging around with no intention to move their asses, that had provoked the curiosity of Zhang Yang on whether the both of them were really that obsessed with money, or if they were just in for the thrill of making money?

For the next 2 days, the gang continued to rely on the great opportunity offered by the addition of 100% additional experience points to grind and level up. However, the creeps and monsters in

the 1st floor of the Centaur Palace are all level 40. When players reach level 48, they will no longer acquire experience points from these monsters.

Even so, within those 2 days, all of them had reached level 48, claiming the number 1 to number 8 places of the top level list of the White Jade City and the China region! It was a most dramatic, hostile takeover, because most of the players were level 42 at most. With the advantage of leading ahead by 6 or 7 levels, Zhang Yang and the gang were were a full month ahead in the game!

Now they just have to wait until they reach level 50 and open up the quest door, where they will clear the Poison Fireland and head for a new region to uncover an even more intense contest ahead!

Without the addition of 100% additional experience points, and also not able to grind by killing elite monsters, Zhang Yang and the gang had found themselves instantly slowed down. So they switched their focus to the level 40 monsters in the Canyon of Scattered Feathers, with each of them leveling up by themselves.

They continued leveling up day by day by clearing the dungeons in the castle interior once every 2 days. The Yellow-Gold boss Zac and all of the bosses in the centaur palace have been aligned to respawn once in every 7 days! The boss would not be respawning until the 11th of September already.

Even with higher levels and vastly improved equipment, Zhang Yang and the gang still spent 2 days to clear the whole Centaur Palace! Looking at the bright side, the rewards were Quite abundant, and putting them in Zhang Yang's shop could earn them

quite a handsome amount of income!

Zhang Yang had also harvested two [Chaos Gem]s and upgraded his backpack to increase his space by 80 slots!

This time around, Zac had dropped a whole bunch of items and equipment that were not as good as the first time around, but the loots still included 2 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment and 4 pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, all of which were the highest quality level 50 equipment! Zhang Yang received a pair of boots, and he spent 100 gold coins to identify it. The attribute of the items had made him drooled for a bit.

[Lion's Blood Battle Boots] (Yellow-Gold, heavy armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +120

Strength: +48

Agility: +48

<Level 2 socket>

Equip: Absorb 200 damage every you are attacked.

Daffodil Daydream had also successfully crafted the [Limitless Cape], and Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight both received a free one respectively. She crafted 8 pieces of the capes, with the remaining 6 being placed in the Little Merchandize shop for sale. They turned out to be hot sales, priced at 1000 gold for each cape. The capes were sold out within half a day, leaving Daffodil Daydream staring speechless as she viewed the results on her screen.

However, [Limitless Cape] was actually a level 50 Gray-Silver equipment, and also the first batch of the game's exclusive defense equipment! What is the most important thing for a party? Tank, obviously! No matter how poor a player is, the equipment of the tank must be complete, and this is the basic knowledge for all!

That was why Zhang Yang felt that Daffodil Daydream had priced the item too lowly! Daffodil Daydream simply did not have the business acuity. She felt that she only spent 500 gold as the cost to craft it, so selling it at 1000 gold was just enough, for a man cannot be too greedy!

What that was even more pitiful was that one of the materials for crafting the [Limitless Cape] was extremely rare, that was why Daffodil Daydream had enough to craft only 8 sets of the cape, with no possibility to mass produce.

Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were placed into the second party by Zhang Yang, having both of them fully responsible for the

selection of party members. Members who registered for the selection were extremely enthusiastic, and in a short period of time, both of them had picked out 8 good players. There, the new party began their challenge of the death mode of the castle interior to reclaim the land, as a training ground for the new party members.

Zhang Yang was very impatient with the on the trivia matters on the management, so he usually handed over those trivial matters over to Fatty Han and the others to manage, to ease any conflict among the members, to regularly organize activities, and to also invigorate the atmosphere of the guild.

Over time, Zhang Yang found out that Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream were both very suitable to be in the management level!

Let's talk about Hundred Shots. He was loyal to the guild, and was viewed rather highly by all people. Every member would kindly call him uncle, even though he was actually only 30 years old! Everyone had great confidence in him.

On the other hand, Daffodil Daydream is a careful and detailed representative. The guild's only funding for guild activities is to be taken care by her, to manage equipment of tanks, oversee the treatment of the occasional equipment repair, and to buy red and blue potions. Every time she carried out a task, she would make a detailed account that which can be viewed clearly at just a glance!

Therefore, Zhang Yang had made a decision, to turn these two into professional players, so that they would have more time and

energy to spend on the guild management.

He is the type of person who gets right on the job, the moment he thinks of something, he will immediately implement it!

“Hundred Shots, Daffodil Daydream, come over here and have a seat!” Zhang Yang had not opened up the 4th floor of the Little Merchandize shop, which was kept as a private spot for meeting purposes or other personal matters. Although players can communicate with each other through the voice communication device, it was best to meet face-to-face as it’s more formal that way.

Zhang Yang smiled softly, then he said, “I hope both of you can help me by becoming Appointed Managers for the Lone Desert Smoke!”

Chapter 178: An Interesting Scene

“Appointed Managers?” Both Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream gaped with their eyes wide open.

Zhang Yang smiled and explained to them. “That’s right, as appointed managers, you will receive proper salary from the guild. You will have to put all your focus into managing the guild. Take it as a real job!”

Both Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream exchanged a confused and ‘hard-to-believe this was real’ kind of look. Both of them had jobs in their real life. It would be unwise for them to give up on their current job to be a virtual game manager. After all, how long could a game last for? 5 years? 10 years? It will eventually die down!

Zhang Yang laughed. “Hold on to your thoughts and listen to my explanation before you reject my proposal. So far, I will pay you 10,000 dollars as the fixed basic salary! In the future development of the guild, you’ll get appropriate bonuses!”

Both of them expressed dubious expressions. Zhang Yang continued to explain. “You see, ‘God’s Miracle’ started with around 5,000,000 players. Now, the number has risen to a staggering 170,000,000 players! This took only 2 months! This clearly demonstrates the pulling power of the game! I can be certain that the number of players would even exceed 1 billion! 2 billion, even! What does this mean then? This game is an endless, unlimited market and well of opportunities! If a guild is raised into a proper one, it could become a money-making machine!”

Hundred Shots scratched his chin and said, “Zhan Yu. It’s not that I don’t believe you! But this is just a too big decision for me to make now! I have to think of the risks and opportunities!”

Daffodil nodded.

Zhang Yang explained further, “As a guild, the perks and advantages would only come after level 50! Look at the current situation of the training grounds. The one closest to the main city is a level 10 training ground. Another area further out is the level 20 training ground, beyond that is the level 30 area and so on! By now, I’m sure that you have experienced it first hand on how troublesome it is just to get to the training grounds. Just taking the “plane” to the training ground would take around 1 to 2 hours!”

Zhang Yang paused a while and continued to speak. “Players would need to restock and resupply, they would need to fix their equipment, and they would need to visit the auction house, banks and more. All these would require them coming back to the main city. Think of how much time is being wasted just walking back and forth! Right now, the furthest training area would take at least 1 to 2 hours, and when the game matures enough, level 50 fields and up will appear. To save players’ time, there will be a territory in the map and has a teleportation circle, linked to the city’s teleportation circle! [Teleportation Scroll] can also be used to bind to the map’s territory and be used to teleport there as well!”

Zhang Yang leaned his chin on a hand. “Territory could be claimed! Anyone could fight for the authority of the Territory and claim the rights to obtain the fees for the Teleportation Circle!

Think of it. If we set the fees to only 1 gold per use, how much gold would we receive when 20,000,000 players use it to travel daily?”

Of course, 20,000,000 might be a little too much to expect. But since a Territory could appear elsewhere, sharing it with at least 1,000,000 players is an easy feat! Right now there are already 170,000,000 players around, and the number will rise to 1 billion or even 2 billion!

Both Daffodil Daydream and Hundred Shot was shocked beyond words!

“To claim a Territory, I would need the strength of the entire guild! I can’t do this alone or with just a few players! The guild would need to be a super guild to achieve such feat! I need more than just numbers. I need the players to be strong in fights and easy to work with!”

Hundred Shot thought for a while. “Zhan Yu, aren’t you the soul of the guild? So far, everyone in the guild has viewed you as their idol! Everyone would be willing to do your bidding if you said so!”

Zhang Yang laughed loudly. “I’m just but a rather skilled fighter. I can bring a team into dungeons and claim the First Clear Achievement. That, I am good at. But to manage a guild, I don’t have the patience and time for these troublesome matters. I need help. I need someone to help me settle the problems in the guild in my stead. I need someone to handle the guild’s account! That is why I hope you guys to accept my proposal. Right now, the guild has nothing to offer to you. I can only issue 10,000 dollars as salary to the both of you for now. But, I do hope that after 2 months, our

guild would be in shape to claim the game's first Territory! By then, your salary would be at least 100,000 dollars!"

Daffodil sighed and said, "This decision is still too large for me to decide now. I would need some time to think it through!"

Hundred Shots said, "I need to discuss this matter with my wife!"

Even if the popularity of the game was at its peak, but if all future updates of the game is squashed into this small period, anyone would feel rather anxious. No one could really predict how would 'God's Miracle' be like in the next few years! The current situation might just be a pre-festival!

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "You guys take your time to think about this. This decision might be the one that will affect your entire life!"

In all honesty, there were things that Zhang Yang could not reveal too much about! In his previous life, there were a number of player who had depended on the game to become millionaire, and even billionaires! A super VRMMORPG that had over 2 billion players worldwide, greatly exceeded the expectations of the game! Like football and basketball, soon, this game would be a culture among everyone. It would eventually be another large money making industry!

After 3 to 4 days of thinking, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream did not let Zhang Yang down; both of them agreed to Zhang Yang proposal, having believed in him! Following Zhang

Yang for the past few days, they had been selling equipment and had collected more than 100,000 gold coins! With the additional bonus of 400,000 gold coins that Zhang Yang had sold the [Guild Upgrade Order], both of them had earned at least 600,000 dollars in a short period of time!

If they had not quit their job, they might have to work for at least 8 to 10 years to accumulate that amount!

That was why, even if they did not have much hope for the “Territory”, they could still follow Zhang Yang into fights and earn enough money to cover the loss of their job! They could even earn a large fortune just by playing the game! Even if ‘God’s Miracle’ only operated for a year, they could earn say...around 1,000,000 dollars! By then, it would never be too late for them to find a new job!

Furthermore, when Zhang Yang had explained the interesting future ahead of them, how could they just let it pass by without grabbing it! Just thinking about it could give them many sleepless nights to come!

The two of them eventually quit their jobs and focused fully on the game. Zhang Yang had immediately issued their first month salaries as means to encourage their decision.

Under Zhang Yang’s arrangement, Daffodil Daydream was to be the financial manager. She had immediately established the campaign to recycle old equipment for guild contribution points. The campaign was to encourage players to contribute their discarded equipment into the guild storage for points instead of

selling them in the auction house. That way, high-level players could accumulate wanted equipment and low-level players would not have to grind the same dungeon over and over again! They would only need to complete a few guild quests to get the equipment they want!

Hundred Shots was tasked as the guild human resource manager. He would be in charge of recruitment and expulsion of the members of the guild. Lone Desert Smoke would only recruit players with suitable characteristics. Those who are egoistical, selfish, rude, or fraudulent in manners such as cheating in a dungeon for equipment, cheating players for gold, would not be recruited into the guild. Since the guild had many join requests every single day, Hundred Shots could not risk adding a rotten apple into the guild in order to prevent the guild from collapsing from the inside.

Under the supervision of those two; Lone Desert smoke had become lively and happy. Everyone was rather cooperative and had formed strong bonds between players. Slowly, the guild had managed to morph into a strong guild. It was not all because of Zhang Yang and his merry little band contributing to the guild's fame alone now. Eventually, they had their own way to shine.

...

On September 14th, 3pm, Han Ying Xue managed to reach level 50!

‘Ding! Congratulation to Player Little Snow for being the first player to achieve Level 50! Obtained Luck +1!’

‘Server Announcement: A Level 50 player has emerged in the game! The patch <Expedition> has official started! Players can find any guard in main city for further explanation of the patch! Further description of the patch can also be found in the official website!’

‘Server Announcement: New Profession available! Rune Crafting has been added into the game! Please talk to the main cities’ Rune Crafter for further explanation about Rune Craft!’

After a chain of announcement, players around the globe got excited and headed to the nearest guard to asked about the <Expedition> patch! Some of them even logged off the game to read the detail explanation in the official website. Other players found their way to the Rune Crafter in the city to ask about the profession.

Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang were a little lazy. They know that Zhang Yang was a “Beta player” and quickly private messaged him for information.

To save time and trouble, Zhang Yang partied up with everyone and explained in the party channel.

“I’ll talk about Rune Craft first.” Zhang Yang coughed. The patch <Expedition> has been brought forward by as much as half a month earlier due to Zhang Yang presence in the game.

“Rune Craft consists of two parts. The first part, Break Down. The second, Rune Crafting. A Rune Crafter can disassemble equipment in the game and obtain Rune Essence! The better the grade, higher the level, the obtained Essence would be better! The equipment grade would change at every 30 levels. Let’s say that I disassemble any level 10, 20, or 30 Black-Steel tier equipment, I would obtain a [Level 1 Black-Steel Essence]. If I disassemble a level 40, 50, or 60 Black-Steel equipment, I would obtain a [Level 2 Black-Steel Essence].”

“Rune Essences would be used to craft [Rune Stone]s. These [Rune Stone]s could be used to upgrade existing bonus attributes in the weapon! For example, Enhanced Strength +2 effect is obtained when an equipment is upgraded twice using [Rune Stone]s, increasing the Strength by 20 points. Enhanced Vitality +3 effect is obtained when the equipment is upgraded 3 times using the [Rune Stone], increasing HP by 160 points. The maximum upgrade count is 10!”

“High level [Rune Stone] can be used to upgrade low level enhancement. For example, a [Level 5 Rune Stone] could be used to get Enhance +4. It cannot go the other way around. To get a +5 enhancement, you must use a [Level 5 Rune Stone] or higher. When the equipment reaches Enhancement level +10, there will be an extra effect to it. For example, with Enhanced Vitality +10, every attack would have a <Lifesteal> effect! Now enhancing with [Rune Stone] has success rates. Once an enhancement fails, not only would the material would be burned, the original Enhance would also drop a level.”

Zhang Yang laughed a little. “Why is the profession only being

introduced now? If the profession was introduced into the game since the very beginning, no one would want to disassemble their equipment! Now, with majority of players reaching level 40 and more, the equipment that were discarded in to the auction house is just too much, to the point where new players would not need to grind low level dungeons to get their equipment! New players could just buy the items that they need from the auction house! This was not what the developers intended. Now that Rune Crafting is introduced into the game, many low-level equipment would be disassembled! This is one of the methods for them to earn a stable income as well.”

“Huh...” said Wei Yan Er with her mouth wide opened. “In that case, what is this <Expedition> thing?”

Chapter 179: Level 50!

“I assume that everyone knows now that there are 8 major cities in just China alone. In each city, the same level 10 to level 50 training grounds are there. However, once you’re over level 50, players must leave the city ground and enter the training grounds beyond level 50. One more thing, you can’t just simple walk or fly to there. There will be an extremely long quest to unlock the area!”

Zhang Yang sighed heavily in his heart. To think that Dream Technology was that good in doing business. They are obviously conducting daylight robbery; taking away player’s money and gold, and yet they could present it nicely like a booby trap in a present box.

“What quest are you talking about?” asked Wei Yan Er.

“This patch is called Expedition. Which is kind of self-explanatory. We are to fight a large group of enemies in a large party! As the idiom goes, before you sortie, be sure to bring enough supplies. Without proper preparation of war, how could you even expect the soldiers to perform? That is why, as of now, players could head to the main city’s Expedition manager to submit all kinds of materials. This is considered to be a repeatable quest. The items that they would take would be like, 20 pieces of [Cotton Bandage], or 10 bottles of any healing potions, and other random items as well! The NPC will take it all. Every time the NPC collects a material, the storage bulk will be filled up a little. There’s a progress bar! Once the bar reaches 100%, the army will then set out to attack the enemy waves and unlock the level 50 training ground!”

“Damn...the system sure is sneaky!” said Daffodil Daydream.

Zhang Yang nodded, agreeing with her. “However, even if the players do not submit anything to the NPC, the progress bar would still go on by itself, only much more slowly! Once a player has submitted a certain amount of material, the system would award a chest which will has a 99% chance of dropping [Reputation Medal] and a 1% chance to drop other items such as equipment, recipes, [Gem Stone]! The grade of the item could range from Black-Steel to Yellow-Gold!”

“Y-Yellow?! Yellow-Gold?!” Endless Starlight choked.

Zhang Yang laughed. “Don’t get your hopes up that high! I must warn you that the drop rate is only 1%. If you want to have Yellow-Gold tier drops, it might even be at rate of 1 in a million chance!”

“A chance is still a chance, I’d still go for it!” said Endless Starlight. “We have only managed to get 2 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment in 7 days from the Evil Necromancer Zac! How is that enough for us all?!”

Everyone else nodded. Who would not want to get their hands on the best equipment in the game? But the drop rate and the boss’ respawn time simply made it impossible! Still, if it was set to be on an even scale, the equipment would be immensely downgraded like a street goods.

Zhang Yang further explained. “There are 64 major cities in the

world, each of them will have their own respective progress bars for the expedition quest. Whichever city is the first to have their progress bar filled, will be able to send out their Expedition Army! Mind you that this fight will be like a huge, climatic war. When the war starts, there will be waves of monsters appearing from the base. I think it would be at least 10 waves! All waves will spawn an unlimited number of enemies and will be accompanied with a boss. All players must work together and only then we could defeat the monster attack. The NPC army will be joining the battle as well. However, the number of NPC will be negligible. The main attack would still depend on the players!”

Zhang Yang continued to explain. “After all 10 waves are over, the battle will only be over once the enemy general is defeated. Otherwise, the expedition army will sortie again after another 2 days. The first city to successfully defeat the enemy waves and the final general would be awarded with a buff. Everyone in the city will receive a 100% experience boost! Besides that, the top ten players who contributed the most in the war will receive extra reward. It could be Grey-Silver, Yellow-Gold equipments, there could even be a skill book or a skill point!”

“The enemy general will drop a [City Order] at death. The person who obtains the [City Order] could be the Territory owner and also a “Hero of bla bla bla city” title. All repair fees, gem socketing, teleportation will be reduced by 50%! With 64 major cities in the world, the taking of one of them would end the war, and the remaining 63 cities’ Territory would automatically be taken. All monster waves will end, and there will not be any luxurious rewards for the other city’s players.

“After conquering the fortress, the teleportation point of all

major cities will be open to everyone. Player can use these teleportation points to go to any city they want. Banks and auction houses of all eight major cities will share the same information, thus players are not required to go back to their own city to conduct transactions!”

“Following after the battle, the level 50 dungeon, Poison Fireland will be opened. This is a 20-man limit dungeon. Every player will have to raid this dungeon once to complete the level 50 class quest!”

Zhang Yang shrugged his shoulders to relieved himself. “Argh... anyhow, that’s the summary of the <Expedition> patch content!”

“So you’re saying that, we are competing with the other cities in the china server, as well as the global 56 cities as well?!”

“You’re god damn right!”

“After level 50, all players in the china server would share a single map?”

“That’s absolutely correct! Not just one though, many!”

“Well? What are we still standing here for?! Let’s farm some items and be the first city to start the war!”

Zhang Yang nodded. “The item submission quest is not a quest for just one man! Everyone must contribute as well! Hundred

Shots! Daffodil Daydream! I need you to announce in the guild and convey the importance of the Territory battle!”

“Roger!”

“Okay!”

Both Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream nodded. Every else dispersed after Zhang Yang had ended his explanation.

This submission quest was indeed a long and dragging quest! There was no way you can complete it in half a month!

Zhang Yang rode to the Griffin manager and rented a Griffin before flying to Canyon of Scattered Feathers to grind his level to 50.

After 2 days of heavy grinding, Zhang Yang achieved level 50 and equipped the Dragon Tooth Dragon Axe, Lion’s Blood Battle Boots, Limitless Cape, and more level 50 equipment. His attributes had gained another huge upgrade.

HP: 11230

Weapon Attack: (1528-1728) x 105%

Strength: 437

Dexterity: 169

Defense: 420

Damage Absorption: 450!

Zhang Yang had invested all the skill points he had gained at level 50 and the Castle Interior's First Clear Achievement into <Shield Wall>. By then, this skill's cool down was reduced down to only 5.5 minutes!

Zhang Yang tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to White Jade Castle and met up with the class instructor for a new skill.

“Young warrior! Your growth sure was fast! However, the path to strength is a far and harsh journey! Like the flow of the river, if you do not fight the current, you'll only be washed away with it's power. To grow stronger, you have to beat yourself! Now, are you ready to move on?!” Emmy looked rather excited.

Zhang Yang replied. “I'll accept every challenge!”

“That's the spirit! At least you have proven yourself to be fearless!” said Emmy while nodding her head.

‘Ding! You have accepted the quest: Level 50 Class Quest!’

[Level 50 Class Quest] (Difficulty Level: Selectable)

Quest Description: Kill Roshan – Copper Hammer, and prove yourself to be a brave warrior! Roshan – Copper Hammer is now hiding in the Poison Fireland. That place is a dangerous area, so please bring along enough comrades with you in your journey! This quest has 3 Difficulty Level:

Level A, Kill Roshan – Copper Hammer in Hardcore mode.

Level B, Kill Roshan – Copper Hammer in Hard mode.

Level C, Kill Roshan – Copper Hammer in Normal mode.

Progress: Kill Roshan – Copper Hammer 0/1

The hardest level being A and not S? Zhang Yang snickered. By far, only Zhang Yang would know about it. This quest has a hidden option. After killing Roshan, and the hidden boss in the Poison Fireland dungeon, Silica, the Queen of Medusa, the quest would be upgraded to an S level difficulty and so would the reward.

However, the hidden boss was rather hard to defeat. It would take at least 4 to 5 days, or even 10 days' time to properly explore the boss' skill. No party would be willing to spend the time there! Once they have defeated Roshan, they would just submit the quest

and head straight to the maps beyond level 50! No one would be willing to linger in the quest.

Because of that reason, this hidden option remained undiscovered for a long time! Until one day, a high-level player had returned to the area and babysit his recently joined friend and help him defeat Roshan and the hidden boss. Only then, was the hidden option was reveal to the public.

Emmy had only the quest for Zhang Yang and did not grant him any skills. From level 50 onwards, skills that are obtainable from the class instructors will be lesser. Those powerful skills could only be, and exclusively, obtained from skill books.

To complete the Level 50 class quest, he had to wait until the submission quest was completed and take the Territory down, only then the Poison Fireland would be unlocked for him. Zhang Yang encouraged the guild to complete the submission quests while at the same time, pick out the strong players among the weeds in his guild. He tried his best to upgrade the equipment they have.

‘Server Announcement: Player 7 Prosperity Calf had obtained a shiny silver equipment from the Army Chest! He looked at the equipment and it was [Soaring Dragon Sheen Guard]!’

A server announcement was released out of the sudden. The equipment obtained from the player seems to have its properties attached in the text as well.

[Soaring Dragon Sheen Guard] (Gray-Silver, Leather Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +120

Strength: +60

Dexterity: +60

<Level 2 Socket 1>

<Level 2 Socket 2>

Equip Effect: Increases Attack Power by 60.

Level Requirement: 50

Players around were rather agitated and excited by the equipment properties! Should they know, only Hardcore mode dungeon would drop Gray-Silver equipment! Most of the Gray-Silver tiered field boss had already been occupied by guilds. Small guilds and random guild-less players could not even lay their hands on the boss! Since the difficulty of the Hardcore mode was too much, the majority of players around could only return after over exceeding the dungeon by at least 20 to 30 levels.

Who would not want to have good equipment!? Those who did not have a strong party could only stare in envy as they see the shiny equipment on the bodies of other players. Right now, they would not have to raid dungeons or fight a bosses they knew that they could not defeat to obtain the equipment! Just because of that, players around were burning with passion to complete the submission quest as many rounds as they can to obtain equipment! The ridiculously low chances did not hinder them!

The system was rather fair to the players around. As long as a player obtained a Gray-Silver equipment from the chest, the system would announce in the channel to the world! Still, even then the proc rate was extremely low, there were at least 2 billion players around the globe! How low could it be to suppress the sheer number of players opening the chest and proc'ing an equipment? In an instance, the world channel was like a Chinese rolling scroll, scrolling down endlessly as many more players had obtained their own respective Gray-Silver equipment!

The power of a “role model” is truly impressive. This was especially effective when a lucky player proc'ed a Yellow-Gold equipment from the chest! Everyone was even more excited than before when they knew that there was a chance to obtain luxurious items! Even the high ranking officers from super guilds were agitated; they did not have any Yellow-Gold equipment!

Just like that, the entire world was send to a burning fervor!

Dream Technology was not only good at developing the game, but they were also rather smart at marketing! As such many items

were recycle back into the system. Undoubtedly, as the economy of the game flourishes, the game company will earn a massive fortune!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and contacted Han Ying Xue through the voice messenger. “You evil b*tchy snow woman, did you sell yourself to anyone in the Dream Tech? How could you explain the Yellow-Gold equipment from the chest?! The drop rate is insanely low!”

That’s right. The lucky player in the game that had proc’ed a Yellow-Gold equipment was none other than Han Ying Xue.

Han Ying Xue snickered and replied. “Haha! That’s right! I had to sleep with 2 men in one night! Aiyo! They were so rude and rough with me. My breasts are sore from them rubbing it so hard and roughly!”

Zhang Yang could not help but imagine her perky, voluptuous breasts...how would it feel like, having those soft bouncy balls rubbing his d --- Zhang Yang immediately felt hot and steamy. He changed his thoughts. That evil woman really knew what she is doing!

Zhang Yang changed the subject. “What is your Rune Crafting mastery?”

“Aiya! I had completely forgotten about it! Now that you have mention it, I need more level 40+ Black-Steel and Green-Copper equipments! I’m almost reaching Advanced tier now! Help me a

little!”

Zhang Yang dripped cold sweat. “Sister, how many Black-Steel and Green-Copper equipment have you already taken from me now?! It’s been two days now! How can I continue my business while you take all my stocks?!”

Han Ying Xue was the only one in his gang to convert her profession into Rune Craft. Since this particular profession required endless disassembling of equipment to increase their mastery level, the profession required heavy investment! A normal player would not be able to train that high. The profession was mostly brought up by a strong guild!

Han Ying Xue, being who she was with Zhang Yang, did not reserve herself while dealing with Zhang Yang. For the past two days, she had taken many equipment from the shop to disassemble them! Just two days, Han Ying Xue had burned away close to 50,000 gold coins worth of equipment. Ever since the introduction of the profession, the useless equipment had become of some use! Since the disassembled product would be the same, the price for each equipment had risen; indirectly raising the buying and selling price of the Little Merchandise Shop! Furthermore, as many players had taken the Rune Craft profession. Old equipment had become a scarcity in the market. There was high demand with low supply.

Han Ying Xue giggled a little and said, “Dummy! Are you trying to seduce me? Oh you bad boy!”

The way she said that was truly slutty yet alluring. Her words

sent Zhang Yang's blood into a boiling rage, softening every part of his body except for one part!

What a b*tch! What a b*tch! Zhang Yang shook his head hard. "Fine! Fine! Fine! Just take the equipment!"

"Heh. You should have said that earlier. I wouldn't have to waste my sex appeal to attack you!"

Beep!

Han Ying Xue hung up.

It was an unspoken law that every guild had to raise a Rune Crafter. Since the risks and expenses to raise a Rune Crafter was extremely high, each super guild out there had carefully handpicked their members to prevent the cultivated Rune Crafter from jumping!

Han Ying Xue was rather reliable, as it was her and her cousin sister was the one that had built the guild originally. It's rather impossible for her to suddenly quit the guild to join someone else's. Beside, the b*tch was from a wealthy, billionaire family! She merely played the game for the fun of it! To think that other would buy her in using money was rather improbable.

Zhang Yang took out a few [Bandages] and herbs and submitted them to the Expedition Army's manager and obtained 12 [Army Chest]s. He only obtained 12 [Reputation Medals] from all the

chest. It was rather expected and normal for him to obtain only the medals. In fact, it would be considered to be extremely lucky for him to obtain any equipment at all!

Chapter 180: Expedition, Start!

Time flows like the river; in a flash, it was already the end of September and also the completion of the item submission quest!

‘Ding! Players of White Jade Castle! The item submission quest has ended! By the order of the King of the Empire, the Army Expedition will officially start tomorrow at 10am! Please make your preparations for war!’

Everyone in the city received the system notification when the expedition item submission quest was completed.

“Please rest early tonight! Tomorrow is the day we fight in the war! The battle will be extremely draggy! My advice, do not stay up tonight! Rest well and be ready to fight a lengthy war!” Zhang Yang posted in the guild notice.

After the efforts of both Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream, Lone Desert Smoke had begun to display a professional guild’s behavior. At least, for now, Zhang Yang could still control the members’ actions to a certain level.

With the call from Sky High guild master, Sky Shaman, he called for a meeting for all big and small guilds to gather and discuss about the incoming war. All 63 guild masters sat together and had come to an agreement. Clearly, everyone treated this Expedition quest as their first priority. After all, it’s for the glory of White Jade Castle, their own city!

Now that the official statement had been released in the official website, almost everyone had understood the details of the incoming war. In summary, survive and defeat all 10 waves of monsters and dominate the enemy base Territory! The battle will be hard, but the rewards will be worthwhile. According to the explanation, each minion will have a 10% chance to drop a Black-Steel equipment. Elite monsters will have a 5% chance to drop a Green-Copper equipment. And after each wave, there will be a boss that will drop a Gray-Silver equipment! There will be a chance for a Yellow-Gold boss to appear in the field as well!

However, each wave of minion will only have one boss, after all and all, there will be only 10 bosses in total. With such a low supply for so many players, the meeting between the guild masters went on and on as everyone discussed on how to properly distribute the chances to fight the boss. Without a proper arrangement, everyone will race with each other to kill the boss; a first come first served tactic leading to the demise of all!

After a thorough discussion, for the benefit of all, everyone had finally came to a decision that each guild will arrange their own positions in the battle ground and protect their own. When the boss appears in the field, whichever side that the boss appears to will automatically claim the right.

Without the guild's consent of invitation, other guilds shall not interfere with the boss fight! If any guilds broke the rule, they will make themselves public enemy number one!

Zhang Yang contacted Snow Seeker and Crimson Fire. Since they were his allies to begin with, they should watch each other's backs

in the war! In the war, unless there is a player with a Celestial-tier equipment in the battle, everyone's strength in the war would amount to nothing without team work.

The 3 guild masters discuss and agree that in tomorrow's war, that all 3 guilds would form a single defensive formation and protect each other!

The next day was October the 1st, which was also 3 month after the launching of the game. Today is the day the Expedition Army sortie out!

‘Ding! Players of White Jade Castle! The Expedition Army will sortie in one hour! Please pick up your swords and shields, the time to fight for the Alliance has come!’

Zhang Yang combined all 9000 and more players in the guild and formed 9 massive parties. Each thousand-man party will have one leader and 20 sub leaders. Each sub party will answer to the main leader and those main leaders will answer to Zhang Yang, forming an organized chain of command.

By then, players would not have to deal with the measly trouble of boarding a Griffin to travel all the way to the battle ground. One hour later, when the Expedition Army sorties, the Teleportation Circle will appear. An extra-large Teleportation Portal will immediately send the players to the battle ground.

One hour later...

‘Ding! Players of White Jade Castle, please head to the Teleportation Circle to join the front lines! This historical battle awaits your arrival!’

Zhang Yang commanded his “troops” to stand by and let the crazy, bloodthirsty fanatics go through the portal first. Until 10 minutes later, when the number of players has substantially decreased, Zhang Yang pulled out his battle axe and cried out loud. “For victory!”

“FOR VICTORY, HURRAH!”

Now that Lone Desert Smoke had reached level 2, as long as players in the guild were at level 35 or more, they could go to the guild shop and buy themselves a [Storm and Gale Direwolf]! The majority of Lone Desert Smoke member were already riding on the back of their own magnificent and grand Direwolf, threading lightly through the portal and into a strange new land.

They appeared at the slope of a small hillside. Not far ahead was the army, with the flag flapping against the squall. The army was huddled together in a long stretching defense line and measured almost 10km far. Further ahead, about 500 meters north of where they were, stood a massive fortress that was built along the hills. The fortress was the only thing between White Jade Castle and the outside world!

The fortress of the enemy was affixed with many magic canons! Those contraptions were so strong that it could easily flatten, obliterate, smash, crush everyone at their current level!

Zhang Yang swiftly contacted Snow Seeker and Crimson Fire. The three massive guilds quickly group together and form a massive, 30,000 player alliance.

‘Ding! The war will start in 30 minutes! Once the battle starts, the Teleportation Portal will close! Players who falls defeat can only revived in White Jade Castle and would no longer be able to participate in the war! Players must assist the Expedition Army to defend against 10 waves of enemy attacks. The Expedition will fail once all players are killed. After enduring all 10 waves of monsters, the Empire’s Dragon Riders will sortie and join the war to destroy the enemy magic cannons. Defeating the enemy fortress’ Demon General Nexxar will result in victory!’

‘Ding! The system will record every single player’s contribution in the war and will select top 10 players with the highest contribution and award them with luxurious rewards! Rewards will only be distributed if players wins the war!’

‘Ding! Nexxar will drop [City Order] on death. Players who obtained the [City Order] will become the fortress owner and gained the rights to it. The player will also gain the title ‘Hero of White Jade Castle’!’

‘Ding! The Expedition will start over again in two days if players lose the war!’

Some of the player were getting impatient as the read through the system notification. One by one they shouted and screamed.

“Kill dem son of b*itches now! What are we waiting for? If we take down the fortress now! We will win the war! Why do we have to wait for waves of monster?!”

Small party of players rushed towards the fortress.

BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!

The cannon blasted from the fortress and killed all players that had stepped too far away from the defense line.

Being killed by monsters would not have any experience point deduction penalty. However, it will cost you're your equipment endurance! The repair fees were expensive!

Seeing is believing; and when other players and seen what if to become of them if they rushed into the warzone, so each of them quietly waited for the waves of monster.

Zhang Yang switched to the party channel and said, “Note that when you die in the war, that will be the end of it. You cannot get anything anymore, not experience, not loots, nothing. That is why you must fight to stay alive! The amount of equipment dropped from monsters is not as important as the experience they could give out! This is a good chance to raise your level quickly! Furthermore, there is a Yellow-Gold boss! I don't care about a Gray-Silver boss! But we must grab that Yellow-Gold boss!”

‘Ding! The war will start in 20 minutes! Once the battle starts...’

The system notification pops out again to remind the players the time they had left to prepare.

‘Ding! Server Announcement: Longainer City army had started the war!’

The world channel announced a message.

Han Ying Xue and the rest of the party was rather baffled by the announcement and asked. “Zhan Yu, where is this Longainer city? How could they have started the war that quick?”

Zhang Yang thought about it a while and explained. “I think its somewhere in the European country. Ah. Players from Longiner City are mostly from North Europe!”

“Ahh. North European...I see. That place is doing quite well. Most players are otakus anyway! That is why even with lesser players, they could still proceed with the quest rather quickly.”

North Europe’s society welfare was rather well during then. Many of those unemployed citizens could easily live comfortably as those who were employed, by using their government welfare funds. That was why the number of [NEETs](#) were rather high.

With someone already on their tails, players from White Jade Castle were rather agitated. Afterall, this was would determine the

standing of each city! Anyone would want to fight for their own city's honor and glory!

‘Ding! The war will start in 10 minutes...’

‘Ding! The war will start in 5 minutes...’

Zhang Yang walked to the front of “his army” and cried out. “The first few waves of monsters are rather easy to fight! We should stand in the front line and fight. We have many healers here so it should be fine! NPCs cannot receive any heals from players! So, we should let them handle the later waves! All Guardians, Defenders follow me! We shall stand in the front line!”

With both Snow Seeker's and Crimson Fire's agreements, Zhang Yang had been selected to lead all 3 guilds.

Thousands of players followed Zhang Yang to the front and went even further ahead of the NPC army. The front most position was filled with Guardians and Defenders forming a solid defense line. Behind them were the attacking classes and behind them were the healers and supporters. Zhang Yang had even commanded all melee attackers to stay behind the defense line to protect all ranged attackers and healers. They were tasked to kill off any monster and had made it through the defense line.

When other guilds saw how Zhang Yang had form his defense line, they began to mimic his strategy. While some of them had followed Zhang Yang's arrangement, other cowered behind the NPC, some even went as far as the slope's peak! Obviously, they

wanted to take advantage of the NPC to take on all monster's firepower and play it safe.

This method, was clearly represented by The Dominators! Not only had they hidden behind the NPC army, they too had gone back to the slope's peak! It's not that they wanted to remain at the slope. They could not withdraw any further since there was an invisible wall that prevented them to do so.

Standing at the top of the slope, Humbly Gentleman looked down onto Zhang Yang and grinned. "Hmph. Dumb prick. Do you really want to play hero that badly? Heh! I shall see who squirms in pain when he dies!"

A player standing next to him spoke out. "Boss. Isn't it better for them to burn into dust? Who else can compete for the contribution rank with us? Hmph, I say, all bosses will belong to us, The Dominators!"

Humbly Gentleman laughed. "You're god damn right! This is what I would call, [making a wedding dress for someone else!](#)"

"As expected of our brilliant boss! Besides, I've even seen people wearing wedding dresses but not for their wedding! They say we learn as we live and we can use that knowledge as we grow! Truly magnificent!" That underlings knew that Humbly Gentleman was just saying things that he did not know, or rather, Humbly Gentleman was a man with little knowledge of the world, yet his underlings would still kiss his ass for it.

Humbly Gentleman looked at his underling with much appreciation and satisfaction.

‘Ding! The war will start in 1 minute!’

‘Ding! The war will start in 30 seconds!’

10, 9, 8...

3!

2!

1!

A war horn was heard.

‘Ding! Battle start!’

‘Ding! The first wave of monster has started to come out from Tukulo Fortress!’

With system notification, the door to the fortress opened and countless of blue apparitions rushed out of it like water from a dam! Most of the monsters were at least 2 meters in size yet a few of them were as tall as 10 meters tall, fairly visible among the crowd of monsters. The smaller ones were normal monsters while

the big ones were obviously elites.

[Apparition Guard] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 51

HP: 5,100

Defense: 50

[Apparition Killer] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 51

HP: 100,00

Defense: 300

After the implementation of the patch <Expedition>, players can now check the monsters Defense value.

Zhang Yang raised his shield and sword and cried out. “Protect the front line! Stand your ground!”

“PROTECT THE FRONT LINE!”

“HURRAH!”

“Kill!”

As thousands of voices screaming out their battle cry, a strong aura was permeating from everyone, influencing the nearby player to be as passionate and eventually, the entire field was radiating with strong zeal!

“GO GO GO!”

“KILL!”

Zhang Yang cried. “Let’s kick some ass!”

“WOOOOAHHHH!”

Thousands replied his cry.

THUD! THUD! THUD!

Marching sound was heard as the monster was approaching the players.

BOOM!

The first strike was unleashed, marking the first attack of the war!

NEET – Not under Employment, Education, nor Training. Refers to young people who were jobless and were not looking for a job.

Wedding Dress – This phrase is a common idiom in china. It describes someone else putting in effort for someone else's sake. Here, Humbly Gentleman used the phrase to describe Zhang Yang doing all the work whilst Humbly Gentleman stands there waiting for the opportunity to grab all the glory.

Chapter 181: First Wave

The tanks in the front line has formed a rigid, impregnable defense line, while the ranged attackers standing behind them had started to cast their AoE skills at the monsters that were grouped tightly together!

Zhang Yang cast <Horizontal Sweep> and dealt more than '3200+' damage to all monster in the semi-circular area in front of him. He then stomped the ground and cast <Thunder Strike> dealing another '444' damage! Wham! <Blast Wave> was cast and a similar '444' damage was dealt.

In this chaotic situation, all skills and attack could only be cast upon instinct, not anticipation of the enemy's actions. As a tank, he must stand his ground firmly without moving around. He needed to make sure that no monsters could get pass him or else they would threaten the attackers standing behind. The number of monsters were pouring in like tsunami in the ocean. No one knew exactly how many monsters are there behind the front line! How much could a single tank handle? Only a full battalion of tank could do so much.

While the monsters around Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage were blocked off, not all player were able to perform just as strong as them. Other side of the warzone, monsters had already penetrated the player defense line and had clashed with the NPC army.

The sound of war echoed throughout the field, clashing and banging of metal against metal. This is the true opening of the full-

scale warfare in 'God's Miracle'!

With the level 50 Yellow-Gold Dragon Tooth Battle Axe in his hand, a full Gray-Silver tier equipment clad his body, coupled with the 50% defense negation passive, even as a tank, Zhang Yang's damage output was overwhelmingly devastating! Especially when he had use <Horizontal Sweep>, he could easily deal 3200 or more damage and 6400+ if it was a critical strike! If he got a Lucky strike, his damage will burst out with a 9600+ damage. It was enough to trigger a heart attack to anyone who witness his power!

Is...is this motherf*cker really a Guardian?!

Tanks regardless of class had one unique AoE skill for themselves. A Guardian had <Thunder Strike> while a Defender had <Devotion>. Defenders also had <Spike Shield> which only trigger when one was attacked. Zhang Yang was an odd ball among all tanks, as other than <Thunder Strike> he also had <Horizontal Sweep> and <Blast Wave>!

In a fight like this, with tanks standing in the front line with that many attacks, their Rage would be built up without limit and they could just simple cast all their skills once the cool down finishes. With <Horizontal Sweep> alone, Zhang Yang had already on par with Spellcasters and Hunters in terms of damage. Adding on <Thunder Strike> and <Blast Wave> to the equation Zhang Yang had long exceeded the rest of the attack and became the strongest attacker in the field. He was obviously ranked first in the contribution list and left the second ranked player far behind.

Contribution points were measured in attacks dealt and also

healing amount. To balance the contribution measurement, tanks would have a bonus counting system that would multiple the damage deal by a certain amount to balance the low damage tanks.

However, Zhang Yang had nothing to do with the regular low damaging tanks! This guy's damaging power was like an apache attack helicopter. Bom Bom Bang Bang! This guy would drop hell from above when you least expect it! How would his contribution point be low?!

The two other tanks who were standing next to Zhang Yang was rather bored since all the monster that approached them only targeted Zhang Yang instead. Their own roles were lessened by a notch and had only to make sure the line remained impregnable to monsters. They would only need to make sure Zhang Yang was not surrounded and to kill off any other enemy that risked breaking past the line, putting the healers and attackers in danger.

Apparition Guards had a basic attack of around 1000, and when they attacked Zhang Yang, he would only receive 20+ damage after deducting his Defense value, 20% damage reduction, and the equipment own 450 damage absorption effect! Only around 10 monsters could attack Zhang Yang in one instant; and all those attacks were only just petty tickle to Zhang Yang!

When the Apparition Killer appeared, Zhang Yang gathered his concentration and fought seriously. Even though the number of these elites were just a few, when one struck hit Zhang Yang, he was received more than 800 damage in one strike. Han Ying Xue quickly cast a <Regeneration> and went on her way.

Others where not as strong as Zhang Yang with Han Ying Xue the super healer supporting his all the way, when the battle had only started not too long ago, many front-line tanks had fallen and allowed many monsters to spill into the crowd of players. Now it was the chance to let other attacks such as the Berserkers, Bandits, Templars and other melee attacking class to shine. All of them rushed to meet the monsters and killed them all. Even without a tank to hold the monster's aggro, a beautiful woman would automatically attract man; and good monsters would attract players to attack! Elite or not, this Apparition Killer had 100,000 HP, but it was still killed off by 10 over players in only 10 seconds or so. The monsters could not even kill a single player!

The NPC army were not just sitting ducks there doing nothing while Zhang Yang and the rest of the tanks were fighting with their might. The monsters that were attacking from the front could not trigger the NPC army behind the defense line, but once the monster had broken through the tanks and headed for the ranged attackers, the NPC army would initiate their attacks on them monster and help the players.

The monster kept on pouring in endlessly; and when one bunch was killed, another would take its place! The cycle would only repeat endlessly! Luckily, the sheer amount of experience points provided by the monster were so much that many golden lights kept on flashing on and on; players were gaining levels here and there. The level 20 to 30 players that had joined this battle were definitely in for a treat!

While the monsters around gave out precious experience points, they would also drop equipment. Even though the drop rate of 10% was rather low, but the sheer number of monsters made up for it,

the floor was filled with many Black-Steel equipment and a few Green-Copper equipment as well! Since the battle ground was still filled with monsters, no one actually dared to step forward to pick up the loots. Only the equipment that were lying around between the players crowd could be picked up; they were dropped by monsters that had broken through the defense line.

50 minutes later...

‘Ding! The first wave boss Bangla has appeared!’

Along with the system notification, a large, 50-meter-tall giant flying Apparition appeared in the field. The minions stopped spawning.

[Bangla] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 51

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 600

“F*ck! 10,000,000 HP?! It’s just a Gray-Silver boss! Look at that Defense! 600?! How do you expect us to kill it?! I have only a level 40 Gray-Silver equipment and only 1200-1400 damage! I would only hit with less than 50% of my original power!” Fatty Han cried

out as he check the boss' properties.

Zhang Yang laughed. "This is rather normal! Look at how many players we have right now! If the boss did not have that much HP, wouldn't he die after 2 to 3 seconds?"

Fatty Han nodded. The number of player participating in this war could easily exceed 2,000,000 players! However, not everyone could damage the boss at where they stood. At most, only 100 to 200 players could attack the boss in the same time, it could be a rather fast kill too!

"Noob tank! Let's get that boss!" Wei Yan Er squealed.

"There are still many monsters around here! We can't just rush out even if we want to! Keep an eye at where will the boss go!" Zhang Yang smashed a <Destructive Smash> and instantly killed many monsters around him with a critical strike!

The boss' movement speed was not all that fast; it took him forever just to move 500 meters. By the time the boss had arrived, players had already killed most of the Apparition Guards around. By then, battle cries from players could be heard filling the air.

"Kill the boss!"

"WOOAHHH"

When Zhang Yang had noticed many players rushing over to the

boss, he had immediately called out to his guild mates via the guild channel. “Don’t rush to the boss just yet. Any boss that appears in full scale war like this would definitely be strong as f*ck. Don’t throw away your life! Take this chance and get all the equipment that belong to us!”

In that instant, as if those players were trying to prove Zhang Yang was right, most of the player that had rushed over to the boss had gained its aggro. The boss waved its right arm and a huge black hole appeared among the rowdiest players.

‘-4000!’ ‘-4000!’ ‘-4000!’

Players that were standing on the hole received continuous damage every 2 seconds, instantly killing most of the players there! Those that were still rushing into the fight and suddenly pulled the handbrakes and turned around, running away like they saw their ex-wives chasing them with a knife.

The slow and sluggish boss had suddenly moved around with such agility, as if the steroids that he had taken earlier had finally kicked in. One by one, the boss chased after the players and killed them by summoning more black holes. Eventually, without much effort, the boss had killed off most of the players that had rushed over earlier.

Those players that arrived slightly later had gratefully thanked their own tardiness. If they had rushed in along with the earlier players, they would have joined them in their death. Everyone took the chance and rushed to the other way and picked up the loots and equipment on the floor. If the items were left on the floor

un-looted, they will disappear along with the monster's corpse after a fixed duration.

In an instant, players around would not step forward anymore. In fact, no guild would dare to make the first move to attack! When a boss appeared, it was just too strong for any random guild to take on! Secondly, every guild master had already come to an agreement about the boss. It was the boss to decide whom shall claim his loots! With much haste, the boss had entered Sky High's defense line.

Sky High guild master, and also the main tank of the guild, Sky Shaman, a Dwarf Guardian, had quickly gathered 20 other well-equipped tanks to join him to tank Bangla. Behind them were ten and more healers supporting the tanks. Within seconds, Sky Shaman had successfully hold onto the boss aggro and the ranged attackers from Sky High had started their assault. Their melee attackers had all stood back, preparing themselves from getting hit by the boss devastating AoE attack.

The boss had the extremely thick 600 Defense value, not only that, it also had a similarly strong Magical Defense as well. Even with 5 layers of <Cripple Defense> on it, most players' attacks were already reduced by 40% since their equipment were at level 40 Green-Copper and their character level was only at level 45; their damage was only around 500 over.

Those player that with that standard of level and equipment were the majority of all the players in this war. After all, not many could get their hands on the level 30 or level 40 Gray-Silver equipment!

90%, 80%...

Bangla's HP was just too much for them to handle. Even though they had several hundred players surrounding the boss attacking, the HP bar was dropping at an extremely slow pace! Sky Shaman was clearly holding onto the boss aggro firmly but yet it could still toss a black hole among the crowd from time to time. As long as players were gathered closely together, they would be killed without being able to dodge the skill in time.

When Bangla's HP had been reduced down to 30%, Sky High had already lost more than a few hundred players. However, if there were no other unexpected incidents occurring, the boss should eventually fall to Sky High.

Chapter 182: Shameless Pricks

Just as everything was going smoothly, The Dominators started to rush towards the boss!

The moment The Dominators initiated a move, countless of guild-less players, as well as guilds that were too small to even participate in the guild master's meeting yesterday, all poured in after them.

Due to the status of Sky High as a Chinese Super Guild, many did not want to get on to their bad side, and had respectfully kept their distance, leaving the boss to them. But as they saw the similarly ranked Dominators charging in, nefarious thoughts, rising up from human nature, took over their minds.

If they were to join the fight, it would be like vultures picking clean the bones of carcasses left as remnant's of a lion's meal....

Facing the swarm of players, Sky High, acted in manner fit for a professional guild. Some of the players broke off from the boss fight, quickly forming a circular defense line. Thousands remained with the boss, hacking for all they were worth. These vultures would have to go through the defense line, if they wanted the boss!

The atmosphere turned dreadfully hostile in an instant.

Sky Shaman cried out. "Hypocrite! You f*cking bastard, do you want to KS the boss??"

Humbly Gentleman smiled gently and laughed. “Sky Shaman. Which pair of eyes told you that we’ve even touched the boss?! Can’t we just come closer and witness your strength from the front rows?”

Sky Shaman silently muttered to himself.

Watching the boss’ HP starting to drop, the smaller guilds started to feel the anxiety. Slowly, one by one, they started launching attacks. It was not like they were attacking Sky High players, they simply wanted to land a strike on the boss!

In ‘God’s Miracle’, the system will register a player as part of the attacking force. Being registered as an attacker would grant anyone a chance to obtain the battle loots! When the boss falls, anyone could run to the area and take the loots if they were registered as such!

With the smaller guilds starting to attack, the random players around joined in and started to attack the players from Sky High.

Sky High is strong. Their average player level was rather high! With proper equipment and skill, they could be described as a strong lion! Those smaller guilds would never be on par with Sky High. Despite their best efforts, they were like hunting hounds at most!

A single hound may be useless while facing a lion, but if say...5 or 6, or perhaps 10 to 20 hounds attacked a lion? The outcome would

be different!

Just like that, the defense line formed by members of Sky High was broken. A large number of players started to break through their defense and landed hits on the boss! As long as they could land a hit, they would be able to pick up the drops! That was, if they were still standing when the boss is killed!

“Noob tank! Should we KS the boss as well?” Wei Yan Er nudged Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang smiled. “Let it be! That’s just a level 50 Gray-Silver boss. The drops will be nothing compared to anything that is Yellow-Gold tiered! We already shook on a deal with Sky High. There will be no KSing of each other’s bosses. Why would I jeopardize our good relationship for a mere Gray-Silver boss?!”

“Oh!”

Zhang Yang and his little merry band of friends had already defeated a level 40 Gray-Silver boss and a level 50 Yellow-Gold boss! None of them had any desire to fight Bangla ever since they tasted the blood of far greater foes.

That being said, if The Dominators up and KSed the boss, Zhang Yang would surely bring a few men into the fray! If you ever attempt to communicate diplomatically with Humbly Gentleman, you may as well be playing catch with a wall!

Pouncing on the opportunity, The Dominators made their move. Through the gaps that other players have made, they made their way through to the boss.

“Brother Sky Shaman, I have brought along my brothers from The Dominators! Do not fret! With two guilds working together, I’m sure we can punish these unlawful players!” cried Humbly Gentleman as he commanded his underlings to attack the boss.

Sky Shaman was so infuriated that he could feel the rage in him rising up like hot bile! Could anyone go lower than this scum!? It was this bugger himself who brought his men here! Others had taken advantage of the situation and made it worse! Those smaller guilds and random players could not have known what the bigger guilds had already carried out a meeting prior to this! Of course they would be driven to this point when Humbly Gentleman made a decisive move!

In the end, Humbly Gentleman is just here to KS the boss, on the premise of ‘helping’ them fight off the other players! This f*cking hypocrite had gone even lower than what Sky Shaman could ever imagine!

Sky Shaman bellowed angrily. “You shameless prick! F*ck all 18 generations of your ancestors!”

Humbly Gentleman laughed it off. “All 18 generations have already turned to dust in the earth! Feel free to f*ck them if you want. I’m afraid that you might not find any holes for your little d*ck.”

Sky Shaman was rendered wordless. How could he face someone as shameless as him? To argue with this humongous ass*le would only cause him to vomit blood! Sky Shaman could only command the guild members to kill anyone close to the boss, preventing other players from grabbing the loot.

There were many players around, but Sky High had no problem dealing with the boss. On the contrary, the boss was killing players off at even faster pace! The boss swung a gigantic arm and cast many black holes everywhere. The entire area was almost engulfed in black dye, instantly killing countless players around!

Wei Yan Er pouted her lips and said, “Look at those petty players. It’s like they have never seen a boss in their life before! It’s just a level 51 Gray-Silver boss! It will only drop level 50 Gray-Silver weapons at most. It’s not like it’s going to drop any Yellow-Gold stuff!”

Zhang Yang shook his head and laughed at her. “Little brat! We just only fought Zac a few days ago and got some Level 50 Yellow-Gold and Gray-Silver equipment for ourselves! To them, a level 50 Gray-Silver equipment is by far, the best equipment they have ever seen!”

Han Ying Xue sighed and said, “Curiosity killed the cat; greed killed humans!”

Fatty Han opened his mouth to say something. But before he could speak, he turned around to glance at Sun Xin Yu and turned

back again quietly and silently. His face looked like he was holding in a massive turd; twisted up to look extremely uncomfortable and full of pain.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and said, “Fatty, if you have something to say, just say it. It’s not like it’s our first time listening to your crap!”

“Men would die for his d*ck, Woman would die for ...”

BAM!

Before he could finish his sentence, everyone close enough had already smacked his head.

“The boss is about to die!”

Amidst the chaos, someone had screamed out loud. Non-tank players who had fallen back after throwing in a hit or two were already charging back in, getting ready to fight for the boss’ drops.

“MA LA BA SHI DA!” Bangla cried out and his huge body blew up, dealing massive damage to every player within a 20 meters radius. It then turned into a paper-talisman which dropped onto the floor. Similarly around the area, many equipment were dropped.

When the boss was killed, the explosion had killed off all non-tank players. Only a few higher HP tanks remained around the corpse. Sky Shaman reacted quickly and picked the loots as fast as

he could.

When the rest of the players around tried to pick the items, they quickly noticed that the items were not entering their inventories. “Guild leader! Switch to free-pick mode! Don’t use Leader Distribution mode!”

Whenever a super guild like Sky High attempts to kill a boss, most parties would choose to use Leader Distribution mode to pick the items. This was to prevent spies in their own guilds from running off with the items! Sky Shaman was the guild master of Sky High, and naturally, the party leader of the entire network of parties. However, the tanks from other guilds would not necessarily be party leaders. Even though members of the party had the right to pick up items, only the party leader would have the authority to distribute the items. When that happens, they could only wait for the leader to make the decision!

By the time the other parties had switched the distribution mode to free-pick, Sky High had already looted most of the equipment around, leaving only a handful of Green-Copper equipment around for the others.

What a bloody waste! They had lost so many players and because of one small detail, they had wasted their efforts for only 1 or 2 Green-Copper equipment! What a huge let down.

Zhang Yang had been laughing hard on the other side of the warzone.

Once the boss was defeated, other guilds started to disperse. With 9 more waves of monsters coming up, it was not a good time to start a civil war. To put matters into perspective, while KSing the boss, close to 3000 players had died.

Even though Sky Shaman had managed to loot most of the drops, he remained in a foul mood. He turned to The Dominators and screamed, “Hypocrites! When this is over, I will personally bring my own army to destroy you!”

Even though Sky High was a strong guild, The Dominators were not weak. Humbly Gentleman replied immediately. “Sky High! What are you getting all work up for?! I brought my troops to help you! How could you not recognize the deed that I had done!?”

“Bullshit!” Sky Shaman cried. “If you had not brought your f*cking men down here, none of the random players would have attack! F*ck you! I had clearly saw what you had did! I’m KSing the next boss you fight, and if I don’t, I’m f*cking deleting my account!”

Humbly Gentleman scolded back. “Shy Shaman! You’re such a petty little man! I helped you out, with good intentions! But you would bite me back after what all that, like a rabid dog! What on earth has happened to you!”

“Holy...” Fatty Han nearly slipped and fell. “Isn’t...isn’t that just too shameful for him to be saying it out loud?”

Zhang Yang shook his head sadly. He did not know Humbly

Gentleman well enough, and never would have imagined the level of indecency that man was capable of!

Sky Shaman was filled with pure rage. If he had not been a guild master of a super guild, having to maintain his status and protect his guild’s interest, he would have already thrown down the order to kill everyone from The Dominators!

‘Ding! The second wave of monsters have started to come out of Tukulo Fortress!’

Just 30 minutes after Bangla’s defeat, the system beeped again and countless red colored monsters started to emerge out of the fortress. The march of the little red devils could easily be seen with the naked eye as the monsters were easily distinguishable via the dangerous, red color that one would associate with disaster. The monsters that emerged out were mostly red devils, approximately 1 meter in height. While the lesser few were at least 3 meters tall, darker in color. They were obviously the elite.

[Little Devil] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 52

HP: 5,200

Defense: 50

[Malevolent Little Devil] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 52

HP: 100,000

MP: 40,000

Defense: 300

Zhang Yang immediately shouted out his orders. “Regroup! Now! Prepare for the next wave!”

Scattered members from Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage, and Lost Paradise converged quickly and reformed the defense line. Tanks and ranged attackers got to their positions while healers prepared themselves for support.

As the sea of red monsters approached closer with every passing second, the tense atmosphere in the air grew heavier. Anxiety, worry, and dread grew to a fever pitch.

Zhang Yang activated <Blood Rage> and gained 30 Rage. With that, he activated <Horizontal Sweep> and swung his sword with brute strength, dealing more than 3000+ damage to all monsters

nearby.

Several “-3000!” damage texts popped out, displaying such devastating power to those around him, rousing their morale.

While Zhang Yang was ditching out bombastic damage, he was only receiving menial, petty damage from the monsters.

“-29!”

“-32!”

“-24!”

While Zhang Yang was dealing super-crazy-high damage to countless monsters around, he had only received cat scratches from them. It was estimated from all the collective damage, that by average, he was receiving about 30 damage per monster.

“-1552!”

In an instant, a huge <Fire Ball> came flying through the air and blasted Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang turned around swiftly and retraced the direction of the projectile, finding that the attack came from a Malevolent Little Devil. Unlike those little devils, the elite monsters were magical attack types! To make things worse, the monster’s attack

range was really far; to be able to strike Zhang Yang from 20 meters away! In between the elite monster and Zhang Yang was a crowd full of monsters cramped up together, forming their own version of defensive line, allowing the monster behind to cast its spells away without any worry.

Zhang Yang cried out to Hundred Shots. “Hundred Shots! Get over here!”

Hundred Shots listened and complied. He made his way from all the way back to where Zhang Yang was.

“What’s up?”

“See that tall one there? I need you to attack that Elite monster and kite him towards me!”

“Roger that!”

Hundred Shots immediately went ahead and shot the monster. Once Hundred Shots had managed to draw the attention of the elite monster, it turned towards him and fired a <Fire Ball>.

“-2500!”

Hundred Shots spontaneously turned and ran back, kiting the monster closer to where Zhang Yang could start his assault. Being out of the firing range, the monster’s spell was interrupted and it was forced to move closer.

Zhang Yang immediately cast <Provoke> and forced the Malevolent Little Devil to change its target to Zhang Yang. The monster stopped mid-stride and immediately started chanting a spell.

<Crash Magic>!

Zhang Yang successfully stopped the spell from casting and also inflicted a <Silence> effect for 3 seconds; preventing the monster from casting any other skills within the debuff duration. Unable to use its regular magical attack, the monster resort to using its claw to attack.

o!

As a magic type monster, the Malevolent Little Devil had only around 500 physical attack damage. After going through his defense and passive skills, Zhang Yang literally felt nothing!

With the massive party's attack, the monster's 100,000 HP was nothing to be concerned about. Within seconds, the party took down the monster effortlessly.

Once the second wave of monsters attacked, the classes which did the most damage were Spellcasters. They were the naturally AoE killers; with <Rain of Fire> or <Hail Storm> being able to inflict more damage than a Hunter's <Barrage>! However, the one major disadvantage was that all Spellcasters would require MP to cast any skills! Naturally, AoE spells were the ones that consumed the most

MP! At most, a Spellcaster could only cast around 10 AoE spells before needing to withdraw from the front line to restore their MP. However, in battle mode, players could not just sit down to nibble on recovery snacks. To recover HP or MP, they could only depend on Spirit and MP potions, which were rather inefficient.

This time, it was the Hunters who could display their strength since they depended on Focus points to cast skills. Focus recovered at a constant rate of 10 points per second; Hunters would be able to fight as long as they needed to, as long as they had sufficient arrows in their inventory.

A Spellcaster's damage skills could easily exceed a Hunter's in a short period of time, however, once the fight drags on for longer, Hunters would easily catch up with overall damage output. If a Spellcaster wore equipment with high Spirit attribute, they could match evenly with a Hunter in terms of total damage output.

As the war continued on for 40 minutes, the monster that were coming out from the Fortress started to decline. However, the number of elites in the warzone were starting to increase in frequency, from 100 normal monsters per 1 elite, to 10 normal monsters per 1 elite.

The pressure of the war has increased dramatically as more and more players were starting to die off. If 7 or 8 Malevolent Little Devils were to attack simultaneously, even Zhang Yang would be roasted to a crisp.

Zhang Yang cried out. "BACK! BACK! WITHDRAW! LET THE NPC'S TAKE THE FRONTLINE!"

Chapter 183: Nazghoul

Those who had low HP could easily retreat and heal back up, but those who were dead could only watch the event from White Jade Castle! It's time to let the NPCs to take one for the team!

All 3 guilds fell back and made way for the rushing NPC army to take the lead in the war.

A knight in shining armor, riding a white horse rushed to the head of the army and cried, "Soldiers of White Jade Castle! Fight for the Empire! Fight for your nation!"

"HURRAH!!"

With a sudden strong war cry, the NPC army rushed forward and charge into the monster army.

Zhang Yang bellowed. "Kill the demons!"

"Woohoo!"

Zhang Yang's approach to using the NPC army at his disposal was rather different compared to the others. In contrast, at the other side of the battlefield, many other players had been cowering behind the army's back, letting the NPCs take the brunt of the damage. By then, after two waves of monsters, their NPC army had been reduced by half, with the surviving ones left with very little HP.

With the NPC army at the front line, Zhang Yang's side had it easy now. Working together with the NPCs, the players on this side of the battlefield were having a much easier time at killing the incoming threats. The pressure was significantly lessened.

50 minutes into the war.

‘Ding! The second wave boss Nazghoul has appear!’

The system notification rang and a huge, 20-meter-tall demon spawned. It was extremely distinguishable as its entire body was red in color. The demon strode towards the players, creating strong tremors as each step hit the earth!

The smaller demons had stopped spawning.

[Nazghoul] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 52

HP: 12,000,000

Defense: 500

“WTF?! What a big ass monster. Is that still considered a demon?

I thought demons were mostly human sized.” said Endless Starlight as he saw the monster approaching. “If that’s the case, then we are the ones who are mini-sized!”

Be it by luck, or chance, whatever you call it, Naghoul was heading straight for Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang turned around and cried out to his charges. “Prepare to fight the boss! Remember the strategy! Move and spread out!”

All players from the 3 guilds started to move around to form a huge net like formation to surround the boss. The net consisted of 2 circular formations with the inner circle prepared to fight the boss and the outer circle ready to fight off other players that intended to KS the boss! With all 3 guilds working together, excluding Lost Paradise, Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage were recognized super guilds, no players would dare to even try KSing the boss, unless The Dominators and Sky High actually formed an alliance to defeat them.

After all, everybody belonged to White Jade Castle. If you did not bump into them at one particular street, you would eventually bump into to them on another. If they wanted to try fighting for the boss, they would have to measure their own capability first!

<Charge>!

Zhang Yang set off like a gust wind and collided with the boss. Zhang Yang used <Blood Rage> and gained 30 Rage. He then immediately cast <Destructive Smash> and <Cripple Defense>.

Spouting some random gibberish, Nazghoul cried and begun to move both its claws around like a tai-chi master. Apparently it was trying to cast a <Fire Ball>.

“-3552!”

BOOM!

The <Fire Ball> blasted Zhang Yang directly, causing rather significant damage. That was not all, the <Fire Ball> seemed to have an AoE effect that caused a fan of fire to spread 3 meters around Zhang Yang. A few other tanks who were close to Zhang Yang had received around 4000 damage.

Nazghoul’s <Fire Ball> attack power was at around 5000. With the AoE effect of the attack, other tanks had taken 450 more damage than Zhang Yang since they did not possess any equipment that had damage absorption ability.

Zhang Yang took note of that and quickly made a decision. “All melee attackers move to the boss’s back! Make sure everyone stays at least 3 meters away from me!”

Bang Bang Boom Boom!

All elite players from 3 guilds started their attacks ferociously.

After 5 layers of <Cripple Defense>, the boss still had 300 Defense, but Zhang Yang had <Eagle Eye>. To him, any monster or boss that faced him would have zero defense after Zhang Yang had stacked sufficient <Cripple Defense>. For Zhang Yang alone, all attacks would technically be at their maximum strength without any restriction! An unrestricted attack by Zhang Yang was so strong that it could really send anyone's jaw dropping.

Without talking about about Crimson Rage or Lost Paradise, even the players from Lone Desert Smoke who have never joined Zhang Yang in his elite raiding party, were all gasping as they saw how devastating their own guild master was.

“Eh, Panda, you said that Zhan Yu was a Guardian, right?”

“No...No...I er...It must be fake!”

“I mean look at that damage!”

Listening to other guild member chattering about the prowess of their own guild master, the members of Lone Desert Smoke were rather honored and proud! Even when they were not the ones tanking the boss, they could feel the glory and pride of having Zhang Yang as their own guild master.

90%, 80%...

Although Nazghoul's HP was at least 2,000,000 more than the previous boss, Bangla, Zhang Yang's side consisted of 3 guild's elite

forces. Their firepower was stronger than Sky High alone. So, even with more HP than Bangla, the boss was dying at a faster rate!

At the other side of the battlefield, The Dominators were standing idly.

“Boss, aren’t we taking that boss as well?”

Humbly Gentleman immediately replied without thinking. “Of course we are taking that boss! I don’t care if we miss the other boss, we must take the one from Zhan Yu! It’s him that I want to KS the most!”

“But boss...Zhan Yu’s own Lone Desert Smoke had two other guild backing his back. That’s Crimson Rage and Lost Paradise! I also think that when we were KSing the boss from Sky High, they probably saw us! We might eventually have to face hostility from 4 g...”

That player did not dare to finish his sentence. The message was clearly understood.

Humbly Gentleman pondered slightly. “As long as we make the first move, the smaller guilds would not just stand idly by. It will be the same as before! Hmph! How could I ever let them take the boss so easily! Get ready! We will make our move at 20% HP!”

Although Zhang Yang had full control of the boss’ aggro, it would still occasionally cast <Fire Ball> at a random direction! Every time

the boss cast the skill, it always dealt 5000 damage to other players! The damage was strong! This, was the specialty of a field boss! It would almost always possess strong AoE damage!

Although the healers were doing their very best, they could not completely prevent events of instant deaths! Casualties will always occur in every battle. After around 400 deaths, the players had managed to reduce the boss' HP down to 20%!

Humbly Gentleman cried out. "Brothers! We are taking the boss!"

"OOOOOOHHH!"

An army of players were charging towards the boss.

Zhang Yang immediately had an idea and commanded his troops. "Open up, let them pass through!"

Everyone was baffled but obeyed his words nevertheless. The players around made an opening and gave way to the players from The Dominators.

Zhang Yang quickly turned around and kited the boss towards The Dominators. With a quick <Charge>, Zhang Yang was right in the middle of the crowd.

BOOM!

The boss cast a <Fire Ball> and hit Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang took the damage, also causing nearby players to take the damage as well!

Those players who only had a full set of Green-Copper equipment would only have 4500 HP at most! The attack from the boss was enough to instantly kill those players! Wherever Zhang Yang ran to, the players from The Dominators were mowed down like weeds.

BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!

Constant “-5000!” damage texts kept on floating up by as many more players were massacred! By borrowing the strength of the boss, Zhang Yang rushed into the crowd of players from The Dominators and killed more than 1000 players from their main attacking force!

Humbly Gentleman quickly turned pale as he saw what was happening. “K-Kill! KILL ZHAN YU!”

Zhang Yang laughed at his feeble words and led the boss to the death of more players. With quick reactions, Zhang Yang survived the onslaught with <Shield Wall>, <Substitute> and other skills.

The strength of The Dominators was not as strong as the combine forces of 3 guilds, but they had still dared to move against them. In turn, they wanted to incur the greed of other smaller guilds around. As those players charged in with no one in

particular to be blamed for trying to KS from a super guild, the Dominators could then follow through for the steal! However, Zhang Yang had borrowed the strength of the boss and instantly killed thousands of The Dominators. The greedy players who were meant to be collaterals in the frivolous scheme were left shivering in fear, if The Dominators had failed to raid the boss, how could they possibly do so?

The Dominators initially had more than 10,000 men. They had lost around 700 when they pulled off that stunt on Sky High's boss. Additionally, they had also lost around 300 men while facing the monster waves, even after having the NPC army fighting at the front lines. Finally, the Zhang Yang-boss union had killed over 2000 of their players. Their remaining players had been drastically reduced to around 7000! What else were they left with to fight the alliance of 3 guilds?

On the other side of the field, Sky High had come into the fray; to join the fight against The Dominators!

Dropping everything in hand, The Dominators retreated back to the top of the slope, leaving behind another 1000 more dead players. It was just like losing their wallets and returning home to find their house burned down; truly a series of unfortunate events!

Humbly Gentleman was stamping on the ground angrily. He could never have predicted that Zhang Yang would actually lead the boss to them and use its strength to butcher his own men! Like a butterfly effect, one action will lead to another. The Dominators had successfully incited the greed of others. This fault, Humbly Gentleman could only swallow by himself.

5%, 3%, 1%, 0%!

Nazghoul let out an ear-piercing shriek and fell over, equipment and items bursting out of it as it did.

Zhang Yang reacted hastily and quickly picked up all the shiny equipment and a few skill books.

Snow Seeker and Crimson Fire came by with a flash and picked up the items as fast as they could. But they were not as quick as Zhang Yang; the only loots that they could pick up were a few Green-Copper equipment. The good stuff was all in Zhang Yang inventory! Even though they were in an alliance, they were not in the same party! That was why, even with party leader distribution mode, others would still have the authority to loot items.

“Zhan Yu guild master...” Snow Seeker was rather straightforward. Without saying anything else, she thrust her hand out, gesturing expectantly.

Zhang Yang laughed. “Relax, I was worried that the good stuff might get taken by someone else!”

“You have sharp eyes, man! There isn’t a single piece of Gray-Silver equipment left!” said Crimson Fire as he snickered.

Zhang Yang gave both Crimson Fire and Snow Seeker 3 Gray-Silver equipment each. “There are 8 of them in total. I’ll take one

for the team and keep two for myself! Erhm...let me have some Green-Copper equipment for a change!”

Crimson Fire was rather delighted and gladly gave Zhang yang 4 Green-Copper equipment as a trade for the 3 Gray-Silver equipment. For Lost Paradise, it was an extremely rare case for them to obtain any level 50 Gray-Silver equipment. Even with back-breaking effort and a die-hard attitude, the guild had only been able to obtain the Gray-Silver equipment after raiding two bosses from the Castle Interior dungeon. To them, it was the best achievement they could ever obtain. Everyone smiled from ear to ear as Lost Paradise returned to their own position.

Chapter 184: The Third Wave

Snow Seeker was not as easily satisfied as Crimson Fire. After receiving 3 Gray-Silver equipment from Zhang Yang, her palm remained open to Zhang Yang. “What about the skill books?”

For someone of her caliber, of course she would know that skill books were much more valuable than equipment!

Zhang Yang played dumb, trying his best as possible to look oblivious. “What skill book? I didn’t see any!”

Snow Seeker had an expression that could be called a smile, yet she could also not be smiling. “I see...I should let you hang out with Perfume Water more often, then!”

Zhang Yang immediately raised his hands in surrender.

What a b*tch!

He took one book out and gave it to her. Without saying another word, Zhang Yang turned around and ran back to his position. He had taken 3 skill books in total. He was very much afraid that this woman could be greedier than he is.

Back at his position, Zhang Yang took out a skill book and a Gray-Silver robe, giving it to Han Ying Xue.

“Snowy Devil! Give me 100 thousand gold pieces as tribute!”

Han Ying Xue shamelessly took the equipment and skill book. She quickly changed into the equipment and learned the skill.

She turned to Zhang Yang and winked seductively. “Money? I don’t have any but I could let you use my body in turn!”

Before he had the chance to retort, he felt a sudden chill running down his spine. He turned around frantically and saw Sun Xin Yu staring at him with a pair of eyes that spoke of death. All his muscle tensed up as he had completely forgot about her bring his girlfriend!

The two of them had barely talked after they had left the police station. Dating aside, they had not even met once after that!

It was also the same in the virtual world, nothing has changed, which had lead Zhang Yang to almost forgot about being tied down with Sun Xin Yu!

He would have never known that even a woman with a heart as cold as ice would get jealous! Even if Sun Xin Yu was not in love with Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue’s words had raised her insecurities! Like a child watching another child take hold a toy that she had put aside, she had watched closely. Even if she was not particularly fond of that toy, she would be angry since that toy belonged to her! How could she just let anyone else take it away from her!?

Zhang Yang took out another Gray-Silver equipment and gave it to Sun Xin Yu. “Ice cube. I have one for you as well!”

Hmph! At least he could calm things down a little.

Zhang Yang pondered a little. These two beauties were at about the same level as Lin Yu. In fact, they could at least be three times prettier than her. However, they say that the grass is always greener on the other side, but one will always believe that the homeland was always the best. It was the same in his case, no matter how beautiful the two girls were, he would always have Lin Yu in his heart.

At least for now, he had one more good item in his hands. Zhang Yang took out a skill book and learn it.

[Rearm]: Immediately ends all skill with cool down by 30 minutes.

Cool down: 30 minutes.

This skill can be learn by all classes.

If one had no strong skills to dispense, <Rearm> would be completely pointless to learn. On the other hand, if one possessed several strong skills, <Rearm> would serve as a godly skill!

Zhang Yang was so happy that his grin stretched all the way to his ears.

“Noob tank! What skill did you just learn?” Wei Yan Er noticed his suspicious action and asked.

Zhang Yang laughed and posted <Rearm> skill description for her to see.

“Do...Does this mean that you can use <Shield Wall> twice in a row?” said Wei Yan Er surprised.

Zhang Yang’s own little band of players were left speechless as well.

“Ayy sis! What skill did you learn?” asked Wei Yan Er.

Han Ying Xue posted her skill as well.

[Healing Rain]: Heals a maximum of 10 players within 10 meters. Every healing target will receive be healed by 200% of the caster’s magic power.

Casting time: 1.5 seconds.

Cool down time: 30 seconds.

“Strong!” cried Daffodil Daydream.

‘Ding! The third wave of monsters have begun to come out of Tukulo Fortress!’

As they talked, the fortress opened its door for the third time and countless of monster started to rush out!

This time, the monster were riders on horses with burning hooves. They were wearing full black armor with long, two handed spears. The monsters were in an organized formation. The riders rode as one, in an orderly manner. Stomping could be heard as loud as thunder, blasting through the battle field like thousands of drums striking simultaneously.

Similarly to the two previous waves, the riders were separated into two categories; normal and elite. The only difference between the two was that the elites were larger in size - both horse and rider. Anyone could easily tell the difference just by looking at the field.

[Metal-Armor Riders] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 53

HP: 5,300

Defense: 50

[Metal-Armor Rider Captain] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 53

HP: 100,000

Defense: 300

Thud! Thud! Thud! Like a sea of black ants, the darkness spread across the green field like plague.

BAM! BAM! BAM!

Each rider possessed a such strength that when they swing their spears, almost all tanks that were position on the front of the defense line were pushed back! The defense line was broken instantly! This knockback effect is directly affected by the player's own Strength value. Players like Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight who were equipped well possessed high Strength, and so the knockback distance was negligible, while the other tanks were immediately sent flying to the sky.

The defense line was broken instantly, sending panic to everyone around the fractured formation.

Zhang Yang roared. “All tanks, regroup and reform the defense line! Other classes, retreat! I’ll say it again! Other classes, retreat!”

When humans are in a disarray, he or she would unconsciously look for something as a guide, and when straightforward instructions such as these were given out, they would comply before they even process the meaning of those words! Amidst the rumbling chaos, Zhang Yang had roared like a beacon of light. Most of the players who heard his call quickly calmed down and formed a secondary defense line behind what remained of the first!

This time, the NPC army had been triggered by the close proximity of the monsters and had started their own skirmish with the incoming riders.

Zhang Yang tried his best to catch the attention of as many monsters as he could to reduce the burden on the other tanks.

BAM! SWOOSH!

Zhang Yang used <Horizontal Sweep> and <Thunder Strike>, with another <Blast Wave> after that. His rampage was akin to a heavy-duty machine knocking down small trees in a forest. Due to that, his contribution points shot up like a rocket, peaking at the top with points that doubled the second rank holder, Han Ying Xue!

Han Ying Xue was ranked at second place in the contribution list because of her super-healing capabilities. With a 75% MP cost

reduction, the amount of healing she could dispense in the war was at least 50% to 100% of other healers in the troops since she could last much longer! A Priest is specialized in mass healing! With skills like <Healing Bond>, <Mending Prayers>, <Healing Rain>, and many other multi-target healing skill, a Priest is truly a class that could easily prevent death from claiming his victims.

“-1632!”

Zhang Yang suddenly received a significantly higher amount of damage. He looked down at his chest and found the shaft of long spear that had impaled him, along with two other players behind him! They had been skewered together like a human kebab!

“-2931!”

“-2948!”

The two other received damage as well.

CLANG!

A loud metallic sound was heard as the rider pulled the spear back out. The Metal-Armor Rider Captain was completely covered in the metal armor, only a slit exposing nothing but darkness within. Zhang Yang could not even make out the eyes! It was nothing but empty void!

Damn! It even had a strong piercing skill!

In ‘God’s Miracle’, a majority of skill and attack would not pass through objects! Just like the flame thrower skill of the third boss in Bangar Crypt, as long as someone was in its way, the person behind will not take any damage! This was why Zhang yang could use the bugged system to kill the boss in the first place!

However, there were a few skills that could penetrate object or players. Take this Rider Captain for example, his spear attack would easily penetrate many more players if they were all lined up nicely for him!

“QING DUO LA ER LO!” the elite monster shriek random gibberish and thrust its spear again.

<Block>!

Zhang Yang met the incoming spear with his shield.

Violent sparks of light flew about Zhang Yang as he was sent back a step. The elite Rider Captain was knocked on his back on his horse, almost falling off the saddle. In terms of Strength, Zhang Yang was equal to the monster. It had only managed to push Zhang Yang back one step after gaining sizable momentum from the horse’s charge!

The area around Lone Desert Smoke had quickly settled down. After fending the sudden Rider Captain’s attack, the chaotic period was over quickly and the players around quickly retaliated swiftly.

On the other side of the battle field, things were not going as smoothly as Zhang Yang. Lacking strong players, the other player's defense line was quickly destroyed, sending players there in complete chaos. When the formation was broken, it became harder for them to reform and regroup. They had to retreat back and depend on the NPC army to push back the invading force. However, since the NPC army could not heal themselves, most of the NPC did not last long and perished.

Only super guilds like Sky High could withstand the immense pressure and reform the defense line after much struggle.

The cries of war filled the air. Heads flew, swords clashed, the entire battle field was completely dyed in blood red. The game had utilized its hyper realistic physics engine to depict this historical and climatic war! Everything about this war was too real to be passed off, even though they knew that this was just a virtual reality game, players still felt the terror and fear from it!

Like it was in ancient wars, the brave would endure and gain more fervor as the weak could only cower behind dead bodies, trembling in fear. This was the main selling point of 'God's Miracle', its hyper realism! Only the truly brave would stand out as the weak and fearful show their true colors.

The third wave of terror had lasted for another 50 minutes.

'Ding! The third wave boss Narxus has appear!'

“NEIGH!” a monstrous sound that could only come from an equally monstrous horse could be heard as a huge rider rode into the field.

With flaming hooves, the beast stood as tall as 10 meters, and was approximately 13 to 14 meters long. As the horse took each step, the ground burst up in blackened ashes, with flames crackling at where the horse had laid its hooves. The rider on the horse back was as large as Zhang Yang had ever seen. The rider was completely covered in the similar, black metal armor while wielding a matching spear that measured at least 10 meters long.

[Demon Knight, Narxus] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 53

HP: 13,000,000

Defense: 500

Unlike the two other boss that Zhang Yang had fought, this boss rode like the wind towards the players, leaving behind a trail of burnt ground in its wake.

“WOAH! LOOK! It’s the Hell’s Stead! Damn! It’s so cool!” cried Wei Yan Er when she saw the beast. “AIYA! Don’t turn! Don’t turn! Come here! Let me kill your ass!”

But Narxus turned away and headed towards the other player defense line. It's positioned at least 4 to 5 km away from Zhang Yang!

“Ack...my horsie! My horsie!” Wei Yan Er sadly and looked at Zhang Yang with puppy eyes begging, “Noob tank...Let's go over there and kill that boss!”

Zhang Yang shook his head. “We had already discussed about this yesterday! Whichever guild that the boss heads to, gets to have all rights to it! Unless they personally invite us to join the fight, we won't raise a hand! With limited forces left, we cannot spare any men to start a civil war! Do you want to be just like that hypocrite of a loser!? If we lose this war, we will have to start over again 2 days later! By then, other city would have already won the war!”

“Tch...stingy noob!” said Wei Yan Er unwillingly. She was rather interested in that horse. In fact, she had always been envious of Zhang Yang's Skeletal War Horse for quite some time now. When she saw the glorious steed carrying the boss on its back, how could she not want to own it as well? Wei Yan Er pouted her lips angrily like a 3 year old child being denied candy.

Chapter 185: Leash Of The Stead From Hell

For this wave, the guild that got the boss was a guild called Place of Glory, a medium-sized guild that had the maximum member capacity of a level 1 guild, with all 10,000 members present on the battlefield. However, even with that many members, none of them were of decent caliber. The average player's level was only around level 25. The best equipped player only had a full set of level 30 Gray-Silver equipment. It simply wasn't enough for to take on the boss!

Narxus had the same penetrating skill as the smaller monsters. The long spear thrust out and skewered through the players like a series of caramel apple on one long stick. The longitudinal skill damaged the unfortunate players with 5000+ damage, enough to kill of at least 7 to 8 players.

Although that skill was quite formidable, the boss had another skill that was even stronger -- a "sweeping" ulti. One clean sweep with the spear would cause 5000 damage to every player within 10 meters around him. Death would be certain to anyone who was unable to escape that radius.

Within a minute, Palace of Glory had only managed to reduce 12% of the boss' HP, while having their own main attacking force completely wiped out. The remaining lower leveled players had a hard time attacking the high leveled boss. Most of their attacks were nullified since their attacks were unable to exceed the boss' defense. If the battle continued on, the guild would be completely routed before the boss is defeated.

The guild master of Palace of Glory was in hysterics. When the guild first saw the boss was heading towards them, they were ecstatic. But as soon as the boss laid down the first strike and followed up with a “sweeping” skill, all that euphoria was completely replaced with complete despair. The drops from a Gray-Silver boss was great and all, but the at least one must have the capability to defeat it first!

“Palace of Glory has given up on the boss! The boss is now free for all!” The guild master cried out as he led the remaining survivors to retreat to safety.

Zhang Yang slammed the axe into the ground and call out to Hundred Shots. “Snowy b*tch! Follow me! Hundred Shots! Bring a team of ranged attackers and follow me!”

The monsters around Zhang Yang’s area had already been defeated. Most of the players here were already resting -- sitting on the ground munching on recovery snacks. Hundred Shots went around the crowd and recruited a few strong Hunters and Spellcasters. One by one, the recruited players summoned their mounts and followed Zhang Yang to the boss.

“Hey! Noob tank! Remember to bring back the horsie for me!” Wei Yan Er yelled.

To defeat the boss was not just the intention of Lone Desert Smoke alone. Crimson Rage, The Dominators, and Sky High had already dispatched their own elite group of attackers. Others who had the capability to kill the boss, like the big four, lesser known ones like Lost Paradise and Miracle Garden, had also joined in the

fray.

In a short time, close to 10 groups of players had rushed towards the boss. All of the incoming party were consisted of 2 tanks and a bunch of ranged attackers, followed by a few healers! They had already learned their lesson when the first and third boss were wiping out their melee classes like they were snapping a twig.

Zhang Yang stopped his horse 50 meters before the boss and shouted, “Everyone! The enemy is at hand, I suggest that we do not fight amongst ourselves but instead join hands to defeat this tough boss! Let go for the first come first serve basis! Whoever gets their hands on any of the equipment shall have full claim to it without contest!”

If everyone wanted to have their city to be the best in the world, everyone have to be united! They would have to suppress their greed for loots and instead quench the thirst for honor instead! Everyone had same thoughts as Zhang Yang and were in line with his thoughts! After all, those who were sent to defeat this boss were elite members of their respective guilds. As of now, no one could bear to suffer any losses!

Zhang Yang saw that everyone had someone come to terms with his suggestion and was pleased. Zhang Yang rushed to the boss and started to fight. In his mind, he was rather happy, not because of the unity, but because he knew that he was going to be the one getting all the good stuff! His athletic speed and reaction is not something he had just obtained. No one could be as fast as he! Still, it's bad taste to haul everything in sight. Instead, he could at least grab all the really good ones first!

Narxus was still chasing after members of Palace of Glory, and in the ongoing pursuit, they lost another 1,000 players. The situation was already bad for them, yet the boss had to rub additional salt on their wounds. They were no longer just running back to the hill like children crying for their mothers! They had already dropped their swords and were fleeing with their tails between their legs!

While Zhang Yang was already within the boss' aggro zone, the boss had ignored the threat as the boss was still locked onto Palace of Glory members. Zhang Yang immediately unsummoned his mount and slid across the battlefield with <Charge>!

<Provoke!>

Immune!

<Blood Rage>

Rage +30!

<Horizontal Sweep>!

Normal attack!

“-1,423!”

“-2,983!”

The <Cripple Defense> effect on the boss had long since expired. Only Zhang Yang was able to strike 3000+ damage while the boss still had 600 Defense. Only Zhang Yang, the player with a Yellow-Gold weapon and a 50% ignore defense passive <Eagle Eye> could do that! Once other players witnessed the prowess of Zhang Yang, every one of them instinctively jumped at the sight of the ridiculously high damage.

After two instances of attacks, Narxus finally turned his attention to Zhang Yang. The boss raised its spear high in the air, ready to strike Zhang Yang. It cannot be helped; the main attacking force of Palace of Glory had been killed off earlier. The remaining players around could only deal nullified damage as their own attack power was unable to surpass the boss' defense. The aggro that any of them generate was so low that 1 minutes' worth of attack was easily overtaken by Zhang Yang's two instances of attacks.

<Block>!

Zhang Yang raised his shield and blocked the attack. Once the attack was stopped, the piercing effect was not implemented and the protected players behind Zhang Yang continued to lay down their attack.

“Attention! Do not stand in line with me! Please attack from 30 meters away! That's the furthest distance possible! Dear friends from other guild, please do not forget to set your attacking mode to “City Raid” mode.”

In ‘God’s Miracle’, there were many types of attacking mode to match different situation. For example, in the Eight server-wide world war, if you switched to “Server Raid” mode, your AoE attack will only cause damage to players from other servers instead! Another example is the current war that involves the players from an entire city. “City Raid” mode would cause their attack to hit only the enemy instead of each another. This was to prevent any unwanted conflict.

There are also other attacking modes such as “Guild Raid”, “Party Attack”, and “[Attack All](#)”.

Just as Zhang Yang had finished his words, he glanced towards Humbly Gentleman.

Humbly Gentleman changed his expression suddenly and cried. “What are you looking at me for, Zhan Yu? Do I look like man who casts aside the greater good?”

Sky Shaman huffed lightly and made eye contact with Zhang Yang. Both of them exchanged a look and nodded together, instantly agreeing to do one thing: Form an alliance after the war and kill The Dominators!

More than 10 guilds had started to send out their tanks to attack the boss. It was not because they feared Zhang Yang might not be able to handle the boss alone and would die after. On the contrary, it was because their range attackers and other non-tank classed players were just too weak to endure any of the boss’ attack. If they did not send anyone up to the boss, how could any of them loot any equipment when the boss dies?

Initially, none of the guilds knew about Zhang Yang's potential or capabilities; no one dared to let their guard down! But when they took a quick look at the damage list, their eyes went wide open, unsure if they were reading it wrong, or if they had suddenly seen a naked woman dancing across the street. Is this Guardian on turbo, nitro or whatever else that made a car super-fast?! What the heck! His damage was so high that he was ranked at the top! He had even left a massive gap between him and the second rank!

<Eagle Eye> effect grows stronger as the Defense of the boss was higher. Furthermore, the weapon in his hand was a Yellow-Gold tier!

Even though it looked like Zhang Yang was focusing on the boss, he was actually paying attention to his surroundings. He wanted to prevent anyone from attacking his back, especially The Dominators. To let them guard your rear was like depending on a monkey to guard your bananas!

For Zhang Yang to bravely fight in the front lines; he obviously had a trump card against those cheating bastards, the <Shadow of the Void>! After activating the skill, his character will immediately leave the battle and enter another dimension where no one can attack him and vice-versa. However, it was his trump card, and if possible, he did not want to expose his skill!

With Han Ying Xue's massive support power and Zhang Yang's high defense, attack immunity skills, as long as they had enough time, both of them were enough to slowly kill the boss! However, the surrounding players were rather greedy and fierce! Everyone

was attacking with their might, causing the boss HP drop like a boy going down a water slide.

70%...50%...30%...the boss' HP was about to be emptied out!

Many attacking players and smaller guilds were standing at the outer circle and all they could only look on in envy. However, there were many strong guilds attacking the boss together! No one else dared to attack since they risked offending several guilds at the same time!

10%, 5%, 0%!

The boss fell off its horse and slammed against the ground hard, sending a minor tremor in every direction. In that instance, close to 20 items popped out and drops onto the ground!

LOOOTS!

The tanks that were closer to the loots had bent over and picked up any items they could get their hands on. This time, everyone was smarter. They had switched their looting mode to All-Pick

Zhang Yang eyes were faster, and with one quick sweep, he picked up 3 items!

All 20 items that were on the ground didn't last for more than a second, quickly finding themselves in player inventories instead! The atmosphere of the field was rather mixed, those who got their

hands on Gray-Silver items were elated while the ones who got Green-Copper were filled with disappointment. However, they were others that were even devastated as they had not been able to pick up anything at all. If they were guild master themselves, it would be alright, but if they were regular guild members, they would surely be scolded by their guild masters when they return empty handed.

Zhang Yang summoned the [Skeletal War Horse] and hopped onto it's back. "Everyone! Return to your original positions immediately! The fourth wave of monsters will spawn in just 2 more minutes!"

After the third wave of monsters, everyone had gotten an idea of how the war system worked. Monster wave will spawn continuously for 50 minutes and will stop after that. There will be a 10 minute window for the players to kill the boss! After one hour, the next wave will spawn.

Snow Seeker came to Zhang Yang and asked. "Zhan Yu Guild master, did you get anything good?"

Zhang Yang laughed. "How about you?"

Both of them exchanged looks and kept their lips sealed. Even when both guilds were allies, they were not in the same guild, it would only cause each other grievance if they shared their results.

Back to where his guild waited, Wei Yan Er cried out when she saw Zhang Yang returning. "So? Where is my horsie! Horsie!

HORSIE WHERE ART THOU!”

“Keep quiet, you annoying little brat!” said Han Ying Xue.

Just when Wei Yan Er was about to throw a tantrum, Zhang Yang laughed. “I was rather lucky! Look! I got a [Leash of the Hell’s Stead]!”

“Really?!” said Wei Yan Er with her eyes wide open.

Zhang Yang posted the item’s description and shared it with everyone.

A small party had a maximum of 10 players, and every 5 small parties will form a group, every 20 groups will form an expedition! Those who were in the same small party as Zhang Yang were those that were really close to him, with two more extra players, Defiant Monk and Ironhills. The rest of the party was just there to filled in the gap.

[Leash of the Hell’s Stead] (Ground Mount)

Use: Summon or unsummon a Hell’s Stead for a player to ride.

Summon Time: 2 seconds.

Level Requirement: 30

Bound upon first-time usage.

“MINE! GIMME! MINE! MY PRECIOUS!” Wei Yan Er cried.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “This item will be placed in the guild auction. Buy it with your contribution points!”

Wei Yan Er snorted as she approached Zhang Yang looked at him with a rather cute and pitiful puppy face.

“Pretty please...”

Zhang Yang laughed. “Don’t look at me like that! This item has to be bought with guild contribution points. What if there are others with higher guild contribution points? If I just gave this horse to you, I would be treating the rest of the guild rather unfairly!”

“But! My points is higher than yours! I’m higher than my cousin and sister Sun!”

Zhang Yang shooked his head. “I have the [Skeletal War Horse], so I’m not going to compete with you! All that’s left is your cousin and that ice cube! Hurry up and persuade them! I’m going to sell the item already!”

Wei Yan Er quickly ran to Sun Xin Yu and Hang Ying Xue to persuaded them with all she had. By the looks of Han Ying Xue's twitching lips, it would seem that she had made a different sort of deal.

Zhang Yang then posted the [Leash of the Hell's Stead] in the guild channel and said, "Attention members of Lone Desert Smoke! This item was only looted in the boss fight less than 5 minutes ago! Now, based on the rules, everyone can participate and bid. You may use your accumulated guild contribution points to buy this item! Please, remember! Only guild contribution points are acceptable! I do not want to hear gold coins or cash! This is a guild, not a free-market to flaunt your wealth! The guild will only acknowledge your contribution points! Nothing more! Nothing less!"

"Right! Everyone can now start bidding for the item! If the same amount of bids are issued, the faster one will be selected! One more thing, besides bidding, no one is allowed to use the guild channel! 200 guild contribution points will be deducted for that offense."

Everyone in Lone Desert Smoke was startled. Based on the regular standard operating procedure, super rare items would automatically be shared among the guild officers and not the regular member.

Suffice to say, the Black-Steel equipment and Green-Copper equipment, along with a luxurious amount of experience points, all dropped by the monsters were already enough to satisfy everyone in the guild. Now, they had the qualifications granted to them to participate in the rare item auction! Zhang Yang had clearly won

over the hearts of the member just by sharing the loot.

Guild contribution points...crap!

Everyone started to wail and cry. If they had known earlier that the points could be used for events like this, they would have already done it as a daily routine!

100! 200! 300! 500!

Everyone cried out the contribution points to bid for the horse.

“1,200!” Wei Yan Er cried out the number that anyone else could hope to have.

Zhang Yang went with the flow. “1,200! Any higher? 1,200 going once! Going twice! 1,200! Anyone?”

The guild channel remain silent.

“Sold! Congratulation to Player Drizzler for obtaining the mount! Hundred Shots, deduct 1,200 contribution points from Drizzler’s character.”

Even though they could not get their hands on the mount, they were still filled with spirit and excitement! None of them were displeased about the result! They knew that someday, they too, could get their hands on rare item! All that they needed were guild

contribution points!

By using this method of distribution, all were equal. No guild officer could have special treatment! They would have to depend on guild quests and dungeon raids to collect their points. All in all, it was rather fair to everyone.

Zhang Yang took two more Gray-Silver equipment dropped by Narxus and auctioned them in the guild channel. Before he began, Zhang Yang advised Han Ying Xue and the rest of his own party to not participate in the auction. This way of sharing their wealth, was a good way to bring everyone closer!

Attack All mode – In previous chapters, I used the term “Friendly Fire” instead of “Attack All”.

Chapter 186: Hijack!

‘Ding! The fourth wave of monsters have started to come out of Tukula Fortress!’

A huge, 10 meter tall treant started to walk out slowly from the fortress! Its movement speed seemed rather sloppy and sluggish. The monster moved one limb after the other, at a speed slightly above that of a real life sloth. However, each stride it took was vast -- as long as 6 to 7 meters. In actuality, it was moving rather swiftly towards them!

Like the previous waves of monsters, treants were also divided into normal and elites. The elite monster was twice the height. Like a sky-scraping tree in the amazon jungle, this monster had similarly proportional long legs! In fact, it was so huge that every step caused a massive tremor!

[Thick Bark Treant] (Normal, Elemental)

Level: 54

HP: 5,400

Defense: 100

[Iron Bark Treant] (Elite, Elemental)

Level: 54

HP: 100,000

Defense: 600

Such a strong defense value; almost double that of other monsters! As expected of the names they were given.

Zhang Yang frowned. In just three waves of monster, the army of players had already lost more than 30% of their total members! Only half of the NPC army remained! This is just the fourth wave! Each wave will definitely be stronger and tougher than the previous waves! If the battle continued on like this, they might not be able to handle all 10 waves!

The thumping of the treants could be heard louder and louder as they approach nearer.

Wham!

As soon as they were in melee range, the treants lifted up their massive feet and stomped on the tanks! Its massive size was so large that it was enough to stomp on 3 to 4 players at a time.

Players around started to initiate their counter attack. The Thick Bark Treants were easier to deal with since they only had 100 Defense. The Iron Bark Treant were significantly harder! Physical attack-type players had a really tough time trying to return damage blow for blow.

Still, one class stood out better than the rest. With strong Defense, the treants had one weakness, fire! Pyromancers in the vicinity were casting waves of <Rain of Fire>, dealing more than twice the normal damage!

In an instant, Pyromancers had their contribution points shoot up like rockets. Daffodil Daydream was one in particular. She had been following Zhang Yang for the past month and had obtained many equipment for herself. She wore a complete set of Gray-Silver equipment. Her damage soared to the sky, laying waste to everything she set her sight on!

Phew Boom! Boom! Her rank rose from 13th to 9th, overtaking Fatty Han at 10th place.

Looking at his rank, Fatty Han could not help but cry in envy.

The vigorous battle raged on, leaving countless monsters dead, equipment that couldn't be perceived with numbers left among their corpses! Subsequently, many players were killed off as well, leaving the battle field emptier as time went on.

“Zhan Yu, how many men do you have left?” ask Snow Seeker, nervously.

“I’ve lost more than 2000 men. But my main attack force is still intact!” Zhang Yang answered. During the recruitment drive, Lone Desert Smoke had a rather strict policy. The guild would only recruit high leveled and strong players. So, out of a maximum capacity of 20,000 players, the guild only had a total of 9,000 players at the moment.

Moreover, the average level of the members of Lone Desert Smoke was quite high, being at Level 42! Most players that were killed off were basically at around level 30 or so, they had participated in the war only for experience points and equipment. So, while the casualties may seem high in number, it was negligible in terms of strength. Moreover, the healers were now able to focus their healing on the important members only. The combat efficiency of the guild had only risen!

“Our guild has over 7,000 players left! We’ve even lost some elites! If this goes on, we might be in danger! I think we can only last until the 7th or 8th wave before we bite the dust!” said Snow Seeker worriedly.

Zhang Yang laughed. “Let’s just give it all we got!”

In his previous life, he had never participated in such an event. He was not clear of the difficulty of this war! But there was one thing that he knew clearly, even though Violet Star City’s item collection quest was not completed rather quickly, the other cities repeatedly failed their expedition war, and so, victory was claimed by Violet Star City, led by the infamous One Sword Stroke!

Since then, his name soared to the high heavens and became the number 1 tank in the China server!

“I...I’ll never allow myself to lose to anyone!” Zhang Yang muttered silently. He had always believed that he had the talent in online gaming. Now that he started along with everyone, if he lost to One Sword Stroke while having such an abundance of experience, he would rather just find a rotten piece of tofu and knock himself to death with it!

50 minutes into the wave...

‘Ding! The fourth wave boss, Lodac has appeared!’

A super-sized , 100 meter tall giant treant appeared in the battle field. In just one step, it manage to traverse by several hundred meters!

Thump! Thump! Thump!

In just 4 steps, the monstrous treant had arrived to the doorsteps of The Dominators.

Wham! It stomped the ground and struck at least 30 players in one shot, causing many “-5,000!” damage text to pop up like flies.

[Demonized Treant Lodac] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 54

HP: 14,000,000

Defense: 1,200

“Hold on! Hold on! Get the aggro locked in!” cried out Humbly Gentleman. He wanted to pull the aggro himself but he was a Spellcaster!

Traveling Piglet ran up to the front and after a number of aggro-gaining skills, he managed to hold onto the boss’ aggro. Instantly, the main attacking force of The Dominators started their attack. However, even after inflicting 5 <Cripple Defense>, the boss’s 600 Defense proved too strong for anyone from the physical attacking class. Exasperated, they were crying out in agony.

Ladac had two attack patterns. The first attack was the stomping attack that caused an area attack of 5,000 damage to every single player in a specific area. The second attack was fist slam, capable of causing 5,000 damage to every player in a long straight line!

Since the boss was extremely large in size, all melee players did not have to go near it to attack; thus, they will not take much damage. Melee class such as Berserker, Thief, Templar were able to approach the boss to attack, their lives out of danger as long they keep a distance from Traveling Piglet.

There were many melee attackers participating in the war, so even though the boss had such strong Defense, and the glaring weakness of treants towards fire, they were doing good damage, more so than the previous boss fights!

Humbly Gentleman begun to smile happily, looking like a cheater grinning evilly after a successful scam. His face was truly asking to be pummeled on.

“Hey noob tank, That Humbly what’s-his-face is really annoying and irritating! Let’s go and KS his boss!” said Wei Yan Er after staring irritably for a while. She had been pacing up and down on her Hell’s Stead.

Zhang Yang thought for a moment and said, “No. The amount of fighting force we have left is very little! If we had another internal conflict, I fear that the chance of us finishing this Expedition would be slim!”

Wei Yan Er pout her lips disgruntledly. “Are you going to just let them be?!”

Zhang Yang smirked. “Calm your flat pan cakes! Just you wait! I’ll take all their loots!”

Everyone turned their heads and rolled their eyes.

Do you really think that you are a god of war now? How do you

plan on getting past the 3 circles of attackers and 3 other circles of defenders and get to the boss?

Zhang Yang laughed at their incredulous stares. “Just you wait and see!”

Even though Sky Shaman hated Humbly Gentleman down to his bones, he could jeopardize the entire expedition for the sake of revenge! The main objective right now was to survive all 10 waves of monsters! Grudges can be settled after the war!

As the battle raged on, Lodac’s HP was left with only 20%!

Zhang Yang summoned his mount and rode towards The Dominators.

“Little brat! Keep me updated on the boss’ HP!”

He rode on, leaving his guild members behind.

Everyone was rather confused as they listened to Wei Yan Er yelling the HP percentage repeatedly.

“19%, 18%, 17%, 16%...”

Zhang Yang pulled up near the outermost defense circle and waited there patiently.

Humbly Gentleman always liked to take advantage of others, and fearful of the same being done to him, he was a paranoid one! Now that he saw Zhang Yang coming along with his horse, alarms were blazing in his head and he stared at him suspiciously.

This guy must be up to no good. Could he be trying to lure him out?

Thus, he did not dare lay down the attack order, or else he would have to break his own perfect defense circle, put there in the first place to prevent the nearby Thieves who could be hiding in the shadows, coming out when the boss dies to pick up the loots.

“Zhan Yu! What are you up to?!” Since it was better than to just stand idly by, Humbly Gentleman tried to pry.

Zhang Yang shrugged nonchalantly. “Oh, nothing at all. I like the scenery here!”

Scenery my arse!

Humbly Gentleman nearly opened his mouth to curse. However, he held it in and smile. It did no matter how many hidden thieves he had in place, stealth only made them harder to detect. They could not pass through objects anyway! As long as the defense line is properly formed, no one would get pass this line easily!

Humbly Gentleman quickly reverted to his gentlemanly persona and smiled gently. “I see. If you’re keen to watch the scene, please

enjoy it to your liking!’

10%, 8%, 6%, 4%!

Zhang Yang dashed forward and breached the defense line!

Without waiting for the attack command, the players in the defense line started to attack with hundreds of arrows, fire balls, frost arrows, aiming directly at Zhang Yang! Even if he was a super tank, these attacks were enough to kill him off in one wave!

BOOM! PAK! WHAM! PEW!

As the attack ended, every attack seemed to only hit air and kicked up dust on the ground, with Zhang Yang nowhere in sight!

Humbly Gentleman was so baffled that his eyeballs nearly popped out of their sockets.

What the hell just happened?! That was <Stealth>! How could a Guardian learn <Stealth>!? WTF!? I must be confused!

“Use all AoE skills! Don’t leave any corner untouched!” Humbly Gentleman spun around and ordered his equally bewildered members.

At the same time, the outermost circle Hunters and Spellcasters had attacked continuously with their AoE skills at the area where

Zhang Yang was last seen. Any hidden Thief would be forced out of hiding after receiving an attack, if they were to remain in the same spot!

Invalid! Invalid! Invalid!

Humbly Gentleman began to have second thoughts. “Did the first wave of attack killed him already?”

“3%, 2%, 1%!” the chirpy voice of Wei Yan Er rang continuously in Zhang Yang’s ears!

He was already in the realm provided by the skill, <Shadow of the Void>! He was still in the same battlefield but in this realm, all life forms had disappeared from his vision, Zhang Yang felt like he had entered a barren earth with him as the sole survivor.

Easily and effortlessly, Zhang Yang had breached through the defense line of The Dominators and arrived at the point where he estimated the boss’ stood.

When Wei Yan Er announced that the boss’ HP was at 1%, he quickly activated <Blood Rage> and gained 30 Rage point, whilst surfacing out of the <Shadow of the Void>. Immediately, as he resurfaced in the real world, he was greeted by the sight of thousands of players along with the gigantic boss.

<Destructive Smash>!

‘-3,324!’

With that one attack, Zhang Yang had dealt the last attack to kill off the boss.

‘Ding! You have killed Lodac! You have struck the last blow! You have been granted 50% of all experience points! Obtained 7,000,000 Experience Points!’

Chapter 187: The Fifth Wave

Zhang Yang hands were in a blur, like the hands of Flash! Swish! Swoosh! He grabbed all the loots and placed them into his inventory! From Gray-Silver equipment to skill books, leaving the Green-Copper as the last...he swiped them off the ground!

He had hide his player's profile and turned on the helmet effect that hide his face and appearance. He had even unequipped his shield to be safe! When the players around him saw him picking up the loots, they were not suspicious of him since they knew that the item distribution mode was set to leader distribution. If you wanted the honors of picking them up, by all means, that's probably the closest you can get to owning it!

However, in a flash, they realized that something was going wrong. The items on the floor were disappearing extremely quickly!

"Spy! There's a spy!" one of the player shouted which had instantly triggered the nearby players to react and attack Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang summoned [Clear Lotus] and activated <Substitute> to gain immunity.

Zhang Yang took this chance to quickly pick more items as he could!

At this point of the game, no many players could get their hands

on a [Servant]. Those who knew about the <Substitute> ability were only those within Zhang Yang's party. There was no way that players from The Dominators would know that they would need to kill the servant before they could dispel the immunity effect, thus everyone was vigorously attacking Zhang Yang with everything they had.

5 seconds was very short, in that time, Zhang Yang had missed 3 Green-Copper equipment on the ground. He then ignored the items and used <Charge>, targeting the closest Spellcaster. In an instant, he activated <Rearm> and refreshed every skill's cool down!

<Shadow of the Void>!

Swoosh!

In Zhang Yang's world, every living being was removed from his vision. He quickly dashed back to his guild position. In the effect of <Shadow of the Void>, his movement speed was increased by 100%. With a 20 second active duration, it was enough for him to run 300 to 400 meters away!

By the time the skill had ended, Zhang Yang had reappeared far away within the NPC army. He then summoned his mount and rode by safely to his guild position. Zhang Yang checked his loots and found that he had looted 9 Gray-Silver equipment, 19 Green-Copper equipment and two skill books, <Grace> and <Healing Rain>.

Haha! Humbly Gentleman would have cried his eyes out if he had knew I took these awesome skill books!

That being said, Humbly Gentleman was still preoccupied with Zhang Yang's disappearing act. Was he still alive? Humbly Gentleman was still at the outermost circle of defense, commanding the troops to attack at random. In that instant, he had so distracted that he did not bother about the boss loots. In his opinion, as long as the defense line was intact, no one else could pick up the boss' loots, so it does not matter!

However, when his underling had reported about the loots had been looted by an unknown player, Humbly Gentleman had frantically shoved his way to the boss' copse and found only three miserable Green-Copper equipment lying there!

Having worked tirelessly for so long to earn only 3 pieces of Green-Copper equipment?! Humbly Gentleman felt his final fuse burning out. He asked around, but his underlings could only report that the thief had hidden his profile information and had a helmet covering his head, hiding his face from everyone. With that little information, Humbly Gentleman had the highest confirmation that the thief was Zhang Yang!

Play with fire and you will be get burned one day!

Humbly Gentleman quickly sent a private message to Zhang Yang. "I knew you were behind this! Give me back all the items that you stole!"

Zhang Yang immediately replied. “I have no idea what you are talking about!”

“Don’t act coy with me! I knew that you were the one who stole all our boss loots!”

“No! I did not!” Zhang Yang replied in his heart. “I did not steal. I clearly robbed you!”

“You...” Humbly Gentleman finally had a taste of his own medicine! To be unable to come up with a reply! Furthermore, he had no proof that it was really Zhang Yang who had stolen all his boss loots.

Zhang Yang laughed and continued. “Hey! Hypocrite! The monsters are about to spawn again! Who knows, the next boss might land in your hands again!” If that was really the case, Zhang Yang could easily hijack the boss again since one hour was a luxurious duration for all his skills to refresh!

When Humbly Gentleman saw his reply, he was so enraged that he could feel the anger gushing out of every pore of his body. He felt nauseous. What kind of attitude was that?! At least, he now understood how Sky Shaman felt back then.

On one side, Wei Yan Er was overjoyed. “Hey! Noob tank! Did you really hijack their boss?! I could see their tantrum all the way from here! Ge Ge Ge Ge! It’s looks like fun!”

Zhang Yang only nodded his head and did not say anything else. He then posted each of Gray-Silver equipment he looted in the guild channel and auctioned them off like the rest. One of the equipment was called [Lodac's Arm Brace], a heavy armor type. Zhang Yang equipped the armlet first, with the intention of getting it identified back at the city, after the war. He will give it to Wei Yan Er if the identified properties were of the offensive type, and keep it for himself if it was a defensive type.

As for the skill books, since Endless Starlight and Han Ying Xue had the skills in hand, Zhang Yang decided that he will put them up for sale in his shop.

‘Ding! The fifth wave of monsters have started to come out of Tukula Fortress!’

In an instant, a massive horde centaurs stampeded out of the fortress. However, unlike the Kukulo's tribe, these centaurs were completely red, from head to hoof. They looked much fiercer, having eyes that emitted a dark reddish flame. These were clearly indicators of a demonic nature!

Similar to all the previous monster waves, there were normal and elite types, both wielded a long bow and a quiver on their backs.

[Demonized Centaur Archer] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 55

HP: 5,500

Defense: 50

[Demonized Centaur Archer Lord] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 55

HP: 100,000

Defense: 300

Zhang Yang cried out. “Everyone! Get back! Let the NPC army take the first wave of attack!” Zhang Yang lead his own troops back and let the NPC army take over the frontline.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The stomping of hooves got louder as the centaurs approached the players like lightning speed. As the enemy entered their attacking range, they began drawing their bows and shot endless waves of arrows to attack.

A few of those monsters were capable of dishing out damage on par with a large group of players. Unless the players were all

wearing the same tiered equipment as Zhang Yang, they would easily be killed. Besides those who were standing at the front line, other players had made their way behind the NPC army to prevent themselves from getting instantly killed by the NPC!

Zhang Yang waited until the NPC had started to return fire and then commanded his own troops. “Time to lay waste to these bastards!”

“HUURAAH!”

Once the players entered melee range, the Hunter class monster lost their offensive edge. Due to the outrageous number of monsters, with many layers stacked together, the ones standing behind were unable to attack, blocked by the ones in front! However, these monsters had <Barrage>, and with a number of attacks, the monster had inflicted massive casualties to the NPC army in the front row!

As the killing went on, the number of drops multiplied, as player deaths shot up relatively. The number of players was initially at around 2,000,000, but right now, there were less than 1,000,000 left! The NPC army had lost an even greater number! With lesser players to pick the loots, the ground was littered with them!

Once the NPC army had suffered significant losses, the attacking force was unable to match evenly with the incoming enemies. They actually had enough man power to create a literal defensive line to fight the monster, but currently with their low numbers, the monsters had begun to engulf the army like an island in sea! With this kind of situation at hand, the death rate was increasing

drastically!

Monster will spawn again after dying and the numbers will keep on getting higher and higher. Inversely, once an NPC dies in battle, they will not respawn again! A loss will remain lost!

The players did the best they could and managed to somewhat keep the monsters of the fifth wave at bay. However, the performance of the super guilds were much better, they could at least preserve their NPC army while the rest of the players had already completely sacrifice the NPC army on their end! Among the guilds that could preserve their NPC army was the alliance between Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage, and Lost Paradise. The number of NPC army on their side of the battle field remained at 70%!

‘Ding! The fifth wave boss, Marcus the Wind Ranger has appeared!’

Along with that system notification, the hill-sized male centaur Wind Ranger had entered the battle field. His massive body had actually managed to block the sun and cast a huge shadow onto a large portion of the battlefield! With half of its body naked, his tight and ripped muscles were filled with explosive power, coupled with his full red body, he was packed with power, easily spotted from afar!

[Marcus the Wind Ranger] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 55

HP: 15,000,000

Defense: 600

“GROANN!” The centaur growl loudly and stomped his way towards the players. The thundering sound of its hooves was as loud of the drums of war, a truly ferocious and terrifying prospect!

This time, the boss was headed towards the guild called “Floating Clouds”

The closer it came, the stronger the clapping of its hooves. The boss, Marcus drew its bow at a far distance and began to fire arrows, burning in emerald colored flame. When the arrows struck the Floating Clouds players, they exploded and formed 2 meter tall flaming walls that spread out everywhere.

’ -5.000!’ -5.000!’ -5.000!’

Just as the flame touched with the players, the damage number popped out from the head and was mostly killed off instantly. A single attack alone had killed off close to 50 players of the guild!

“Spread out! Spread out immediately!” cried Nightless Moon, the guild master of Floating Clouds.

However, even when the tanks of Floating Clouds had gotten hold onto the boss' aggro, Marcus remained completely unfazed and still fired arrows towards the attacking tanks!

Wei Yan Er saw the scenario and asked Zhang Yang. "Hey...noob tank. A Hunter is not supposed to attack when a player gets close to him, right?"

A Hunter cannot attack targets that were too close to him. The effective range was between 3 meters to 30 meters. Within 3 meters, the Hunter would be unable to fight. It was also called the "Blind Spot".

"...Did you see how tall is the monster is? From his feet to his head, he could at least be a few meters tall! How can there be any blind spots?" Zhang Yang laughed as he explained.

Everyone was baffled by his explanation. How could that be valid?!

It's the truth and nothing but the truth. They had to accept that fact since the boss kept on shooting arrow and arrow at the tanks beneath him! Every time an arrow was fired, it would deal an AoE fire attack to all targets in 10 meters of the first target.

Skill-wise, this boss had simple mechanisms. He had only been using one form of attack. Every time he attacked, the aggro value was reset! It's a bloody massacre by his hand! By the time Floating Clouds had understood the mechanics, they would stop their

attack in time when the boss cleared its aggro and allow the tank to regain his aggro hold, but, by then, Floating Clouds had already lost more than 2,000 men!

In the end, the boss was slain by the guild, but at great cost. It could be predicted that by the time the next wave onslaught arrives, the guild would be completely routed and removed from the city war!

Having witnessed such events, the other guilds had started to be wary of the bosses. Without proper strength and power, they would be in trouble trouble of they did not have enough power to take the boss head on!

Chapter 188: In Jeopardy

‘Ding! The sixth wave of monsters surging forward from Tukula Fortress!’

The system was not kind enough to provide sufficient time for the players to prepare for next wave of monsters. The interval between waves was fixed. If the players could not kill all the monsters from the previous wave in time, they would be further assaulted by the next wave of monsters!

This time the monsters were Demon Manticores, the size of the normal variation was similar to normal lions except for their powerful, long scorpion tails. The monster’s body was maroon in color, as if it had been drenched in fresh blood. The elite variation were similar to the normal Demon Manticores other than having heads that swelled up to seven or eight times larger than normal.

[Bloodthirsty Demon Manticore] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 56

HP: 5,600

Defense: 50

[Bloodthirsty Demon Manticore King] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 56

HP: 100,000

Defense: 300

These Demon Manticores rushed out from the fortress like a wave red sea towards the player, threatening to wash them away!

Except for a few strong guilds that still kept their NPC army, the rest of the defense lines' were no longer accompanied by their NPCs, thus, those guilds had started to move closer to each other. In this way, they could enhance their strength as well as use each other as meat-shields.

The Dominators, led by Humbly Gentleman, positioned themselves at the back of Zhang Yang's defense line, hiding behind the NPC army.

Hundred Shots shouted angrily, "Humbly Gentleman, haven't all the guild masters agreed that all guilds stick to your own defense lines? What are you doing here?!"

Humbly Gentleman put on his royal princeling face, waving a hand lackadaisically. One of his followers immediately replied, "F*cking shit, this battlefield is not owned by your guild, who are

you to tell us where to stand? We are kind enough to assist you in fighting against the monsters, but you even dare blame us?!”

The follower spoke like a true Dominator. The whole lot of them were self-entitled pricks, acting as if they were a blessing to the world! They knew that Zhang Yang’s defense line still had an ample amount of NPCs to fight against the enemy and they wanted to reap the rewards without sowing, as they could rely on the enemy to reduce the strength of Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage. The Dominators would be able to earn the title of the master of the city in the coming contest!

Zhang Yang pondered upon it for a moment, before switching to the open channel and announcing, “Everybody, our NPC armies are almost depleted, and our numbers aren’t looking too good either, if we insist on fighting alone, we will not survive the tenth wave! Those who are willing, please come to my side immediately. I have Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage, Lost Paradise and The Dominators here! Brothers and sisters, unity is strength, let’s fight together so that we can claim victory together!”

Those lost and weak players were wandering at their spots uneasily. Zhang Yang’s announcement calmed their mind and emotions, and they immediately came to Zhang Yang’s side. Everyone knew that Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage and The Dominators were the strong guilds in White Jade Castle. Lost Paradise was another guild that was quite capable. With all of these guilds allied, they could be depended upon. The lost and weak players could rest safe, knowing that they were in good hands!

The rest of the weak guilds hesitated for a while before coming to

Zhang Yang's side one after another. Instantly, Zhang Yang's defense line increased from 20,000 players to more than 700,000 players. In fact, it was almost two-thirds of the surviving players!

Humbly Gentleman never thought that Zhang Yang would use them as an excuse to recruit more players to join his defense line. Besides, this also made Zhang Yang more heroic and messianic, even! A savior that appeared in desperate times to liberate the weakened minds! Humbly Gentleman suddenly became furious, but who told him to do what he did in the first place?

Zhang Yang commanded the crowd to move backwards and use the remaining NPC army as defense.

The Demon Manticores already rushed towards them and fought with the NPC army. These monsters had many kinds of attacks, from their claws that clubbed and slashed, to their fangs that bit and crunched, and their tails that lashed about and stung. Their attacks were overwhelming, tearing up an opening among the NPC army. The Demon Manticores fought straight ahead toward players' defense line.

The melee attackers fought against these monsters, and another bloody war broke out.

“Move back, back!” Zhang Yang shouted repeatedly and led the players until the rear forces had their backs against the invisible wall at top of the hillside while fighting against the monsters. By moving backwards to the air wall, the monsters would be unable to flank them and they would only need to fight against the monsters from the front!

Facing the endless attacks from the monsters, the remaining NPC army was now all defeated. However, their sacrifices were not wasted as they withstood a full 20 minutes of insane onslaught from the monsters, greatly reducing the pressure on the players.

With NPC army was all dead, their last buffer was gone, and the players were forced to fight against the monsters themselves. The boss appeared when they had fought for 50 minutes. The number of players remaining was 750,000!

‘Ding! The boss of the sixth wave monsters, Demonic Manticore King, Hooke has joined the battle!’

Suddenly, a giant Demonic Manticore, about 60 to 70 meters tall, more than a hundred meters in length, swathed in black flames, appeared on the battlefield.

[Demonic Manticore King, Hooke] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 56

HP: 16,000,000

Defense: 600

All of the players focused on Hooke and were surprised to find out that Hooke had an Aura Effect!

[Aura Effect]: Causes 1,000 fire damage every second to targets within range. Aura range: 30 meters radius around the caster.

Zhang Yang immediately spoke in the open channel, “Hooke has an Aura Effect, melee attackers do not approach Hooke, otherwise, you will be dead! All ranged attackers who have more than 800 basic damage points, come forward and attack Hooke while standing 30 meters away from him, if your HP is not enough, move back and make sure you get it full! Players who do not have good equipment, stay at the back, otherwise, you will waste the healers’ MP and take up important spots! For the pride of all the players in White Jade Castle, everyone, please cooperate!”

Zhang Yang spoke again in his party channel, “Demon Snow, follow me when I dash! Hundred Shots, look for 100 ranged attackers with good equipment and fight with us! Daffodil Daydream, look for 200 healers with good equipment, pair up two healers to focus on one attacker each and do not let anyone die!”

“Yes!” Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream accepted to the command and complied.

Zhang Yang summoned his war horse and dashed towards Hooke. Hooke had an Aura Effect so Zhang Yang must not allow it to go near to the crowd, thus, Zhang Yang had to pull Hooke further away from the crowd!

On the other side, Crimson Rage, The Dominators and Sky High also sent their attackers to join the battle, while those small and medium guilds simply stood aside, observing the battle as they could not afford to fight anymore.

Zhang Yang dashed towards Hooke, immediately using <Charge>. Because of Hooke's gigantic body size, Zhang Yang was like an ant bouncing off a building!

‘-1,253!’

‘-3,012!’

Although this ant was small, its damage was high, thus, Hooke screamed with pain and lifted his gigantic paw, attacking Zhang Yang.

‘<Block>!’

‘-350!’

Zhang Yang raised his shield and blocked against Hooke's paw attack. However, Hooke's Aura Effect could not be evaded, so ‘-350’ damage text appeared above Zhang Yang's head every second!

Luckily it was Zhang Yang, if it had been someone else without the equipment which absorbing a total of 450 damage, it would

have been 800 damage points every second! Defenders had high magic resistance but even they would still receive 750 damage points!

Han Ying Xue immediately casted <Regeneration> on Zhang Yang, followed by <Mending Prayers>. She kept <Holy Shield> in reserve, it was to be used in emergency situations!

Tanks from the rest of the guilds rushed toward Hooke, but they did not come over to help Zhang Yang take damage from Hooke, simply waiting for the loots from Hooke!

After Zhang Yang applied the five stacks of <Cripple Defense> on Hooke, and the damage from the Hunters instantly increased! This round, the Pyromancers' were unable to contribute much. Although Hooke was not fully immune to fire damage, but being a firey beast itself, it had extremely high flame resistance. 1,000 Points of <Fireball> were turned into a measly 100 points when it came to Hooke!

Zhang Yang's strategy was a two plus one tactic, with ranged attackers taking 1,000 fire damage every second and two healers to keep them alive. The rest of the guilds followed this tactic and some even used a three plus one variation that actually wasted MP.

'Ding! Demonic Manticore King, Hooke used <Charge>!'

Hooke suddenly dashed towards the surrounding crowd, the gigantic body steamrolling over them like a giant meteorite. Targets who were hit were sent flying, with '-5,000' damage texts

appearing on their heads. Hooke instantly killed a large number of players!

Shush!

Hooke dashed in another direction, repeating the action seven times, instantly killing at least 200 to 300 players. After that, Hooke dashed towards Zhang Yang as the aggro value had already been established!

Whenever Zhang Yang pulled a monster, nobody could possibly OT. However the <Charge> skill was used at random, this outcome was inevitable!

Open world bosses usually took several lives as they go down!

At the cost of 3,000 players' lives, the Demonic Manticore King, Hooke was finally killed. The gigantic corpse crashed onto the ground, dropping a lot of loot. The tanks who surrounded Hooke's corpse quickly reached out and looted the equipment as much as could possibly take.

Although Zhang Yang had fast hands, there were too many people around, so he could only loot a Gray-Silver cloth armor and a skill book. The equipment was immediately put up for auction in guild's warehouse. A Spellcaster named 'Midsummer Fruit' won it, she was the main Spellcaster in the second team. Overjoyed, she had thanked him repeatedly for it in the guild chat.

The skill book was <Crusader Strike> which could only be learned by Templars. Zhang Yang also put it up for auction in guild's warehouse.

“Silly Yu, the NPCs are all dead now, and we are left with only 748,923 players, it's going to be difficult for us to survive until the tenth wave!” Han Ying Xue said, her brow furrowed. There were statistics displaying the number of surviving players in the upper right corner of the character interface menu.

Zhang Yang sighed and said, “Let's just do our best!”

“Do not give up, do not falter!” Fatty Han boldly proclaimed.

“How irresponsible!” Endless Starlight added on for Fatty Han.

Everyone suddenly laughed, their doubts slightly alleviated.

‘Ding! The seventh wave of monsters is surging out of Tukula Fortress!’

Another wave of monsters had appeared, they were packs of Cerberuses, much larger in size than the Manticores! Their entire bodies were jet black, as they snarled, white gleaming teeth coated in dribbling saliva snapping shut with deadly intent. Just staring at them alone sent chills down the spines of the players. Elite monsters were even bigger in size than the normal monsters, and they had two heads!

[Cerberus] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 57

HP: 5,700

Defense: 50

[Two-Headed Cerberus] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 57

HP: 100,000

Defense: 300

Without NPCs as their protection, the players would have to face the monsters head-on. The normal attacks from these Cerberuses were not particularly high but they could cast <Mana Burning> skills. <Mana Burning> had no effect on players who did not have MP bars, but players who had MP bars were in grave danger, suffering 1,000 damage points and losing 2,000 MP!

A lot of healers' MP were depleted due to this skill, they could

only watch on helplessly as players left and right went down!

Kill! Kill! Kill! KILL!

Upper right corner of the screen showed the number of surviving players reducing drastically!

700,000!

600,000!

500,000!

The players lost 250,000 people to the seventh wave. After the ordeal, those who were left standing were basically elite players. Those who were low leveled or inadequately equipped had gone as far as they could possibly go.

‘Ding! The boss of the seventh wave monsters, Three-Headed Cerberus, Ankeda has joined the battle!’

They eliminated all the minions and those healers who had depleted MP immediately sat down and ate cakes to recover their condition. But now, a gigantic Three-Headed Cerberus was coming towards them from the direction from the fortress. The Three-Headed Cerberus was about a hundred meters tall, it was even larger than the Manticore Boss, Hooke!



[Three-Headed Cerberus, Ankeda] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 57

HP: 17,000,000

Defense: 600

“Damn, with each level, they gain another 1,000,000 HP!” Endless Starlight muttered.

“We fight as usual!” Zhang Yang summoned his mount and asked Han Ying Xue, “Demon Snow, are you ready?”

“Wait a minute!”

Zhang Yang reined in his war horse and waited for Han Ying Xue. Speaking to Hundred Shots, he gave further instructions. “Reorganize the people that we have left, currently we have less than 6,000 people, team arrangements have to be redone again for balanced job roles! Make sure every party has a healer!”

Zhang Yang had built Lone Desert Smoke with elites, thus, they had only lost less than 40% of their full roster! Strong guilds like Crimson Rage, The Dominators and Sky High had already lost 50% of their guild members. The rest of the guilds were in even worse states. The remaining guilds who had anything above 30% were

considered pretty good, as most of the other guilds had been completely wiped out!

“Done!” Han Ying Xue immediately stood up and summoned her [Storm and Gale Direwolf] and said, “Let’s go!”

Zhang Yang nodded, whipped his war horse and dashed towards Ankeda.

The rest of the guilds had already sent attackers to fight against Ankeda, Ankeda’s damage dealing style was revealed; each head of Ankeda had their individual attack intervals, similar to dual-wielding Thieves. It would also cast a much larger variation of the AoE skill, <Mana Burning> every 20 seconds, causing 5,000 damage and burning off 10,000 MP!

Other than players who had Level 40 Gray-Silver equipment, none of the healers’ HP were more 5,000, thus, they were all killed in the first round. Those who survived were left with empty tanks and became sitting ducks.

Ankeda was the bane for Spellcasters, healers were either killed instantly or their MP was quickly depleted. The tanks at the defense line died one after another, further increasing player losses.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, “Demon Snow, stay back, this boss is the exterminator of Spellcasters!”

“What about you?”

“The damage from this boss to physical attackers is not really high. I will defeat it with sheer number of players!” Zhang Yang spoke in open channel, “Ankeda will not cast AoE damage to players who do not have MP bar but causes high damage to healers! We cannot use regular tactics to fight this boss. All the attackers who do not have MP bars, come forward and fight together, we will defeat this boss with our numbers. If the healers are all killed, it’ll be the end for all of us!”

Chapter 189: The Eighth And Ninth Wave

As per Zhang Yang's orders, Lone Desert Smoke sent a large amount of tanks and attackers without MP bars towards Ankeda. All the healers remained behind, the precious keys to victory, tucked safely away.

Ankeda's physical damage was devastating. Each bite from each head of the Ankeda caused 2,000 damage points which could kill a player within two to three seconds. Despite not casting AoE skill, its mere attacks brought enough trouble, how many players would die fighting this boss?

One after another, more players died, as Ankeda's HP was continuously reduced.

Most of the guilds did not send their elite members to fight against Ankeda as 80% of the players would die! The most suitable attackers to fight against Ankeda were the Hunters. When their aggro values were high, they immediately used <Fake Death> to clear the aggro. Thus, even if their damage was high to Ankeda, their lives were not in danger. Hunters were the MVPs of this boss!

Ankeda had killed more than 300 players within five minutes, but his ample HP was also exhausted. Ankeda's three heads reared up, facing the sky as it roared in denial before crashing down, dropping a lot of loot.

Different tactics were used to fight against different bosses. If

they used the traditional tactic of sending tanks and healers to fight against this MP-depleting boss, healers would be wiped out, along with the tanks.

Zhang Yang did not tank the boss; otherwise, he would have held the highest aggro! Even though he was powerful, he would not be able to tank the boss for five minutes without a healer. Thus, this was the first time he stood aside and watched the battle as an audience.

Zhang Yang switched the item distribution mode in the party to All-Pick, allowing every member of their own respective guild to fight for the boss loots. He did not mind them getting a few items for themselves.

‘Ding! The eighth wave of monsters is surging out of Tukula Fortress!’

The system did not allow the players to rest for long, and the eighth wave of monsters were already dashing towards the players from fortress.

This time, it was not a running monster but a flying Quad-Winged Demon Bat! A dense, dark mass could be seen from afar, it was like the night itself was being brought to them via sorcery!

The size of a normal Demon bat was similar to a little calf, while the elite Demon bat was much larger in size. Fully outstretched, they would easily have a wingspan of 10 meters. The edges of those wings were lined with gold, which marked the difference between

them and the black wings of the normal Demon bats!

[Quad-Winged Demon Bat] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 58

HP: 5,800

Defense: 50

[Golden Quad-Winged Demon Bat] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 58

HP: 100,000

Defense: 300

Countless Demon bats blotted out what little sun they had. Zhang Yang knew that the monsters had ranged attack abilities so he immediately said, “Everybody spread out! If anyone of you is attacked by monsters and you are unable to fight back, you have to run forward, the monsters will chase after you until you have gained enough distance!”

Faced with aerial monsters, defense formations did not matter anymore. Due to the nature of the monsters, attacks would come in three—dimensions, melee attackers would be unable to fight back if they were bunched up together!

Demon bats flew pretty swiftly, able to cover 500 meters in 10 seconds. The Demon bats spat acid on the players from their positions up in the sky. Normal monsters caused 900 points of neutral damage while elite monsters caused 2,000 damage.

Ranged attackers started to retaliate immediately, while the melee attackers ran continuously. Whenever the melee attackers were out of Demon bats' attack range, Demon bats would fly obliquely and land on the ground, where the melee attackers were given the opportunity to run back and hack at them.

450,000!

400,000!

Monsters were raining down from the skies as they were killed, but the number of players also reduced continuously!

350,000!

300,000!

250,000!

The boss spawned at the 50th minute while only 200,000 players remained!

‘Ding! The boss of the eighth wave monsters, Quad-Winged Demon Bat King, Cinchorida has joined the battle!’

A giant Quad-winged demon bat immediately appeared on the battlefield. It had about a hundred meter-long wingspan. Once it flapped its wings, a whirlwind was formed and the battlefield was clouded up with dust, demonstrating its power!

[Quad-Winged Demon Bat King, Cinchorida] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 58

HP: 18,000,000

Defense: 600

This Demon bat king flapped its wings and about ten swirls of dust appeared immediately and formed into a few mini tornadoes. These mini tornadoes moved about ten meters before gradually disappearing!

“Ranged attackers, kite the boss like how you fought the minions!” Zhang Yang immediately spoke in open channel, “Spread out, spread out as far as possible!”

Cinchorida came over the top of the players and spat green acidic saliva on a player, ‘-5,000’ damage text appeared above that player’s head, instantly leading to the player’s demise. At the same time, about ten ranged attackers also attacked Cinchorida. It came swooping down at them in retaliation, but they scattered, running off in different directions. It was a rather comical, yet terrifying spectacle.

Although the boss spat another acidic glob of sputum and killed a player, an attack interval had been established and thus, based on its rhythm, the rest of the players were able constantly stay out of its attack range. Cinchorida was helpless and it flew obliquely after one of the players who currently held the highest aggro value.

Zhang Yang already summoned his war horse and waited for the chance to tag Cinchorida as it flew low. When the opportunity came, he chased after the boss, yelling, “Demon Snow, follow me!”

Cinchorida successfully chased after a player, killing the player with another spit of acid. At the same time, Zhang Yang already approached Cinchorida and entered the range of <Charge>. Zhang Yang immediately disabled his war horse summon, used <Charge> and dashed towards Cinchorida.

‘-1,305!’

‘-2,932!’

After two attacks, Zhang Yang had locked onto Cinchorida’s aggro. It growled and spat green acidic saliva on Zhang Yang.

‘-3,500!’

Damage text appeared across Zhang Yang’s head. Because this acidic saliva caused magic damage, Zhang Yang’s defense value did little to reduce the damage.

‘<Regeneration>!’

‘<Mending Prayers>!’

‘<Higher Healing>!’

Han Ying Xue stood 30 meters behind Zhang Yang and threw healing spell after healing spell on Zhang Yang.

The rest of the players surrounded Cinchorida and started to attack.

Hu!

Cinchorida flapped its four wings, ten mini tornadoes

immediately released around its side, sweeping off in all directions. Those players who touched by the tornadoes, were tossed up to the sky, taking 1,000 damage every second.

“Evade the tornado! Evade the tornado!” Zhang Yang looked around and hurriedly yelled, “Those tornadoes aren’t really fast, if you guys don’t bump into each other, evading won’t be much trouble!”

Tornadoes did not last long, spiraling for about ten seconds. However, these ten seconds were enough to cause more than 10,000 damage to the players who were flung to the sky. If it was not for the efforts of the healers, they would have been dead before the tornadoes even weaken!

This particular round of tornadoes took at least 200 lives, showing that tornadoes could be lethal as well!

Besides, Cinchorida activated tornado attacks rather frequently. It activated another round of tornado attack after about ten seconds, scattering those players who were trying to surround it!

In fact, Cinchorida’s single attack was weak. Han Ying Xue alone was enough to heal Zhang Yang’s HP easily. If Zhang Yang had sufficient time and lesser players surrounding Cinchorida then Zhang Yang could even kill Cinchorida easily as Zhang Yang would have ample space to evade Cinchorida’s attacks. However, Zhang Yang knew that the ninth wave of monsters would be unleashed anytime soon, so he had to wrap things up as soon as possible!

Bosses with powerful AoE skills had been specially designed for this battlefield for a simple but effective purpose--to reduce the number of players and increase the difficulty of seizing the fortress. However, the game had anticipated the average player's strength at this point in time, so the bosses weren't impossible to beat.

This time, all the elite forces had gathered up, and they hacked away, quickly depleting Cinchorida's HP. After three minutes, it succumbed to their deadly blows, dropping loot befitting of a boss. Another scramble among the players occurred again as they raced for the loots.

"Ke, ke, ke, noob tank, I got a Gray-Silver equipment!" Wei Yan Er laughed with proud.

Sun Xin Yu showed her loots, immediately silencing the little brat, as she had scooped up two pieces of Gray-Silver equipment!

"Put them all up for auction!" Zhang Yang simply said, himself only being able to loot a Hunter's skill book.

If the main forces in the guild wanted the equipment so badly, nobody could compete with them as their guild's contribution points left everyone else in the dust. Besides, Zhang Yang used such a method of distributing loots to earn trust and respect from the members. He wanted to give them all a sense of belonging.

"Guys, don't join the auction this time round, Yellow-Gold bosses will appear later, keep your guild's distribution points for that!"

Before Zhang Yang started the guild’s auction, he told the gang in party channel.

‘Ding! The ninth wave of monsters is surging forth from Tukula Fortress!’

Hisssss...

With a series of snake hisses, a group of snake monsters came out from the fortress. They had both humanoid and snake-like features. They had four arms protruding out from their female bodies. Their upper body was covered in golden strips that could hardly be considered armor, merely covering the tips of their breasts. Their fair bellies were fully exposed. Each one of them was rather coquettish and beautiful. The green silky hair had a rather mysterious aura, adding on to the sex appeal.

There were no normal monsters for this wave. All of them were the elite monsters, wielding swords in all four of their arms, gazing upon the players with beautiful deadliness.

[Lamia] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 59

HP: 100,000

Defense: 300

“So sexy!” Fatty Han’s eye immediately shone and locked his sights on the Lamias’ tits.

“It’s such a shame, if only they had two legs, they would be perfect!” Endless Starlight spoke, using a somewhat professional tone.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “It would be perfect when they’ve killed the two of you!”

“It would be our honour to be killed by such great beauties!” Both Fatty Han and Endless Starlight replied together.

Hisssss...

The lamiae swayed their hips seductively as they slithered to the players’ direction, their swords poised to strike!

“Stick to your defense line!” Zhang Yang raised his shield and lifted up his axe then shouted, “Two waves to go, we must survive this! For victory!”

“To victory!” All players shouted together.

“Kill!”

“Kill...”

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

The lamiae collided with the players’ defense line, whirling their swords with deadly finesse, starting another bloody clash!

Chapter 190: Demon Snake Queen

Each sword attack from the Lamia was around 1,000 damage points. With four arms and four swords, a Lamia's flurry of slashes would amount up to 4,000 damage points if she was attacking a non-tank player! But if she slashed a tank, the damage would be dispersed and the damage from each sword attack would be reduced by the tanks' defense value. Zhang Yang had his 450 damage absorption attribute, so he received only two digits worth of damage from Lamia's attack!

Every tank was drooling when they saw Zhang Yang taking so little damage. If everyone had the same equipment as he did, these monsters would be a piece of cake for them!

Besides Zhang Yang, everyone else was fighting at their best efforts as all of these were the elite monsters! These elite monsters had high HP, high defense and high attack, so it was not easy for the players to kill them. Rays of light appeared one after another on the battlefield as more players were sent back to White Jade Castle!

180,000, 140,000, 100,000, 80,000... The number of players drastically reduced!

The surviving players were the skillful players with good equipment. As a whole, the players were like a sharp sword covered in dust, and having the 'dust' removed, their attack capability immediately shot up! Although the number of players was dropping, it seemed to have hit a hard bracket that separated the truly elite from the average. The rate of deaths was slowing

down.

60,000, 40,000, 20,000, 10,000!

Out of 2,000,000 players, they were left with only 5,000 players. The ninth wave monsters had finally been eliminated completely! These 5,000 players were the players with top equipment in White Jade Castle. Naturally, this meant that they were also minority that stood at the top of the pyramid hierarchy!

Not only have they survived this much, they have also accumulated vast amounts of experience points and gained several levels! They usually required about seven days to gain a level after Level 50, but now those surviving players had gained at least one level. This battle had rewarded them handsomely with experience points, if nothing else!

Zhang Yang's level increased had to 52 and it was now only 28% away from Level 53!

‘Ding! The boss of the ninth wave monsters, Demon Snake Queen, Mimina has joined the battle!’

The ninth boss had appeared and she was different from the previous eight bosses which were with gigantic body size. This Demon snake queen as large as the regular Lamiae, but she had a thicker and longer snake-like body. Every time she moved her body a little, her 40 meters long and huge body would be revealed!

She had six arms and held a sword in each hand, she was a Yellow-Gold boss!

[Demon Snake Queen, Mimina] (Yellow-Gold, Demon)

Level: 59

HP: 20,000,000

Defense: 1,000

“A Yellow-Gold boss really did appear!”

Everyone gazed at Mimina hungrily, they truly wanted the drops!

Except for Zhang Yang and the gang, this was the first time the players actually encountered Yellow-Gold boss. Once they thought of the quality of Yellow-Gold equipment that was much more powerful than Gray-Silver, all somehow found new strength coursing in their veins!

“Kill!” Somebody shouted first, triggering the 5,000 survivors to rush at Mimina, their depressed mood greatly uplifted!

“Noob tank, let's go hurry up!” Wei Yan Er had already summoned her Hell's stead and was shifting impatiently. Despite

Zhang Yang and his gang's past experience with Yellow-Gold bosses, they were still greatly enticed.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "There's no need to rush, they'll take a while to kill Mimina! Daffodil Daydream, sum up how much people, tanks and healers we left!"

After a while, Daffodil Daydream answered, "We have a total of 827 people, and we have 89 tanks, 118 healers and 620 attackers!"

Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, "Hundred Shots, put everybody into a team!"

30 Seconds later, Lone Desert Smoke's remaining players were all formed into a huge team, the elites of the elite, the wheat separated from the chaff!

"Zhan Yu, hurry up, kite the boss!" Suddenly Snow Seeker sent a message in open channel.

Sky Shaman quickly followed up, "Damn it, Mimina's defense is so high, even after applying five stacks of <Cripple Defense>, she still has 500 defense. Besides, her level is too high, I can only cause about 200 damage points to her with physical attacks while <Shield Bash> causes only 100 damage points, I cannot grab hold of the aggro!"

"What are you talking about? You're barely even trying, you were waiting for Mimina to kill the people who were OT! She's

attacking you now because there's nothing else for her to hit!" Crimson Fire complained.

Mimina's defense was high, but she was relatively weaker to magic attacks. Spellcasters did not cause much damage to Mimina due to their differences in levels, but they still fared considerably better compared to the melee attackers. Spellcasters were in danger of going OT as they were gaining more aggro than the available tanks.

Besides, Spellcasters did not have <Fake Death>, unlike Hunters and Thieves. The moment Mimina targets them, they would be killed instantly as her six swords make quick work of them!

Mimina had already killed several attackers, with 300 spellcasters making up most of the deaths!

Zhang Yang laughed and replied on the open channel, "I'm coming!" He switched to party chat, "Team one, follow me!"

Zhang Yang led 50 people towards Mimina.

All of the players who surrounded Mimina stood aside and opened up a way for Zhang Yang when they saw him coming. Why were they so polite? Obviously it was because they could not establish the aggro. With all the Spellcasters dead, healers would hold the highest aggro. If all the healers died, they would fail the expedition!

‘<Charge>!’

‘<Blood Rage>!’

Zhang Yang dashed towards Mimina and immediately hacked at her with his axe.

‘-1,801!’

Because they had applied five stacks of <Cripple Defense> on Mimina and Zhang Yang had <Eagle Eye>, his attacks toward Mimina would not be reduced by her defense value! Besides, Zhang Yang was only seven levels behind Mimina. As long as the level difference did not exceed ten levels, Zhang Yang’s attacks would not be penalized.

“F*ck, he is so powerful!” Sky Shaman could not help but swear. He could never accept the fact that a tank could deal so much damage, compared to his ‘200’ worth of damage points!

‘-3,571!’

When Zhang Yang used <Horizontal Sweep>, Sky Shaman almost cried out in front of everyone, complaining that Zhang Yang must be using cheats!

“Everyone, stop attacking, let me get a solid hold of the aggro!” Zhang Yang shouted loudly.

At this moment, nobody wanted to be killed by Mimina, all of them stopped attacking and patiently waited for Zhang Yang to establish aggro. Only Hunters could continue attacking as they had <Fake Death>. The skill's cool down duration was short, unlike the variations that Thieves had -- requiring five whole minutes!

On the other hand, Zhang Yang and his people continued attacking and healing as they started attacking alongside their leader. If anyone of them got to OT Mimina, Zhang Yang would have failed as a tank!

Mimina was immune to <Provoke>, but Zhang Yang used only 15 seconds to establish Mimina's aggro! Mimina turned away from Sky Shaman and started Zhang Yang wildly.

Sky Shaman's face was full of tears, he was afterall, one of the top tanks in White Jade Castle. It filled him with shame that Zhang Yang had acquired sufficient aggro in merely 15 seconds, while it had taken him a whole minute to do the same.

Mimina did the Yellow-Gold boss title justice, each attack of her swords caused about 2,000 damage points and she always attacked with her six arms which would absolutely destroy any non-tank attackers at current the current phase of the game. Mimina had dealt more than 7,000 damage points to Sky Shaman but when she attacked Zhang Yang, the damage was reduced to 5,000!

If Mimina's damage output was calculated as a single hit, then a single attack would cause up to 12,000 points of damage. By then,

Zhang Yang's 450 damage absorption would have been pointless. But since he faced multiple, lower single attacks from the opponent, the damage absorption effect truly shone!

“You guys can start!” Zhang Yang sent a message in the open channel.

Suddenly, those players who stopped attack just now, they started to attack zealously, causing plenty of damage to Mimina! This was the first time they met Yellow-Gold boss! Their excitement was just as it was for Wei Yan Er, Hundred Shots and the gang when they first met Evil Necromancer Zac!

However, open world bosses would ranged skills and would be much harder to bring down!

‘Ding! Mimina used <Tail Strike>!’

Mimina moved her body and used her long tail like a whip, lashing out at the enemies at her rear. Instantly, a bunch of ‘6,000’ damage texts appeared on players’ head and killed at least 100 players. Suddenly, there was a conical void at her back, where players had been snuffed out. It was 40 meters in radius, cleanly marking the spots where she had massacred the players. It was currently occupied by not more than seven players. These included five tanks, Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu.

Although Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu were not tanks, they were equipped with Level 40 Gray-Silver equipment, a few Level 50 Gray-Silver and Yellow-Gold equipment. Along with Zhang Yang's

<Vitality Aura>, their HPs already exceeded 7,000, which enabled them to survive the <Tail Strike>!

Suddenly everyone was shocked, the space behind Mimina was quickly vacated, everyone keeping close watch of her long tail. They quickly moved to the front, having no desire of taking another <Tail Strike> again!

Unfortunately, <Tail Strike> was not only used at the rear of Mimina. She was actually capable of flicking her long tail all around her. After a while, Mimina used <Tail Strike> once again, striking the area in front of her and killing another 100 players! Their maneuvering had brought no change!

Everybody was stunned at this point as they did not know if anywhere around her was safe! But the guild masters insisted that they kept up their attacks, so they had no choice but to funnel themselves into the empty spots, filled with dread as players who once stood there had been instantly killed!

60%, 40%, 20%. Because of Mimina's high defense value, long HP and high level, most of the attackers had been wiped out. Ten minutes later, Mimina was doggedly hanging on with 10% HP!

‘Ding! The tenth wave of monsters fall from the sky, the battle is nearing its end!’

At this moment, the system notification rang and the tenth wave of attacks was coming soon!

“Quickly, kill Mimina!” Everyone yelled.

If Mimina was reinforced with the tenth wave of monsters, the players would stand no chance whatsoever!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

One after another, burning meteorites fell from the sky, crashing onto every single spot of the battlefield, leaving deep, vast craters. Out of those craters, gigantic rock monsters, with bodies covered in green flames climbed out, roaring with their arms spread open like Alpha Silverback Gorillas!

Chapter 191: The 10th Wave

[Hellfire Demon] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 60

HP: 150,000

Defense: 1000

These foul demonic creatures that were basically rocks and boulders clumped together to form crude humanoid figures had greenish flames dotted all over their bodies. They had varying heights, but all of them stood over 10 meters. The moment they spawned from the pit, they would immediately charge towards the players with deafening roars. Even before they got within melee range, the players would already suffer from a DoT effect of ‘-500’ per tick!

These Hellfire Demons were equipped with a lesser version of the Demonic Fire Lion King’s <Burning Aura>. After all, the Demonic Fire Lion King was a boss!

“Blitz the boss down, quickly!”

Everyone was shouting their lungs out. The members that were being sent over to encircle and suppress the boss by their

respective guilds are all elites among the elites! Without these excellently equipped players attending to the garrison, their own line of defense would have been easily crippled by the monsters!

“Put your backs into the game, just a little more!”

“Kill the boss first, then we shall go around to obliterating the monsters! There is still hope in completing the siege!”

“Never surrender!”

“Keep it up!”

At that single moment, everyone fought side by side, rivalries, grudges and enmities forgotten, with the greater good in mind. The morale was at its peak, as everyone desperately fought, none willing to fail at the 10th wave, with victory this close!

9%, 8%, 7%...

Mimina’s HP continued to drop, but the Hellfire Demons were inflicting heavy player casualties. Without the command of the guildmaster and the support of the stronger players to hold down the fort, the overall combat capability of the players dropped drastically, leading to heavy losses!

Zhang Yang immediately said, “Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, take the other parties back and help main battalion out! Witchy Snow, her silly little cousin, ice queen and Daffodil can stay! We’ll handle

the boss!” Without any support, the entire team would definitely be crippled!

Hundred Shots obeyed immediately and nodded, leading his parties back with one command.

Fatty Han, however smiled perversely and said, “Brother Yang’s appetite is only is getting bigger and bigger, initially he only had one in mind, then it became two, and now he’s doing it with three and four! Tsk tsk tsk, 5P, brother Yang, I will definitely send you some tiger whip to replenish your body!”

“Replenish your ass, get lost!” Zhang Yang barely prevented himself from kicking this wretched *ss into the distant sky, that man was playing with a live bomb. Sun Xin Yu was an explosive fireball. If you really lit her up, this violent woman would not hesitate to blow your head off with her guns!

Fatty Han and Endless Starlight left with obscene smiles on both of their faces.

Several other guild masters saw the situation and followed suit. It would be fine to leave the boss as long as their melee combatants stayed back to grab the equipment in the first place!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Meteorites came raining down, one after another, like a series of carpet bombs. If any of them were to land on the players, they

would instantly deal a damage of 3000 points to the players along with a 2 second stun! Therefore, players did not dare to bunch up together in one spot. If they were to take a few consecutive blows of the meteorites while also receiving some burn DoT from the <burning aura>, there would definitely be a massive amount of deaths on the field!

But once they split up, they would have face the onslaught of the monsters, every single one being an elite, and having defense points that went up to 1000! Without inflicting a full 5 stacks of the warrior's <Cripple Defense>, professions that dealt physical damage would not even be able to pluck out a single hair! Also, Hellfire Demons were fire attribute monsters, with exceedingly high fire resistance, rendering every Pyromancer on the field useless.

Sending elite players to assist the main battalion was like an act of sending firewood in a snowstorm, resolving their urgent needs! The battalion rallied to the reinstated chain of command from the return of high ranking guild officers and elite players, turning the tide of the battle!

Boom!

A meteorite struck Han Ying Xue on the back, a shockwave emanating from the impact, instantly dealing '-3000' damage on her, additionally stunning her for 2 seconds! A gigantic Hellfire Demon crawled out from the crater where the meteor landed, its greenish flames dealing '-500' damage on Han Ying Xue with every passing second!

Zhang Yang immediately backed up and sprung forward with a <Charge>, ramming straight into the Hellfire Demon. He shouted, “Finish the boss off, I will keep the other monsters(Creeps) occupied!”

He summoned <Shadow of Merlinda> to recover his health.

5%, 4%, 3%!

Mimina had a HP value that reached 20,000,000, so 1% of that would already be 200,000 worth of damage points. With only 60 to 70 people surrounding the boss, they were simply understaffed, taking about 15 seconds to forcefully bring down 1% of the boss' health!

2%!

1%!

0%!

“Argh ---” Mimina screamed in misery, with her long snake body twitching and flailing about chaotically, finally crashing down to the ground, dropping loots all over.

Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er, Sun Xin Yu immediately ran forward, arms extended, using their very best efforts to pick up the items that gleamed gold! Members from other guilds were at a disadvantage as they had never killed a Yellow-Gold boss before,

and had no idea on how Yellow-Gold items looked like. Instead, they were bedazzled by the shiny Gray-Silver items that nearly covered the entire ground, habitually grabbing at the more familiar sight.

It took about 2 or 3 seconds before they were finally aware of the prospect, but there were only 4 or 5 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, which were already swiped clean up by the 3 fast-handed players! Unfortunately, only 2 skill books dropped, one that Zhang Yang managed to grab, with the other one being taken by Crimson Rage. After all, skill books were too eye-catching!

Having no time at all to check on the loots he gathered, Zhang Yang immediately said, “Quickly! Head back to the main battalion!”

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Even if they wanted to leave, they would have to cope with the meteorites that were pouring down from the sky at a rate that only increased with each passing moment, like a snow hail smashing down, punching hundreds of thousands of craters in the ground, along hundreds of thousands of Hellfire Demons emerging from the pits, surrounding them from all directions!

It was definitely not possible to advance forward in the thick mass of demons. Although the effects of <Aura> skills would not stack, being flanked from the rear was no doubt the greater danger!

“Retreat! Fall back!” Zhang Yang quickly gave the 5-member party an instruction to retreat uphill, as it led to the edge of the map. The invisible wall supplied by the system would help block the monsters from one direction, reducing their pressure significantly! One less direction to look out for!

‘3549!’ ‘3201!’ ‘2843’...

The remaining number of survivors was dropping drastically, but the Hellfire Demons continued descending from the skies, endlessly reinforcing their numbers.

‘2602!’ ‘2312!’ ‘2103!’

“Sun of the beach! Brother Yang, I died!” the raging scream of Fatty Han came from the small party.

Zhang Yang could not help himself but wonder, so he asked, “Aren’t you a Hunter? You can just lay down and play dead!”

“I had to hold my pee-pee for half a day, and that was what I did exactly, I was lying on the ground like a dead man! As a result, when I returned, I found myself burnt to death by their <Burning Aura>!” Fatty Han wailed.

“For god’s sake, why didn’t you go to the washroom after every wave?”

“Well, I was nervous since the beginning, holding it in without

noticing, but I could not hold it any longer, so...”

“Aiyer, wretched fatty is just disgusting!”

The four pretty ladies in the party spoke in unison.

‘1938!’ ‘1743!’ ‘1329!’

“Boss, I died too!” Endless Starlight also spoke up in the party chat, “What bad luck! I was attracting the attentions of the monsters smoothly, but suddenly, a few monsters came from the back and killed Sweetheart within seconds! So I died without any healing!”

The one who he called ‘Sweetheart’ was the priest in the second leading party of Lone Desert Smoke, Fantasy Sweetheart. She had a good sense of combat awareness, however, the main reason she was able to join the second party was because she had a sweet appearance along with a proud pair of boobs that Endless Starlight and Fatty Han coined as the ‘giant boobed loli face’ while adding her to the formation of the second party.

‘892!’ ‘532!’ ‘321!’

“Zhan Yu! I am dead as well!” it wasn’t long before the dispirited voice of Hundred Shots came by their ears.

40 minutes passed before the raining of meteorites from the sky started to slow down, however, the appearance of the boss was just

10 minutes away!

‘Server announcement: The Longard Ciy expedition has failed!’

Suddenly, the system announcement in unique red words appeared on the global channel.

“That bunch of otakus and fujoshis have failed?” Fatty Han was sitting by the side of the bank, colluding with Endless Starlight in enjoying the view of the pretty girl players passing by.

“They began 40 minutes after us, they probably lasted until the appearance of monsters of the 10th wave before they were wiped out!” Zhang Yang gave some thoughts on it before saying it.

Daffodil Daydream was full of worry, saying, “I wonder if we can make it till the end!”

“Yes, we definitely can!” Zhang Yang said with certainty that was no bluff. The difficult part of the siege came when facing the monsters of the 10th wave. As long as they held their ground till the end, the NPCs will send forth an army of reinforcements to join the siege. By the time the NPCs take on the boss, the players will only have to ensure their own survival to complete the final task of the siege!

284!

183!

127!

The number of players was still dropping drastically, but the monsters was getting sparse in the number as well. There couldn't be more than two to three hundred of them in the field!

‘Ding! The boss of the 10th wave, Hellfire Demon King Bariyada has joined the battle!’

Boom!

A gigantic meteor rock descended from the sky, smashing violently onto the surface of the ground, shaking the earth with a boom that resonated across the land, forming a giant pit with a diameter of more than a kilometer on the site of the crash. The edges of the crater were still crumbling, collapsing. The shock waves lifted the surface of the ground like a carpet being lifted off the ground, emitting a 3 meter high shockwave that spread outwardly!

Pak! Pak!

Two huge hands reached out from the pit, followed closely by the rise of a colossal demon of rock and magma, crawling out from the pit. With a height of up to a hundred meters, it pierced through the clouds and the sky beyond. The greenish flames peppered across its whole body distorted the air with intense heat!

[Hellfire Demon King Bariyada] (Yellow-Gold, Demon)

Level: 60

HP: 30,000,000

Defense: 1500

“A HP of 30,000,000 points! And a defense of 1500 points!”

“Gulp-----” The remaining of the approximately 100 survivors found it very hard to swallow at the exact same moment.

Zhang Yang immediately gave instructions, “Witchy Snow, follow me as I kite the monsters. Little sister, icy and Daffodil, go help the others in clearing the remaining monsters!” Then he posted his comment in the region channel, “Everyone, I will handle the boss for the moment while you guys clear out the remaining monsters, then we shall face the boss together!”

That would be the only way to solve it. If anyone still wanted to compete for the boss, they would have been slaughtered clean by the remaining monsters before they could even get a tenth of the boss' HP down! Every members of their respective guilds made no delay in taking out all the remaining monsters, each of them knowing that with the excessive health points of the boss, they would not have to worry about Zhang Yang taking up the time and opportunity to slaughter the boss!

Gong! Gong! Gong!

Bariyada advanced towards the players at big strides, every step he took shook the ground with claps of thunder!

Zhang Yang went straight up in a swift manner while Han Ying Xue followed behind him closely.

Looking down above from the sky, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were like two small insignificant cockroaches, recklessly trying to block the giant juggernaut that was approaching, Bariyada!

100 meters, 50 meters, 30 meters!

The moment they entered the distance of 30 meters away from the boss, Zhang Yang felt a surge of blazing-hot air that threatened to vaporize the average human, and the damage values of ‘-350’ constantly deducted from their HP points ----- of course the boss had to possess <Burning Aura> as well, dealing 1000 fire damage to all targets within the radius of 30 meters!

Phew!

Bariyada suddenly dropped a punch onto Zhang Yang. ‘Koom’! Although the assault was blocked with a raise of his shield, the enormous impact still hit Zhang Yang hard, burrowing both of his legs in the ground.

“Anpalaseekdoka!” the boss roared in its demonic tongue, expressing its dissatisfaction at being defied. Raising its left fist, it threw another violent punch.

‘-4015!’

Zhang Yang did not block this time round, instantly, a damage value appeared on the top of his head.

The melee attack of the boss ranged at around 6000, give or take, and it attacked once every two seconds, the power was astonishing! However, the damage per second did not exceed a damage of 2000 when striking Zhang Yang, with a further reduction of <Block> every 5 seconds, the damage per second would be less than 1,400!

As long as Zhang Yang does not mess up with any single one of his <Block>s, Han Ying Xue would definitely be able to keep up with her healing abilities!

On the other side of the battlefield, the number of the monsters was decreasing rapidly, dropping from the hundreds to two digits, then again, dropping from two digits to one digit, and finally, they were completely exterminated! The number of remaining survivors were only 53!

Among the numbers, 11 players were members of Lone Desert Smoke, 8 members were from Crimson Rage, 8 members from Imperial Sky, 5 from The Dominators and another 5 from Lost Paradise. The other 14 were from lesser-known guilds!

With each of their faces filled with joy and excitement, they knew, even with the boss still at 97% HP, everyone could see the light of hope for victory, and one after another they went up to attack to the boss.

‘-1000!’

‘-1000!’

‘-1000!’

The damage values appeared right above the players who charged straight up to the boss. The boss was equipped with the <Burning Aura>!

Zhang Yang frowned and made a suggestion, "All of you, join my party!"

The players could not help themselves but stare at him, dumbfounded, unwilling to compromise to a suggestion like that! For all they knew, once they joined Zhang Yang's party, all Zhang Yang had to do was to set the distribution mode to 'Leader Distribution Mode', and lay waste to everything they had done all along?

Zhang Yang was infuriated beyond words. He could only shake his head continuously without any pause. They had already set their thoughts on the equipment distribution even before they could kill the boss! So he had to say it, "What is there to worry about? All

you guys have to do is quit my party when the boss is at 1% or 2 % health left, you would still be able to pick up the equipment! I'm inviting you guys into my party is because of our <Aura> effects!"

So he posted the explanation link of the <Vitality Aura> onto the region channel, before asking Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er to post the explanation link of their <Life Aura> and <Strength Aura> respectively, as well.

Han Ying Xue was truly contemptuous of such people with vile intentions. She unwillingly posted the explanation link of the <Life Aura> out on the channel. Wei Yan Er had been very aloof towards them, she did not make any faces like her cousin did.

The players only understood after they read the descriptions, Zhang Yang and his gang possessed Aura skills!

My goodness, these are really good stuff!

Chapter 192: Hellfire Demon King Bariyada

It was no longer a mystery on why he wanted everyone to join his party, it was all because Aura skills can only benefit the members of their own party!

The increment of 2%, or 4% may seem very little, but when the number of the party members increases, the power will be immense!

While Zhang Yang kited the boss around, he took out two pieces of scroll --- <Magic Scroll: Increase Morale (Level 1)> and <Magic Scroll: [Debilitation](#) (Level 1)>. Lone Desert Smoke had been reserving the Cave of Bones to themselves for the past few days, so there were at least 10 pieces of these scrolls deposited in the warehouse of the guild. Zhang Yang had brought them along this time round.

Pak, he tore a piece of the Magic Scroll: Increase Morale, adding the effect onto his own side of the party. Every single members instantly acquired an increase of 5% in both damage effect and healing effect. Zhang Yang threw the other scroll, the Magic Scroll: Debilitation at the boss.

Failed!

As the level gap of the two sides was 7 levels apart, the first scroll was instantly wasted.

Zhang Yang quickly passed another Debilitation scroll to Han

Ying Xue.

“You throw it!”

Han Ying Xue was currently at level 53, which was one level higher than Zhang Yang. Although the level difference between the two of them was only one level, the Magic Scroll was just too expensive to be wasted, saving up even one scroll was well worth it!

Pak, Han Ying Xue threw the scroll with a swing of her arm, slapping the <Magic Scroll> onto Bariyada.

‘Ding! Bariyada has been affected by Debilitation (Level1) effect’, decreasing all damage and healing effect by 10%. Last for 60 seconds!’

Han Ying Xue giggled as she teased sultrily, “Look, even the boss can be affected by the seduction of a woman!”

The party had the <Strength Aura> that gave them an addition of 2% strength, also with <Increasing Morale> that gave them an addition of 5% damage. The damage output of the whole gang had gone up by one level! Engaging a boss with high defense, the 5% increase of their attack was not merely increasing their damage output by 5%!

For example, a player who dishes out 120 base damage would only cause 20 damage to a boss that had 100 points of defense. When

there is a 5% increase in the attack, the basic damage will reach a value of 126, which actually can do 26 damage to the boss, which meant that the damage has actually been increased by 30%!

Although the increase of 2% strength could not increase 2% of the players' attack, but the direct increase of 1.5% would still be of use!

Taking the advantage of the time where the magic scroll was still in effect, everyone immediately went out with their full power, unleashing every major skill in their arsenal on the boss.

“Rawh ---” Bariyada suddenly let out a loud cry, smashing both of it's fists against the ground with a rumbling power. Immediately, pow, pow, pow, the cracking ground was abruptly raised up, one piece after another, it looked just like a cloudy shockwave expanding outwards.

As the wave of dirt passed through them, the players fell to the ground one after another, having a damage value of 6000 points appeared right above their heads!

‘Ding! Bariyada released <Grounding Hammer Strike>!’

Fortunately, with the <Vitality Aura> in play, the players that survived up to this point were wearing basic armors of level 40 gray-silver equipment, boosting their health points up to 7000, give or take. Most of the players survived the attack, but there were also a small number of players with HP lower than 7000 points. Taking one <Grounding Hammer Strike> and along with the damage from <Burning Aura>, they were instantly robbed of

their lives!

Han Ying Xue swiftly used her <Healing Shower>, casting her <Regeneration> and prioritized her healing on the health points of the Lone Desert Smoke members. Other healers were also healing their respective guild members.

With only one wave of this attack, another 7 players were instantly killed, leaving only 45 surviving members in the field!

92%, 84%, 72% ... The sheer defense of the boss was ridiculously high! Even with five stacks of <Cripple Defense>, the boss would still have 500 points of defense. Furthermore, the level of the boss was high, being at level 60, while the average level of the remaining surviving players ranged between level 47 to level 49. A large part of their DPS was taken away by the penalty incurred due to the difference in levels, it was obvious that their attack power was seriously inadequate.

The only player who did not have his attack reduced was Zhang Yang! With his <Eagle Eye>, he could ignore all the defense, and the level difference between him and the boss was only eight levels, so his damage was not penalized. The weapon in his grasp was also a level 50 Yellow-Gold, and while sustaining the attacks raining upon him, his rage points was constantly being charged. His damage per second had reached up to 2000, putting him in the first place for causing the most damage in his party.

The following was Wei Yan Er, with a two-handed weapon that had a high range of attack value, barely affected by the defense value. The only unfortunate thing for her was that her weapon was

still a level 40 Gray-Silver Axe, if only she had her hands on a Yellow-Gold weapon, her damage output would definitely exceed Zhang Yang's.

The third in place was Sun Xin Yu. The 500 points of defense of the boss had greatly affected her regular attacks, reducing them to almost nothing. She was saved by her skills, which were not as severely affected!

It was even worse for Daffodil Daydream. She was a pyromancer, with the boss being fire attributed, she could not even make it in the top 10!

Merely 30 seconds had passed, the boss went for another <Grounding Hammer Strike>, and through the rolling dirt wave, another five players were taken away from the field!

66%, 53%, 46%!

The health point of the boss was depleted down by half, but the number of the surviving players had decreased down to only 34!

<Grounding Hammer Strike>!

<Grounding Hammer Strike>!

<Grounding Hammer Strike>!

31 players left... 27 players left... 22 players left...

Another 20 minutes passed, the boss was left with 28% of health points, but only 19 players were left alive! What was even worse was that the mana bar of the healers were at the brink of being emptied! Even the great healer Han Ying Xue had only 20% of her mana left, the main reason being that there were too many surviving members from Lone Desert Smoke! Subsequently, she was under the most pressure among all the healers!

“Kill it fast! Kill it fast!”

The gang were having the same thoughts in their mind.

26%... 22%... 18%...

They struggled to drain the health points of the boss. If this went on, they would certainly be unable to hold on any longer!

Zhang Yang made a critical decision, speaking up. “Players with DPS lower than 300, remove yourself from the effective range of the aura effect of the boss immediately! You don’t have to waste the efforts of the healers! All healers split up into two groups, one group in-charge in healing, while the other group, recover your mana points!”

Engaging the boss until this very moment, it had already been 10 hours, everyone was hungry, starving and tired! Their judgment and reactions were declining down in a straight line. Having been

reminded by Zhang Yang, everyone only realized it just then --- Argh! They could have done this themselves sooner!

There were still 6 healers in the party. Immediately, they divided themselves into two groups with 3 players in each group. The two groups took turns, with one group healing while the other group stayed out of the effective range of the aura effect, using the advantage of 5 seconds to recover their mana points. The two groups would switch their roles once every 30 seconds. Even though their mana points were still insufficient, that had already bought them some extra time!

14%, 11%, 7%!

“Hang in there! Almost there!” Every players on the field could not help themselves but to shout out loud.

‘Ding! Player Another Joy has died!’

‘Ding! Player Dragon’s World End has died!’

‘Ding! Player Sacred Wings of Night has died!’

The boss was still vigorously violent, every strike of the <Grounding Hammer Strike> would harvest a few lives from the field, it was inevitable, because the mana points for healing could only replenish the amount of health point reduced by the aura effect. Confronting the ultimate skill of the boss, only the <Healing Shower> of Han Ying Xue could heal up the health points of the

players!

5%, 4%, 3%, 2%!

The remaining 15 players were irritably excited, however, the healers had almost used up all of their mana points!

Bariyada raised up both of it's fists, immediately smashing them into the ground, it was another <Grounding Hammer Strike>!

“Come over everyone!” Zhang Yang shouted in a loud voice, triggering <Vanguard's Aggression> and <Shield Wall> simultaneously, casting a vague blue protective barrier over each of the players.

‘-600!’

‘-600!’

‘-600!’

Under the protection of his <Vanguard's Aggression>, everyone would only sustain 10% of the damage they receive, while with the <Shield Wall> triggered by Zhang Yang, they would only suffer 40% of the damage received!

“Witchy Snow, carry on with your mana recovery, I’m triggering <Shadow of Merlinda>!” Zhang Yang shouted and selected the

[Merlinda's Ring of Grateful].

‘+1000!’

‘+1000!’

In the interval of every passing seconds, a healing number appeared right above Zhang yang’s head, in just a short moment, his health points had been replenished back to full.

Sky Shaman witnessed the scene with envious eyes, wondering, “Wow, Zhan Yu, whatkind of skill is that!”

Zhang Yang laughed and then he spoke, “Let’s hustle and f*ck the boss up!”

‘260,000!’

‘210,000!’

‘190,000!’

The remaining health points of the boss was only at 1%!

10 seconds after, the barrier of <Vanguard's Aggression> had worn off, the effect of the <burning aura> persisted again, deducting 1000 points of health points from the players!

Han Ying Xue quickly threw out her <Healing Shower>, while using up the last of her mana points to cast <Regeneration> and <Holy Shield> on Zhang Yang, and there she was, completely spent!

She was well aware that it would be useless to stay on the same spot, she would only end up being burned by the <Burning Aura>, so she immediately ran out of the area.

170,000! 140,000! 110,000!

‘Ding! Player Slight Breeze has died!’

‘Ding! Player Yue Wanxin has died!’

70,000! 40,000!

Zhang Yang activated his <Substitute>, acquiring a 5-second invincibility.

20,000! 10,000!

“Rawh---” Bariyada gave out a raging roar that trembled the sky, and boom, it’s huge body was broken down into pieces of gigantic rocks falling down, scattering all over the ground.

‘Ding! You and all parties have slayed Hellfire Demon King

Bariyada, acquired 230,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! The defense of the Tukula Fortress has been greatly weakened, the Empire Dragonic Cavalry are on their way to the battlefield, please wait patiently, and join the Imperial Expeditionary Army in the siege of the fortress!’

On the display of the players, a 30-minute countdown clock appeared.

“We made it!”

The people could not help themselves but to cheer in joy, lost in excitement. Zhang Yang was forcefully hugged by the female rogue Perfumed Water, receiving tons of her fragrant kisses on his face.

Stop it! My equipment! Zhang Yang cried in tears, just in the manner of seconds, Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu had already stabbed him in the back, grabbing all the Yellow-Gold equipment on the ground while everyone else was basking in their current victory!

“Quickly! Grab the equipment!” A few seconds later, someone finally noticed, and they quickly bent down to grab the loots dropped by the boss.

In the midst of the chaos with everyone was grabbing what they can reach their hands on, the 30 pieces of equipment dropped by Bariyada were cleaned up from the ground, distributed among

them. 13 players looked at each other, with no knowledge of what the others had managed to grab from the ground.

Zhang Yang kicked all the non-Lone Desert Smoke members out of the party, before he started asking, “So what did you guys get from the loots?”

The remaining members of the Lone Desert Smoke were only the five of them, including himself, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er, Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream.

Although they didn’t amount to much, they still occupied 40% of the total players who survived till the end. Evidently, they were absolutely the strongest among the remaining players who survived based on overall strength!

Debilitation - the item name was changed from Weakness to Debilitation.

Chapter 193: The Reinforcements Have Arrived

Until the moment they were kicked out of the party, everyone only realized that they had not quit the party right before the boss died, they had been too nervous and excited! It was fortunate for them that Zhang Yang did not set the distribution mode to 'Leader Distribution Mode'. Otherwise, it would have been too late for them!

It was still half an hour away before the Empire could send the second wave of their army over to the site, so everyone took the time to rest, to have some food and water as well.

The four ladies logged out to replenish their food. The last battle that was about to begin, and the general of the fortress is a Yellow-Gold rank boss, the drops would be most rewarding, there was no reason for them to miss it at all!

Having bought two boxes of rices in a haste and devouring them all, Zhang Yang quickly logged back on.

A while later, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and the remaining ladies appeared at his sides, one after another.

"Noob tank, this one's for you!" Wei Yan Er traded a piece of equipment glittering in gold over to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang selected the accept button, jumping in shock!

[Furious Metallic Boots] (Yellow-Gold, Armor boots)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +288

Strength: +115

Agility: +115

<Unidentified>

Profession required: Guardian

Level required: 60

Furious set (1/5)

3-piece set: Decrease <Shield Wall> cool down by 1 minute.

5-piece set: Whenever there is an attack that will kill you, the attack will not damage you, and also recover 40% of your HP value. The effect can only be triggered once every 5 minutes.

This is a warrior's second set of armor set, it is also the exclusive armor set for Guardian!

Every second set of armor set for all professions can be acquired from the level 50 dungeon, the Poison Fireland. But players can only acquire Black-Steel grade armor set from Normal Mode, Green-Copper grade armor set from Hard Mode, and Gray-Silver grade armor set from Death Mode. Zhang Yang had always thought that there would be no such thing as Yellow-Gold grade armor set all along. Now he realized that it's not that they did not exist at all, it was just that these Yellow-Gold grade set armor will only drop from the Open World boss!

However, how many level 50 to level 60 Yellow-Gold boss would be out there in the open world? The difficulty of collecting a complete set of the armor was imaginable, so it was perfectly normal that Zhang Yang had never seen a Yellow-Gold grade Furious set in his previous life.

Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er had grabbed a total of 5 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, other than one accessory, the other three pieces were exclusive armor set pieces for Cryomancers, Berserkers, and Snipers respectively. Players will never be able to wear the equipment if their professions are not correspondent to the equipment, so Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er handed over [Spiritual Boots] and a [Dragon Hunter's Boots] to Zhang Yang. They had left it to him to decide on whether to auction them in their guild or put them on the sales rack of his Little Merchandize Shop and split the money earned among themselves.

The accessory belonged to the physical damage type. Because Wei

Yan Er already got a [Furious Boots] (Berserker), she let Sun Xin Yu have the accessory piece.

[Fury of Hell] (Yellow-Gold, Accessory)

Use: Increases your physical attack by 900 points, lasting for 10 seconds. Cool down: 3 minutes.

Level required: 60

Open world bosses could really drop seriously good stuffs! An accessory such as this might not be acquired by regular players even if they reached level 100. However, the level 50 Zac, the level 60 Bariyada had already dropped such fine pieces of accessories!

“No skill books this time around, huh?” Zhang Yang expressed his dissatisfaction towards his own greed.

Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er shook their heads. Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were ranged professions, they did not even stand a chance in grabbing the loots dropped from the boss.

“It’s alright since that’s enough, the boss only dropped seven or eight pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, and we grabbed 5 pieces out of that. If we forget our own boundaries, god is going to smite you down with his thunder!” Han Ying Xue smiled while teasing him.

“Oh yea! There are also the loots acquired from Demon Snake Queen, Mimina!” Zhang Yang gave his head a slap as he remembered. Previously, after killing Mimina, he had hustled to skill the Hellfire Demons without even looking into what he had grabbed before that!”

Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er posted the loots that they grabbed earlier on:

[Ring of the Queen], [Sword of the Demon Snake], [Necklace of the Thick Soil Defense], and [Swiftfoot Boots].

According to the attributes of the equipment, [Ring of the Queen] went to Han Ying Xue (Actually it was also useful to Daffodil Daydream, but Han Ying Xue expressed that the ring accords with her identity), the necklace went to Zhang Yang, while the boots went to Sun Xin Yu. As for Endless Starlight, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han, they were gracefully ignored by the ladies.

[Sword of the Demon Snake] was a level 50 one-handed sword. Unfortunately, there were no Bandits in their small party, so the sword would only go straight into Zhang Yang’s backpack.

[Strong Earth Defense Necklace] (Yellow-Gold, Necklace)

Vitality: +100

Strength: +25

<Unidentified>

Required level: 50

Zhang Yang immediately switched the old necklace with the new one. Even though he had not identified the necklace yet, but it was definitely much stronger than the previous [Necklace of Anxious Attack]!

Very soon, Snow Seeker and the others were logging into the game.

“Guild master Zhan Yu, please take good care of us!” Snow Seeker smiled softly at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang shrugged and teased, “You guys are not bad yourselves, it goes both ways!”

At the current moment, there were only five members of Lone Desert Smoke left, being the most powerful force among them all. The next was Crimson Rage, with three people surviving, they were Snow Seeker, Flirtatious Lady, and Perfumed Water. The following was Imperial Sky, with Sky Shaman and The Great Compassion Mantra as the two remaining survivors. The Dominators also remained with two survivors, Humbly Gentleman and Traveling Piglet. With no healers left in their party, they

would definitely be taken out if and when they engage in battle. The thirteenth survivor was Crimson Fire, thanks to the blessing of Han Ying Xue, this fellow had been healed at the very last moment, every single time he was close to death, on several occasions!

Currently, the top-10 contribution list on the battlefield were as below:

1. Zhan Yu: 542, 343, 412.
2. Little Snow: 278, 961, 987.
3. Snow Seeker: 138, 797, 892.
4. Drizzler: 123, 488, 720.
5. Frost Night: 119, 873, 693.
6. Daffodil Daydream: 91, 343, 493.
7. Sky Shaman: 87, 391, 349.
8. Humbly Gentleman: 74, 134, 987.
9. Perfumed Water: 66, 738, 868.

10. Crimson Fire: 64, 134, 098.

Zhang Yang's ranking as the first was absolutely uncontested. Even if he withdrew himself from the battlefield, his contribution points would still be in the first place! Han Ying Xue's ranking was also very firm, but from the third position onward, all the other positions were easily subject to change. The only way to know the final results would be to complete the siege on the fortress.

‘Ding! The Dragon Knights of the White Jade City have joined the battle, prepare to launch the attack on the Magic Cannons of Tukula Fortress!’

A dozen gigantic dragons flew in from afar, their unfolded wings were impressively wide, spanning to about two to three hundred meters! Just a dozen dragons spreading their wings were already intimidating enough to overwhelm the sky! Each of these dragons differed in their own colors, there were red dragons, bronze dragons, green dragons, blue dragons. Each dragon had a knight riding on its back, directing the dragon to launch the attack on the Magic Cannons located on the fortress.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

All of the dragons opened up their huge wide mouths, jetting out streams of dragon breaths, packed with destructive power. The Magic Cannons were immediately destroyed by the dragon breaths right after they fired their first shot, blowing up after taking direct

hits. The monsters that were commandeering the cannons and those around it were blasted away in bloody pieces.

After clearing out the Magic Cannons, these gigantic dragons flew away one after another, disappearing into the sky as swiftly as they had arrived. Evening had already arrived, the unparalleled beauty of the sunset, paired with the scenario of a dozen of dragons flying together as a group, gave people a sense of infinite fascination.

“I really, really wanna have a dragon to ride on!” Wei Yan Er immediately imagined herself in the scene she just witnessed, provoking the hell horse that she currently sat atop to roar, stomping its horseshoes loudly on the ground as they moved.

The one and only person who would be able to ride a dragon in the whole of《God's Miracle》is Hundred Shots! He would tame a red dragon to be his pet, aiding him in battling enemies and also as a mount for him to ride on. It would be really useful in getting people's attention, without even mentioning the unlimited coolness factor!

Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh, he had to admit that he would never be able to ride a dragon, however, he still had hope to ride a phoenix! So all he could do was to wait for Fatty Han to reach Level 100, and then have Fatty Han bring him to complete the hidden quest for his profession!

It can be easily imagined, when Wei Yan Er sees Zhang Yang and Fatty Han riding on a Phoenix, she will definitely be flooding the surroundings with her tears!

‘Ding! The Magic Cannons have been destroyed, the Imperial Army is entering to the battlefield!’

In conjunction with the system’s verbal announcement, a huge portal was opened, and parties of NPC squads were walking neatly out from the portal, amounting up to at least 300,000 men! A knight with a grand visage was riding an equally tall and handsome white horse into the battlefield, carrying a huge war hammer behind his back, right above his head was his title ‘The Expedition First General, Frodoc’.

[The Expedition First General, Frodoc] (Yellow-Gold Leader, Humanoid creature)

Level: 65

Hp: 30,000,000

Mp: 1,500,000

Defense: 1200

“Victory for the expedition is just within our sights! Soldiers, warriors of the White Jade City, charge!” Frodoc took up his war hammer and pointed it straight at the fortress, shouting out those words and roared.

“Charge ---”

The soldiers responded in unison, every single one of them marching neatly in formation towards the direction of the fortress. Hundreds of thousands of footsteps boomed in rhythm, echoing throughout the open field!

Croom! Croom! Croom!

Moving forward through the enemy like splitting bamboos, the army smashed the city gate down and marched mightily into the fortress!

The players followed meekly behind the NPCs, with only 13 of them left, they would instantly fail the expedition if they were to die in the process!

“Stick with Sir Frodoc!” Zhang Yang rode on his [Skeletal War Horse] while talking on the party channel.

Han Ying Xue and the others had no objection to his suggestion of course, Snow Seeker and the other two ladies pondered on it for a bit, before they too decided to follow Zhang Yang and his gang. Needless to say, Crimson Fire quickly followed. If a lone pyromancer like himself is left behind on his own, he would definitely be as good as dead if he ever met an elite monster!

With 9 out of 13 players standing together as a team, Sky Shaman

and Humbly Gentleman did not want to be left out, and so they grudgingly followed Zhang Yang from behind just like the others.

Frodoc charged all the way through on his horse, riding straight for dozens of minutes to stop in front of a large mansion, pak, he dismounted with the grace of a general. Grabbing his war hammer in his right hand, he did an about face, turning to his men. “Guards! Follow me into the mansion and slay all the evil demonic generals!”

“Yes, sir!” hundreds of elite NPC guards raised their swords up high and roared in unity.

“We shall follow them behind and take whatever advantage we can get from them!” Zhang Yang smiled with content.

At this time, instead of battling, it was more like following the NPCs to watch a movie. Players simply had to ensure their own survival, the NPCs would handle the final battle! Of course, for players who wished to acquire the City Order, they must join the battle, because monsters that are completely killed by NPCs will not drop a single victory loot!

Chapter 194: The End Of The Expedition!

Bang!

With a swing of his war hammer, Frodoc blew open the huge iron door of the mansion. He walked in, followed closely by hundreds of elite guards, with Zhang Yang and the others in the midst of them.

Along the way, regular elite monsters were spawning, but they were instantly blown away by the powerful war hammer of Frodoc. His hammer smashing an enemy apart at a time, he held nothing back, the monsters dying in a single hit!

“This NPC is so ferocious!” Crimson Fire was left breathless.

Zhang Yang laughed, “This is the story mode, he must be ferocious to be a general! NPCs will not be too powerful when they engage with players. If that;s not the case, you can try to engage with the boss!”

Crimson Fire quickly shook his head frantically, it was just a joke! If he died in the hands of an NPC when victory was almost at hand, that would make him look very stupid, truly!

Han Ying Xue then said, “If there was such an NPC helping us with the 10th wave monsters, it would have been great!”

Zhang Yang instantly rolled his eyes back, thinking to himself that, if that would be the case, what was the point or even having

10th wave in the first place? However, Witchy Snow’s moral attainments had reached another height. Once provoked, she would use her seduction tactics to tease him all day long... That was least of his worries, he more afraid of Sun Xin Yu losing control and gunning the two of them down!

Under Frodoc’s lead, the players were proceeding like they were having a stroll in a bamboo forest, monsters to the left and right were instantly being killed. In just a short period of time, they had reached the front of a huge chamber.

The chamber was rectangular in shape, with a length of about 100 meters, width of 80 meters, and 30 meters high. The whole chamber was supported by twelve large pillars, the atmosphere was ominous yet grand.

At the bottom of the chamber, there was a huge throne. Lounging upon it was a winged, red devil with and two horns on its head. The devil was more than ten meters tall!

[Demon General Shanks] (Yellow-Gold, Demon)

Level: 65

Hp: 40,000,000

Defense: 1200

“Filthy demon, the world does not belong to you!” Frodoc raised up the hammer in his hand and walked into the chamber with confident, big steps.

“Hahaha, a bunch of fools here to die!” Shanks stood up boldly, unfurling his wings with a shake of his back, instantly stirring up a howling gale. As he stretched out his right hand, ‘bam!’, the black flame rose from his palm. “The world, is our hunting ground! In the near future, our family of nine lords will all be revived, be it human beings, elves, orcs, dwarves, dragons, or elemental bodies, all shall be completely erased from this world by our own hands!”

“Arrogant demon! Allow me, Frodoc, to bury your head into mud!” Frodoc bellowed sonorously. Dom dom dom, his heavy footsteps boomed through the chamber and he charged towards the boss.

“Guards, kill all these intruders.” Shanks drawled nonchalantly.

Jik Jik Jik!

Suddenly, a dozen demonic monsters, wielding battle axes, leaped from behind the pillars, all of them being Level 60 elites with health points up to 300,000!

“You useless maggots!” Frodoc swung up his war hammer once again, gong gong gong, with just one hit from his hammer, he took out all of the monsters in an instant! The pace of his charge did not slow down at all, he was like a gale rushing towards Shanks.

“Finally, a worthy warrior among the insignificant humans!” Shanks murmured, with a sudden move of his right hand, a shiny, giant axe flew over to him from the weapon rack at the side of the room, falling firmly into his palm. Shanks belted out a war cry, with his hands holding the axe in a firm grip, he gave an overhanded, downward swing. That was the start of the battle.

Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding!

The two Yellow-Gold bosses were engaged in battle, every clash of the hammer and the axe discharging showers of sparks all over the place. The rate of health points lost on both sides amounted up to ten thousands at a time!

“Little sis, the boss is about to die, who knows, there might be a two-handed axe among the loots!” Zhang Yang turn to Wei Yan Er and made a guess.

Wei Yan Er immediately widened her eyes, dashing forward, she took her axe from her back and grabbed it firmly, snapping urgently, “Then what are we waiting for? Let’s role, take out the boss!”

Zhang Yang laughed, “Forward!”

Shoof! shoof!

Both of them used <Charge> and smashed right onto the boss,

and unleashed their attacks onto Shanks.

Sky Shaman and the others were not willing to be left behind, so naturally, they went forward as well.

At this point, the game company clearly no longer had any intentions of making things difficult for the players, Shanks's aggro was firmly held by Frodoc, no one else would need to tank. Furthermore, the only all-out attack this boss had was <Dividing Slash>, causing the same amount of damage on the players nearest to the target. So, as long as players stood behind the boss while unleashing their attacks, they would not be damaged by the skill.

However, the level of the boss and his defense were really high, the damage output of everyone was largely diminished, even Zhang Yang could only unleash 30% of his full attack!

It was all they can do for now, the vast difference in levels cannot be covered up with powerful equipment and weapons.

In just 2 minutes, Shanks had been rid of 12,000,000 health points. But correspondingly, the damage output of the boss was even more ferocious, Frodoc had taken up to 20,000,000 damage!

“Silly Yu, the NPC won't last for long!” Han Ying Xue was worried. The attacks of the boss was just too overwhelming, with a damage output up to 170,000 in each attack, if any of it were to land on the players, it would be like smashing the golden cudgel used by the monkey king on the players. The moment the attack reaches the players, they are all as good as dead!

Zhang Yang gave it thought, before saying, "There's nothing to worry about, even if the NPC dies, the boss will not deal such high damage on players, we only see such outrageous values in Story Mode!"

While Frodoc took away another amount of 5,000,000 HP of the boss, he was left with only 1,000,000 HP. Just as he was about to be killed by the boss ---

‘+30,000,000!’

A horrifying amount of healing value appeared right on top of Frodoc's head, instantly healing the NPC back to its original full state!

<Sacred Heal>!

Holy cow! Everyone could not help themselves but mutter, this NPC was too shameless!

Healing so much HP in a single time, giving no alternatives to the boss to survive!

But Zhang Yang felt uneasy, would the boss in turn, use a <Berserker's Heal> to heal himself while engaging in this battle? It was very obvious that the boss is a Berserker warrior, it wouldn't be unusual for the boss to be able to use <Berserker's Heal>! With such thoughts held in his mind, Zhang Yang did not dare to disrupt

his chain of <Destructive Smash>, the moment the cool down time was over, he would quickly use it again on the boss.

40%, 30%, 20%, 10% ...

The health points of the boss was dropping like an avalanche, he was not far from his own demise!

6%, 3%, 1%!

“NO ---” Shanks uttered a roar full of rage, “My master will return! When that happens, the whole world will be engulfed by fire, I shall be revived from the darkest flames of all! Humans, enjoy your last days while you are still able!”

Boom!

The huge body of the boss let out a stream of gold piling up on the ground, before he crashed down onto the ground, rattling the whole chamber with a large tremble!

‘Ding! The Demon General Shanks has been killed!’

‘Ding! The army of the White Jade City has completely conquered Tukula Fortress! Victory over the expedition!’

‘Server Announcement: The players of the White Jade City

has completed the siege on the fortress, acquiring the first victory in the expedition! To honor these heroes, all players of the White Jade City will acquire an additional effect of 100% experience point as their additional reward for the next 3 days, and acquire the 'Hero' Effect!

'Server Announcement: The first phase of the expedition has been completed, all teleportation sites in the main cities are now opened, players are free to travel to all main cities via teleportation!'

'Server Announcement: The 20-limit cap for the dungeon Poison Fireland has been officially opened!'

'Server Announcement: Battle Mounting System has been officially opened!'

The system messages came up one after another, while Zhang Yang and the others had begun their own chaotic battle, grabbing the loots that were dropped from the boss. They had used every single possible way, the Knights used <Sanction>, the Spellcasters used <Frozen Ring>, the Priests used <Fear of Mind and Soul>. In short, everyone wanted to drive others away and gain control of the situation, so that they could pick the most precious item, the [City Order]!

Summoning servant Clear Lotus, activating the <Substitute> skill! 5-second invincibility, immune to all control and damage!

<Blast Wave>!

Zhang Yang aimed from the perfect angle and emitted out a conical shock wave, instantly stunning the 8 remaining players who were not members of the Lone Desert Smoke!

Wei Yan Er could not stop giggling, while her arms worked quickly along with Han Ying Xue and the rest in grabbing the equipment that radiated gold light, stuffing them into their own backpacks. 4 seconds was enough for them to grab all 7 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment clean up from the ground!

When the others had regained their statuses from the stun, there were no more Yellow-Gold equipment left on the ground. Even the Gray-Silver equipment had not gone untouched, 6 of them remained --- there were originally a dozen of them on the ground before that.

“Zhan Yu, f*ck your mother!” Humbly Gentleman was in absolute rage. It was not easy having to hold on for so long, but having all the best rewards taken away from him, someone greedy and selfish like him would definitely snap and go crazy!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “Hypocrite, how can I just stand there and do nothing when you initiated your attack? Fine, I guess it’s better that I send you back to the graveyard!”

Shoof, shoof, shoof. Zhang Yang wielded his battle axe, launching his attack on Humbly Gentleman.

With Zhang Yang in action, Wei Yan Er and the gang naturally followed their leader. Everyone was in a frenzy, and without much effort, they had sent Humbly Gentleman and Traveling Piglet back to White Jade City. With the little time left, Snow Seeker and the rest quickly relieved the ground of the remaining equipment and divided the loot among themselves.

Of course, those equipment had been left on purpose for them by Zhang Yang. Although it is said that the number of loots you can grab depended on your capabilities, leaving nothing for others would only provoke their rage! Now that Crimson Rage, Sky Shaman and the others had acquired a few Gray-Silver equipment, they would hopefully, not react as poorly as Humbly Gentleman did.

“Guildmaster Zhan Yu, you guys have earned a fortune this time!” Snow Seeker smiled gently while talking to him, as the saying goes, if it’s laid, it’s played. In the previous attempts in grabbing equipment, she had also used up all her juice, it was unfortunate that she could not compete with Zhang Yang. A <Blast Wave> took care of everyone else. If she goes around with a sad face, scolding and cursing, that would only make her look like Humbly Gentleman, who frankly did not deserve to play!

Zhang Yang smiled meekly, “Nothing special, just so-so.”

“Noob tank, this is for you!” Wei yan Er suddenly handed him a golden plate the size of a palm.

Use: You have acquired the recognition of Your-Highness, to become the owner of the Tukula Fortress!

Level required: 50

Zhang Yang received the order over, but he did not use it immediately, he asked among the party members first, “None of you guys want this?”

“Cheh, don’t be so hypocritical! You are the guildmaster, the symbol of our guild, if this is not given to you, who else should we give it to?” Han Ying Xue scoffed with her nose up.

Daffodil Daydream nodded earnestly, expressing her agreement, “It should be given to Zhan Yu! It should be!”

Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu was sharpening her daggers, with a face that didn’t seem to care for anything at all.

So, Zhang Yang accepted it bluntly, and used the city order on himself. A sudden burst of blinding gold light instantly covered him whole, and a large seal of the Royal of White Jade Kingdom appeared right above his head, gleaming as it floated in the air, displaying the title with cheerful, colorful ribbons.

Snow Seeker and the others saw the royal seals, and immediately they understood --- Zhang Yang had used the [City Order]!

Unfortunately there was only one [City Order], so they could only be envious of him, staring from aside.

This moment of glamour lasted for half a minute, before the royal seal floating in the air finally dimmed down. The symbol then began to shrink and went hidden into the position of Zhang Yang's chest, engraving itself onto his armor.

‘Ding! You have become the master of the Tukula Fortress!’

‘Ding! You have acquired the privilege of the city order:

1, You can manage all players who enter the Tukula Fortress.’

You can use teleportation to the main hall of the city in any places.”

‘Ding! You have acquired the title: Hero of White Jade City, permanently gets a 50% discount in equipment repair, socket equipment and other costs!’

‘Server Announcement: White Jade City has completed the siege on the fortress, the reward will be distributed according to the contribution of players on the battlefield!’

"Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu ranked first in the contribution list, acquired Yellow-Gold [Furious Chest Plate], 1 skill point, lucky attribute +3!"

"Server Announcement: Player Little Snow ranked second in the contribution list, acquired Yellow-Gold [Excellent Robe], 1 skill point, lucky attribute +2!"

"Server Announcement: Player Snow Seeker ranked third in the contribution list, acquired Yellow-Gold [Spiritual Robe], 1 skill point, lucky attribute +1!"

"Server Announcement: Player Drizzler ranked forth in the contribution list, acquired Yellow-Gold [Furious Chest Plate], lucky attribute +1!"

"Server Announcement: Player Frost Night ranked fifth in the contribution list, acquired Yellow-Gold [Bloody Teeth Chest Plate]!"

"Server Announcement: Player Daffodil Daydream ranked sixth in the contribution list, acquired Gray-Silver [Spiritual Robe]!"

.....

The rewards for the top five achievers were all the second pieces of Yellow-Gold armor sets, respective to their professions! As for the remaining 5 top achievers on the contribution list, they were rewarded with a second piece of the Gray-Silver armor sets. There was a vast difference between the value between these two grades of the rewards, as Gray-Silver equipment can be acquired through

the Death Mode of the Poison Fireland Dungeon, but Yellow-Gold equipment...can only be acquired by slaying Yellow-Gold Open World bosses.

The problem is that the difficulty is too hard, unlike a dungeon, it was open for everyone!

Zhang Yang was extremely pleased, other than getting a piece of Yellow-Gold equipment, he actually got another skill point and 3 luck attribute points! Currently, his lucky attribute had already reached 9 points, while rate of his lucky strikes had almost reached 1%. It might not seem to affect much when engaging a boss as it only increased the his output damage by a little, but it can instant-kill a player in PK, if the effect is suddenly triggered out of the blue!

Although Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er both acquired a [Furious Chest Plate], one aimed to increase defense while the other aimed to increase damage output., the system had already considered this on behalf of the players. However, the second piece of Yellow-Gold equipment required players to be level 60 to wear it, and players can wear equipment that are Gray-Silver or lower grade when they reach level 50. Currently, Zhang Yang could only wait for a little longer, staring at the Yellow-Gold equipment after acquiring a few pieces of them.

Afterwards, they divided the Yellow-Gold equipment that they acquired from the boss, Shanks. Zhang Yang was extremely lucky, he actually got another piece of his armor set --- [Furious Helmet]. So now, he just needed to level up to level 60, and then he will be able to equip all 3 pieces of the armor set he now possessed,

acquiring the first effect of the armor set!

Shanks had dropped 7 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment in total, and among the 7, 4 of them were armor set pieces, all being helmets for priest, assassin thieves, guardians and pyromancers. However, there was no helmet for Wei Yan Er, she was so upset with the fact and blamed the boss for being biased.

It was fortunate that the axe weapon that always made her drool had finally appeared, although it required her to be level 60 to equip it, the little girl was already filling her face with only joy, her joy was beyond any description possible.

Chapter 195: Notice Of The Gathering Of Classmates

After splitting up the loots, there was nothing left there for them.

The existence of the Tukula Fortress was to allow players to go to Level 50+ leveling areas. Currently, this place can be described as a transfer hub. For the players to go to the level 50+ leveling area, one must first travel from the main city to this fortress, and then go on out to the designated areas through here.

However, there were a number of 'Territories' on the map of level 50+ areas with teleportation points of their own. As long as these 'Territories' are refreshed and conquered by players, the players would be able travel directly from the main cities to the 'Territory' points, saving a lot of time.

Therefore, the Tukula fortress would only be enticing for now, after all, there is a Level 50 dungeon that would drop the second piece of the armor set. When 'Territory' points start appearing, the number of players coming to this fortress will greatly diminish. Only the novice players will occasionally come through to farm for armor pieces, or simply level up a little before buying some better equipment from the auction house. Tearing of their teleportation scrolls, everyone left the place in a swoop. They were all back in the long-left White Jade City. After experiencing a dozen hours of crazy slaughtering and killing, everyone was tired, both physically and mentally. So they went offline to get a good rest, one after another.

Removing the gaming helmet from his head, Zhang Yang

breathed out a long breath of relief, it was extremely tiring.

He had logged in at nine, and began the expedition at ten, it was a full 11 hours, and it was already 12a.m! He took a bath and immediately lay on his bed like a dead piglet, it had been extremely tiring.

The next day in the morning, Zhang Yang had his physical training, he was at ease as he brought back some breakfast back to his house. While he was half way finishing his breakfast, Fatty Han called him.

“Brother Yang, were you outside just now?”

“Yea, I went to buy myself some breakfast.”

“Oh, no wonder Zhou Kang Ming had me pass you a message! Well, next week, our high school class will be having a classmate gathering, the location will be at the Sheraton Hotel, on 9th of October, 7 at night!”

Zhang Yang was moved by the news, the ‘past’ that was asleep immediately fluttered through his heart.

In his previous life, it was at this time when he received an invitation to the classmate gathering. He was working in his office when he received the news, so he had taken the call by himself. At first, Zhang Yang was quite excited to see all his old classmates and old friends that he had not met for 4 long years.

Unfortunately, there were too many fair-weathered people! Fatty Han had already stepped into the society right after he graduated from high school, and he became a logistic driver, naturally not having suitable living conditions. Zhang Yang had just graduated from a university, without his parents' aid, as both of them belonged to the bottom category in society.

On the day of their classmate gathering, Fatty Han had fetched Zhang yang with his logistic lorry to the hotel... But in the end, the hotel did not allow a huge lorry to be parked in the parking lot, so they had to park the lorry by the roadside, a few hundred meters away from the hotel.

This event had become the laughing stock for everyone that night. Everyone was looking at Zhang Yang and Fatty Han with contempt and disdain. So, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were holding their anger throughout the night!

On that day, Zhang Yang had a thought, if he was able to turn his luck around and become successful, he intended to slap those snobbish faces as hard as possible, every single one of them! However, going through the passage of time, he now had nearly 50 million properties, he could definitely look down on these old snobbish classmates. But he had switched his target to people like the heir to the billionaire family, such as Liu Wei, raising up his status by numerous levels. It would be not interesting at all, not even a bit for Zhang Yang to be angry at those kind of people!

To oppress others with that little bit of wealth, only small time crooks would do such a thing, like they were afraid of people not

knowing their wealth.

The real rich people, are those who got their fortune through inheritance, they did not have to raise a finger, they would embarrass others just standing at the side!

Zhang Yang replied with a light smile, “Not interested, I don’t feel like going!”

“Brother Yang, don’t forget that your first love will be there as well! Zhou Kang Ming mentioned that Zhao Hui Shan will be there as well! Don’t you want to see how your old lover has turned into now? There are also Yang Zhi Xian and Li Ru, they were all school idols, I wonder how have they turned out to be now!”

Zhao Hui Shan... That was a memory from a very long time ago!

Zhang Yang was a king of fighter since he his childhood, having no interest at all in studying. Although he was already attending high school, he was still not willing to settle down, and he would still fight with some bad students from other schools. His name was very well-known in school, and even teachers were afraid of him to the point that they weren’t dare to file any complaints about him!

Teenaged boys and girl are full of hope for love, and that was also their passionately rebellious period of time. Zhao Hui Shan was attracted to the rebellious attitude of Zhang Yang very much, and that was why she began a relationship with him. At that time, Zhao Hui Shan, Yang Zhi Xian and Li Ru were the three most

beautiful girls in the class, they were also the school's top ten school babe. More importantly, Zhang Yang was positively interested in sex and filled with curiosity about it, so the two two were naturally became a thing, immediately starting their relationship together.

However, Zhao Huishan was still a good girl, although Zhang Yang had been a responsible, affectionate partner, the two did not take the final step. In the end, the romantic relationship between the two were found out by Zhao Hui Shan's parents, and that was when the relationship was ended naturally.

Zhang Yang had also tried hard in his studies because of that, and ultimately he was admitted into a university, which was a total shock to both his classmates and his teachers. Everyone had thought that getting a high school certificate would be extremely difficult for Zhang Yang!

Entering the university life, Zhang Yang had secretly fell in love with his own lecturer named Yu Li. That was when he realized that the puppy love he had during his high school time was just like a game, it had not matured at all! Zhao Hui Shan was naive and knew nothing, that was why she fell in love with his violent attitude, but the moment when she open her eyes and think through maturely, she certainly would not want to stay together with him for the rest of her life.

As for him, it was like he never actually fell in love with Zhao Hui Shan. Just like a gangster trying to impress, it would be a shame for him to be without a woman by his side while standing in front of his so called 'brothers'!

In his previous life when he attended the gathering, he had found out that Zhao Hui Shan had become Zhou Kang Ming's girlfriend! The funny part was that the main reason Zhao Hui Shan wanted to see Zhang Yang was because she wanted to prove to Zhang Yang that she had made the right decision, saying that Zhang Yang was just a hooligan, there was no way he could better than Zhou Kang Ming, who had already become the vice general manager of a photo frame company at such a young age!

At the gathering, Zhou Kang Ming and Zhao Hui Shan had been throwing all sorts of ridicule at Zhang Yang, and they ended up provoking him to the point where he beat the crap out of the two of them! In the end, he was thrown into the lockup of the local police station for 7 days!

There was a saying, a girl changes fast in physical appearance from childhood to adulthood, but the changes in this girl was not just the appearance, but also her heart! The initial sweet and pure looking Zhao Hui Shan, with a look of a fine lady, had now turned into such a materialistic and ugly person, by heart!

Zhang Yang could not help himself but shook his head over and over again, then he replied, "Fatty, this classmate gathering has no meaning at all, it will all be about showing off the fortunes earned at hand, looking for opportunity to get into beds with their previous lovers. I would rather spend the time on killing more monsters and level up a little!"

"For f*ck's sake, brother Yang, when did you become an otaku! No, I Fatty Han must drag you out for a spin!"

“... Fatty Han, you’re so persistent because you heard me talking about the ‘getting into bed’ part, didn’t you?”

“Haha! You are worthy of being the brother Yang that knows me well! I was very interested in Yang Zhi Xian, Li Ru and Zhao Hui Shan, but don’t you worry brother Yang, the wife of my brother, quietly... Eherm, I shall not mount her not be mounted by her! I will definitely keep my hands off Zhao Hui Shan, haha! Having the chance to ‘fly’ with both Li Ru and Yang Zhi Xian would very satisfying for me! Yo, speaking of Li Ru, I would very much want to see to what extent have the boobs from those days developed into!”

“Then you should go by your own, I have no objections as well if you are flying on 4P!”

“Brother Yang, we are said to be the pairing of a dragon and a tiger, never to leave each other, how could you abandon me alone? Furthermore, those high school people look down on me, so this time around, I am going to teach them a lesson they will never forget!”

“You are referring to all your saving money that you have spent, plus the 600,000 that I lent to you just to buy a Maserati sports car?”

Having the thought of this had already sent Zhang Yang bursting with sweat. Fatty Han had proven himself to be so much more free spirited than he is. With only a few million on hand, he had spent all the money on his ride!

“Haha! Brother Yang, my sports car is very stunning isn’t it?”

“It’s OK, I guess.”

Zhang Yang commented without any particular thought, a sport car that’s worth 300 million was naturally not a low-grade property, although there is still a very big difference between Fatty Han’s car and the really famous sports cars, but this would be more than enough to astonish ordinary people.

“What did you mean it’s OK, this is the actual Maserati GT2034!” Fatty Han was jumping in rage over the phone after hearing what Zhang Yang had to say.

Zhang Yang laughed and replied, “Alright, alright, a lovely ride, absolutely stunning!”

“Therefore, I must bring you along to the gathering to show off for a bit!”

Zhang Yang shook his head again to reject Fatty Han’s offer, “Fatty, you can use famous cars to fish for women... But, aren’t you worried if others find out that you have no savings at all, plus a ton of debt nailed onto your ass?”

“Debts are nothing to worry about! Furthermore, if I don’t say, who would know about my history? Brother Yang, please accompany me to the gathering!”

“Brother Yang ---”

“Brother Yang...”

“Brother, Yang!”

Fatty Han was using all sorts of intonations and volumes in persuading Zhang Yang to go.

Zhang Yang was annoyed to the point where he finally gave in to Fatty Han, “Fine, fine, fine! I will go along with you! Happy now?”

Fatty Han was finally contented, and he praised, “That’s my good brother!”

After ending the conversation with Fatty Han, Zhang Yang put on his gaming helmet and logged onto the game.

As he still had a few equipment yet to be identified, Zhang Yang went over to the Identify Shop and spent a total of 196 gold to identify 4 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment and one piece of Gray-Silver equipment.

[Lodac's Arm Brace] (Gray-Silver, armor)

Defense: +20

Vitality: +60

Strength: +30

Agility: +30

<Level 2 Socket>

Equip: Absorbs 60 damage points when hit.

Required Level: 50

[Strong Earth Defense Necklace] (Yellow-Gold, necklace)

Vitality: +100

Strength: +25

Equip: Absorbs 50 damage points when hit.

Required Level: 50

[Furious Helmet] (Yellow-Gold, armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +288

Strength: +115

Agility: +115

<Level 2 Socket 1>

<Level 2 Socket 2>

Equip: Absorbs 100 damage points when hit.

Required Profession: Guardian

Required Level: 60

The attribute for [Furious Metallic Boots] was almost similar to the attributes for [Furious Chest Plate] and [Furious Helmet], the only difference lay on the slight difference in the numerical values on each of the equipment's attributes.

“Noob tank!” The moment Zhang Yang put a foot out of his shop,

Wei Yan Er rode up to him on her [Hell's Stead], blocking his path, “Don’t go just yet! Please help me identify these equipment!”

Zhang Yang’s brows were furrowed. He possessed the title of ‘Hero of White Jade City’, so all fees within the White Jade City are halved. This little girl actually pulled him aside to identify equipment on her behalf, she was indeed a business-minded girl!

Chapter 196: King Of The Frost Chimera

Wei Yan Er passed 3 Yellow-Gold equipment to Zhang Yang, with 2 of them being Furious set equipment and the other being Shanks' two handed axe.

[Histola the Malicious Axe] (Yellow-Gold, Two Handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 1697 – 2097

Attack Interval: 308 Seconds.

DPS: 499

<Level 2 Socket 1>

<Level 2 Socket 2>

Equip Effect: Creates a chance for you to use the power of evil when you're under attack. Deals 1,000 Shadow damage to the attacking target.

Level Requirement: 60

“What a crazy amount of damage!” cried Zhang Yang after identifying the 3 equipment and returning them to Wei Yan Er.

Delighted at having received praise, Wei Yan Er had a wide grin as she snorted proudly. “As they should be!”

Just as he was done with it and was about to leave, Wei Yan Er stopped him and said, “Wait up! My cousin sister is on her way, you have to help her too!”

Those words reminded Zhang Yang that this little brat had not yet paid him the identification fees. He reached out his left hand and gestured. “That’s 180 gold coins for the identification. Pay up!”

“Oh wow! Will you look at that! What beautiful flowers over there!” said Wei Yan Er as quickly as she could. She walked away from Zhang Yang and headed towards the potted plants outside the shop, pretending to enjoy the flowers.

Not long after, Han Ying Xue came as well and threw a heap of equipment for Zhang Yang to identify. Of course, she did not have to bear any costs herself. The moment the female gang logged in, the ever-enthusiastic Wei Yan Er called out to Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream to make use of Zhang Yang’s discounted rate. That too, was free-of-charge.

Muttering to himself, Zhang Yang went into a tirade of complaints. “Damn...I would have to pay to watch a girl strip down naked! Here, you guys wring me dry, and make me pay for everything?! What is the meaning in this?! Sigh...”

“Hey! Big Dummy! What are you rambling about?” said Han Ying

Xue as she could see his lips moving.

Zhang Yang immediately replied. “Nothing much. That sh*tty Fatty just logged in and told me about joining a student gathering or something.”

“Ehh...boring!” said Wei Yan Er as she stuck out her tongue. She then changed the topic. “Hey! When are we going to raid Poison Fireland! I hear that the second set of equipment is there! I still have the class quest to do!”

“The dungeon would only drop 3 tiers of equipment, Black-Steel, Green-Copper, and Gray-Silver. Yellow-Gold tier gears are only available from a Yellow-Gold tier field boss. You are wearing some Yellow-Gold tier stuff now, aren’t you? Why would you still want to farm for Gray-Silver equipment?”

Zhang Yang continued, “Besides, that dungeon is a 20-man dungeon. Only level 50 players and above can raid the dungeon. We have only 8 of us at that level. How are we going to raid the boss?”

Starting from level 50 onwards, all drops from field bosses would almost always be higher tiered than the loots from a dungeon. That is, of course, corresponding to the boss’ own difficulty as well. You cannot expect a low level, easy boss to drop something worthwhile, just because of its field boss prestige. If it was not for the free skill point rewards from First Clear Achievements, Zhang Yang saw no other reason to clear dungeons.

Besides that, after the level 50 mark, even when it was said that the entire world would share the same training maps, additional maps would be made to cater for the astounding number of players! There would be enough field bosses to satisfy the entire world! More bosses meant more rewards! Farming field bosses would be the best source of income and power!

“If we can’t raid the Hardcore Mode for now, we can always try the Hard Mode instead!” said Wei Yan Er. She had always been this way. After raiding the same old boss for a number of times, she would grow sick of it look to the other bosses for fresh challenges.

“We might as well train for the time being! Let’s just train to the point where we can finally wear the equipment still sitting in our inventories! That’s the path of lords and ladies! Let’s focus on field bosses! Leave the dungeon raids to Endless Starlight and his merry little friends!” said Zhang Yang as he patted the little brats head.

“Let’s find ourselves some Yellow-Gold field boss! We can always come back to raid the Poison Fireland in Hardcore Mode, obtain the First Clear Achievement, complete the quest in the highest difficulty, all in one shot!

Thinking about the axe that lay in her bag, waiting to hack through the air and spill the blood of her enemies, Wei Yan Er could not help but smile innocently like a little girl. She summoned her own mount and cried to her cousin sister. “Let’s go! What are we waiting for?! To the grinding fields!”

Burning with enthusiasm, the little girl and her elder cousin ran off to who knows where, leaving Daffodil Daydream behind with

Zhang Yang.

Watching them galloping away with such enthusiasm, Zhang Yang smiled and was about to leave when Daffodil Daydream quickly grabbed him by the sleeve. Her face was flushed red in embarrassment, and she asked for the identifying fees. “I..erhm... Zhan Yu...I...I want...I want to pay! It’s not that I did not intend to earlier. It’s just that...little Yan Er didn’t allow me to! P-Please accept my thanks!” said the girl as she bowed down politely.

Oh well, since he had already been ripped off on a rather epic scale, a little more or less wouldn’t make any difference. Zhang Yang smiled at her earnestness and smiled. “There’s no need for such humility! Just take it as one of the perks of having me as your guild master!”

Zhang Yang summoned his own mount and rode to his Little Merchandize Shop. He had a mountain of Green-Copper and Gray-Silver equipment for sale!

Ever since he had auctioned the [Guild Upgrade Order], the shop was gained a burst of popularity in White Jade Castle! His total profits had doubled since then! The total revenue had increased from 100,000 to 200,000! All these were just profits he gained from 20% of the auction house’s service fees! The other sales from the equipment had not yet been included! Mostly because the equipment was farm with the cooperation of the party, the sales profit gained had to be shared among the 8 party members.

Zhang Yang put up the Green-Copper and Gray-Silver equipment up for sale. As for the Gold-Yellow equipment, he had planned to

auction them! This time, he intent to advertise his sales to all 8 major cities! To spread out the name of his little shop as vastly as he could!

As for [Solid Iron Bar]s, Zhang Yang had already purchased 17,000 stacks of the item, totaling up to an expenditure of 3,100,000 gold coins. However, he had also spent an additional 13,000,000 gold coins to buy the storage expansion to store the items! According to the current exchange rate, 1:3, he had spent close to 50,000,000 dollars!

That being said, the shop storage's capacity had been upgraded to level 10 as a result, so the 6 tabs in the guild warehouse had become a little excessive. When the exchange rate drops down to 1:1, he would have wasted 26,000,000 dollars!

With a surplus of 13,000 empty slots, it was enough to store 13,000 stacks of [Solid Iron Bar]. One stack contained 200 units. These units could be sold for 5 gold each in the near future, totaling up to 13,000,000 gold coins, which was equivalent to 39,000,000 dollars, just enough to reimburse the investment.

However, this was a good investment as it's a one-ff thing. The following investments that require him to store massive amounts of ingredient would not require further spending on storage upgrades!

However, it was a shame. Since the storage space was still insufficient, Zhang Yang could not make a huge amount of profit from this current sale. At most, the return profit would only be equivalent to a free 17,000 storage slots and, earning a little more

than 13,000,000, which was far from his initial estimation of 100,000,000 to 200,000,000 profit! However, following the size of the storage capacity of the shop itself, the quantity of the item turnover could be raised as well. Since the profit had been growing exponentially for the past few days, earning 300,000 gold coins a day would not just be a dream!

After becoming a city lord, Zhang Yang had gained a new skill: City Teleport. This skill wasn't really all that different from the regular [Teleportation Scroll]. One is used to teleport to the fortress while the other was used to teleport back to White Jade Castle.

Zhang Yang activated <City Teleport> and a white glow formed underneath his feet. A circular magic circle sharpened out from the light and after 10 seconds, a white pillar of light engulfed his character. He appeared immediately at the headquarters of Tukulo Fortress.

“All hail the Lord of the city!” As he appeared, he was greeted by the surrounding maids and guards.

No wonder everyone wanted to be an [official](#); anyone could easily be intoxicated by the sensation of being respected! Even when he was in the game, he could feel the reverence from the realistic human characters kneeling down to him. Somehow, he felt as light as a feather.

Zhang Yang exited the headquarters and rode out of the fortress, and came into the Frozen Sky Wasteland.

There will be a level 50+ maps after exiting each fortress from all 8 main cites. As the level 50 and 60 maps grew tighter and closer in the center of the global map, there will naturally be fewer and fewer of them as you head deeper in. However, even if the number of maps decreased, each map itself only grew larger!

The name of the map really speaks for itself; everything in this map was either frozen solid or encased in thick ice. The ground was covered in thick snow and walking by yourself was rather troublesome. A gentle breeze persisted in the background, bring the frosty north wind along with it. The sky, the field, and even the forest was completely engulfed in snow, making the map seem to appear completely monochrome. With only the sound of the cold wind and the crushing snow beneath his feet with each step, the atmosphere here was nothing but cold and barren.

In ‘God’ Miracle’, a field boss had its own “domain”; it will only roam around in a very small area within a map, which players could easily find and defeat. However, there were a small number of bosses that could roam a large area with no fixed area. They could easily roam across several maps!

The boss that Zhang Yang wanted to look for was called “King of the Frost Chimera”, a Green-Copper tier and it was rather weak. However, this boss was the only boss that would drop the [Level 3 Fire Resistance Potion] recipe! This was one of those bosses that did not have a fixed spawning location. The boss would roam around this frozen wasteland without any fixed pattern. Since it will fly around randomly, player had a hard time tracking it down! Players could simply bump into out of nowhere, or spend half a year simply trying to pick up a trail!

Further, King of the Frost Chimera was rather rare despite being Green-Copper. Once defeated, it would take another 7 days to respawn again!

Maps above level 50 only had one similar map in each server. This meant that the entire china server only had one King of the Frost Chimera! Once killed, every player in the china server would have to wait for an entire week!

Since the boss was only a Green-Copper tier, a small team of rag-tag players could easily defeat it! With many players after this boss, nobody will even know if the boss was alive, or if it was playing hide-and-seek as usual. Other than the first-kill, there was no way of knowing if anyone else has killed the boss for the last seven days! Right now, the time was ripe, Zhang Yang had to find the boss now and farm that recipe before other players start exploring this map!

Zhang Yang rode his horse tirelessly, from the top of trees to the bottom of valleys, he searched every nook and cranny of the map for the boss. But, Frozen Sky Wasteland was just too enormous for him to search! He had already spent an entire morning, and had covered at least one third of the entire map and had no clue where the boss was. It could have easily entered the spots he already checked!

After lunch, Zhang Yang logged back in and continued his quest to search for the boss. Incidentally, he had triggered a few monsters in his wake and killed them in stride, albeit unwillingly.

Two days passed in an instant, and Zhang Yang was still roaming in the frozen land with no trails or clues on the whereabouts of the boss. In that time, Zhang Yang had already attained level 53.

So far, beside the 8 players from Lone Desert Smoke including Zhang Yang, the highest level in the guild was only level 48. They might have to train for another 7 to 8 days to reach level 50 in order to raid the Poison Fireland. Besides spending his time searching for the boss, Zhang Yang had brought his party to farm Master Waller for the [Guild Upgrade Order]. The rest of his time was fully spent on searching for the boss.

October the 7th was the fifth day Zhang Yang had spent searching for the King of the Frost Chimera in the Frozen Sky Wasteland.

“Heyyy dummy. The monster that you’re searching for...is it called King of the Frost Chimera, Basilisk?” Han Ying Xue’s sultry voice was heard in the voice messenger.

Zhang Yang was stupefied for a moment. “You saw it?” he finally asked.

“Yeah! I logged out in an open field yesterday. When I relogged in, I decided to walk around, and then I saw a huge chimera monster flying in the sky! When I targeted it, the name was pretty similar to what you have been mumbling on about these few days!”

Zhang Yang almost felt like crying there and then. He had spent 5 whole days searching for the monster and there it was, chanced

upon by an idiot who has a tendency of getting lost all the time!

“Follow the boss! Do not engage, do no engage! I’ll be right there!” said Zhang Yang as he quickly sent a party invitation to Han Ying Xue. That way, he could easily locate her position in the map UI.

Han Ying Xue accepted the invitation and Zhang Yang quickly opened his world map. When he had pinpoint her location, he frowned again. “I’d say. You’re really a good runner! How could you run off to the edge of the map! You’re almost running into the Necrotic Wastelands!”

“Is that so?”

“Is that so? That’s all you’re gonna say about that?”

“Tsk! Hey! I did you a favor here! I found the boss for you! Aren’t you supposed to show some gratitude at least? What are the chances of me walking away from here and having you spend a third of a month wandering around the land like a homeless beggar again?!”

Officials – The author used the word to refer to the ancient china palace ranking system. Officials were ranking officers that had 9 level of rankings. Normal citizens can become officials by taking a written examination.

Chapter 197: Fire Resistance Potion Recipe

Zhang Yang set off like a rocket towards Han Ying Xue.

Since Han Ying Xue was just following the boss and had nothing else to do, she was rather bored and was chirping in Zhang Yang's ear during the whole time. While he was making his way towards her, Han Ying Xue had been asking him all sorts of personal question such as his first love ... the popping of his cherry ...

Frozen Sky Wasteland was truly large indeed. The boss was located away by almost as far as half of the map's size itself. He had to spend at least half an hour riding on his mount just to arrive to the point where he could finally see the blinking dot of Han Ying Xue in his mini-map. The blinking dot of an ally meant that the distance between them was within 100 meters.

FUU RA RA...

The Skeletal War Horse roared as it kicked off a heap of snow into the air when Zhang Yang pulled the reins. Zhang Yang pulled over when he reached by Han Ying Xue's side. The woman was sneezing uncontrollably when he had arrived.

“Hey dummy...I have been waiting for you all day!” Han Ying Xue complained.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and answered. “That's a big no for taking any more Gray-Silver equipment from my shop!”

Knowing her for 3 months, he had already seen past all her little tricks.

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes and said, “Hey! I learnt Rune Craft was for you guys!”

“Oh please...You have to know that equipment higher than level 40 Gray-Silver tier are extremely valuable! Not many others would be willing to sell them off! The ones in my shop was farmed with everyone’s effort! How could I just simply take them out for you!” Zhang Yang rolled his eyes as well.

You think you’re the only who can roll their eyes? Please, I can use the same trick as well!

Han Ying Xue realized that rolling her eyes was not effective enough. She then resorted to raising her eye brows suggestively, “But, +2 Rune Stones require Level 2 Gray-Silver Essences! Don’t you want to upgrade your weapon?”

“What the f*ck woman! I haven’t even received a +1 Rune Stone from you! What +2 Rune Stone are you talking about!?”

Zhang Yang turned around and spotted the flying boss in the air. That flying beast was a large chimera, hovering at least 20 to 30 meters above the ground, soaring passively and slowly.



[King of the Frost Chimera, Basilisk] (Green-Copper, Beast)

Level: 55

HP: 55,000

Defense: 300

That was it! That was the one!

Zhang Yang sent away his horse and ran towards to the boss. He bent over and collect a bunch of snow and formed a snow ball in his hand. He aimed and tossed the snow ball at the boss.

Pak!

The throw did no damage but it was enough to trigger the boss' aggro and to engage in a battle.

The beast growled and flapped its gigantic wings, gliding down from the high heavens and down towards Zhang Yang, firing out a cold stream of air from its mouth.

‘Ding! Basilisk has used <Ice Breath>!’

‘-1,023!’

Zhang Yang took the damage and gained 42 Rage points.

‘-1,482!’ Normal attack.

<Cripple Defense>!

‘-692!’ <Cripple Defense>.

‘-3,389!’ <Horizontal Sweep>.

‘-3,512!’ <Destructive Smash>.

Zhang Yang had instantly expended all his Rage and had dealt close to 9,000 damage to the boss. In terms of percentage, Zhang Yang had knocked off 20% of the boss’ HP! Incredibly scary!

Basilisk’s cried out as it swings its claw to attack Zhang Yang.

<Block>! +30 Rage

‘-359!’ <Block> reflect damage.

<Blood Rage>! +30 Rage/

<Cripple Defense>!

‘-752!’ <Cripple Defense>/

‘-868!’ <Shield Bash>.

‘-1,648!’ <Force Strike>.

Zhang Yang stacked another 3 layers of <Cripple Defense>, making it to 5 stacks in total. The boss was now completely naked to Zhang Yang attacks.

“Woah, looks like soloing a boss is no problem for you now, huh...” said Han Ying Xue admirably. Zhang Yang’s current attack had far exceeded that of the boss. His HP was now at 12,000. He did not even need to use <Berserker’s Heal> to kill the boss!

“I’m wearing Yellow-Gold and Gray-Silver equipment, woman. How can I not solo kill a Green-Copper tier boss? If I can’t even do that, how do I show my face in public?” said Zhang Yang as he smirked.

“What a thick face!”

Zhang Yang laughed. He raised his axe up high and continued to attack the boss with a DPS of nearly 2000! To kill a boss with 55,000 HP would only take around half a minute! By the time he had killed off the boss, he did not even break a sweat and had only lost 5,000 HP.

“Dummy, what exactly is up with this boss to make you go so far out of your way?” Women were as curious as cats. As more so for Han Ying Xue, as she posed the question while raising her eye brows seductively.

Zhang Yang bent down and poked around the boss’ drops and smiled contentedly when he picked up a sheet of recipe. He then quickly patted it on his chest and learned the crafting recipe.

Han Ying Xue cried out immediately when she saw him doing that. “What the...You sly meanie, you actually used All-Pick distribution mode!” She actually wanted to pick up the item and teased Zhang Yang for a bit before letting him taking the item. She had never though that Zhang Yang was one step ahead of her and had set the distribution mode beforehand.

Zhang Yang laughed manically. “Hmph! Without proper skills, how can I fight off demons and monsters like you!”

“BLEH!” Han Ying Xue blew raspberries at him. She was now even more curious about the item that Zhang Yang had picked up. “Dummy, at least let me see the item description!”

Zhang Yang laughed under his breath and posted the description of a type of potion.

[Level 3 Fire Resistance Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Adds 600 fire resistant. Last for 2 minutes.

Cool down time: 2 minutes.

Level Requirement: 50

“Is this the junk that you spent 5 days searching for?” snorted Han Ying Xue.

“This junk could only reduces 600 fire damage. I can easily heal that amount with one tick of <Regeneration>.”

“Your hair must be too long now, it’s dulling your senses!” said Zhang Yang while giving a crooked smile.

“What did you say? Care to repeat that again?!” said Han Ying Xue with the temper of a lioness behind her voice.

“Ah...ah...” Zhang Yang quickly twist his brain, trying to think of a way to switch the topic. “There are many bosses that have damaging aura effects. Just like the one that gave us a lot of trouble in the Expedition war, the <Burning Aura>? If we had used the potion to nullify the aura effect, we won’t not have to worry about it anymore!”

Han Ying Xue only nodded and hummed “Okay” under her breath. For now, she bought what Zhang Yang said.

The last boss in the Poison Fireland, Roshan – Copper Hammer was the kill requirement for the level 50 class quest. The boss had a strong AoE, <Burning Aura> - like ability. It was not like the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] that was needed to resist the Marzerway's shadow attack, where it was completely impossible to complete the raid without it. This level 50 boss could still be killed without the potion, but having it would make things much easier! The item was bound to be extremely popular in the future! However, Zhang Yang remained quiet about this fact. If he had said it, Han Ying Xue would definitely be asking for a share of the profit! It's best to remain quiet for now.

As for the other drops of Basilisk, Zhang Yang did not even care to have a glimpse at them. He just looted them all and tossed them into the corner of his inventory (if the inventory had a corner to begin with). It was all just random Green-Copper and Black-Steel tier equipment. Nothing important enough for him to pay attention to.

Now that he had what he wanted, Zhang Yang mission was completed. He tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to White Jade Castle. To craft the [Level 3 Fire Resistance Potion], he would require [White-Spotted Flower]s and [Fire Crystal Shard]s. [White-Spotted Flower]s are harvest ingredients obtainable by Herbalism profession. They can be harvested in level 40+ hunting grounds and are extreme abundant in nature. The price in the auction house was quite low as well. [Fire Crystal Shard]s were the miscellaneous -- items that would be in the 'ETC' tab of inventories -- dropped by any Fire Elemental monsters, levels 20 and higher. They usually ended up being sold to NPC directly.

Miscellaneous items, in 'God' Miracle' usually seemed worthless, but when a recipe pops up and requires them as ingredients, the item would undergo a sudden change, gaining popularity and having its prices hike up by over hundred-fold within a day!

Since the recipe of [Level 3 Fire Resistance Potion] was extremely rare to begin with, Zhang Yang had never go to figure out the ingredients needed to craft the item! Only after he had obtained the recipe did he gain the knowledge of the items.

Back in his shop, he had adjusted Natalia's setting to begin purchasing these said ingredients.

[White-Spotted Flower]s were sold in the auction house at 10 gold coins a stack. [Fire Crystal Shard]s, they were being sold directly to the NPCs. No one would want to waste their money by selling it at the auction house due to the service fees incurred, that would deduct 20% of the price they put up. Selling the [Fire Crystal Shard] to the NPC would earn them 2 gold coins a stack, without any extra charges. Zhang Yang set the buying price for the [White-Spotted Flower] at 8.5 gold coins a stack and [Fire Crystal Shard] at 2.5 gold coins a stack.

This time, all 8 major cities had their teleportation circles opened for all. Any player could freely travel to all cities for their liking. With that, Zhang Yang did not have to search for "distributors" to help him sell his "junks" anymore. As long as he could spread his Little Merchandize Shop name to all cities, customer will flock to his shop with no time at all!

By the afternoon, Natalia had bought a number of ingredients.

Seeing that, Zhang Yang could not help but sigh heavily. All his available storage was used to store the [Solid Iron Bar], he had no more space to make way for the potion!

With no more space left in his own inventory, Zhang Yang had to use Fatty Han's personal inventory as storage for his potions. Zhang Yang was now a Professional-tier Alchemist, he could make 4 bottles of potion in one instance. In just half an hour, he had used up all the ingredient Natalia had stockpiled to craft the [Level 3 Fire Resistance Potion]. There were a total of 34 stacks, all of them which he mailed to Fatty Han.

In two days, Zhang Yang had not only filled up Fatty Han's own personal storage, he had also filled up Wei Yan Er's, Endless Starlight's and other friends' as well. He had even persuaded them to open up a few more storage space in their personal warehouses, all to help Zhang Yang to store the potion. Since both Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue was misers to begin with, to ask them to spend their own "hard earned" gold to open up a few more slots of storage crossed a line. Left with no choice, Zhang Yang had to pay them money to do his favor. Luckily, the expansion cost of 4 of their personal storage tabs were not expensive at all. At most, it costed him 1,000 gold coins.

October the 9th, 6pm in the evening.

"BANG BANG BANG!" It was like someone was trying to break down the door.

"Who is it?!" cried Zhang Yang as he peeked through the peephole in the door. He saw Fatty Han standing outside his door

while stroking his big tummy. He quickly unlocked the door and greeted his friend. “Damn! I just had my dinner! I have nothing left for you to leech!”

After the Fatso had bought himself a sport car, he had been rather busy for the past few days. He had been coming over to Zhang Yang’s to leech drinks and food off him every night.

“Little Yang! You must have forgotten!” Today, Fatty Han was dressed up all fancily. He was wearing a Burberry top and the same brand of long pants. It was a shame though; he was ALMOST a sharp dressed man -- if not for the sight of his bouncing belly which ruined the whole image. Fatty Han shook his head and went up to Zhang Yang ears, shouting, “It’s the student’s gathering today, yo!”

“ARGH! Crap!” Zhang Yang had completely forgotten about the matter. He had screamed in response to Fatty Han’s abrupt reminder.

“Don’t “argh” me! You promised to joined me! Let’s go! Let’s go! We have one hour! Damn! If we get stuck in traffic now, who knows when we might get there! We might not even be there by the [Year of the Monkey](#)!” Fatty Han’s standard operating procedures: if he obtained wealth this year; complete with a car and some money in his bank, he wanted to gloat in the face of those people who had looked down upon him.

If Zhang Yang had not died, he would have the same thoughts. However, now that he had experience death and rebirth, this kind of childish act was completely out of his thoughts.

Being dragged and yelled at by Fatty Han, Zhang Yang quickly changed into a new shirt. That outfit was for his job interview. Back then, it had cost him 700 dollars!

“Little Yang! You’re a millionaire now! Why would you still wear something that cheap!” said Fatty Han when he saw Zhang Yang’s outfit. “Oh...I understand what you trying to do Little Yang! You’re trying to be a wolf under a sheep skin! Though I must say that it is a little lame for you to do so!”

Zhang Yang frowned heavily. Wrinkles as long as the highway formed on his forehead!

Am I not the one being dragged along by you! Why would I follow your style?

Fatty Han’s sport car was indeed cool and extravagant. When he parked his car in front of the apartment, many youngsters were ogling and pointing at the car, all with the admiration and impressed look on their faces.

Fatty Han was rather happy about being admired at. As he walked to his car, he winked at some female on the side seductively. First, he lead Zhang Yang to the car and forced him in. He then moved to the driver’s seat and got in. Since he was rather large, he did not exactly take his seat immediately. In fact, he had to squeeze inside, finally managing to get into the driver’s seat with much effort.

THUMP!

With a loud thump, his butt landed on the seat, shaking the entire car and stressing the suspension to its maximum potential. It was no wonder how Fatty Han could be as heavy as a tonne.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh. “Hey fatty, did you buy a car insurance for your baby?”

“Of course I did!”

“Thank god! If you crushed this car, which I think is completely possible. At least you won’t be losing everything if you loss the car!”

“F*ck you. I’ve been “crushing” Yun Yun every night and she’s hasn’t broken anything! [This car is made of metal](#), goddamit! If I could crush this car, I would go back to the bastard’s shop and send a wrecking ball through it for selling me cheap goods!”

“Oh right! Why didn’t you bring Yun Yun along?”

“Little Yang, are you being serious right now? If I brought Yun Yun along with me, how am I going to pick up other girls!” sulked Fatty Han as he started the car and drove out of the area.

Zhang Yang raised his eyebrow and asked. “So, you’re not planning to settle down with her?”

Fatty Han scratched his head. “Little Yang, what kind of era do you think you’re living in? I’m out for chicks, it’s not like I’m breakin’ up with Yun Yun! Besides, I’m still single and ready to mingle!”

Zhang Yang broke a cold sweat.

Damn son! You have a girlfriend and you’re out there playing with other women! Am I the one who’s outdated? Or are you the one with issues?!

Zhang Yang could not help but shake his head in denial. “Oh well. Anyhow, it’s your personal life. I’m not going to butt in this. Do what you like!”

As they drove all the way to Sheraton Hotel, they were, as Fatty Han has predicted earlier, got stuck in traffic.

The traffic jam was rather bad. By the time they had arrived to the door steps, the time was already 7:11pm.

Just as the two friends got down the car, they saw a young man crying out from two parking spots away from them.

“Zhang Yang! Han Guang!” the man had just gotten down his normal, everyday car.

Zhang Yang stared at the man for a good second and was surprised when he recognized the man. “Liu Qi Ming!”

“Haha! That’s right! That’s me!”

Thomp!

The man closes the door of his car and walked jubilantly towards them. Laughing, he said, “I never thought that you would be doing so well! Look at you! Driving a Maserati! How much does this one cost? I assume it cost at least 1,000,000 dollars!”

Zhang Yang smiled as he shook his head. “Oh no! The car is Fatty’s. I was just hitching a ride!”

Liu Qi Ming nodded his head. The wonder in his face faded quickly but rekindle when he saw Fatty Han.

“Han Guang! I see that you’ve struck gold now, huh!”

Fatty Han and Zhang Yang were soul brothers. To look down on Zhang Yang was to look down to him! Seeing that Liu Qi Ming had expressed a cold shoulder to Zhang Yang; Fatty Han reciprocate the same expression and only exchange a few word with Liu Qi Ming and called out to Zhang Yang, “Let’s go, Little Yang!”

Even though Liu Qi Ming had received the cold shoulder from Fatty Han, the slight anger was immediately gone when he saw the luxury car that Fatty Han owned.

Author's Note: this story arc is about Zhang Yang interaction in reality, his thoughts and relationship. That is why it's long...

Lunar Calendar-Year of the Monkey is one of the years in the Lunar Calendar. It was not specified on what year they were in at that time.

Editor's note - Fatty Han had used a word that literally meant 'iron'. This word is used to refer to 'metals' in general. Also, since this is Fatty Han we're talking about, I seriously doubt that he knows what Maseratis are made of. Let's hope that he doesn't think it's really iron.

Chapter 198: Zhou Kang Ming

The three of them walked out of the parking lot and walked into the hotel lobby. There stood 4 beautiful doorwomen wearing tight traditional Chinese Qi Baos, greeting the guests of the hotel. When the three guys walked closer, the girls bowed down in respect and greeted them as well.

“Welcome!”

Fatty Han did a quick up-down on one of the girls and could not help but leak out a perverted smirk. He reached out with his flabby hands and grabbed Zhang Yang by the shoulder, whispering into his ear. “Dude! Check the babe second to the right! Damn, that is one fine piece of arse! I swear to god, I’ll grab those buns!”

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. “Dude. Undo the calamity that is your mammaries. Did you accidentally swallow an entire bottle of Viagra before you got here?”

Fatty Han burst out in a loud thunderous laugh and it took sometime before he could catch his breath. “Hah, I could have died laughing! Say, Little Yang. I’ve noticed this for some time now, but...you’ve changed! Like, you’ve turned into someone else! Didn’t you use to love hanging out with me, checking out chicks on the streets? What’s with the pseudo-gentleman get-up?”

Zhang Yang could not help but agree with Fatty Han. During his high school life, he was as Fatty Han described. Hanging out with Fatty Han at the streets, enjoying the view of girls walking by.

Staring, judging, picking the girls with bigger boobs, or booties that rivaled Nicki Minaj! They would sometimes even throw out a catcall or two! They had been doing it so often that people in the street called them the little wolves!

However, times has changed. He has changed. His mentality was no longer the young, rebellious brat that had just graduated from university! He had experienced the working adult life, the 5 years of working in the society like every adult did. He had, in fact, died! If he had not changed mentally, that would be weird!

When Liu Qi Ming saw how nonchalant Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were, envy boiled up in him.

In high school, everyone was so busy trying their best to cope with studies. With the spirit of youth in them, none of them would slack for a taste of temporary enjoyment! It was a pity though; during university times, they eyes and ears were opened wide; with sweet luxury cars taking beautiful girls out, a scene that was rather common in that period, changing a young teenager into a man of money. You can't put food on the table with bravery and guts. That's the harsh reality of the world. Money makes the world go round. Without money, you can achieve nothing. No girls...no success...nothing. Don't expect beautiful girls to even look at you, if you don't have the bulge of a thick wallet on the back of your pants.

Liu Qi Ming was the same as Zhang Yang was, a university graduate. He had found a job in a small business and had to depend on his parents to buy him a generic car. Working a dull 9 to 5 job had killed off his joy! When he saw the car that Fatty Han rolled in

with, he immediately knew that Fatty Han must be a business owner to be that rich!

Back when he was still in high school, Liu Qi Ming was not a man who would neglect his studies to mingle around with Fatty Han, a fat boy who would only spend his entire day brawling about in the streets. However, desperate times, desperate measures. Liu Qi Ming had thought of a way to help himself. Even if had to defy his own conscience to do so, he thought that he could at least try to pull some strings with Fatty Han. He would try to play the “old-school friends” card.

He thought that Zhang Yang was just the same as him, he thought that he could see through Zhang Yang acts; that he was trying to get to Fatty Han’s good side. But obviously, he was no further from the cold truth. Both of them were chatting along, getting into each other’s nerves like they were already in good terms. Liu Qi Ming felt a strong disdain, and silently cursed “ass-kisser, boot-licker”.

“Say...Han Guang, what have you been doing after high school? How did you get your hands on a Maserati?” said Liu Qi Ming as he tried to slide in a word with Fatty Han. He could not let Zhang Yang hog all the quality time talking to Fatty Han.

Fatty Han had no intention of bothering the arrogant bastard, but when the snobby prick mentioned his car, he got a little excited. “Oh nothing really. I was just around, you know. Helping other buying and selling some stuff. Casual business. Commission based. What the heck though. That Maserati GT2034 had cost me 3,870,000 dollars! F*cking greedy Americans!”

Zhang Yang had specifically told him not reveal his trades to anyone. That was why Fatty Han had given a vague description like that. Even though he had a body full of fat, he was not pigheaded. He was, not really stupid, he was just really bad with books and all. He immediately sensed Liu Qi Ming trying to get to his good side. Fatty Han laughed mentally at him.

The real god of fortune is standing right next to me! I don't see you bending over, head over heels to him! I'm the fake one! Hah! I'll see how you suffer later!

Zhang Yang laughed at Fatty Han's comment about his car. "Dude. Maserati is from Italy you dumb-f*ck! What's it got to do with Americans?"

"OH!" Fatty Han opened his eyes wide as his jaw was left gaping.

"What the hell! That bloody sly manager! I told him to give me the best sport car! And that sneaky old fox dared to sell me a toy car from Italy!? Oh heeellll no! I ain't gonna stand by this! I'm going back and drive this sh*t crap car into his broken *ass!"

This oblivious Fatty Han was not familiar with any famous brands. He thought that he had cheated by the manager of the auto shop. His heart ached when he realized that he had spent all his savings into buying a cheap car!

On the other side of the coin, when Liu Qi Ming heard what Fatty Han said, he could not help but realize just how rich this guy was to

throw his money away without a care! What kind of person could just ignore the brand of the car they are buying and make the purchase without thinking twice? What sort of human would do that!

Zhang Yang laughed. “Damn you, American fan-boy! Do you really think all good things come from America?”

“Is it not then?” said Fatty Han with genuine curiosity.

Zhang Yang smacked Fatty Han’s head. “Of course not! You dumb wit! That shirt you’re wearing! Burberry. That brand is from England! What does it have anything to do with America!?” Zhang Yang sighed. No wonder people say it would take at least 3 generations to culture a noble family. If they were to be like Fatty Han, 10 billion dollars would be wasted in a day!

Fatty Han shamelessly nodded and laughed it off. “Ah well. I don’t care if it was made in America, England, or Zimbabwe! I’m rich! I can buy anything I want!”

Liu Qi Ming knew that Maserati is an Italian car, but he did not dare to be the Nazi. However, he had never thought that Zhang Yang would blatantly point out his mistake and ridicule Fatty Han for it. Instead of being angry or offended, Fatty Han was rather jubilant about it! Filled with regret, he should have just corrected Fatty Han when he had the chance.

“Zhang Yang! Liu Qi Ming! Han Guang!” A loud voice could be heard from the front of them. Not far from where they were

standing was a young man that just hit his twenties. Dressed to impress, with glimmering hair line that shone under the light. However, his overall appearance was rather dull and common. Nothing really stuck out in particular. He did not have a handsome, nor unsightly face. It was, at best, the most generic face and body that anyone could see and have.

With a glance, Zhang Yang could easily recognize the owner of the voice. It was Zhou Kang Ming. He was also a student of the same high school as Zhang Yang. Zhou Kang Ming came from a rather mediocre family. A few years back, the government wanted to create road ways that would cut right through their family home. To reimburse them, the government had paid them a generous amount of 10,000,000 dollars as compensation. With that money, his father built a factory that made picture frames. The business was shockingly high; with annual profit of 2 to 3 million dollars!

This information came from his own mouth when Zhang Yang had attended the student gathering in his previous life. When he had announced his wealth, he was rather proud of it, and had looked at his fellow friends with a rather condescending look when he said that his annual income was close to 2 million dollars.

“Zhou Kang Ming!” Zhang Yang greeted him coldly and let it be that way. He came to the gathering today as a favor of the bastard Fatty. He would not go out of his way, pleasing everyone else.

Zhou Kang Ming smiled with a grandiose posture and said, “It’s just the three of you, Yang Zhi Xuan, and Li Ru. Ok, let’s go, I’ll let Shan Shan give a call to the girls, and let them get a room for

themselves when their arrive!”

Just as the name Shan Shan was mentioned, Zhou Kang Ming had eyed Zhang Yang.

This exact scene, was just like Zhang Yang’s previous life.

Zhou Kang Ming had been seeing Zhao Hui Shan, the same girl that Zhang Yang was with in high school. The two of them would have been about to get married in a few months’ time! In high school, Zhao Kang Ming was rather mediocre in every aspect, he was not wealthy nor poor, he had a personality that was rather down-to-earth, following rules obediently to the letter.

He was not a handsome man that could easily pick up girls at will. He was, as previously described, the most generic kind of person you could ever met. The kind of person that would not naturally attract the attention of the opposite gender.

But what kind of guy would not want to get involved with girls? Zhou Kang Ming had feelings for Yang Zhi Xian, Zhao Hui Shan, and Li Ru when they were still in high school. But then, who would have noticed him? Only after his family struck gold, and having coincidentally entered the same university as Zhao Hui Shan, after a few small gifts, he had successfully captured the heart of the young maiden called Zhao Hui Shan.

Having a beautiful woman by his side now was definitely a joyful event, however, there was still a heavy emotional baggage that Zhou Kang Ming could not let go, like a sharp prick in back of the

brain. That was the fact that Zhao Hui Shan have once dated Zhang Yang for a year! He would not have that! What's so good about Zhang Yang back then? Both of his parents were dead, leaving him nothing but dust. He was bad with his studies and was always getting himself into fights! What did Zhao Hui Shan see in this person!?

That was the reason why Zhou Kang Ming retained a certain level of resentment towards Zhang Yang. In his previous life, Zhang Yang was provoked endlessly by Zhao Kang Ming in the same student gathering. In the end, his provocation had gotten to Zhang Yang, which led him to sending a good strong punch directing to his mouth. That one punch had bruised his mouth and sent 3 teeth flying off!

Reminiscing the past, Zhang Yang started to laugh when he saw his mouth.

Want to have another go at it?

This time, Zhang Yang was thinking of breaking all of his teeth!

The four of them came into the elevator and arrived at the fourth floor of the hotel. They entered another large hall. The hall was filled with 8 large tables which was already filled with over 60 people at the age of 20 and so. Some of them were exchanging words, smiling at each other courteously, nodding politely while talking about the past. Some of the people around were alone, while the rest brought along their partners.

As the 4 late comers arrive into the hall, everyone stood up clapping their hands, welcoming them to the occasion.

“Alright guys! It’s just Yang Zhi Xian and Li Ru left! Let’s eat!” Zhou Kang Ming waved and gestured something with his hands to the service crew, signaling for the crew to start serving the dishes.

“Here! Zhang Yang, please sit here!” Zhou Kang Ming pointed at the center table.

Fatty Han smiled delightfully and said, “Zhang Yang and I must sit together! We’re like salt and pepper!”

Everyone sat down and after a while, a few service crew start coming out from a corner, pushing a cart full of dishes to each table.

“Zhang Yang~~” Just when Zhang Yang sat down, an incredibly beautiful woman smiled proudly, with a hint of patronizing behavior.

“Zhao Hui Shan!” cried Fatty Han and laughed as he replied her. “How many years have passed, I see that you’re only getting prettier by the day! I see that your parents will no longer need to bug you for a relationship huh! Ah! Just right, my brother, Little Yang is still single! You guys talk!”

Zhao Hui Shan changed her expression in a flash. “Han Guang! Please don’t remind me of the past! I was stupid and juvenile at the

time! I wouldn't have known if I was being cheated!"

Fatty Han frowned. "What are you talking about? Back then, I remember that you were the one that followed Zhang Yang like a loyal puppy! What cheat are you talking about?"

Zhao Hui Shan was wavering. Back then, she admired men with strength! During his high school days, Zhang Yang was famous for being the king of fighters. Whenever Zhang Yang was in the middle of a fight, she had always been secretly peeking at the brawl, thus falling for Zhang Yang. However, everything changed when she entered university. Everything was either money or cash. When she saw her classmates taking out their cold hard cash every time they shop, slowly and eventually, her mentality had changed. Seeing other rich people having the ability to buy anything they desire, that behaviors had changed her into becoming a gold-digger!

When Zhou Kang Ming brought his fortune into her life, she felt that he was her fair prince on a white horse. Eventually, she gave into her desires and became his girlfriend. Today, they had fixed the marriage date, a few months from now!

Now that she had recalled back the day she had wasted with Zhang Yang, Zhao Hui Shan cursed at herself in her heart. How was she that blind to actually fall for a poor and useless man! Like striking the lottery, she felt that she had made the right choice. If she had not taken her parent's advice and lived on together with Zhang Yang, she could been one of those poor housewives, strolling along the farmer's market trying her best to think of the cheapest vegetable to buy!

That is why, the worse shape Zhang Yang's life currently was, the happier she would be. At least, she could get proper closure on the matter. Still, it was an incredibly stupid theory.

Chapter 199: A Boring Attack

“Eat up! Eat up!” Zhou Kang Ming tried to raise the atmosphere.

To shame Zhang Yang was an obligatory act, how it must be done moderately. If it were to be too much...

The two of them, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were the two fighting addicts that the even the teacher would not dare to meddle with! Right now Zhou Kang Ming felt that his well-being was much more valuable. It's not worth taking a punch for it!

In the midst of it, the atmosphere of the table had turned cold and awkward. Besides the chomping of food and the clacking sound of chopsticks, no one would bother to speak up at all.

“I say, the most successful ones in our class would be Zhao Kang Ming and Han Guang, is it not?” said Liu Qi Ming out of the blue. Sitting together, Liu Qi Ming decided to start a conversation topic when he sees everyone was only pushing food down their food pipe.

Zhou Kang Ming was successful, everyone knew that. That big mouth had mentioned that his family had started a picture frame factory, and he was the vice-CEO or something, earning at least 1,000,000 a year. He was so proud about it that he had been repeating that for several times.

This meal, this student gathering, was all funded by Zhao Kang Ming. That was why he was treating this place as if it was his own

house.

To think that the dumb fatty who barely graduated was this successful, it was an insult to the 3 to 4 years of studying in a university!

Everyone started at Liu Qi Ming with much curiosity.

Liu Qi Ming smirked. “Try guessing what kind of car did Han Guang drive today?” He presumed that Fatty Han would love to take a compliment. That was why he had decided to go all out with it.

“What car?”

“What kind of car?”

“Brand?”

Everyone was startled by Liu Qi Ming’s question and started to follow up with more questions.

“It was a Maserati GT2034!” said Liu Qi Ming word by word to build up a suspense.

“Get out of here! That car costs more than 3,000,000!”

“Fatty! Wow! Good for you! You must be rich!”

“Han Guang! Your father must be some company’s president!”

Everyone started to get all chirpy about Fatty Han. Some were guessing his source of income, while the others were guessing about Fatty Han’s family business.

Being at the center of attention, Fatty Han was happy. He gestured his hands by waving them in the air. “Ah...please guys. It’s just nothing. I’m even planning to purchase another villa in the next few days. It shouldn’t be that expensive. Around 10 million should do!”

This pig sure knew how to brag!

Zhang Yang held in his laughter and gulped some beer to hide the expression on his face. He was interested to see what followed next, he did no intend to ruin Fatty Han’s “performance”.

But what he did not know was that the car alone, worth more than 3 million already blew everyone’s mind. There were many students here with a rather luxurious families backing them, that they could easily buy a house or a car after they graduated. But to buy a 3-million-dollar sport car and a 10-million-dollar villa was completely out of this world!

Zhou Kang Ming heard what Fatty Han said, even him, an man of his statue, got agitated when he heard Fatty Han blab. His own

family's fortune was not as vast as Fatty Han, with an annual income of one million, and a 10,000 dollar monthly "pocket money" from his father. If he wanted to buy the same car, he would need to wait until his old man died and passed all the family inheritance to him.

Zhou Kang Ming felt bitter. How could he spend a large amount of money to organize a grand gathering in a luxurious hotel, just to let someone else take the spotlight!

Just then, a service crew walked in and served a plate of European lobster. He quickly cried, "Alright! Alright! Settle down guys! Here! Please taste this dish! It's lobster! Sheraton's most famous lobster dish! The lobster they used was from Europe! It's authentic and awesome! Though it's only around one pound and a half portion...Please taste the tenders meat!"

Zhao Hui Shan echoed, "Yeah! I heard it's really good! Please, help yourself!"

The dish was so rare that not anyone could eat this kind of cuisine in their lifetimes. Everyone grabbed their chopsticks and helped themselves to the lobster.

When Zhou Kang Ming saw everyone attacking the lobster with relish, silently, he felt that he was patronizing these "caveman".

"Is it really that good? I mean...*munch munch* It's tender, just like Kentucky!" It had to be from the mouth of an inelegant man. Fatty Han had spent more than 3 million on a car that he had no

idea in what country it was made! How could you argue with a man like that, about the difference between a lobster and a chicken drumstick?

Everyone choked. Some had even coughed out the food in their mouth. Others were glad that they had already swallowed, or else they might actually choke on the food! Zhou Kang Ming was just a little more from spitting blood all over the table. This was the highest grade of lobster! From Europe too! One lobster of this grade would easily cost more than 700 dollars! How could this pig compare it to a regular fast-food joint!

Liu Qi Ming steeled his heart to continued gain Fatty Han's good side. He quickly said, "Ahh! Hahaha, you must have eaten a whole lot of luxurious food now have you! This lobster must be one of those dishes you have every day! Fatty bro here must be having more than this, perhaps abalone or even [bird nest](#)! It's the same as we us eating fast food daily!"

Everyone quickly understood what he said and nodded. Owning a 3 million dollar car was enough to gain the respect from all. So no matter what Fatty Han blabbered, the audience would gladly listen. Everyone thought that Fatty Han was just putting up an act. It was worth putting up an act for him too.

That thoughtless utterance had completely been misinterpreted by everyone. Now that it had come to this, everyone was left with a stronger impression that Fatty Han was really a rich man!

Zhou Kang Ming was even madder. This meal had cost him tens of thousands, but for what?! It was for him to gloat in front of all

his ex-classmates. But now that he had bought them the meal, the real spotlight befell on Fatty Han! This event had left Zhou Kang Ming confused and angry.

“Oh right! Zhang Yang! So, what did you do after you graduated?” Zhou Kang Ming had decided to divert the attention. He must change the target. He shall divert the conversation towards Zhang Yang and follow his plan to humiliate this ex-lover of his girlfriend.

Zhang Yang was munching on the lobster and looked up when Zhou Kang Ming had mention his name. He quickly swallow the food in his mouth and smiled lightly. “I’m a professional gamer.”

“Professional gamer?” One by one, the people around the table asked the same question. “Is that some sort of a career where you sell some in-game currency for the online game?”

That was called a gold-farmer. They made money via endurance, not skills. To earn a living as a gold-farmer was easy as they took up several days and nights, killing monsters endlessly and collecting the gold coins! A true professional gamer required genuine skills. Just like the Korean Starcraft league from a few years back. This career required actual skills to survive!

However, Zhang Yang did not bother correcting him. He simply nodded and replied, “Close enough!”

“Ahhh. My colleague’s younger brother was a professional gamer as well!” Someone started to talk. “I heard that he could earn

around 1 to 2 thousand dollars by selling the gold he collected for the month!”

“1 to 2 thousand? That’s rather good, I must say. When I first entered the company, I only had 2,000 as my basic salary! Now, I’m entering the third month now, with 3,000 salary!”

Everyone started to discuss about the topic, however, it was implicit in their conversation, it felt as if they were demeaning Zhang Yang. What could he do? Professional gamer? These two words sounds like an unauthentic career.

Fatty Han was mentally laughing.

Look at you guys go! Did you know that Little Yang’s in-game shop is earning more than 200,000 to 300,000 dollars daily? He earns more than what you could earn in a year! Looking down at him? Please, you guys are just frogs in the well.

Zhao Hui Shan was rather jubilant about this. She was truly glad that she had made the right choice. She smirked and said, “What a drag! Working like a cow for a whole month just for 1 to 2 thousand dollars! Kang Ming dear, we have already spent close to one thousand dollar for our little Bei Bei!”

The moment she had said that name, everyone was baffled. One of the shouted, “Zhao Kang Ming! When did you marry the class queen! You even have a baby now?!”

Zhou Kang Ming laughed awkwardly and said, “Bei Bei is the pet dog I have back at home. It’s a pure bred German Shepard! I bought it two years ago. It costed around [700,000 dollars](#) with actual pedigree!”

With that, everyone now knew that Zhao Hui Shan was intentionally trying to belittle Zhang Yang! It was rather common knowledge that both Zhang Yang and Zhao Hui Shan were seeing each other back then, but they could never expect that she would lose her sense and turn around 180 degrees, treating Zhang Yang like a piece of garbage!

“By the way you speak with each other...I assume you’re going to marry soon?”

Zhou Kang Ming laughed and purposely glance and Zhang Yang. “Yeah. We had just fixed the marriage date at 1st of May! Please! Come and join us!”

Swoosh!

The speed at which the people around the table turn their neck to look at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was drinking a pint of beer and put the glass down. “Well then, I believe congratulation is in order!”

At his current state of “height”, looking down at the ugly performance of Zhao Kang Ming, he could not bring himself to be

angry! He could not help it! Have you seen an ant trying to dance around to impress an elephant? And would the elephant be impressed by it? NO! Because either side was on a whole other level!

However, Zhang Yang action had led everyone to believe that he was drinking to release his frustration. How could they not!? When a first love was being married to someone else, and the groom was not you! How much pain could the heart contain before it implodes!

Those with a heart of sympathy was rather a plenty around the table, many of which had raised their glass for Zhang Yang.

Zhou Kang Ming saw the “drunk” look on Zhang Yang face and was rather satisfied with his accomplishment. Yet, he still wanted to throw more wood into a burning forest, trying to incite the anger in Zhang Yang. “Hey, Zhang Yang! It seems that you came here alone today. I assume that you did not have any person you’re seeing! How about this? I’ll asked Shan Shan here to introduce a few girls for you! Well, I can’t guarantee that the girls would be as pretty as Shan Shan herself! Hahaha...ha...ha...”

He thought that he had said something funny and started to laugh on his own. But when his laughter was not accompanied with anyone else, he stopped and went silent.

Tok Tok Tok!

A soft knock echoed thought the hall that came from the main

door. A service crew quickly head over and opened the door. A mature, beautiful young lady walked in. Her long hair brushed against the wind as she walked through the door. A piece of short dress was plastered tightly against her pale marble-like skin. The chest was designed in a deep V cutting that completely expose one third of her voluptuous hoonkas. By the looks of it, the dress was not meant to be worn over a bra. Paired with her slender waist, her soft and well-filled butt cheeks were clearly held back by the dress. Each step crossed over the other leg; as she catwalked down the hall, sending waves and waves of pure hot passion!

The skirt was so short that it barely touched her knees. Whatever that was lower down was covered in two long black colored leggings that was so thin, you could mistakenly assume she was not wearing any! Her legs were obnoxiously long and slender, and the short skirt and the high heels only added to their radiance!

A pair of sunglasses adorned her nose. With a small handbag hanging on her left arm, she looked like a super model from the western fashion company!

The moment she walked into the hall, every young man had their carnal instinct triggered to its maximum! Everyone was questioning themselves the identity of the woman!

The woman smirked and curled her lips in. She pulled down her sunglasses a little and said, “You guys sure are full of yourselves huh! How could you start without me!”

“L-L-Li Ru!?” Those who recognize this sexy woman immediately screamed in shocked.

Li Run turned in circle on her spot and giggled playfully. “What’s wrong guys? You can’t recognize me?”

Fatty Han screamed out. “I said before that women are genius shape-shifters, and I’ll say it again! Especially pretty chicks! Every time they change into a new look, they would only be sexier and sexier!”

Every other guys nodded their head like student listening to a professor in a classroom. Li Ru was the same as everyone else. She was at the same age and studied together in the same class as the rest. Li Ru had been the class queen, and the school idol! But, back then, her figure was still maturing, she was not as alluring, nor as bewitching as she was now! Those perky breasts, that jiggle in her booty, those assets reminded how those boys were still boys. She was the kind of perfect dish that people would crave in an instant!

Every other lady was sulking bitterly. How could they not?

A beautiful peacock has just entered the hall! That entrance alone was enough to send all them doubting their own complexion. How could they be happy about it!? Especially when their own partners were drooling over her face, chest, and ass!

Bird Nest – To be more accurate, swallow’s nest. The Chinese believe that ingesting swallow’s nest gave strong health benefits. It’s usually costly.

700,000 dollars – I have no clue what kind of German Shepard

that would cost 700,000 dollars. However, do note that the currency they are using is assumed to be China's RMB. After conversion to USD, it would be around 100,000. USD 100,000 for pure-bred German Shepards that came with their own certificates of authenticity.

Chapter 200: Class Idol

Of all the ladies present, Zhao Hui Shan was most bitter!

Before Li Ru had made her appearance, Zhao Hui Shan was the most beautiful lady around! Every gesture, every move she made would attract the silent stares of men. But, the moment Li Ru stepped in, every single eyeball in the room had swiveled around to lock onto her body! That alone infuriated the narcissistic beauty, Zhao Hui Shan. How could she allow this to continue any longer!?

Li Ru smirked again. She slid her sunglasses off and nipped the edge of it with her lips, ever so sexily. She slowly turned around, giving the men several more angles to gaze upon her beauty as she scanned the room, her long eyes lashes fluttering. As soon as she spotted Zhang Yang, her eyes widened. She kicked off the floor with her high heels and headed towards him.

“Hey. Wang Hai, let me have this seat,” said Li Ru to the person sitting next to Zhang Yang. As if she was wearing a concoction of Aphrodite herself, the man, coerced by the sweet scent emitting from behind him lost all sense of mind and complied obediently. Driven by instincts alone he stood up and stepped aside, his eyes wandering. As she pulled the chair back and sat on it, as his body moved by itself, the man called Wang Hai realized just then that he had given up his seat. Shaking off his stupor, he walked around the large dining table to find himself another empty seat.

Li Ru got comfortable in her seat and waved at the service crew at the corner of the hall. She ordered them to bring her a new set of utensil and cutlery.

She smiled at everyone. “Ah, it’s been such a long time guys! I missed you guys so much!”

Fatty Han laughed, “Li Ru! Why the hell are you sitting next to my man Little Yang!”

Li Ru was twirling her silky long hair over her fair, jade-like skin. “Since when, was Zhang Yang your man?! I’d known that both of you were rather close, but I don’t think that you guys were into each other like that!”

What was that!? Fatty Han may be known, for better or for worse, for his knack of blabbing out other-worldly nonsense. Even so, this woman was completely out of his league! Fatty Han was dumbstruck for a moment. Being the Fatty Han that Zhang Yang knew, he would always get back up, more determined than ever, and this was no exception. Fatty Han finally said, after a noticeable pause, “Yo! Little Yang, mah bro here is my brother from another mother! Listen, woman, we’re so close that we’re practically wearing the same pants! As long as you’re not getting close to the point of going twenty toes with him, he is still my man!”

Even though his words were specifically directed to Li Ru, everyone else had been listening as well. Li Ru was the only one laughing uncontrollably. She was practically shaking all over. Her tightly packed goods were trembling vigorously, like a water balloons in an earthquake. Everyone was fixated on her assets, worried that they would sudden pop out of that deep V dress! Well, it wasn’t like the men would have anything to complain about if that actually happened.

That slow-motion waves of tremors...was enough to send 9 out of 10 men down to the abyss, pitching their tents!

After laughing for a good minute, Li Ru calmed down and curled her lips. “Did you really think that you could wear Zhang Yang’s pants with that body of yours? You could, if you go commando all the way!”

Everyone laughed at her joke. Such an enticing creature, a marvelous being, unfazed by indecent jokes, how could men resist such temptation. Naturally they would respond to please, their minds running wild with images of fantasy!

At that moment, all of the men in Zhang Yang’s table had been completely charmed by Li Ru. In fact, men from the other table were already coming over to his side. Most of them were just trying to get close to her, bumping their glasses with her’s to cheers.

Zhao Hui Shan was still sulking over the matter. The crown that was supposed to be hers had been instantly snatched away by Li Ru! That beautiful lady was being ogled at like a super star! Men fell for her, women envied her.

To put it on the score board, Zhao Hui Shan was at the same level in terms of looks. However, she was somehow lacking in attractive force. Furthermore, she was inferior to her when it came to everything below the neck. It was only natural that Zhao Hui Shan would lose to Li Ru! It was no news that Li Ru had been the famous

girl with big boobs in high school. That devilish, vulgar body of hers was so attractive that she even managed to capture the hearts of male teachers! They had to use their briefcases to cover their groins!

Thinking about the past, Zhao Hui Shan got even angrier. However, the final straw was that her own partner, her boyfriend, Zhou Kang Ming would not stop peeking at Li Ru's peaks! What else could she feel then? The regret of not drinking papaya milk and massaging her breasts since she was younger?

“Li Ru, how have you been these few years?” asked Zhao Hui Shan. She decided to have a showdown with Li Ru after being knocked off the stage.

Li Ru suddenly expressed a distant look; grief and sadness filled her eyes for only an instant, it faded off swiftly, but some of it remained on her face. “I did fine! My husband died and left me with a large fortune! Well, at least I don't need to worry about money for the rest of my life!”

Everyone was curious. One of the men asked. “You were married? When did that happen?”

“In university, I was a fashion model. There was this one time when we were filming for a TV program when a rich, old horny man caught sight of me. He said that he liked me and wanted to marry me. He even offered me luxury gifts like a car and a villa!”

Li Ru was playing with the teaspoon in her hand, twisting and

flipping it on the table.

“I am a woman who enjoys the glamorous life of the rich. So, I took him in. I dropped out and married the man!” said Li Ru. She smiled and rested her chin on her palm. “He was just aiming for my body. I was aiming for his pot of gold. There was no real chemistry there. Just mutual interest. After we got married for a while, he had a heart attack and died off, leaving my family a huge, profitable company. I think it was worth at least 10 million or so. At least, I have it in for me! My life is secure till I die!”

The other ladies in the room who were listening to her story gasped in horror. Disgust filled their faces. Some were throwing inaudible insults like gold-digger, b*tch, sly fox, sly snake, and whatever else they could connect to the word ‘sly’.

In the current era, people would look down on the poor but would never look down on those with beauty, what she had right now was wealth along with a beautiful face and a sexy body! She had it all in one nice package! What man would not want to have her! Obtaining her hand in marriage would be the same as obtaining the world!

Every man in the room was burning with desire to have her for their own.

“Zhang Yang! A toast for you!” Li Ru picked up her glass out of the blue, turning to Zhang Yang.

He was stunned.

Li Ru had not been present in his previous life. His only had fuzzy memories of her name being mentioned during his high school days. If she had not appeared here, he would have completely forgotten about her!

He had no idea on how things had turned out this way. However, now that it has come to this, no matter how they diverge from the timeline that he knew, he will just play along and go with the flow.

Zhang Yang went along with the flow and raised his own glass to clink into hers. When the cold transparent glasses made contact, he could feel Li Ru fingers caressing his. At first, he thought that it was merely accidental. However, he saw the seductive curve of her lips, along with a playful lick of her tongue. He immediately got an idea of her thoughts.

Witnessing how Li Ru was trying to seduce Zhang Yang, other men gulped. They did not understand what and how this was happening.

Zhang Yang was just a regular guy, with a regular face. In fact, he was bad at his studies, often getting involved in street fights. Right now, in his youth and in good health, he had not found himself a proper job. Well, a professional gamer was not considered to be a legit job. For god sake, which online game could last for more than 3 to 5 years? How could he rely on the game to survive? It would never be able to put food on the table and a roof on his head.

While everything was thinking about the same thing, Zhou Kang

Ming was growing redder in color. Tonight, he wanted to strike down his enemy, to publicly shame Zhang Yang! He would never have anticipated that he would end up drooling himself! How could a jewel like Li Ru be interested in a monkey like Zhang Yang!? Now, who was the one rubbing salt on whose wounds!?

He quickly tried to do divert the attention. “Li Ru, did you know, Zhang Yang is now a professional gamer!”

“Oh!” Li Ru eyes widened with curiosity. “Please tell me! Zhang Yang, what game are you playing now?”

“Oh...’God’s Miracle’” replied Zhang Yang casually.

“Ah! I’m playing that too!” said Li Ru as she dragged her chair closer. That sudden jerk sent another vulgar tremble across her peaks, sending them jiggling about in the confined space of her dress. “What is your IGN? Please send me a friend request!”

“Li Ru! I’m playing ‘God’s Miracle’ as well! I’m based in Violet Star City! I’m in the famous Imperial Sky! We were the second guild in the world to clear the Castle Interior Hardcore Mode!” One for man came by suddenly and interrupted. He was another ex-classmate, Feng Guang Bao. Zhang Yang remained silent and pretended to be distract by Feng Guang Bao. He wanted to play dumb to hide his true identity.

Li Ru scoffed. “Imperial Sky? Please...that useless guild could not even get their hands on any First Clear Achievements! Can they compete with Lone Desert Smoke? Besides...the name Imperial Sky

sounds weird. It's so...western!"

Everyone laughed. One of them cried out, "Not bad. There are many of us here playing 'God's Miracle!'. I'm in Emerald City! Level 43, anyone else?"

Feng Guang Bao was clearly bothered by Li Ru's comment. "I know what we cannot be compare with Lone Desert Smoke, but at least Imperial Sky is still the world number 2!"

Fatty Han had a bad impression on Imperial Sky. He opened his mouth to comment. "You claim to be the second in a single dungeon. With that in hand, you claim that you're the world's second best guild? Are you flattering yourself?"

"Han Guang! Which guild are you in then?!" Feng Guang Bao snorted.

"Oh it's quite widely known, everyone knows the name. Just like you said, the best guild in the world, Lone Desert Smoke." Fatty Han held his nose up high, posing a proud look.

"Is that true?!" said Li Ru as she widened her pearly eyes and edged forward. "I've always wanted to join Lone Desert Smoke, but their entry requirements are just too strict! Hey! Fatty! Do you know anyone else inside the guild? Take me! Take me!"

Take her? Many of the men listening to their conversation had taken those words in an entirely different context. Fatty Han

threw a quick glance at Zhang Yang and said slowly. “Erhm...this... is rather...I mean. There are rules...and regulation...”

“Fatty~~~~” Li Ru squealed suddenly. Fatty Han was rather shocked by it to the point that he forgotten what he was about to say.

“Actually, if you want to join the guild, you’d best talk to Zhang Yang. He was the one who introduced me into the guild! No biggie. He is one of the higher ranked guild officers!” said Fatty Han. He was obviously out of tricks to fend of this b*tch and had passed the baton to Zhang Yang.

Li Ru quickly turned her head to face Zhang Yang. Her hair flew out glamorously and brushed over her cheek. She smiled sweetly and said, “Come on, old friend. You would help me out, right?”

Furious with Fatty Han for talking too much, he pointedly turned away and explained to Li Ru. “He was right. There are rules and regulations to follow...”

“I’m going to stop you right there!” said Li Ru as he held her hand out. “Please don’t bring that attitude to me.”

“What attitude...?”

Li Ru made an impression of a sales girl.

“Oh. I’m sorry sir. We cannot allow you to smoke in here.”

“Huh!?”

“You know. Uptight, rigid, black and white, stick-up-your-ass kind of behavior. That’s you! Don’t do that.”

“Oh.”

Zhang Yang returned to his beer. He did not want to carry the conversation any further.

Li Ru jerked her chair yet again and got even closer to Zhang Yang, whispering into his ear. “If it’s come to that, I’ll let you bend the rules a little!”

From Zhang Yang’s point of view, he could clearly see the deep, forbidden regions of a woman’s cleavage. That deep, dark canyon between her two humongous melons. When she leaned in, the scent of her perfume was so strong and sweet that it filled him with a strong carnal desire to grab hold and claim the woman. However, Zhang Yang was not someone with a weak will. He nodded and looked up to meet her eyes instead.

“I cannot allow you to bend the rules. Just give me your IGN and I’ll have the other officers process your application to the guild. Whether they accept or reject you, would be out of my hands. My authority is limited.”

Fatty Han bit his lips. He thought that this man was good in

putting up an act; he was determined to aspire for that kind of behavior.

Li Ru giggled and remained close to Zhang Yang's ear. "Zhang Yang, you must know that I was in love with you ever since high school! Everyone in class were as soft as teddy bears, but you...you were like a lion. A man above all men! I'll let you in on a little secret. Whenever that old, wrinkled husband of mine was in bed with me, I had always imagined that it was you, inserting your huge and thick p*n*s inside me! Only then, I would not feel disgusted about that dead man!"

The smell of her perfume lingered around him. Zhang Yang had a sudden thought, and it was a rather sympathetic one. "For money, you married a man that you didn't love. Was it all worth it?"

Li Ru laughed this time, yet her laughter was fake and hollow. "How many women truly marry the men they love? Didn't you notice? There are many women out there who would rather be mistresses to married men? At least I had it better. I was married officially to him. Compared to the other mistress or secret lovers, I had it better!"

Zhang Yang was rendered speechless. Reality was like a butcher's knife, hacking away at people's dreams and visions. Society was like a huge pot of water; ever so polluted with what was once pure romance and love. Everyone had the power to choose. Whether it was right or wrong, good or evil, all depended on the person's own situation.

"Here, to our wonderful futures! Cheers!" said Zhou Kang Ming

as he lift his glass high. Zhou Kang Ming had seen how close Li Ru was to Zhang Yang. He was burning in a rage, fueled by a source he could not determine himself. Even though it was none of his business, really, his heart was a torrent of unstable emotions. He immediately took action to stop them from getting along further, trying reclaim the spotlight.

Everyone knew that Zhou Kang Ming was the person who organized this gathering, and also the person who would be paying the bills in the end. So, in obligatory respect, everyone stood up and lifted their glass. “For a wonderful future!”

“Cheers!”

“Cheers!”

When everyone had a little more alcohol in them, the atmosphere got a little livelier. Many of the men in the hall know clearly, that they had no chances of tackling someone out of their leagues like Li Ru. They resorted to try their luck on the person they had a liking to back when they still in high school. Perhaps luck might give them a chance. They might be able to take off to the hotel and rent a room to snuggle around later!

After the rather exaggerated show of an applause, Zhang Yang sat down. Just then, he felt a light rubbing sensation on his shin. He began looking around and quickly realized that he did no need to do so. Only Li Ru who could do something like that. He turned to face her, only to see the charming little minx biting her lower lip, completely dyed in a deep, rose red color that expressed a burning passion. Her seductive eyes looked as if they were craving for lust.

Zhang Yang remained stoic and silent. He pulled back his legs and tucked them beneath his seat. However, just when he was about to get comfortable, he felt another light touch. Not much sooner after that, he definitely felt something on his thighs now, dangerously close to...danger.

Zhang Yang turned to Li Ru again. This time, her eyes were lowered, but her intentions were clear nevertheless. They were burning with desire. Her cheeks were flushed in a pinkish hue that could instantly double the rate of any man's heart beat. Everything she did, and gazed at, made her look even more seductive.

What the hell is going on?!

Zhang Yang came here was only because he had been forcibly dragged along by Fatty Han. Yet, here he is, being seduced? If he was placed in the same situation in his previous life, he would surely fail to resist this exquisite creature! However, after all that he had been through, it was as if Zhang Yang had activated an unlimited amount of <Shield Wall>.

You can try all you want...but you'll never be able to seduce me in this massive crowd!

Tok. Tok. Tok.

The door of the hall was knocked on again. The service crew hurried up to the door and opened it.

Foosh!

A gorgeous lady with her eyes covered by a pair sunglasses walked in. Her long silky hair flowed back and forth as she walked into the hall.

A light-yellow dress adorned her slender body. The dress was rather well-made, with excellent workmanship and high-quality fabric. Anyone with a keen eye could easily recognize the dress was Chanel's most popular dress this summer. The little hand bag that was slung over her forearm was also a Chanel. The perfume that she wore on her today was also Chanel's. The bracelet was yet another Chanel...this lady must be a crazy fan of Chanel. That, or Chanel had a crazy sale and she was just there coincidentally.

Unlike Li Ru's mature style, this young woman had a distinctively different style. Her curves were rather substantial; however, she could not be described as having a devilish body. However, she had her own special features. Her legs. Her long, pearl-like legs were so slender. If she had stood in a corner, she would look like a mannequin in a fashion shop.

Complexion-wise, she possessed a certain degree of beauty that rivaled Li Ru and Zhao Hui Shan! Her cold, frost-like composure gave her a sense of nobility; that people could only look up to.

Another unexpected person appeared!

Yang Zhi Xian. She was the most beautiful girl in the first class,

which made her the most beautiful girl in the entire school. She was beautiful indeed; no one doubted that. That and, she was rather exceptional in her studies. A full package, people said. Zhang Yang vaguely remembered her but, one thing was for certain; neither of them were supposed to be in the student gathering.

Among the things that had happened, it was as if there was a huge hand in the cosmos, silent and undetected, changing the world as it is.

“Yang Zhi Xian?!” Li Ru was the first to greet her. “Here! Here! Here! Sit with me!” she shrieked.

Chanel girl Yang Zhi Xian saw Li Ru calling out to her and smiled proudly. She lowered her sunglasses a little and walked gracefully towards Zhang Yang’s table. With extreme elegance and grace, she sat in the last available seat at Zhang Yang’s table.

She carefully took out a napkin and ran it over the chopsticks and spoon. Only after the deed was done did she sit properly and get comfortable. The graceful, lady-like manner had left everyone slightly uncomfortable.

Fatty Han loved beautiful women, but he could not get used to her level of mannerism. He laughed awkwardly and said, “I’d say, miss Yang, if you took off your pants and fart, wouldn’t it be too redundant? I think you’re sugarcoating your actions a little too much. This hotel is 5-star, 3-star by your standards at least, they would never serve unwashed cutlery for a customer to use, no?”

Yang Zhi Xian lifted her head and stared at Fatty Han. Her eye brow twitched a little, as if she was clearly offended by his crude language.

Li Ru interjected, “Fatty, would could you say something like that in front of a fair lady?!”

“Sorry, lady. I mean, Lady Yang...” Fatty Han laughed awkwardly again. Who knew that kind of context he really meant when he used the term “lady”.